

**HON. ANDREW D. WHITE,**  
**OF THE**  
**VENEZUELAN BOUNDARY COMMISSION.**



**Cornell University Library**  
Ithaca, New York

---

**White Historical Library**

THE GIFT OF PRESIDENT WHITE  
MAINTAINED BY THE UNIVERSITY IN ACCORD-  
ANCE WITH THE PROVISIONS  
OF THE GIFT

---

The date shows when this volume was taken.

To renew this book copy call No. and give to

Cornell University Library

F 2331 .B7U5

v.8

Report and accompanying papers of the Co



3 1924 021 461 458 clin,ove2

F

2351

B7u5++

v. 8



*This book was digitized by Microsoft Corporation in cooperation with Cornell University Libraries, 2007.*

*You may use and print this copy in limited quantity for your personal purposes, but may not distribute or provide access to it (or modified or partial versions of it) for revenue-generating or other commercial purposes.*







# DOCUMENTS

RELATING TO THE QUESTION OF BOUNDARY

BETWEEN

VENEZUELA AND BRITISH GUAYANA.

---

SUBMITTED TO THE BOUNDARY COMMISSION  
BY THE COUNSEL OF THE GOVERN-  
MENT OF VENEZUELA.

---

VOL. I.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C.:  
MCGILL & WALLACE, PRINTERS.

1896.

75

5.50

A. 103 507

CORNELL  
UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY

[Translation.]

Case 133.—Drawer 3.—File 16.  
GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.  
(Seville.)

---

**1763.**

REPORT SUBMITTED BY DON JOSÉ DIGUJA, GOVERNOR OF CUMANÁ, WITH LETTER NO. 19, DATED CUMANÁ, DECEMBER 15, 1763; MAKING A LONG HISTORICAL DESCRIPTION OF THESE PROVINCES.

---

(The testimony referred to in this report has been copied separately.)

---

Cumaná, December 15, 1763.

Governor Don Joseph Diguja calls attention to the irreparable injury which will be done to religion, to Your Majesty, and to the subjects of Your Majesty in these Provinces, if Guayana is transferred to Angostura del Orinoco. In support of his views he appends to his Report a volume containing testimony on the subject, and makes a long description of the advantageous situation of Guayana, etc.

---

Cumaná, December 15, 1763.

Governor Don Joseph Diguja forwards a volume containing testimony in support of the Report and map submitted by him in consequence of the decision of Your Majesty, communicated to him, to transfer the city of Guayana to that place

---

NOTE.—This paper was received on or about September, 1765, when Guayana had been already transferred to Angostura del Orinoco. For this reason no action was taken on the Report.

on the Orinoco River where the stream has the less width. He makes a long description of the advantages of the present situation of the city, and explains the irreparable injury to be sustained by religion, by the service of Your Majesty, and by the subjects of Your Majesty in those regions, if the moving of the city to the above-named place is accomplished.

---

The Report begins by a kind of Introduction, in which a short statement of its contents is made.—Page 1.

*First Part.*

CHAPTER I.—What the Government of Cumaná was in 1720.—Page 4.

CHAPTER II.—Progress of that Government from 1720 to the present year, 1763.—Page 6.

CHAPTER III.—The progress made in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona from 1720 to the present year, 1763, is due to the two missionary bodies, which are evangelizing there.—Page 13.

---

NOTE.—Upon consideration of the Report made on December 15, 1761, by Don Joseph Solano, setting forth that the old town (*la Poblacion Antigua*) had no more than 450 inhabitants, in which number the garrison was included; that the walls of the Asis Fort had not sufficient strength; that the general conditions (*temple*) of the country was bad; that the houses as well as the church were structures of frame and mud, and straw-thatched; that the troops were liable at all times to be insulted; that the post called El Padrastro could be lost as the result of a *coup de main* of the enemy, and then no possibility to retain possession of the province would be left; that in such a case the Provinces of Cumaná, Caracas, Barinas, and even Santa Fé would be unprotected; that provisions were scarce; and that the well-known navigation of the Orinoco facilitated access to the locality, and requesting on all these grounds that the city should be moved and located at the narrow part (*la Angostura*) of the river, Your Majesty decided to grant the request. The proper orders and instructions to that effect were sent in the following year, to Don Joachin Moreno de Mendoza, and Solano was directed to pass upon any question which might arise on the subject.

Under date of August 15, 1764, the said Don Joachin Moreno, commanding officer of the city, reported that the latter had been moved as directed, and sent a statement of the number of inhabitants, and of the expenses incurred in carrying out the moving. He said that it was impossible for the inhabitants to bear the expenses of transportation, building of new houses, etc., and suggested that these expenses should be defrayed by the Royal Treasury. All of this was granted by Royal Order of the 26th of March ultimo.

When these papers were received here from San Ildefonso, in September, 1765, the map above alluded to was not among them. It had been sent, however, but as it was of large size, and had been mounted on gilded mouldings and reds, it was hung on the walls of the Secretary's Office, of which it became an ornament.



CHAPTER IV.—Present state of the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, the principal ones of this Government; how little can be done under existing circumstances; and upon whom the compliance with the Royal Order to move Guayana depends.—Page 17.

CHAPTER V.—What the Province of Guayana was in 1720, and what progress had been made therein during the 141 previous years.—Page 22.

CHAPTER VI.—Measures taken to fortify the Orinoco from the year 1694 to the month of May, 1762, in which it became such as it is now.—Page 23.

CHAPTER VII.—Progress made in the Province of Guayana from 1720 to the present year, 1763.—Page 35.

CHAPTER VIII.—The fact that the Dutch have not settled in the center of the Province of Guayana, and the progress noticed at the Presidio, are due to the Mission entrusted to the Catalonian Capucins. The Presidio can not be kept without the Mission, nor the Mission without the Presidio.—Page 39.

CHAPTER IX.—Present condition of the fortifications of the Presidio and city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, and of the Spanish settlements of this Province. This condition is somewhat different from the one existing at the time of the visit. Page 46.

CHAPTER X.—The Presidio of Guayana is the most important place which the King, our Master, possesses in these his American dominions, except Havana and Vera Cruz.—Page 84.

### *Second Part.*

From page 98, on the reverse, to page 196 an answer is given to all the chapters of the Royal Order individually referred to on the left side of the pages.

### *Third Part.*

The Governor expresses his opinion in full.—Page 197.

CHAPTER I.—The Padraastro Hill should be fortified, and if agreeable to His Majesty a fortress, to be called La Concepción, should be built thereon, as indicated in Nos. 7 and 8 in the Map.—Page 198.

CHAPTER II.—The said Padrastro Hill should be fortified at once, whether by building the Concepción Castle, or by any other means which His Majesty might be pleased to decree. This must be done without losing any time, otherwise that important position may be lost at the first moment if a war breaks out.—Page 203.

CHAPTER III.—The city should be kept where it is, and all possible effort should be made to increase, at least twice as much, the number of its inhabitants.—Page 211.

CHAPTER IV.—The garrison of the Presidio should be strengthened by adding to it 73 soldiers, as ordered by Governor Don Gregorio de Espinosa and Governor Don Matheo Gual, and requested by me in my memorial to His Majesty of August 27, 1761.—Page 215.

CHAPTER V.—The Limones Fort should be abandoned, and a barge should be kept at the Presidio, as Marquis de San Felipe suggested to His Majesty. If the narrow part (Angostura) is to be fortified, no other fortification should be erected there than the battery suggested by Governor Don Juan de la Tornera, as shown in No. 9 on the Map.—Page 219.

CHAPTER VI.—Assistance should be given to the Missions of Catalonian Capucins and Franciscans of Piritu, as suggested by me to His Majesty after my visit to those places.—Page 222.

---

### Report.

(Paragraphs No. 1 to No. 6 explain the subject and contents of this Report, and form a kind of Syllabus, or Summary, of the whole Document.)

*Most Excellent Sir :*

SIR: Under date of the 4th of May ultimo, I informed Your Excellency that on the 25th of the preceding April I had received the Royal Orders enumerated in the List which I appended to my letter. I also stated that as soon as I could get rid of the occupations I mentioned and finish the prepara-

---

NOTE.—The pages cited in the body of the Report are the pages of the volume which contains the testimony appended thereto. The pages of the Report itself are only mentioned in the preceding table of contents.

tion of the documents necessitated by some of them, I would answer to the said Royal Orders and avail myself of the first opportunity to mail my reply via Caracas.

2. The Royal Order, issued at Aranjuez on May 27, 1762, contains different instructions, the most important of which refers to the decision which His Majesty was pleased to make in regard to the city of Guayana. His Majesty directed the said city to be moved and transferred to a place called La Angostura, 34 leagues above the Castle, where the Orinoco has only a width of 800 yards. But I, after having given to this grave subject, as to all the others of the said Royal Order, the most serious attention, have acquired the conviction that said moving will be attended by irreparable injury to our Holy Religion, to the service of the two Majesties, to the Royal Treasury, and to the inhabitants of those countries. I am fully aware of the fact that insuperable difficulties shall have to be encountered in the execution of the said Royal Order, and that even without counting these difficulties, not less than 25 or 30 years, and three or four hundred thousand dollars, shall be necessary to carry the whole plan into effect, sacrificing many lives, and causing all these Provinces to be at the mercy of the enemies of the Royal Crown. I feel, therefore, that it is my duty, as a loyal subject, and as Governor of these Provinces, to take advantage of the authority granted by Law 24, Title 1, Book 2, and request His Majesty, with all due respect and assurances of obedience, to be pleased to reconsider the subject, and direct the execution of the said Royal Order to be suspended, until His Majesty, upon further investigation, might be pleased to decide as proper.

3. In order to convince His Majesty of the irreparable injury to be done by this measure, of the excessive expenditure which it will entail, of the numerous difficulties which will have to be overcome, of the number of years which will be consumed to carry its provisions into practical effect, and of the well-known dangerous position in which it will place all these dominions of His Majesty, I thought it advisable to submit to His Majesty the Map and testimony which I append to this Report. The one and the other, together with the general map

of this Government, and the memoranda book, or Book of notes, which contains the particularly accurate as well as concise description of the country, which I formerly submitted to His Majesty, through the hands of Your Excellency, on September 16, 1761, will vouch a great portion of what I have said in this Report. If some other points of the same document have not been accompanied by competent proof, it has not been because that proof was lacking, but because of the desire not to give this Report undue extension. Records too voluminous, instead of being conducive to throw light on a subject, are apt to produce confusion. But whenever His Majesty may be pleased to order me to prove any statement, which is not vouched here, I will do it. I bind myself to give such proofs and I hold myself responsible for the truth of all that I have said in this Report, which I have prepared in discharge of my duty, in order to correspond to the confidence that His Majesty was pleased to repose in me, and with no other desire than to improve the Royal service, protect these vast dominions, and prevent the charge from being justly made against me, that I did not call attention to facts and dangers which could be seen so easily.

4. And in order that my representations may be more easily understood, and that no confusion may be created, I have thought it proper to divide this report into three parts, showing in the first, what the Government of Cumaná was in 1720; what progress has been made in it up to the present date; to whom said progress is due; what its condition is at the present time: how little, under the circumstances now existing in it, can be undertaken in the Province of Guayana; what the Province of Guayana was in 1720 when it was subject to the Government of La Trinidad, and what progress had been made in it during the 141 previous years; what measures for the fortification of the Orinoco were taken from the year 1694 up to the 27th of May, 1762, after which date nothing has been done; what was the unhappy condition in which said Province found itself when it was annexed to this Government; what progress it has made ever since, and to whom that progress has been due; what is the present condition of the city of Guayana and its

fortifications ; and how said city is the most important place which the King has in these his American dominions, except Havana and Vera Cruz. With this precise and well proved information furnished at the outset, everything stated in the second and third parts of the Report will be properly substantiated, and the danger will be thus avoided of entering into long digressions, which, rather than throwing upon the subject the light which I desire and facilitating the work of His Majesty, may, on the contrary, produce confusion.

5. In the second part reference is made, on the left side of the respective pages, to the items or statements contained in the Royal Order, and an answer is given to each one in the text. These answers show how irreparable the injury sustained will be ; how large amount of money and how many long years shall be required to carry the said Royal Order into effect ; and how much the execution thereof, so far from being conducive to the safety and development of these Provinces, will endanger the possession of the same, and render them liable to fall into the hands of enemies, to the detriment of the religion newly implanted in a great portion of their territory.

6. In the third part my opinion is stated in full. This is the first time, since I have had the honor to serve His Majesty in this position, that I have ventured to express my own ideas, unless directed by express Royal Order to do so. But as the interests of the service of the two Majesties appear to be so much at stake in this grave matter, I have felt myself bound by a duty of conscience to set forth what I think to be conducive to the service of God and of the King. In this matter, indeed, I have had very little to add to what was said in the Book of Notes, or the part thereof relating to information both general and special about this Government, and still less to what was so properly represented to His Majesty by the engineers and the governors who preceded me, and were entrusted by Royal command with the work of fortifying the Orinoco, whose reports were approved, by virtue of a Royal Order, by His Excellency Don Sebastian de Esclava, Viceroy at that time of the New Kingdom of New Grenada.

## First Part.

### Chapter I.

*What the Government of Cumaná was in 1720.*

1st. The Government of Cumaná, at whose head was placed Don Joseph Carreño in 1720, consisted of the Province of that name and the Province of Barcelona. A large portion of the territory north of the chain of mountains which runs from east to west across the two provinces was unknown and unexplored. The other tract of land situated on the south of these mountains was possessed and inhabited by the Caribbean Indians, by other Indians not yet pacified, and by those Dutch, English, and French people, who were in their company.

The towns of the Province of Cumaná were as follows: Its capital, with no more than one hundred very small houses, built of mud and timber, and thatched roofed. The inhabitants of this town were very poor, although some of them owned small farms on the coast of the Gulf, or in the Cariaco valley.

2. The city of San Balthasar de los Arias, otherwise called Cumanacoa, consisting of twenty or twenty-five thatched-roofed, mud houses, inhabited by poor farm laborers, most of them mulattoes, half-breeds and negroes. The principal production was tobacco, but only to the amount necessary for consumption within the Province.

3. The city of San Felipe de Austria, or Cariaco, where the cultivation of cacao had been started in some small farms belonging to people of Cumaná, who used to come and reside there temporarily. The real inhabitants of this city were negroes, mulattoes and half-breeds, who lived in about thirty thatched-roofed cabins, scattered here and there on the grounds where they cultivated their corn, manioc, bananas and fruits of various kinds. These were the only three towns, or settlements of Spaniards, in that locality.

4. On the north of the Mountains, as shown by the General Map, some eighteen or twenty Indian villages had been already

established. Five of these settlements were taken care of by secular priests; the balance were in charge of the Aragonese Capucins. The inhabitants of the villages entrusted to secular priests and some other towns entrusted to the Friars aforesaid, had been taught the Christian doctrine. All the rest were under missionary rule and not yet well educated. Some missions and settlements began also to be established on the top and the southern slope of the mountains.

5. These new Missions, and even the old ones near Cumana-coa, were frequently insulted by the Caribbean Indians and the French and English people who accompanied them. Owing to their having destroyed by fire the town of San Félix de la Penitencia (see General Map) and their having perpetrated some other outrages at Aragua, in the neighborhood of the said town, Governor Carreño saw himself compelled to enlist soldiers and send an expedition to the Guarapiche River, for the purpose of punishing them. So it was done, as appears from the report sent by that Governor to His Majesty, on March 30, 1719, and from a Royal Ordinance, dated Madrid, March 6, 1721, approving what had been done. All of this is shown by the testimony hereto appended, page 4, on the back, and the following up to page 6.

6. In the Province of Barcelona no other town existed than its capital, which consisted of between 80 and 100 frame and mud, thatched-roofed houses, inhabited by people who were still poorer than those of Cumaná, because they had to confine themselves to cultivate the most sterile lands on the coast and the mountains, and were unable to undertake any work in the fertile plains of the interior for fear of constant molestation by the Caribbean Indians.

7. The Franciscan friars (*observantes*) of Piritu had in their charge fourteen or fifteen Indian villages, whose inhabitants had been kept under missionary rule until the date in which Don Joseph Carreño raised them to the rank of already instructed (*puestos en doctrina*). The land occupied by the pacified Indians was situated on the chain of mountains which faces the north, and on the banks of the Unare River, extending as far as the locality in which the Huere River empties into the

Unare. These towns were often attacked by the Caribbean Indians, assisted by some Dutch and English people, who, in company with the said Indians, made incursions in the unexplored territory of the Province of Barcelona, and in a portion of that of the Province of Caracas, reaching, through the Orinoco, the other Provinces access to which can be facilitated through navigation on that river.

To this and nothing else the Government of Cumaná was reduced in the above cited year seven hundred and twenty, in which Don Joseph Carreño ceased to be Governor, and was succeeded by Don Juan de la Tornera Sota, who continued in the same way as his predecessor to take measures to preserve the Missions and repress the Caribbean Indians and their English, Dutch and French companions who harassed them.

---

## Chapter II.

*Progress made in the Government from 1720 to the present year, 1763.*

1. In order to explore the unknown portion of the territory of the Province of Barcelona, and to pursue the Caribbean Indians and the foreigners who accompanied them, some movements towards the interior were started by the Missionaries and the small force which Governor Tornera could give them as escort. The result of those expeditions was the exploration of the banks of the Orinoco and the Carey Rivers, and the foundation of the San Buenaventura Mission, called also La Margarita, where many Indians who had been persuaded to leave the mountains were gathered. Some other Indians, in larger numbers than the above, were also induced to come and settle in the proposed Missions of Santa Rosa and San Joachin. (See the general map as to the location of these places.) All of this was reported to His Majesty, under date of January 8, 1724, by Governor Tornera, who urged also, as a matter of great importance for the Royal service, the fortification of the narrow part (*La Angostura*) of the Orinoco River, and the foundation of some Missions in its neighborhood. Said



Missions were to be in charge of the Franciscan Fathers, to whom, in compliance with the repeated provisions of several Royal orders, the proper escort should be given. As up to that time no escort had ever been paid anything, owing to which fact, as it appears from page 6 to page 9 of the testimony, the Missions had suffered considerably, efficient measures were suggested to secure actual payment in the present case. To this His Majesty graciously answered, through his Secretary of State, Don Joseph Patiño, in a communication dated at Madrid, September 7, 1728, by informing the Governor that the proper orders had been issued for the fortification of La Angostura, as decided by His Majesty at some previous time. The text of the said Royal Order is to be found in the testimony hereto appended, from page 9 to page 10.

Another Royal Order, issued at Madrid, on the same date, transmitted by the same Secretary Don Joseph Patiño, which can be found in the same testimony from page 10 to page 11, shows that Governor Tornera had reported to His Majesty in November, 1727, the number of Indians who, with the assistance given him for that purpose during his term of office, had been subdued (*reducidos*) and caused to live in villages or other settlements of permanent character. It shows also that the Caribbean Indians and other savage tribes had waged war against those settlements and attempted to kill the missionaries and the Spaniards who were with them; that the banks of the Huere River (see general map for the location of this river) had been properly defended; that in these skirmishes many Indians had been killed, and some others made prisoners; that close to the banks of the said river about eleven houses had been discovered which were intended, as it seemed, for storage purposes, where many fire arms, and arms of other kinds, clubs, and arrows were found and captured; that the hostile Indians had been assisted in their effort to establish themselves in their old homes by English officers and soldiers; and that His Majesty had imparted his approval to all that had been done, by the Governor, in regard to this subject.

2. The same system of government, with little or no changes, and no greater improvement of the situation, prevailed during

the whole period of Governor Tornera's command. In August 1733, he was replaced by Don Carlos de Sucre. Governor Tornera, however, had received the instructions of October, 1726, which appear from page 11 to page 16 of the testimony, and had been entrusted with the Government of these possessions, as shown by the same testimony, for the especial purpose, as shall be more particularly explained in its proper place, that he should fortify the narrow part (*la Angostura*) of the Orinoco River, or Island of Faxardo.

3. In order to comply with the duty entrusted to him, Governor Sucre moved to the Presidio of Guayana, on or about the month of February, 1734, and remained there during the longest period of his term of office. Notwithstanding this fact, and although the Governor before leaving the capital had appointed the Marquis of San Felipe to act in his place in everything concerning the government of these Provinces, a large amount of business was often submitted to his personal consideration. The communication with Guayana was at that time difficult. By sea the trip was very expensive and long, as it was necessary to go first to the Island of La Margarita, for which place alone pilots were obtainable to proceed to the Island of La Trinidad, and there engage another pilot, generally an Indian, expert in the navigation of the Orinoco, to take the vessel from one mouth of that river to the city of Guayana. By land it was still worse, because there was no road which would lead to that place.

The missionaries of Piritu, in their excursions through the territory of the Province of Barcelona, had gone no farther than the banks of the River Cari, which, being very wide and carrying a large volume of water before emptying into the Orinoco, was found by them to be impassable, unless by using some craft, which they had not in their possession. Nevertheless, under the spur of necessity, with great efforts, after crossing the summit of the Guanipa Table, where the Morichales, forming the sources of the River Cari, are found (see General Map, and Note No. 5 of the Book of Notes, as to explanation of what the Guanipa Table and the Morichales

are), and fording some other rivers, a road was discovered which leads to a locality just opposite El Presidio. This is the only way of communication by land now used, and is marked in the map hereto annexed.

4. As soon as this road was discovered the missionaries applied themselves to improve it as much as possible, and to secure the establishment, at some convenient point of its trajet, of a town or some other station, where the people could get provisions and rest from the fatigues of a six days' journey through the sands of the desolate Guanipa Table; and to this end they founded, in 1735, with Indians belonging to the Guarauna nation, who inhabited the shores of the Del Manso Lake, as shown by the appended map, a Mission to which they gave the name of *Nuestra Señora de los Remedios* (Our Lady of Remedies). This undertaking, however, soon proved to be a failure, because the Caribbean Indians becoming infuriated at the Guarauna people having consented to be subjected to missionary rule, made, at the end of that year, and with the assistance of a certain number of French allies, an attack upon said Mission, which ended in its ruin. They suddenly rushed into it, at the very moment in which the priest was saying mass, and after assaulting and wounding him, while at the altar, dragged him out of the church, hanged him from a tree, and ignominiously outraged his corpse. They killed 37 Guaraunas, burnt down the church and the houses, and carried away with them the women and the children.

5. In spite of these and other similar misfortunes, the missionaries continued with not less earnestness the work of civilizing the unhappy inhabitants of those territories. These efforts, as well as the increase of trade in that region in consequence of the events in Guayana; the steps taken by Sucre in the Presidio to prevent the introduction of foreigners allied to the Caribbean Indians, and the action of Marquis San Felipe in the Province of Barcelona, as shown by the Royal Letter dated at Aranjuez, April 28, 1737, and copied from page 19 to page 20 of the testimony, tended to facilitate the pacification of the Caribbean Indians, which was then initiated and which, dur-

ing the whole period of Sucre's administration, was continued with such a degree of success as to allow the inhabitants of Barcelona to establish stock farms in these territories, although occasionally some harm was done both to the cattle and to the people who had it under their care.

6. While this was happening in the Province of Barcelona, matters were progressing very slowly in that of Cumaná and in the region to the south of its mountains. The Aragonese Capucins had established in the latter region some of the Missions which are now in existence; and on the northern part, on the coast, and in the neighborhood of Cape Tres Puntas (as shown by the General Map), two Spanish towns had been founded, which were respectively designated under the names of Rios Caribes and Carúpano, and became afterwards very useful for the pacification of the coast of Paria.

7. Such was the condition of things in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona in 1740, when on or about the month of June of the same year, Governor Don Carlos de Sucre was recalled and replaced by Don Gregorio de Espinosa, who had also been instructed, as will be explained hereafter, to fortify the Orinoco. What took place in these Provinces during his government will be presently stated.

8. Shortly after his arrival and his taking possession of the Government, Guayana was attacked by an English privateer. The Governor at once sent a force there of one hundred men of the militia of Barcelona, but when they reached their destination the Presidio had been already sacked. The same fate had befallen the neighboring Indian towns or villages, the houses of which, as well as those of the city, had been burnt to the ground. But if the one hundred men of the expedition had been unable to prevent, on account of their late arrival, the aforesaid misfortune from having happened, their presence there was however useful for the pacification of certain tribes, subject to missionary rule, who had revolted and run away to the mountains. This service having been rendered, the detachment returned to Barcelona, not without causing the Caribbean Indians, who inhabit the territory through which it passed, both when going to Guayana and when returning

home, to feel apprehensive that the missionaries, counting with its assistance, would endeavor to subdue and civilize them, as in fact they did afterwards.

9. In order to insure the safety of the road to Guayana and the Curacies and new Missions on the mountains, as well as that of the part of the plains of Barcelona where cattle ranches had been established, the Franciscan missionaries founded, in 1744, the town of Aragua, situated on the plains, at twenty leagues from Barcelona, leaving between this city and the newly founded town several Indian villages and some cattle ranches. The population of this new town consisted of mulattoes, half-breeds, negroes, and here and there a white man, all of whom, numbering at most twenty families, had previously established themselves, with their cattle, in the plains near the mountains, and in other plains of the Province of Caracas. Before this new town could be raised to the rank of a Parish it was placed for church matters under the rule of a Missionary.

10. After the foundation of this town, and in the latter part of the same year, 1744, another settlement was started by the same missionaries at the place called Pao, twenty leagues from Aragua, and thirty-five or forty from the city of Barcelona, and the communication and trade with Guayana was thereby rendered safer. Some cattle raisers, who had started their farms in the plains of Caracas, were assisted by the people of Aragua to move with their cattle to the new settlement; and so, with no more than sixteen or eighteen families, the town of *Nuestra Señora de la Concepción del Pao*, which is still standing, was brought into existence. That town, which is now about to be raised to the rank of a Parish, was placed, as it is now, under the care of the same missionaries.

The two towns (Pao and Aragua) increased their population considerably on account of the disturbances which occurred in the Province of Caracas, when the uprising of León, in '49 and '50, took place. Both of them are very important to give safety to the plains whereon they are situated, as they afford efficient means to resist any invasion on the part of the Caribbean Indians, who, as shown by the General Map and by Note

6 of the Book of Notes, inhabit the country between the same towns and the banks of the Orinoco.

11. In 1746 Don Gregorio de Espinosa was recalled, and Don Diego Tavares was appointed in his place. The latter came also with special instructions to fortify the Orinoco.

Tavares was in his turn recalled in '53, and replaced by Don Matheo Gual.

Gual was succeeded *ad interim*, in December, '57, by Don Nicolás de Castro; and Castro transmitted to me the command in January, '59.

12. All my predecessors, from Don Gregorio de Espinosa down, were particular in taking measures to insure the safety and proper development of these Provinces. As for myself, I can say that the steps I have taken, after my general visit, specially for the good government and the proper treatment of the Indians, have not been few. To remedy the evil effects of intoxication in the Caribbean Missions on the banks of the Orinoco, I gave the local authorities of Barcelona, Aragua, Pao, and Guayana such instructions as were deemed necessary to secure their appearance in the respective places of their territory, as soon as some disturbance occurred. I also made arrangements by virtue of which the said local authorities, and all other officials of the Government, were enabled to assist each other whenever necessary. All of this will appear from the elaborate statement of the General Results of my Visit, submitted by me to His Majesty through his Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies. The fact is, that owing to these measures taken by myself, and to those which my predecessors had taken during their respective terms of office, communication can now be had without risk between all places of the territory, whether on the plains or in the mountains, belonging to the Provinces under my command. Any man can now go alone to Guayana, and come back, without fear of molestation of any kind. Twenty years ago no man could think of making such a journey without a strong escort. No foreigner, allied to the Caribbean Indians, is now seen in the country; nor can any Caribbean Indian himself be seen outside the towns. The same safety is to be noticed in the communication by water. The navigation

along the sea coast, through Golfo Triste, the mouths of the Orinoco, and up the river, is freely made, and those engaged in this business can go and come without disturbance. There are excellent pilots, perfectly well acquainted with every locality in the whole Northern Coast, the Guarapiche River, the Channels of Santa Isabel, Teresen, and Coiguar, the coast of Paria, and the Labyrinth of the mouths of the Orinoco.

13. At the time of my visit there were in the Province of Barcelona 121 ranches, which, according to the statements of their owners, contained from fifty to fifty-five thousand head of cattle. This secured for the Province a revenue of 25 or 30 dollars per year, as shown in note No. 13 of the Book of Notes. The number of ranches is becoming every day larger and larger; and this fact, the abundance of cattle, and the increase of the number of Indians who become civilized and devote themselves to the cultivation of the lands, have rendered the capital of Barcelona four times better and more advanced in every respect than it was in 1720. Now, as far as the comfort of the inhabitants is concerned, the said capital is the best city in this Government.

14. The same increase in the number of houses, population, and wealth of the inhabitants which has been noticed in the capital of Barcelona, has also been noticed in the capital of Cumaná and in all other cities and towns of this Government. Nothing, of any account, was received in the Royal Treasury in the year 1720; because the number of Indians who paid tribute was very small, and because the revenue derived from the payment of tithes was of little importance. The receipts coming from what was called "*entradas y salidas*," was, if possible, still more insignificant, because the production was small and the trade almost null. The result was that at that time the Royal Treasury was scarcely able to meet the few obligations which weighed upon it. But at present, as shown by note No. 11 of the Book of Notes, a most favorable change can be noticed in the Government's receipts and expenditures. It may be said, in a word, that the difference between the situation of the Treasury now and in 1720 is just as striking as between being and not being. This increase in the resources

of the Government, no matter how great, can not, however, justify the undertaking of many enterprises, and this I will explain, as thoroughly as it is indispensable to give a proper answer to the chapter of the Royal Ordinance which relates to the moving of La Guayana to La Angostura. This I shall do when stating the principal reason which produced that increase. That part of my Report wherein I suggest certain measures and recommend them as efficient will then also be substantiated.

---

### Chapter III.

*The progress made in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, from 1720 to the present year 1763, is due to the two Missionary bodies engaged in their evangelization.*

1. It can not be doubted that the repeated measures, more or less active, taken by my predecessors, have caused the very noticeable development of the cities and towns of this Government; the exploration of the vast territories which pertain to it; the pacification of the Indians who inhabited its mountains and forests, and are now reduced to live in proper settlements the life of civilization; the expulsion of those foreigners who, in union with the Indians, overran these Provinces and harrassed their inhabitants with the intent of establishing themselves in their territory; the discovery, safety and good arrangements of the road to Guayana, which facilitates the communication with that place; and, as a consequence of all these facts, the occupation and settlement of these hitherto unexplored Provinces and vast territories by Spanish people, who formerly had been compelled to live in the arid and barren lands which lie in close vicinity with the establishments on the coast. None of these measures, however, would have amounted to anything, if their execution had not been secured and fostered as it was by the missionary bodies, engaged in the evangelization of the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, namely: The Aragonese Capucins, in Cumaná, as explained



in Note No. 4, and the Franciscans of Piritu in Barcelona, as explained in Notes No. 7 and No. 10. The territory in which their missionary work is done is marked in the General Map.

2. These two bodies of missionaries have always been lacking the proper assistance. The number of missionaries has never been sufficient. They have not received enough alms for their proper support. They have not been given adequate escort to insure their safety, protect the new settlements, and explore the neighboring forests in search of Indians to be evangelized. They do not possess such ecclesiastical vestments, images, bells, etc., as are desired. The missionaries themselves, as well as the Governor, have most repeatedly set forth their needs, and requested His Majesty to grant proper assistance to this important branch of the service. His Majesty most graciously, as becoming to his Royal and Catholic zeal, has attended to this matter by issuing proper Ordinances and taking other measures, all of them tending to the spiritual and temporal welfare of the poor Indians. But most of these Royal Ordinances and decrees have become of no effect, owing to the scarcity of funds, out of which the expenses required to carry them into operation had to be paid. Lately, when reporting the results of my general visit, I called His Majesty's attention to the present needs of the two missionary bodies above named, and also to the needs of the other body of Catalonian Capucins of the Province of Guayana, as stated in the documents, copies of which I submitted, and may be found from page 247 to page 256 of the appended testimony. Particular information of the present condition of these Missions is found also in Notes No. 4, No. 7, and No. 10 of the Book of Notes, which corroborate and complete what is said in the documents above mentioned and in the minutes or journal of the general visit. Evils of great importance, requiring prompt remedy, are now being felt in the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, and are due to no other cause than the scarcity of funds. The fact is acknowledged that the missionary work is no longer carried out with as much zeal and efficiency as in former times, or as it is now carried

out in Guayana by the Catalanian Capucins. This matter has been treated by me separately in a special report which, upon the result of my general visit, I sent to His Majesty and his Supreme Council.

3. In spite of all this, it must be said that all the progress made in this Government, in spiritual and temporal matters, is due to the two communities above referred to, and, also, that no further progress can be expected to come from other sources, either in the same two provinces, or in the Province of Guayana, where they have begun to evangelize.

4. These two missionary bodies are certainly the cause of the pacification of these provinces. With no little difficulty, and incurring grave risks, they have subdued the Indians, and succeeded in establishing 79 Indian villages, the town of Aragua, and the settlement of El Pao. In the villages aforesaid they have congregated from 26 to 27,000 natives, most of whom have been converted to our Holy Religion. In the Caribbean villages of the neighborhood of the Orinoco, where there are no missionaries to attend to the education of the inhabitants, or where the missionaries, if any, sent there have not been given such an escort as was necessary to their protection, heathenism still prevails. The inhabitants are baptized only in case of necessity, but they do not refuse this Holy Sacrament to be administered to them, when in condition to receive it, or to their infant children.

But many among the inhabitants of both the latter and the former villages are lost, unless, for their good fortune, some missionary priest happens to reach their residence in time enough to minister to their needs. The number of missionaries sent to these Provinces is not sufficient to permit any priest to be permanently located at any village, and attend to the religious education of its inhabitants. The result is that the children grow up with the same habits and ideas of their parents, and that Christian religion does not become firmly rooted in these Missions. Indeed, it is a miracle for the Missions themselves to have survived, as no restraint of any kind can be exercised on the Indians who inhabit them. In many cases there is only one missionary for two, three and

even four villages, separated from each other by large distances. The same thing happens in the matter of teachers (*doctrineros*), who are compelled to spend their lives on horseback, going from one place to another. In many cases a priest says mass at one village which is not within convenient distance of another, and the inhabitants of the latter have to do without mass, unless the priest can come and say it a second time.

5. It is also due to these two bodies of missionaries that the Spaniards succeeded in establishing themselves in lands of more fertility than those close to the coast, and in increasing the number of their farms, and of the towns, which now are eight, in these Provinces. It is due to them, furthermore, that the Royal Treasury receives tribute from thirty-nine villages already Christianized, and is able therefore to meet the expenses required for the support of the Churches, and the payment of the teachers and local authorities, leaving a large balance to dispose of in some other ways. The amount of these receipts will be doubled in a few years, as many other villages will hereafter become fully Christianized and begin to pay tribute.

6. If these missionary communities should be assisted in the manner and form I have suggested to His Majesty, it is to be hoped that the Guárauna Indians, who inhabit the swamps at the mouth of the Orinoco, would be pacified and induced to settle on the dry lands of the interior, and also that the extensive province of Guayana would then be explored and pacified. That would be the only way to cause the Spaniards to occupy the fertile and vacant lands which the Indians fail to take advantage of, and secure the population of the banks and the neighborhood of the Orinoco River. This will be treated more in full in some other part of this Report, but the above has been stated beforehand in order to cause what I have said about the importance of these missions to be well understood. It is necessary for these two missionary bodies to be properly assisted, because it is through their work, and in no other way, that religion can be established in these vast Royal dominions, nor can in any other way these remote Provinces

be pacified and populated by Spaniards. Experience has shown in the whole America that the latter will not settle on any territory which has not been pacified.

---

#### Chapter IV.

*Present condition of the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona, which are the principal provinces of this Government—How little can be undertaken therein, and upon whom the execution of the order to move the Guayana depends.*

1. The poor condition in which the Government was in 1720, and the evident progress which, in the 43 years subsequent to that date, has taken place in the same, due to the missionary bodies which are engaged in the evangelization thereof, and without which none of the measures taken by my predecessors would have been of any effect, having been demonstrated, it is now proper to show what the condition of the same is at the present time, because this is a point to be considered for the execution of the Royal Order of May 27, 1762, directing that Guayana be moved to Angostura, and to explain furthermore upon whom the compliance with the said Royal Order depends.

2. I say, that notwithstanding the progress shown by me to have taken place in these Provinces, they are still in too poor a position as to be able to undertake in Guayana a project of this nature so superior to their forces, for, after all, they are little less than uninhabited, and have no more than eight towns, all of them very small. These towns are as follows: Five on the Northern coast; another (*San Balthasar de los Arias*, or *Cumanacóa*), at ten leagues distant from the capital of Cumaná; and in the midst of the mountains, the town of Aragua, and the settlement of El Pao, at the head of the extensive plains of Barcelona, which are the nearest to the Orinoco River, as all appears from the General Map.

3. Notes No. 3 and No. 6 of the Book of Notes explain the number of inhabitants as well as the resources and means of

these towns. I shall briefly mention here what is stated there.

The Capital of Cumaná has 550 *vecinos* (suburban residents), and 776 families, including those of the soldiers, and those inhabiting the valleys of Bordones, Mochima, Santa Fé, and the whole coast of the Gulf of Cariaco. The total population is 4,372, including the troops and 937 slaves of all races, ages and sexes, all subject to the only Parish existing in the city. All the able-bodied male inhabitants are enlisted for military service, but the whole force actually consists of 799 men, out of which 270 or 290 are white, the balance being negroes, mulattoes and half breeds. This capital, although the best of all these cities, as far as buildings are concerned, contains only about 80 very small, tile-roofed, stone houses, 150 houses, also small and tile-roofed, built out of timber and mud, and 200 houses, more or less, likewise made of mud and timber, but thatched roofed. The Parochial Church and the Convents are built out of the same materials. There are no public buildings in this city, and even those most necessary, as a jail, a City Hall, or a school are missing. Its inhabitants are all of limited resources; about one-third of their number, and these are the ones who are in better circumstances, are engaged in the cultivation of the soil and in raising cattle; another portion of the inhabitants is devoted to fishing and other maritime occupations; and the balance consists of government clerks, servants, and laborers, most of them in extreme poverty. Such is the capital of the most extensive government of Cumaná.

4. The second city in the same province is called San Balthasar de los Arias, which has 90 *vecinos* (suburban residents), 117 families, and 795 inhabitants, including 60 slaves. It contains 88 thatched-roofed timber and mud houses, and 213 men ready to take up arms, out of which 60 or 70 are white and all the others colored. The church is a small timber and mud, thatched-roofed building. There is no other public building. The residents of this town are extremely poor, although the lands around it are fertile.

5. The town of San Phelipe de Austria, distant from the capital twelve leagues by sea, and 18 or 20 by land, contains 200

*vecinos* (suburban residents), 250 families, 107 slaves, and 1,395 souls, 192 thatched-roofed houses, scattered through the neighboring grounds, belong to this town, and 270 men capable of bearing arms, 80 of which are white, all the others being colored. The church, although in a very bad condition, is the only stone building of its kind in the city. It is thatched roofed. The town has no other public building.

6. Carúpano, distant from the capital 30 or 34 leagues by land, and the same, more or less, by sea, has 170 *vecinos* (suburban residents), 187 families, and 928 inhabitants in all. The houses, all thatched roofed and scattered through the neighboring ground, are 168 in number. The men capable of carrying arms are 161. The church is in ruins.

7. Rio Caribes, distant from the capital 36 leagues by land and the same by sea, contains 130 families. The whole population, including in its number 25 slaves, is 1,077. It has 139 thatched-roofed houses, and 226 men capable of bearing arms, most of them colored. The church is of the same material as the houses.

8. At the time of my visit, the town of Araya had 298 families, 71 slaves, and a total population of 1,092, including the troops, the Guaiquery Indians, and 59 militiamen. A great number of these people are now scattered in other towns. They left the places when the fortress therein erected was demolished, and when the cisterns which supplied water both to the Spaniards and the Indians ceased to be of service.

9. In the Province of Barcelona the first city to be noticed is its capital with 550 *vecinos* (suburban residents), 605 families, and a total population of 3,351 inhabitants, including 635 slaves. The houses are 432, all of which, except 20, are frame and mud thatched-roofed buildings. The balance are covered with tiles. The city can muster 690 men capable of bearing arms, 250 out of this number are white while the others are colored. About one-third of the inhabitants is engaged in fishing industries and general seafaring. All the others are engaged in agricultural pursuits. The church, which was to be a stone building, has not been finished, and during the many years which have elapsed since the beginning

of the work only the foundation has been completed. There are neither workmen nor money to continue the building of the church. The city has no public building of any kind.

10. The town of Aragua has 150 *vecinos* (suburban residents), 180 families, and a total population of 824 inhabitants. There are about 150 houses, all of them thatched roofed. The church is built of the same material as the houses. There are about 145 men capable of carrying arms: all of them are colored, extremely poor, and engaged in the cultivation of the soil.

11. The town of El Pao has 90 *vecinos* (suburban residents), 121 families, and 632 inhabitants. The houses, all of them thatched roofed, are 90 in number. The church is of the same material. The men capable of bearing arms are 165, half of whom are white and the other colored.

12. In the written explanation to be found on the map a general idea has been given of the total number of regular troops and militia of this government, including the garrisons of Presidio and Guayana, and the demolished castle Araya, amounting in all to 3,288 men, 1,000 of whom, more or less, are white. The rest are half breeds, mulattoes, and negroes. The smallness of this force is rendered still more to be regretted on account of the distances between the towns and settlements where it is scattered. It would be impossible for any one to call together at once the whole militia; and if it were possible to do so, the calling would be injurious, as it would be equal to the taking away of many families from small towns or unprotected villages.

13. In addition to the scarcity of population in the eight towns above named it is to be noticed that skilled laborers can not be found in any of them, even for the most necessary things. In the capital of Cumaná there are two blacksmiths and they are only able to make nails and screws for the ships. Ship carpenters and carpenters of other kinds are in greater number, but none has sufficient skill to build a derrick or to construct an engine of any importance. There are three or four masons, but without sufficient skill to build well a stone wall, and this is the reason why all the churches within

the limits of this government, except at Barcelona, are made of timber and mud; that of Barcelona is unfinished, as has been stated, and although in Cumaná the people have undertaken to build a stone church and have accumulated already for this purpose 18,000 stones, with all the other necessary material, work has not yet been commenced for the lack of an architect. The people there are awaiting the arrival of the Bishop in order to decide from what place an architect can be brought; but I do not know how that can be done unless at extreme expense.

14. The above statements show the present condition of these Provinces. This knowledge is indispensable for anyone who wishes to form an exact idea of what can be undertaken in Guayana. There is no hope of securing assistance on the part of the Indians, because even those who might give it, owing to their having been Christianized and kept for a long time in obedience to the authorities, are settled in the northern provinces, or on the skirts of the mountains which run across the same, excepting the settlement of San Matheo, which is on the other side and at the entrance of the extensive plain of Barcelona, as shown by the above map. Those Christianized Indians are at a very great distance and cannot leave their homes and go to work on the Orinoco, in a climate very different from that to which they are accustomed. On the other hand, there is no way to compel them to march through the uninhabited plains and territory of the Province of Barcelona to go and work in the Province of Guayana.

15. It is further to be considered that the Caribbean Indians are mortal enemies of the native tribes which have been Christianized, and that therefore when the Indians belonging to the latter pass through the said plains on their way to Guayana a bloody encounter may take place, there being no way to prevent the Caribbean Indians from making an attack of this kind.

16. No dependence can be placed upon the Caribbean Missions of the Franciscan Fathers and the Catalonian Capucins of the Province of Guayana, because these Missions are recently established. The natives do not understand well the



language, and are not yet accustomed to obedience or to work too much, and if urged to do what they do not wish, they are very apt to run away and return to the forests. All measures of coercion would result in the abandonment of the Indian villages. In addition to the loss of those wretched people, many other irreparable injuries would be thereby inflicted.

17. The detriment to the interest of the inhabitants of the Spanish towns, which will be the consequence of the exact compliance with the Royal Order, as well as the large amount of money which will be required to comply with it, and the unconquerable difficulty which would have to be overcome, shall be made the subject of a proper explanation in the second part of this Report. That explanation will be better understood after having acquired the general knowledge herein given of the Presidio and Province of Guayana.

---

### Chapter V.

*What the Province of Guayana was in the year 1720, and what progress was made in it during the previous 141 years.*

1. In the year 1720 the Province of Guayana was a dependency of the Government of La Trinidad, and no other settlement existed in it than the *Presidio* and city of Santo Thomé, situated on the banks of the Usupamo River. The settlement consisted of only 20 or 25 houses, inhabited by as many *vecinos* deprived of all human assistance, and with no means whatever to clear the dense forests which surrounded the place, and which caused its climate to be unbearable. Provisions for the support of the people were scarce in the extreme, and generally no other food could be obtained than the fish of the river, which was of various classes, but always unwholesome, and apt to produce fevers, some game, and such vegetables as could be raised on the grounds nearest the city. The settlers did not venture to go too far from their abodes for fear of the Caribbean Indians, who infested the locality. The lack of proper food and the harshness of the

climate kept all these poor inhabitants without enjoying good health even for an hour.

2. The fortifications of the *Presidio* consisted only of the castle, called San Francisco, scarcely defensible on account of its feeble and almost ruined walls, and of the few men which it had to manage its poor artillery. There were only four or six cannons of small calibre and one 15-inch gun without its corresponding battery.

This, according to the testimony of three old men who still live in Guayana, was the miserable condition of that city in the year above named, and this is all the progress which was made there in the 141 years which elapsed ever since its foundation on the site on which it now stands, and to which it was moved from its original location seven leagues up the mouth of the Caroni River, opposite the Faxardo Island, as shown by the map hereto appended and by the statements of Father Gumilla, when referring to historian Herrera, in folio 10 of his "Orinoco Ilustrado."

---

## Chapter VI.

*Measures taken to fortify the Orinoco between 1694 and the month of May, 1762, when the matter was left as it now stands.*

1. In the year 1579, when, according to Father Gumilla, old Guayana had been plundered and burnt down, some of its inhabitants, showing a good deal of sound judgment, considered that the place where the city now stands was the most adequate to build it anew. As it was possible for them to fortify the rock on which the San Francisco Castle was erected, they and their successors were enabled, although with almost incredible perseverance, to maintain themselves in exile in such solitude. It was due to these pioneers that no foreigners could come and take possession of the Orinoco, because although the resistance which they could have made was not very great, it was sufficient, however, not to allow strangers to dislodge them from their position. This rendered them strong and respectable to the eyes of

the enemies. But as the number of inhabitants was so small, the castle so dilapidated, and the artillery so inferior, it was not possible for the people of Guayana to prevent the foreigners from passing up and down in front of their place. This could be done freely during the night, and also in day time, by the said foreigners united to the Caribbean Indians, who infested the unexplored districts of the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, and Caracas, and who, by navigating the Orinoco, could reach the Provinces of Caracas and Santa Fé, and plunder and burn all the missionary establishments which had been founded there. The Dutch, more especially than all other foreigners, used to trade with the Caribbean Indians and take away from their homes as many natives as they could to be put to work in the plantations of their own Colonies at Esquivo, Berbis, Surinama, and Corentin.

2. The sense of insecurity produced by these incursions of foreigners and Caribbean Indians, and the losses sustained, induced the Governors of La Trinidad, Cumaná, and Caracas, as well as the Franciscan Missionaries of Píritu, the Catalan Capucins of the Province of Guayana; the Andalusian Missionaries of Caracas, the Jesuits of the New Kingdom of Granada, and the Missionaries of the Meta and the Casanare rivers to address different memorials to His Majesty, asking him to graciously provide what in his Royal judgment would be conducive to stop the inhuman acts of the Caribbean savages and the unlawful trade of the Dutch. These representations received the kind consideration of His Majesty since 1694, and, in order to provide the proper remedy to the evils complained of, a report was asked of the Governors of La Trinidad and Guayana and the Prefects of the Franciscan, Capucin, and Jesuit Missions of the Orinoco. When these reports were given, they were referred by the Council to the Audience of Santa Fé, with instructions to substantiate the truth of their statements and to proceed, upon examination of experts, if the Audience by a majority of votes deemed it advisable to do so, to fortify the Orinoco River in such a manner as might be thought proper. Nothing was done in this respect, however, until the year 1719, when Don Antonio de Pedrosa

was attending to the organization of the vice royalty of Santa Fé. But it was decided in that year that an exploration and survey of the banks of the Orinoco should be made by some Jesuit Fathers and other persons of knowledge and experience. The result was a recommendation to fortify the Faxardo Island, which, for the reasons set forth in the Report, was deemed the best place for the purpose desired.

The Council, in an opinion dated June 7, 1723, submitted to His Majesty the above said recommendation; but as, in the meantime, some other representations had been made to His Majesty, by the authorities and people of these provinces, the action of His Majesty was suspended, until the Council could report on the new petitions. This gave occasion to three further opinions of the Council. Upon consideration of the whole subject His Majesty decided, by Decree of July 1, 1726, that a castle should be built, at the expense of the Royal Treasury, at the Faxardo Island, and that the direction of the work should be entrusted to Don Carlos de Sucre, who was at that time the Governor of the city of Cuba. In compliance with this decision of His Majesty the proper commission and papers were forwarded to Sucre on October 31, 1725. He was also appointed Governor of Cumaná, which Province, formerly a dependency of the Government of La Trinidad, was annexed to this Government of La Guayana, by Royal Letter, issued at Seville on the 30th of June, 1731. The said Royal Letter, as well as the commission and other papers sent to Sucre, are kept in the Archives, together with another Royal Ordinance, issued also at Seville, on December 22, 1729, which contains full instructions as to the building of the fortress at the Faxardo Island. This ordinance has been copied in the testimony hereto appended, from page 11 to page 16.

3. By Royal Letters of January 15, 1737, His Majesty directed Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, an engineer, who was then at Cartagena de Indias, to go to Guayana, examine the fortifications, and report to His Majesty about their condition and usefulness, as well as about any repairs which might be necessary. The engineer was also instructed to proceed in all this with the

advice of Don Agustin de Arredondo, Governor of La Trinidad. In compliance with this Royal decree, surveys and explorations were made of the mouths of the Orinoco, a portion of the river itself, the place named La Angostura, the site of Guayana and the Faxardo Island, and the work was done, a conference was held at La Trinidad, between Engineer Faxardo and Governor Arredondo, on June 28, 1733, wherein it was decided unanimously that the Castle of San Francisco de Asís should be left where it had been built, because its situation was the best and the most advantageous for its purposes along the whole course of the Orinoco, and that certain repairs should be made in it. It was decided also to fortify the Padrastro Hill, and to build another fort, on the island of Limones, opposite the San Francisco Castle. The fortification of the Faxardo Island was deemed useless and even injurious. All of this fully appears from the hereto appended testimony, from page 61 to page 68 ; but there is nothing to show that His Majesty, upon consideration of this Report of Engineer Faxardo and Governor Arredondo, should have been pleased to take action upon the subject. Mention has been made here of all this on account of its importance.

4. Don Carlos de Sucre took possession of the Government of Cumaná, in August, 1733 ; and in the month of February, 1734, after giving at his capital such orders as he thought proper, he started on his voyage to the Presidio of Guayana, taking with him the Engineer Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo, who was at Cumaná, on his way to Cartagena, after having fulfilled his mission on the Orinoco. When the Presidio was reached, Sucre examined the fortifications, and inspected with great care the Angostura and the Faxardo Island which he had been instructed to fortify. The result of his labors is embodied in the report submitted by him to His Majesty, on May 10, 1735, wherein he showed the impossibility of fortifying said Island, and said that all the previous reports given to the contrary had been given by people belonging to religious orders, who had no knowledge whatever in matters of fortification. This report made by Sucre, together with a memorial of Marquis San Phelipe, and another of the Governor of La Trinidad,

were referred by His Majesty to the Council of the Indies for the proper report. The Council thought it advisable, before passing any opinion on the subject, to hear some other persons, especially Fray Francisco del Castillo, one of the Píritu Missionaries. The latter reported that the Faxardo Island was useless for fortification purposes, and that the narrow part of the Orinoco, La Angostura, was precisely the best and most adequate place for the building thereon of the proposed Fortress. The council advised His Majesty to cause La Angostura to be fortified, as suggested in the above mentioned reports; and His Majesty decided accordingly on December 10, 1738.

5. Before His Majesty having taken any action on the representations made by Sucre, Father Joseph Gumilla sent to the Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies a memorial or report, urging, with arguments which have no weight for any one acquainted with the Orinoco, the fortification of the Faxardo Island, and criticizing the Report of Governor Sucre, as well as the statements of the Memorial of Marquis San Phelipe. All of this is shown by the hereto appended testimony, from page 20 to page 33. Another memorial of Marquis San Phelipe is to be found in the same testimony, from page 33 to page 40, wherein Father Gumilla's statements are refuted upon grounds much more substantial, and upon much better information. Father Gumilla doubtless had addressed His Majesty only to endorse the opinion of the Jesuits, who in 1719 had explored the Orinoco by order of Don Antonio de la Pedrosa. Father Gumilla's own ideas, as shown by a letter which he, in his own handwriting, wrote to my predecessor, Don Pedro Tavares, and can be found in the hereto appended testimony, from page 40 to page 42, were that the Faxardo Island was useless. In this letter he said that if he wrote to the contrary, was only to obey his superior, the Provincial of his order, who had ordered him to do so; but that in his own conscientious opinion the fortification of the Limones Island was much better, because it would close the Orinoco, and would be less expensive. To fortify the Faxardo Island, he said, would be equivalent to leave twelve leagues of territory to the mercy of the foreigners, and to open to them a

road for making incursions, without being molested, in the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona and Caracas. Some other important statements were made in this letter.

6. The Council took no action on either the memorial submitted to it by Father Gumilla, or the memorial filed also before it, in reply to Father Gumilla's statements, by Marquis San Phelipe; but it took both of them into proper consideration. When His Majesty was pleased to appoint Don Gregorio de Espinosa, Governor of Cumaná, giving him orders identical to those which his predecessor Don Carlos Sucre had received, the Council ordered its Fiscal, Don Joseph Borrull, to prepare the instruction, which bears date of December 3, 1739, and in which the whole history of the plan of the fortification of the Orinoco River, up to the date of the instruction, is accurately given, and this instruction was forwarded to Governor Espinosa, together with copies of the memorials of Father Gumilla and Marquis San Phelipe, in order that he might be able, with full knowledge of all the aspects of the case, to act as directed.

7. On June, 1740, Don Carlos de Sucre was succeeded by Don Gregorio de Espinosa, who brought with him Don Antonio Jordan, an engineer, whom he at once sent to El Presidio de Guayana to rebuild the city, which had been plundered and burnt down by an English corsair, and to make at La Angostura and the Faxardo Island such surveys as the condition of the waters of the Orinoco would permit at that season. Governor Espinosa remained at the capital to attend to certain war business which required his presence. Jordan died while performing his duties, and although Governor Espinosa wrote to the Governor of Caracas and the Viceroy of Santa Fé, asking them respectively for another engineer to continue the work, none could be found. For this reason Governor Espinosa decided, in 1743, personally to go to the said Presidio, in company with some persons of experience, complete the explorations and surveys of La Angostura and the Faxardo Islands and examine the situation of Guayana. The Governor and his companions were all of the opinion that the fortress should be built on the Island of Limones, at the mouth of the channel opposite the San Francisco Castle. This site

was decided to be the only one adequate to close the river. A report to this effect was sent to His Majesty, through his Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies; but no action was taken, and things continued during the whole period of Governor Espinosa's administration as they had been before.

8. In December, 1745, Brigadier General Don Diego Tavares was appointed to succeed Don Gregorio de Espinosa. He was given the same instructions as Sucre and Espinosa, in regard to the fortification of the Orinoco, and, to facilitate his action, he was supplied with a copy of the instruction drawn up by Fiscal Don Joseph Borrull, and of the memorials of Father Gumilla, and Marquis San Phelipe. A note, written by Don Fernando Treviño, Secretary of the Council, was appended to Fiscal Borrull's instruction explaining what had been done during Governor Espinosa's administration. The idea was that Governor Tavares, being thus well acquainted with all the facts, should proceed as directed. All of this fully appears from the Royal ordinance of December 9, 1745, and other documents, from page 42 to page 55 of the testimony hereto appended.

9. Brigadier General Tavares took possession of the Government on May, 1746, and personally went to El Presidio of Guayana in the month of February, 1747, in company with Don Gaspar de Lara, an engineer whom he had brought from Spain. Upon examination of the locality, as well as a proper study of all the points set forth in the Royal instructions, the Governor and the engineer agreed to the following: That the fortress should be built on the island of Limones, near the mouth of the channel of the same name. This agreement, together with certain maps then made, and a statement of the grounds on which the decision had rested, was sent by the Governor to His Excellency Don Sebastian de Esclava, Viceroy of Santa Fé, to whom His Majesty, as shown by the instructions and Royal orders copied in the hereto appended testimony, had entrusted the final disposition of this matter. While waiting for the action of the Viceroy, Tavares returned to the capital of Cumaná, not without leaving instructions to Don Juan de Dios Valdés, the officer in command of El Pre-



sidio, to clear a part of the woods of the island of Limones and observe what effect the risings of the Orinoco were likely to produce on the soil of the island. All of this was done by Valdés, as will be explained hereafter.

10. The Viceroy of Santa Fé referred the letter of Governor Tavares, together with the map and drawings which accompanied it, to Don Juan Bautista Mac Evan, Engineer-in-Chief at Cartagena; and upon the favorable report of this official he imparted his approval to the selection of the site, as well as to all the other recommendations of Governor Tavares for the erection of the Fortress, and directed the work to be proceeded with at once. (See Testimony, from page 86 to page 92.) Nothing practical could be done, however, at that time, because the officials of the Royal Treasury at Caracas, from whom the necessary funds were asked, failed to send them. No money was obtained until 1752, when the Viceroy of Santa Fé sent sixteen thousand dollars, at which sum the work had been estimated. The Viceroy had been instructed to do so by Royal order transmitted to him by His Excellency the Marquis de la Ensenada, the text of which can be seen from page 92 to page 94 of the Testimony.

11. In the year 1753, when the moneys were at hand and the good season had arrived, Governor Tavares and Engineer Lara went again to Guayana in order to begin the building of the Fortress; but they found, as reported by Commandant Don Juan de Dios Valdés, that in consequence of the clearing of the woods at the Island of Limones, the waters of the Orinoco had washed out in the same island some 23 yards of land, which the said Commandant declared to be swampy and easy to be carried away. (See from page 55 to page 61 of the Testimony.) The truth of these facts having been ascertained, the Governor and the Engineer decided to build the fortress on such substantial and firm a ground as might be found on the opposite bank, on some place which the waters of the river could not easily reach, and to begin at once to build the foundations. So it was done, as stated from page 68 to page 84 of the Testimony, wherein a particular account is given of all the reasons which moved the aforesaid officials to take this action.

This account was illustrated with a map and drawing showing without effort the situation, as well as the shape and size of the Fortress.

12. On June of the same year, 1753, Governor Don Diego de Tavares was promoted and sent as Governor to Cartagena. His successor, Don Matheo Gual, received from him the Fortress San Fernando, with its foundations almost at the level of the ground. Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara was then under arrest.

13. Governor Gual reported to His Majesty by letters of October, 1753, and June, 1754, the condition in which the Fortress was, the amount of money, which out of the sixteen thousand dollars appropriated for the works by the Viceroy of Santa Fé, had been expended, the balance which was at hand, and the circumstance that Engineer Lara had been put under arrest by his predecessor.

14. His Majesty, by Royal Order transmitted by Your Excellency, under date of Madrid, July 23, 1755, was pleased to direct the work for the building of the Fortress to be continued in earnest, making use of the money which had been left unexpended, out of the said \$16,000, and also of any other unappropriated moneys which might be found in the Treasury, if so proved to be necessary. His Majesty expressed the wish that the next report to be submitted to the Crown on the subject should be that the work was finished or very near to be so. It was urged furthermore that brick and not stone of the class which had been objected to, should be used. His Majesty decreed also that Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara should be set at liberty and put in charge of the work, under the supervision of the Viceroy and the Governor, or the representative of the latter at Guayana, but without allowing any other person to interfere with him, as far as his profession was concerned; that from time to time without stopping the work, a report should be sent to the Viceroy showing exactly all that had been done; and that, in case the balance of the appropriation should be found insufficient, a requisition for the amount needed should be made to the Viceroy, who would provide the means necessary to complete the work. All of this is shown by the Royal

Order above cited, which can be read from page 94 to page 96 of the hereto appended Testimony.

15. When Governor Gual received this Royal Order he had already, by order of the Viceroy, sent to Spain Engineer Lara. For this reason, the said Viceroy, to whom instructions to the same effect as the Royal Order had been transmitted, decided on August 17, 1756, to put the work in charge of Don Gaspar de Salaverría, a military officer of high rank (*sargento mayor*) of this place, who was directed to make at once an estimate of the amount of money, if any, which would be required, in addition to the balance in hand and the material not yet used. This estimate having been made and approved by the Viceroy, the proper orders were issued by him to the Treasury to furnish the 9,204 dollars and  $1\frac{1}{2}$  *reales*, which, in addition to the unexpended moneys of the first appropriation, amounting to 5,200 dollars and 6 *reales*, and the material not used as yet, were required. (See from page 96 to page 104 of the Testimony.)

16. All of this having been done and duly reported, Major Salaverría went to Guayana, and in the month of February, 1757, began again to work on the Fortress, using the same foundations which Engineer Lara had built. Governor Gual gave him, during the whole period of his government, all the assistance he could, and his successor, Governor Don Nicolás de Castro, who received his appointment in December, 1757, did the same thing until January, 1759, when I was appointed in his place.

17. As soon as I became acquainted with this business, I wrote to Engineer Salaverría, urging him to hasten the work as much as could be done without interfering with its strength, and with the orders of both His Majesty the King and the Viceroy. I told him furthermore, to keep me advised of everything which might happen, and to ask me for such assistance as might be required. This assistance I gave him to the full extent of his wishes, until he wrote to me, while I was at Cabrera, in the Boundary Commission, that the foundations of the house had been damaged, to which I replied what seemed to me to be just. Then, upon my return to this capi-

tal, Salaverría came to see me, and informed me that the walls of the Fortress had been cracked, but that this accident was not serious. I thought this information important enough to cause an investigation to be started, and ascertain the facts and their explanation, independently of my going personally to the Presidio and becoming acquainted, through my own inspection, with the defects of the work. So it was done, and on the 29th of December, 1760, I submitted to His Majesty the result of the investigation. The same information was transmitted by me, at the same time, to the Viceroy, who, on the 23d of June, 1761, approved my action, and directed me to await the decision of His Majesty.

18. The King, by Royal order of October 7th, '67, transmitted to me by Your Excellency, was pleased to approve the suspension of the work until I could make the promised visit to the fort and report about its condition. The Royal order further said that it had been deemed advisable to cause the works to be inspected also by the engineer of Caracas, and that instructions to that effect had been sent to the Governor of the Province last named.

19. When I received this Royal order, I had already made the visit to which it refers, examined the fortress, made an investigation, additional and supplementary to the former one, and fully ascertained that the ruin of the fortress was inevitable and impending. For these reasons, and acting in conformity with a report of Juan Parrilla, an architect, or builder, who assured me, upon some grounds which I shall set forth hereafter when explaining the present state of the fortifications of Guayana, that the evil was irremediable, I sent a full report to His Majesty, dated September 23, 1761. A copy of this report and of all the papers therein referred to was also sent to the Viceroy, on the 28th of February, '62. The Viceroy said to me in reply, July 30th, to wait for the decision which His Majesty might be pleased to give upon examination of the papers submitted by me and of the report of the Caracas engineer, whom the Viceroy supposed to be at the Fort doing his work of inspection. But the engineer never went there, owing on the one side to the war which had just broken out and re-

quired his presence at Caracas, and on the other side to an attack of gout, which at last culminated in his death.

20. During the month of April of the present year I received a Royal order, transmitted by Your Excellency, dated May 27, 1762, a copy of which is to be found at the beginning of the testimony hereto appended, in which His Majesty was pleased to command, among other things, that an armour should be built all around the walls of Fort Limones, at a distance of nine feet, and penetrating into the ground to a depth of four feet lower than the foundations; that the earthworks which are now at this Fort should be raised so as to make them two and a half feet higher; that the proper number of portholes should be open on the walls for the use of the artillery, the said portholes to be provided with ports; that the whole building of the fort should be roofed with a flat roof, provided with as many skylights as might be necessary to give light to the building, and fixed in such a way as to allow the sentinels freely to communicate with each other; that the artillery of the fort should consist of four guns, two of them 8-inch guns, to prevent an attack from the water side, and the two others 4-inch guns, to prevent an attack from land; and that four swivel guns should also be mounted on the flat roof. These provisions, as well as others of the Royal order, have given occasion to this Report.

The particulars above stated show what the condition of this work, commenced in 1694, is at present. They show also that we are confronted with the inevitable necessity of abandoning the said fort, for the reasons which will be explained in the second and the third parts of this Report.

---

## Chapter VII.

*Progress made in the Province of Guayana from the year 1720 to the present year 1763.*

1. The deplorable condition, already described, of the Presidio and Province of Guayana, in 1720, remained unchanged until 1734, when Don Carlos Sucre decided to go there. He took

with him three gunboats, a number of troops, picked up from the garrison of Araya, and several civilians who had agreed to go and settle there as *vecinos* (suburban residents); and after exploring thoroughly the Faxardo Island and the Angostura of the Orinoco, and making to His Majesty a full report of his work, he engaged himself, while waiting for the Royal answer, in repairing the buildings and improving the condition of the Presidio and the Province. He ordered the thick forests which surrounded the settlement to be cleared, and caused new houses to be built for the accommodation of the new inhabitants and the troops. He rebuilt, as far as the funds at his disposal could permit, the San Francisco Castle. He opened communication by land, up to this time never thought of, between the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona. He made several preparations to pursue the Dutch and other foreigners, who in union with the Caribbean Indians used to raid the said Provinces and the Orinoco River, and ejected from the mouths of that river and the Barima channel the Swedes who had attempted to settle at that place. All of this is shown by the General Map and the two Royal Letters from pages 16 and the following up to page 19 of the Testimony. He assisted the Missions of the Catalanian Capucins, which had commenced their work since 1724. And finally, he took many other measures which rendered the condition of Guayana more tolerable.

Sucre remained there until the month of June, '40, when he came back to the capital of Cumaná, and resigned his command into the hands of his successor, Governor Don Gregorio de Espinosa.

2. During the month of December of the same year, '40, the Presidio was surprised by the attack of an English corsair, who took possession of the hill, and succeeded with the fire of his muskets in driving away from the San Francisco Castle the few men who formed its garrison, and taking possession of it. Soon afterwards the English made an attack against the town, which they plundered. They burnt all the houses and sent a detachment to the nearest Missions, which they also destroyed by fire. They did all the harm they could to the

San Francisco Castle, and then they embarked and set sail. This unexpected event caused the Indians of certain villages to rise up in arms against us ; but they were pacified and induced again to leave the woods and settle in villages as before. This result was due to the measures taken by Governor Espinosa, who put Don Antonio Jordan, an officer of the Engineer Corps, in command of the Presidio, and sent there from Barcelona a detachment of the militia of that Province.

3. Upon Jordan's arrival at the Presidio, and as soon as the pacification of the Indians was accomplished, work was begun in earnest to build the town on the site where it now stands, as appears from Figure No. 2 on the map. In this work Jordan was aided by the old settlers and soldiers who had survived the attack and taken refuge in the mountains. But not much could be done then, owing to the death of Engineer Jordan, which occurred in September, '41, the dispersion of some of the old settlers, the death of some others and the extreme destitution in which the balance of the inhabitants of that locality was left. No particular improvement was noticed during the whole of Governor Espinosa's command.

4. During the administration of Governor Don Diego Tavares, the building of the San Fernando Fort was begun, as I have already said ; the Fortress of San Diego, or El Padrastro, was completed ; and the damage done by the Indians in the San Francisco Castle was repaired.

5. Governors Don Matheo Gual, Don Nicolás de Castro, and myself have done our utmost, taking into consideration the defenseless state of the Presidio, and stretched our powers to the farthest limit, in order to restore what had been destroyed, and to place that most important point in the condition in which it is now. We have succeeded in inducing some people to go and settle there. We have assisted them to build their houses, one near the other, in the good order which may be noticed on Figure No. 2 of the map hereto appended. We have cleared all the woods around the settlement. We have built kilns, and established brick and tile manufactories, provided with the proper sheds where the manufactured articles as well as the material for their construction is protected

against the heavy rains of the country. We have repaired the fortifications and put the San Francisco Castle in condition to defend itself. We have completed the garrison of the Presidio, which although consisting of mulattoes, half breeds, and negroes, with only a few whites, was never as numerous and as capable to inspire the Caribbean Indians with respect, and to prevent the foreigners from navigating the Orinoco as freely as they formerly used to do. At present they do not dare venture beyond the Presidio, because owing to the subjection of the Indians they are unable to get pilots or guides. All those who have attempted to pass that limit have been either arrested or put to flight. The affairs of the Royal Treasury have been put in good order; the keeping of the accounts has been organized in proper form; and measures have been taken to enable its head to furnish annually a sum of money, which, although small, is sufficient to keep the fortifications in good repair, and to provide them with the necessary ordnance and ammunition, a state of things never witnessed before, when the expenses had to be met with funds received from outside sources. The Missions in charge of the Catalonian Capucins have been assisted. The Caribbean Indians and the Dutch who, by way of the Cuyuni and Mazaroni Rivers, and on the rear of the said Missions, had attempted to wage hostilities against them, have been driven away and pursued. Troops have been sent against these enemies, and a fortified house, built by the Dutch on the banks of the Cuyuni river, where they had gathered all the Indians of other tribes captured by the Caribbeans and sold to them for mere trifles, was assaulted and taken. A number of fire arms was found in that house, and a Dutchman, who was a miner by occupation, and had undoubtedly come there to make mining explorations and surveys, was also found and captured. The testimony appended to this Report contains from page 105 to page 140 a full statement of these facts, together with a copy of the current account which the Dutch kept with the Caribbean Indians, and the proper notice of the death of two men of that expedition.

The progress shown by the above to have taken place in the Province and Presidio of Guayana is of great importance. The



condition of the one and the other in 1734 was miserable. It was just as bad, if not worse, in 1740, after the attack of the Presidio and the burning of the town. But now (1763), although not flourishing enough to justify the statement that the Presidio can defend itself against enemies, it can be deemed sufficient to secure the respect of all foreigners and prevent them from engaging in unlawful trade. All of this will be shown still more in full in other parts of this Report.

---

### Chapter VIII.

*The fact that the Dutch have not settled in the central part of the Province of Guayana, and all the progress made at the Presidio, are due to the Mission of the Catalonian Capucins. The Presidio can not stand without the Mission, nor can the Mission stand without the Presidio.*

1. As the Aragonese Capucins and the Franciscan Fathers of Píritu pacified the Provinces of Cumaná and Barcelona where they are engaged in evangelical labors, they having been instrumental to the settlement by Spanish people of the vast territories of said Provinces, and to the foundation of the town of Aragua, and the villages of Concepción del Pao, Rio Caribe and Carúpano, as stated in the proper place, so also the Catalonian Capucins who came to the Province of Guayana, pacified its Indians; reduced to subjection a great number of them; prevented the Dutch from settling in the interior of the Province; assisted the Presidio and city of Santo Thomé; caused things there to have reached the state in which they are now; closed the Orinoco to the inhuman commerce of the Caribbean Indians and of the Dutch; prevented the latter as well as other foreigners from running through the country, freely, as they used to do in former times in the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Varinas and Santa Fé; did what never could have been done before in spite of the measures taken ever since 1694; caused the Presidio to be a serious establishment; improved the fortifications of the same; secured thereby

the settlement and population of the Province; established sixteen Missions; and founded, eight leagues towards the interior, the new town of San Antonio de Upata, which will hereafter secure respect to those places.

2. In Note No. 10 of the Book of Notes, I stated that the above-named Catalonian missionaries began to work successfully in 1724, and I explained the reasons why neither they nor any other missionaries have been able to do anything of importance. I said that in the year above-mentioned, those Fathers founded a Mission, which was the first, and which they named "La Concepción del Suay." I also stated that at the time of my visit the number of the Missions founded by them had grown up to sixteen, without counting eight more, which had been founded during the same intervening period, but had been disorganized and disbanded. And I gave furthermore a detailed explanation of the condition in which the said Missions were at the time of my visit, and of the causes which had produced the loss of the establishments of the same kind which had been ruined. As all this is shown by the hereto appended Testimony, from page 141 to page 149, I will not dwell any longer in discussing this subject.

3. In said Note No. 10, as well as in Note No. 8, of the same Book of Notes, I insisted upon the vast importance of these Missions, both for the purpose of preventing the Dutch from reaching the interior of the country, by way of the Cuyuni and the Mazaroni Rivers, the position of which can be learned by looking at the General Map, and of protecting the Presidio, to which they furnish provisions, and the number of Indians needed to man the ships engaged in trade at that place, and to do such other works, public as well as private, as may become necessary.

On the other hand, while it is true that without the Missions the Presidio can not be maintained, it is likewise true that without the Presidio the Missions themselves would go to ruin. This is the point which I shall endeavor to prove.

4. The growth of the Presidio and the fact that its establishment has become day by day more permanent and important, have permitted it to provide the missionaries with such escort

as they needed to continue their explorations southwards, and found, among others, such villages as El Nato, El Yuruario, and Ave Chica, the latter at about 40 or 45 leagues from the Presidio, all of them on the banks of rivers which empty into the Cuyuni, as can be seen in the General Map. By means of these Missions, serving as advance posts, the Dutch and their assistants, the Caribbean Indians, have been prevented, to a great extent, from reaching the interior of the country through the Cuyuni and the Mazaroni Rivers, committing acts of hostility, kidnapping Indians, not belonging to the Caribbean tribe, and starting some settlements of their own in the center of this Province. Several expeditions, the last of which was organized in 1758, have been fitted out, at diverse periods, to frustrate those invasions. The expedition last mentioned succeeded, as before stated, in possessing itself of the fortified place which the invaders had built on the banks of the Cuyuni River, which fact had been reported by the missionaries, upon information furnished them by the Indians inhabiting villages in the neighborhood of said river. All of this is fully proved by the hereto appended Testimony from page 105 to page 140. It is self-evident, according to that Testimony, that it is a matter of vital importance to continue these Missions southwards, and to likewise establish in that direction, on the most fertile plains of the central part of that Province, as many towns and villages as may be possible. To secure this most desirable result, it is indispensable that the Missionary Fathers be given assistance which I explained to His Majesty, when I gave an account of the general visit, and is stated from page 251 to page 252 on the Testimony. There is no other way to check the Dutch, and prevent them from making settlements, as they attempt to do, in the section of the country aforesaid, which, although unexplored, is watched by the neighboring towns and villages, and kept under the vigilant eyes of the missionaries, who can report at once to the Presidio anything which happens.

5. When in the year 1724 the first Mission, namely, the Mission of La Concepción del Suay, was established, the Presidio found itself in the same wretched condition in which it was in.

1720. It continued in the same state until 1734, when Don Carlos Sucre visited it, and directed, among many other useful things, that the missionaries should be provided with an escort, as strong as could be gathered there, and with such abundant supplies as could be obtained, in order to enable them to continue their march toward the interior of the country. The result of this measure was that the Missionary Fathers could, as they went farther on in their explorations, establish on fertile lands the two new Missions of "San Francisco de Alta-gracia" and "The Divine Shepherdess," and continue and properly support the other four Missions which they had already founded in the immediate neighborhood of the Orinoco River, on lands rather sandy and of little fertility.

6. After the establishment of the two new Missions above named, and others which were founded afterwards, the Indians who had settled in them began, under the care of the missionaries, to cultivate the land on a larger scale, and reap therefore larger crops than were required for the support of the inhabitants of the towns and villages. The surplus was then, as it is still, given to the Presidio, and it can be said, safely, that without this assistance it would have been impossible for the Presidio to support the people which live in it. Nor would it have been possible for the people who were engaged in commercial trade in the region of the Orinoco to carry on their business with as much facility as they can do at present, had it not been for the fact that at the Presidio they can find abundant provision of casabe and other supplies sent there by the missionaries. Should the Missions fail at any time to furnish this assistance, the inhabitants of the Presidio would certainly starve. Supplies from other sources would be very costly, and only to be obtained at very distant places.

7. The provisions with which the Presidio is daily supplied consist of casabe, corn, rice, fruit, and poultry. All the soap consumed at the Presidio is also given to it. But all of this is furnished, not by all the villages, but only by four or five out of their number, which are surrounded by fertile lands, and are inhabited by Indians already civilized and educated, whose effects are managed by the missionaries with great order

and economy. These natives are, therefore, well dressed and supplied with everything necessary, including tools and implements for agricultural and other purposes. Some other Missions might be able to do the same as the five just referred to, because of their enjoying identical advantages as to the fertility of the land; but so far they are prevented from contributing, as explained, owing to the recent date of their foundation, to the fact that the Indians who have settled in them are not as yet fully accustomed to work, to the great distance which separates them from the Presidio, which, together with the difficulty of communication, increases the cost of transportation, and deters the Presidio from looking to them for its supplies, except in case of extreme necessity.

8. The Missions in the neighborhood of the Orinoco can not furnish anything to the Presidio, owing to their being located on sandy ground, of no fertility at all, and to the fact that their inhabitants, as I have said in Note No. 10, above cited, are rather fishermen than agriculturists.

9. The provisions furnished by the five villages above referred to are not given in excessive abundance; but they are sufficient for the support of the garrison and of the inhabitants, not many in number, of the place, and for supplying what is necessary to the small ships which are engaged in the trading business of the locality, or which occasionally arrive at the Presidio. This sufficiency, however, is very apt to disappear, from the very moment in which scarcity is felt, in any of the five villages above referred to, whether on account of bad crops due to climaterical conditions or to the failure to pay proper attention to the agricultural labors. The fact that the Indians are sometimes withdrawn from the fields and taken to the ships to man them, or to some town or village or elsewhere to work, to build houses or other edifices, as well as roads, etc.—a work which no other Indians less civilized can do—is often the cause of great distress in the Presidio. This lacking of the necessary provisions is not at the Presidio a very remote accident. It is on the contrary a matter of very frequent occurrence. During my own term of office it has happened threetimes, one of them, namely, in the year 1762, when

the distress was such as to cause me to feel extremely uneasy, all the efforts of the officer commanding the Presidio, of the Prefect of the Missions, and of myself having failed to secure an extra supply of one hundred loads of casabe, to be kept in store and meet any future emergency, as an invasion of the place, or any other accident. Should the place have been invaded, as it was very near to happen, it would have been very difficult for it to resist the enemy, owing to the lack of provisions. It is shown from page 190 to page 196 of the Testimony hereto appended that the scarcity of the said provisions is daily felt at the Presidio. Further evidence of this fact might easily have been produced, but I have decided to omit it, in order not to increase unnecessarily the volume of the said Testimony. All this proves how important it is for the Presidio that the Missions be caused to reach a state as flourishing as possible; and it proves also, as I shall explain more in full in Part Second of this Report, that the insufficient supply of provisions to be so far obtained from the Missions precludes the Royal Order of May 27, for the transfer of the city to the place called "La Angostura," from being carried into effect.

10. But while it is true that the said Missions are of extreme importance to the Presidio, on account of the provisions which they supply to it, this is not the only cause which makes the existence and progress of the Presidio dependent upon the existence and progress of the Missions. All the works of all kinds undertaken at the Presidio, which are numerous, and require on some occasions a long period of time to be finished, have been and are undertaken and completed with the labor of Indians supplied by the Missions. These Indians have repaired the fortifications; they have built the San Fernando Castle; they have made the bricks and the lime, and prepared all other materials necessary for these works. They also man the ships which necessarily have to be fitted out and equipped for the necessities of the service, as for instance the government vessel which yearly goes to Santa Fè, and the two barges which during the whole of last year, owing to the state of war, were stationed at the principal mouths of the Orinoco, to watch, and report at once, should

any vessel or vessels be discovered by them to try to enter the river, in order to avoid surprises. All of this is shown by Chapter V of the Instruction given by me to the commanding officer of the Presidio, Don Juan de Dios Valdés, wherein I explained to him what had to be done to defend and preserve the Presidio should it be attacked. Said Instruction is to be found from page 177 to page 186 of the hereto appended Testimony.

11. It must be noticed, owing to its importance for the proper understanding of what will be said in Part Second of this Report, that it is extremely difficult for the Missions to supply these Indian laborers. They do not leave their villages, except very reluctantly, and if, once at the Presidio, they are not treated kindly, there is no way to keep them there. At the very first opportunity which presents itself to them they run away and take refuge in the woods. Only in a few cases they come back to their villages. And as a general rule, no matter how good the treatment of these Indians may be, it is always impossible to keep them at work for more than eight days. It was with extreme difficulty that the barges above referred to could be kept with the proper crew.

12. Another thing to be taken into consideration is the small number of Indian laborers which can be furnished conveniently to do this work, owing to the great distance between most of the Missions and the Presidio, as can be easily seen upon inspection of the General Map, and also to the fact, well shown by the hereto appended Testimony, that a large proportion of the Indians gathered within the Missions in the immediate neighborhood of the Presidio are still heathens. Hence, it is, that the five Missions, whose inmates, as above said, are fully christianized, are the only ones called upon to furnish laborers, as well as the provisions, without which the Presidio could not be kept in existence. It is plain that the cultivation of the soil, and the raising of the crops, which are primary objects, because without them no food could be obtained, has to be abandoned, or neglected, or conducted on a lesser scale, if the Indian laborers are taken away from the fields and compelled

to do the other work which is mentioned in Part Second of this Report.

13. But, if the Missions are absolutely indispensable for the preservation of the Presidio, the Presidio is also indispensable, as has been stated, for the preservation of the Missions. The latter would be disorganized and disbanded if the Presidio would not give them some protection. This is the reason why most of the Missions are new and inhabited by Indians who did not leave the woods but very recently, and feel more inclination to their old way of living than to the present one. Were it not for the respect and fear with which the troops of the Presidio inspire them, it is probable that they would go back to the woods, or engage in wrongful acts. The presence of these troops is very necessary, as the Indians are used to see their prompt arrival at the places where public order and peace have been disturbed, and their efficiency in putting an end to the uprisings. The need of this assistance is felt more especially at those Missions whose inhabitants belong to the Caribbean race, and are by nature haughty, unruly and apt to rebel. The Testimony hereto appended shows what the lessons of experience in this respect have been; and it is clear that if for some unfortunate circumstances the Presidio is attacked by the enemies of the Royal Crown and falls into their hands, the Missions would at once be destroyed. Their own inhabitants would plunder them, and after burning them to the ground would return to the forests. That was the lesson of 1740, in which the Indians did much more harm than the English. From here it is to be concluded that even in case that the Presidio would be productive of no other advantage than being instrumental to the preservation of the Missions, it should be entitled to receive the most serious attention. But this is not the only reason which makes it deserving of that attention. It will be shown by this Report that the safety of all these Provinces depends upon the preservation in good order of the said Presidio, and that without it, neither could any new Mission be established farther on in the country, nor could the old ones be preserved on account of the warlike, traitorous and ferocious disposition of the Caribbean Indians.



## Chapter IX.

*Present condition of the fortifications and defences of the city of Santo Thomé of Guayana and the Spanish settlement of this Province, where a difference is found from what it was at the time of the visit.*

1. By the ninth note of this memorandum, and in reference to the proceedings of the general visit, I gave a condensed account of the defences of Guayana, its fortifications, military garrisons, salaries paid and funds assigned to the same, militia, population, families, houses contained in the city and plantations owned by the neighbors, condition of the church, ministers serving it, and what is known of the settlement of the so-called cities "Real Corona" and "Ciudad Real," and the circumstances which seemed to me sufficient at that time, not dealing then with the present subject; but to-day it is indispensable to extend them more in detail as I will express them to show, on the second part, the irreparable injury, excessive disbursements and extreme difficulties brought about by the practical enforcement of the Royal Order for the transfer of the city to the Angostura.

2. And to make it more clearly understood, as the subject requires it, I will follow the same method of the above ninth note.

3. I said then: *that the defences and city of Santo Thomé are situated at eight degrees seventeen minutes north latitude and three hundred and fourteen degrees seventeen minutes and a half longitude. I have nothing to add on this point.* I said likewise *that it was the capital and only settlement of this unknown Province;* not considering as cities those of Real Corona and Ciudad Real, for the reasons I exposed in the last chapters of the ninth and tenth notes, and here I will show likewise that after said visit, and without any cost to the King, the new population of San Antonio of Upata has been founded, being situated inland, at a distance of eight leagues from the fortress and between the Missions of Alta Gracia and Copapui, as shown by the general map, that I will explain in due time.

4. I said likewise: that the temperature of the fortress is damp and warm, very insalubrious and the soil far from fertile, as it is sandy and not different from the rest of that of the banks of the Orinoco, that overflowing the same occasionally forms large deposits of water or lagoons, which forming thick woods very close and with the heat of the climate raise magignant vapors, infecting the air and producing dense clouds of mosquitoes, horse flies and insects, making the margins of the Orinoco hardly inhabitable and the sandy soil unproductive.

5. *That the fortress and city are situated on the banks of the river and at about its narrowest part (except the Angostura), and close to the first mouths or islands which commence to divide it ; as it is shown by the general map and more particularly by the greater point in the accompanying one, in which are shown all the inundated places, and thick woods, commencing at the Castle down below, and necessarily to be past by the embarkations employed in the traffic of the Orinoco and the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona and Caracas in front of the fortress, which being once secured, said Provinces are so likewise; which is not the case with the fortifications of Angostura, no matter how strongly they are built, as I will show in my second part.*

6. *That the breadth from the fortifications to the opposite side of said river is hardly within reach of a 24-pounder gun, not by elevation but at a long range.*

7. *That the bottom, in the greatest part of the breadth, is from 70 to 80 fathoms; being understood that that is at the full flood of the river, and that at the lowest ebb it is from 60 to 65 fathoms, and on this point I depend on the experiments of the engineers Fajardo and Jordan, as I have not made the soundings personally; although I am persuaded that it is so, as the waters and the channel become reduced and much deeper at that part of the river.*

8. *That on the same bank, and almost horizontally to the water, the Castle of San Francisco de Asis is situated, as recognized by said general map and the accompanying one. On the figure 3, a plan is observed and briefly explained in the third chap-*

ter of the margin of the same map, corresponding to the same figure 3.

9. Said Castle is placed upon a rock so solid that it looks like iron, and therefore does not admit of either pickaxe or crowbar, yielding only to the heat, as when it is properly heated and suddenly watered the cold water makes splits, and that is the only means found to build the parade grounds, which were occupied by the top of said rock, and although something remains yet to make it plain—before the rock forming the Castle, joined to it, there is another rock, within the river, as may be seen by the map covering part of the walls of the Castle, leaving the place free for the fires opened by the artillery mounted on that place. Between that rock, called Peñon, and the Castle there is a channel, 25 to 30 yards in breadth, that in time of the lowest ebb remains with so little water as to make the pass from the land to the Peñon almost free from the least risk, and in some years that channel has been entirely dry. The fundamental rock of the Castle is very steep, before the channel formed with the Peñon, the ascent being most difficult, and still worse the entrance of launches into said channel.

10. The above-mentioned Peñon, during the low ebb of the river, discovers about twenty-one to twenty-two yards (varas), and in the full tide of the river the waters have covered it, leaving sufficient bottom for four or five yards, having an instance in which a sloop of seventy-four cannons was anchored there.

11. The first settlers who founded the fortress fortified said rock, which afterwards has been improved with walls, and therefore this Castle has been constructed in an irregular shape, as may be seen by the plan and figure 3 of the accompanying map. It is sixty Spanish yards long and thirty and a half in breadth, as shown by its particular site and denoted by the lines O Q, cutting the plan. The door is marked by the letter A. The B, the new lodgings for the officers, which were built, among other repairs to the fortification, on account of the war and for the purpose of mounting upon the flat roof three guns of the caliber marked with the interior numbers

2, 3 and 2 (*sic*). The C denotes the new battery built for the same purpose. (The reasons considered for the formation of said two batteries and the other repairs to the fortifications will be explained in a separate paragraph.)

12. This battery is raised over the level of the parade ground, three Castillian yards and is reached without any steps or ladder, through a slope formed by the rock, which answers likewise for the ascent of the place to the cavalier, and from said battery, with an elevation of two regular steps, the flat roof of the lodging house and the battery B is reached.

13. The dotted line in the interior of said sketch marks the newly-made esplanades on account of the war. The D, marks the cavalier or bastion raised above the parade ground about three and a half Spanish yards, reached by the ascent of the slope. The E, the ammunition store of the fortification. F, the drilling room. G, officers lodgings; and H, the powder magazine. The last four apartments are intended to be reconstructed, as I will explain. The I, the water closet. J, the troop headquarters. N, the rock upon which the Castle is built, without any terre-plein, and answering for a parade ground and cavalier. The inside numbers show the mounted artillery and the calibers.

14. The thickness of the walls around this fortification is  $1\frac{1}{2}$  yards, and that of the parapets 1 yard and 4 inches. The material is all stone and mortar of a superior quality, and admirably well prepared with that kind of stone that makes the walls very solid and regular, although not very thick.

15. The height is not even, on account of the more or less elevation of the rock upon which it is founded; it is marked by red numbers on the exterior of the sketch. I say that all the front of number 1 is as high as to touch the embrasures about  $5\frac{1}{2}$  yards, and besides half a yard of parapet at the front, of which all the walls are of sand and mortar material, situated upon the plain level of the fundamental rock on that part.

16. The curtain of number 2 has an elevation of 6 yards up to the embrasures. That part of the wall, up to the front of the tenaille can not be beaten, while the river is low, on account of the great Peñon in front, which lets free only the parapets;

and when the river is flooded, although it may be beaten and a bridge opened on that place, it is not easily assaulted, as the ruins fall in the water and the fundamental rock is very steep towards the Peñon, and on account of the strong current dangerous to all minor embarkations.

17. In the angle number 3, formed by the tenaille, the height to the edge of the embrasures is  $5\frac{1}{2}$  yards. The angle number 4 is  $6\frac{1}{4}$  yards, high up to the embrasures, built likewise of stone and mortar material, but does not defend here the great Peñon.

18. The angle number 5, up to the semicircle around the figure, is  $2\frac{1}{2}$  yards up to the embrasure, and in some parts 3 yards, as it is mounted upon a head or corner of the fundamental rock, so that, counting said rock as a wall, it is  $4\frac{1}{2}$  to 5 yards. From said head or corner are salient points to the river, and several side rocks guard that part of the wall, up to the line of the stone mortar work, as seen in the map on the figure 2.

19. In all the circle, up to number 6, the wall is 12 yards high, all of stone and mortar material, and diminishes gradually by inches, in such a way that at the embrasure number 8 is reduced to  $2\frac{1}{4}$  yards, and on account of that circumstance and the extended shape of the fundamental rock on that spot, the weaker point of the fortification, exposed to an easy assault, it was found necessary last year to raise the high esplanade of the rectangle marked number 7, and the interior, letter C, playing their two guns, from their respective embrasures and those of the flat roof, letter B, which can play all around from their barbette position.

20. At the round formed by the cavaliers and the mark number 9, there is only a yard and a half of wall, but counting from the rock almost at level and round, without any flaw on the part outside of the wall, the ascent is impracticable, and the highest and safest part of this fortification follows the angle marked number 10 until it meets the 11th. The height of the wall increases on account of the shape of the fundamental rock, very steep from number 10 to 11, where it flattens, and the height of the wall of stone and mortar material

measures two yards, and continues increasing in height one yard more, up to the round and place marked number 12. Thus the height of the walls, their thickness, and those of the parapets have been shown, and class this fortification as one of a more than ordinary strength, notwithstanding its stone and mortar material, enough to mount four cannons of twenty-four, four of eighteen, two of twelve, and seven of inferior caliber already in position. A larger extension might be given to this fortification by constructing the curtain marked by the diagonal P, in which case the wall might be raised from six to seven yards, correcting the defect it has to-day, and with a capacity for four guns more of twenty-four caliber, one enough for the Orinoco River and two for the Usupamo. A barbette position will make three of them play on the Orinoco.

21. Besides the regular solidity and good situation, the eastern part is guarded by the Usupamo River, which, although not considerable, it is difficult for the artillery to pass and the other elements of war, on account of the very thick woods, the trees, and muddy surroundings for the communication with the lake to the Zeiba at the entrance of the Orinoco, requiring a long detour, very expensive and laborious, as the ground is very sandy, when not muddy. As these impediments of trees, mud, and sand do not prevent the pass of pedestrians, it has been found proper to fortify the place on that direction.

22. On the south side it is defended by the Zeiba lake, which measures 590 yards from east to west and 425 from south to north; when the river is low it is not much, but the mud makes it impracticable. On the north side the greatest part of the fortification is defended by the great rocks facing it, as it has been said; from the west, by the mountain Padraastro, impossible of being undermined, on account of the solidity of the rock, upon which it stands.

23. It is stronger yet, on account of the difficulty for an attack on the river side, as the embarkations that until now have been found to be able to enter, through the mouth called of Navios, are frigates of 30 guns, that aside of the small caliber of their artillery, they have had to anchor in 65 fathoms, during the lowest water of the Orinoco and in 75 to 80 at the high-

est water. On the breadth of the river two or three vessels could not play at the same time, as the rocks in front prevent them from doing so. In high water it is not prevented, but the strong currents are a great embarrassment to any attack, affording time to those of the Castle to duplicate and triplicate their fire, more injurious on account of the greater caliber of the artillery.

24. From the middle of October to the middle of June is the season of the winds (east and northeast winds), the only time for sail vessels to enter the Orinoco River, and in passing before the Castle they may fire once, but can not do so again, while coming down, being bound to tack from one side of the river to the other, making very little headway in these tackings, while suffering at the same time, under the fires of the Castle without being able to return the same.

25. From the beginning of June to the middle of October it is very difficult and casual to be able to set sails, on account of the want of dependence on the wind, being rather squally during said months, and all contrary to the navigation, and if to this fortification is added the one that ought to be at Padrastro, it will be so much stronger and the Orinoco will be entirely safe, as I will show it to be the case in my third part.

26. At the time of the visit only twelve cannons were found mounted in this fortification, four of which were 18-pounders, a 15-pounder useless, two 12, and three 8-pounders and two of inferior metals. There were besides thirteen useless cannons, two of 12, two of 8, and nine of inferior caliber, dismounted and stored with the ammunitions of war, as belonging to the fort of San Fernando, as it is shown by the acts of the general visit sent to His Majesty by way of the Royal Supreme Council; and although in the statement of the general map belonging to the fortifications of Guayana it is asserted that in the Castle of San Francisco de Asis and in that of San Diego de Alcalá, thirty cannons in good condition and two useless are kept, thirteen out of the same are destined to the fort of San Fernando, and in order to avoid confusion between that statement and the present report, they were considered as existing in the Castle of San Francisco; and, therefore, it is recited that never

has this fortress had more than said twelve cannons mounted at the time of the visit, and that at present and from last year it holds the seventeen denoted by the interior numbers of its sketch, not admitting a greater number of artillery, although it may admit heavier calibers than those noticed.

27. At the time of the above-mentioned general visit, at the repeated instance of the commander of Guayana, it was found to be indispensable to provide those fortifications with guns and other utensils, as well as to build new esplanades, as the old were useless, and for the same reason a store for ammunitions, a drilling room, lodgings for the officers, and a powder magazine at the Castle of San Francisco, and at that of Padraastro to make new parapets and continue a cut or fosse formerly commenced, and to guard said fortification with palisades, for the purpose of which the corresponding documents were made, and in the session of the Board of the Royal Treasury in this city it was decided to furnish the same with a careening place and utensils which were thought indispensable; and in regard to the construction of new stores, lodging rooms, and esplanades of the Castle of San Francisco, parapets, cuts, and esplanades of the Padraastro, a statement of the same should be forwarded, with proper documents, to the Viceroy of Santa Fé, to whom the resolutions of the subject appertain. But before it was so done the news of the war came, while the bearer of dispatches had not left yet, and I convoked the Royal Treasurer's Board, and it was decided to build new esplanades, parapets, fosses, and palisades, as well as other necessary repairs for the defense of that stronghold, without awaiting the resolution of the Viceroy of Santa Fé, on account of the long delay; but, in regard to the stores, lodging room shown by the sketch figure 3 of the accompanying map as in project, awaiting the decision of the Viceroy, and for that purpose to give him an account of all that has been resolved, and I did so, obtaining his approbation, as may be seen by the accompanying documents, in reference to the above subject from the back of folios 214 to 241.

28. In pursuance of said resolutions I dictated all the measures necessary for the Commander of Guayana to carry out the above-mentioned work of repairs for the best defence



of those fortifications, and indeed they were made in that of San Francisco, the esplanades marked by the dotted lines in the interior of the sketch figure 3, the lodging of the officers quoted B of the same sketch, for the purpose of mounting on the flat roof the cannons denoted by numbers 2, 3, and 2 playing in barbette, and the esplanade and battery denoted as C, in which two 8-pounders are placed designed by their numbers, as there is not the least defence on that spot of said fortification, the weakest part of the same.

29. Two 12-pounders were mounted ; two 8-pounders and one of three taken from those destined for the fort of San Fernando, and the rest for said fort were hoisted and mounted on the Padrastro in which new parapets were built, making them out of brick and lime material, as those of mud and old adobes were extremely dilapidated.

30. The palisade marked E was likewise built on the plain of said Padrastro, which is figure 6 of the accompanying map, placing on said palisade the ten cannons denoted by the interior numbers of said sketch, transferred there from the Castle of San Francisco, as above mentioned, and four more that were found in that place that had been sent from here with destination to the settlement of the Mission, and the Commander took them.

31. Besides the palisade and the parapets, the cuts or fosses were continued at the Padrastro. They had been already commenced and concluded, as shown in the above-mentioned figure number 6 of the accompanying map. Thus the repairs and new works undertaken, on account of the war, are justified, as well as the reasons making them necessary and all that I have said in regard to the Castle of San Francisco.

32. At a distance, within a regular musket-shot range from the rock, forming the Castle of San Francisco, upon an equal surface, and at the same bank of the river, the mountain called the Padrastro stands, and on the top of the same is the fort of San Diego de Alcalá, as recognized in the accompanying map, figure 2. On the 8th, you see the perfect form of said mountain, and on the margin of the map the corresponding explanation of said figure 8.

33. On the 6th, is seen the sketch of the fort of San Diego de Alcalá as noticed with its particular explanation, and the scale at the margin of the same map, and here I will explain extensively what I consider to be necessary.

34. Different and joint rocks, raising from the banks of the Orinoco, and of equal solidity to that of the rock upon which the Castle of San Francisco stands, form the almost round mountain of Padraastro, as seen by figure 8. It is elevated 51 yards from the surface of the plain, as denoted by line A B of said figure.

From the south part, besides being guarded by the lake of Baratillo, it is cut so as to make its ascent impossible, and the same thing happens on the eastern side and the road of Puerto Real.

35. On the north and the bank of the river it is not so well cut, but it is steep enough, not permitting the ascent by any other than the winding road shown the second ; said ascent or road has been made with a great deal of labor, breaking several rocks, and removing those of smaller sizes.

The ascent may be easily secured by means of two or three gates, defended by artillery of small caliber.

36. On the western part the mountain extends until it becomes so low that in the fuller floods of the Orinoco River it gives way for the water to pass through the channel marked F, and through the same it fills the Baratillo lake, E E, as it will be mentioned.

37. At the lowest part of said mountain, where the canal F is formed, it is closed by trees and muddy ground totally refusing a pass, when the Orinoco River is overflown, but not when it is low and without a communication with the waters of the lake, at which time it is not of difficult access, after overcoming said muddy surroundings and trees, nor the ascent to the mountain either, although subject to a great deal of trouble on account of the want of a good road and the sharp declivity in several places, as it is shown in said figure 8.

38. From the opposite part of the muddy and thickly wooded ground in the channel F, where the land begins to

rise, forming different slopes, that although low may serve principally for the erection of batteries, and from there to fire on the Castle that is or may be in existence; but for that purpose a formal siege should be necessary, as I will explain in my third part.

39. During the floods of the Orinoco, its waters go through the channel F to the lake E E called Baratillo. When this one is full on the main road, and enters in the lake of La Zeiba, guarding the rear of the Castle of San Francisco and which is likewise filled up, the waters of the river at this time come out by the way of Puerto Real, and communicate on the same road with the lakes La Zeiba and Baratillo, the port being at the same time at the junction of both of said lakes with the main road.

40. When the waters of the Orinoco commence to lower, within their ordinary limits at Puerto Real, the lake La Zeiba carries its waters to that of Baratillo and this one discharges the same into that of the channel F, receiving them and keeping its portion, while that of La Zeiba retains less quantity on account of its elevation. That of Baratillo is  $1\frac{1}{2}$  fathoms deep, and when the river is full, 3 fathoms, according to the mark left at the time of the low waters and that of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  fathoms.

41. Said Lake Baratillo is from east to west, when the river is low, 425 yards in length, and from north to south 255 yards.

42. On the sketch, the summit of the Padraastro is not entirely flat, but it has an incline of greater altitude B up to the place D, that may be occupied with the Castle, shown upon the summit, 3 to  $3\frac{1}{2}$  yards. The longitude of said summit or sketch is from 65 to 67 yards, as marked by line C D, and the latitude that may be occupied is from 50 to 52 yards, without leaving any pass to go around the Castle of the Conception, shown by said figure 8.

43. The summit of the Padraastro dominates the Castle of San Francisco, on the level of the floor of the parade ground thirty-six Castillian yards, and at such a short distance as within an ordinary musket-shot range, a reason why said

Castle would be useless, no matter what repairs are done, if the Padrastro is not fortified and well secured; as if this is lost a dozen muskets may surrender the Castle of San Francisco, as it happened in the year of 1740, in which the British took it after the French had done the same thing before.

44. In the year of 1749, being Governor, Don Diego Tavares, and of his own accord, he built the fort of San Diego de Alcalá, at an expense of \$2,250 (Spanish currency); \$1,775 of the same, the proceeds of fines, during his government and that of his predecessor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, applied to that purpose, and the remainder, \$475, were supplied by the Royal Treasury, as advised to His Majesty, about this disbursement and the construction, by the same Tavares who obtained the approval of everything by the Royal Cedula, dated at Buen Retiro on the 21st of March, 1750.

45. Said fort of San Diego is very good, at the low cost paid by the Royal Treasury, making more or less of a defence, which did not exist before its construction, but it is not enough to guard and defend the mountain of the Padrastro, the only advantageous site, securing the Orinoco and all these Provinces, which will remain at the mercy of any one controlling said mountain, as I will show.

46. In the accompanying map and its second figure the fort is placed upon the mountain of Padrastro, and the figure 6, of the same map, shows the sketch and palisade and fosse made last year, on account of the war, and at the margin of the same map is the corresponding short explanation and particular scale of said figure 6.

The fort is reduced to four equal fronts, shown by said sketch, three yards high, of stone and mortar construction, ascended by a hand scale laid at the place marked A. The salient angle of each one of the bulwarks is four yards and its gorges two.

47. In two of said bulwarks there are two small sentry boxes noted, B B. The C marks the lodgings of the troop, answering likewise for stores of victuals, ammunitions and powder magazine, with no other extension than 4 square yards, situated in the middle of the 10 square yards of the parade room, as shown by its particular scale.

48. At the time of the visit there were found six cannons of 2 and 3 (*sic*). The embrasures for their play and all the parapets were entirely ruined and undone, as the adobe was as crude as the mud. This circumstance and the scanty and thin artillery, the occupation of the parade grounds by the towers and the little house, 4 square yards, founded upon 4 feet, and having no room in the rest of the fort for more than twelve or fourteen men, without any cover, make this fortification of a very little appreciable or respectable character.

49. In order to give it more or less safety, several parapets of lime and brick were built and the palisade marked E E E E, consisting of a stone and mortar breastwork  $1\frac{1}{2}$  yards high and three-quarters thick to secure the palisade. It has at the same time the corresponding embrasures for firing the artillery, marked by the interior numbers and mounted in their corresponding places. The fosse was opened and the western portion defends the palisade, being 10 yards in breadth and  $3\frac{1}{2}$  in depth, all through rock. These repairs, although not sufficient for the defence of this important mountain, afford a little more safety than at the time of the fort of San Diego, and are without the limits permitted at present, in virtue of the resolutions at the two meetings of the Royal Board of the Treasury, found in the acts contained at the back of folios 214 to 241.

50. In Chapter 6, all the steps taken from the year 1694 towards the construction of fort San Fernando have been justified. In consequence of the same its construction was intended on the Island of Limones, but the idea was soon given up, as it was ascertained that it could not be solidly and securely built, on account of the muddy and sandy bottom.

51. Once established the want of solidity of said island, a change of ground was made, selecting what is called firm ground for the one that was initiated in the year of 1753. Before it was finished in 1760 it was found unsafe in various parts. I reported the case to His Majesty with the corresponding proceedings on the 29th of December of the same year of 1760. And with that of the 23d of September of 1761, and the corresponding justification, I gave likewise an account of having made an examination personally of said fort,

accepting the report of the master mason Juan Parrilla, who stated that there was no remedy for the impending ruin to follow, as evinced by the corresponding documents. And in consequence of the same, His Majesty gave directions for a Caracas engineer to come to re-examine the work and its improvement if possible. They were not carried out, for the reasons expressed in said Chapter 6.

52. In my representation of the 23d of September of 1761, I did not inform his Majesty of the uselessness of said fort and how injurious its subsistence is, as I did not consider myself sufficiently qualified, nor possessing the power to do so, thinking that an engineer sent to make an examination should do so more accurately, and then my approval of the report of the master mason Parrilla, already mentioned, might be sufficient; and besides that, what I sent by way of warning in my note 9, of the corresponding memorandum, affirming that said fortification is worthy of the same estimation as that of Padrastro, with the difference that it ought to be very well fortified and that one abandoned.

53. As the examination of the above-mentioned fort by an engineer from Caracas, has not taken place, and His Majesty lately, by the Royal Order of the 27th of May of last year and in virtue of reports received, is constrained to a condemnation of all the other works mentioned by said Royal Order, I consider myself in duty bound to inform Your Majesty of its condition, impossibilities, in the way of said work and the others already resolved, the large expenses involved and the most important point required for the Royal service, the abandonment of said fort.

54. And in order to carry out this idea at the earliest possible opportunity, I will state in this first part, the condition in which it was found at the time of the visit and at present, as well as the reasons that I had (besides those contained in these acts), to yield to the report of the master mason Parrilla and to show in the note 9 of my memorandum that it does not deserve the least attention, and that it must be abandoned.

55. In the second part, and in answer to the Royal Order, I

will show how useless are all the works that His Majesty desires to undertake, the large expenses involved and how prejudicial will be the continued subsistence of the same in that place.

56. And in the third part I will explain the importance of the expense and fortification of the Padrastro mountain and the funds uselessly expended in the repairs of said fort of San Fernando.

57. This work is situated on the opposite side of the Castle of San Francisco, on what they call the mainland, close to the creek of the Island of Limones, as is shown by the accompanying map on figure 2.

58. It is reduced to an oval tower, built of brick and lime, with terre-pleins in the interior filled with pounded earth and stone.

59. On the fifth figure of said map there is a horizontal section settled with a dotted scale placed at the margin of the same map, giving the particulars and a short explanation.

60. The greatest diameter of said fort and its oval figure is 31 yards and 32 inches, as noted A A ; the least diameter is 24 yards and 18 inches, as B B. It has eight counter forts, marked C. Its foundations are 3 yards and 18 inches thick, including a scale according to D. The wall commences 2 yards and 26 inches, according to E, and finishes at 1 yard and 20 inches, as shown by F, and the parapet finishes in bar-bette at 1 yard and 6 inches, according to G. At the time of the visit it had the nine splits, marked I, all beginning at the start of the foundation, according to the examination made of the two, following in a more or less straight line until the interior and the exterior of the parapet are divided.

61. Through two of these splits, and from the start of the foundation up to the conclusion of the socle, there was a full space for one hand, and between the floor from there upwards there was a diminution up to the parapet.

62. The seven remaining splits were of about an inch more or less of space, from the surface of the ground to the end of the socle, and from there they followed in diminution up to the division of the parapet.

63. It was examined by means of a thin walking stick, discovering that said splits penetrate and divide all the thickness of the walls.

64. Once the examination finished, said splits were all stopped and filled up with fine mortar, to avoid the penetration of the waters, during the flood of the Orinoco and the continual rains of that climate, but these repairs have become useless, as the above nine splits have been reopened a great deal more, aggregating to their greatest opening a new one, equal to those previously found.

65. On the figure 4, and in point of perspective, the vertical section of the fort is shown, its interior structure, its counter forts, the depth of the foundations, the height of the walls, the splits them dividing from the foundation to the parapet, and at the margin the corresponding explanation, which is, 1, section of the wall; 2, cordon; 3, socle; 4, counter forts; 5, four yards and twenty-four inches of foundation, including socle, deepening what is marked by dotted lines.

66. The height of the wall from the socle, including a foot of cordon, is 6 yards and 8 inches; that of the parapet on the inside and barbette is 28 inches, and outside 14 inches.

67. The splits dividing the body of the wall and its foundation continue in diminution, until that part where they divide also the parapet, noted at figure 6.

68. The Orinoco River attains its highest elevation about the end of July and keeps it during the month of August and part of September, and during that time the fort San Fernando is inundated about one-fourth (*sic*) more or less from the socle.

69. After having made the examination of the fort San Fernando and found it in such a poor condition, any steps to make it wholly safe might prove useless and sink the funds laid out in repairs, I appointed Sergeant Major Don Gaspar de Salaverría, director of the works in the capacity of an engineer, Joseph Luque and Juan Parrilla, the master masons, who had erected the same, to make an exposition on the subject; and the Sergeant Major answered *that it was the same that he had given to his Honor in the city of Cumaná on the 18th of December*



*of last year, and that an engineer might be appointed by His Majesty to make an examination and expose with better qualifications what it may be done for the stability of the fortress, as the exponent finds in his limited intelligence, that it will be very expensive and that he thinks that said fort may last long or for many years in its present condition.*

70. Luque said that said fort will likely continue sinking, without any fear of the fall of the walls, on account of the oval shape that will keep it together.

71. And Parrilla said that on the 5th or 6th of April of last year of 1760, he withdrew from the works of said fort, having been excluded from the same, and he left only one flaw or split,  $2\frac{1}{2}$  yards high, very thin, and that at the beginning of June of the same year, he returned from the Mission of Caroni to the City of Guayana, where he heard that said fort had discovered eight or nine splits and that in consideration of the short time elapsed and the examination that he had made he thinks that the said fort will last a very short time, as it appears from the acts addressed to His Majesty in the representations of the 29th of December of 1760 (*sic*) and the 23rd of September of 1761, it will be seen my decision at the same fortress, on the 27th of February of 1761, accepting the report of said Parrilla, but I did not express at that time the reasons in support of my views, which are the following:

72. *First*: That although the Sergeant Major exposed that the repairs intended, according to his limited intelligence, should be very expensive, he did not give any precise idea of the repairs or improvements, although he was requested to do so, a reason why, in my judgment, I thought that was only done to extricate himself from a difficult position. I was sure that he is not an engineer by profession, and possesses only a limited theory acquired from the books on the subject, as he has no reason for any practical knowledge, on account of his never having left this place of his birth, where they have not had any works of fortification, during his lifetime, and that although he went to Carthagena, when the Viceroy of Santa Fe was there, his visit was for a few days only in that place, and had no time to examine the fortifications.

And although he said that the fort would last in the present condition many years, that was not sufficient to keep it serviceable for the play of its artillery, and much less to resist a sloop of six or eight cannons, without danger of the fall of the present quarters.

73. *Second*: That although Luque assures that it will last for several years, without any fall of the walls, on account of the oval shape of the structure, he said likewise that it should continue sinking, which tacitly and with better conviction than Salaverria, means that he admits the want of safety and usefulness of the same.

74. *Third*: That what Parrilla has exposed was more acceptable, because, if within two months nine splits have been opened, dividing from top to bottom the whole of the work, it was natural to fear a total ruin, without being necessary any fall of the wall. It was enough that they should be useless even when the headquarters might be standing.

75. *Fourth*: My expectatation of a total ruin is based on the want of safety of the ground on which the fort stands, for although they call it firm ground it is movable, and formed from the alluvial deposits of the floods of the Orinoco River, just as that of the Island of Limones, which was rejected, as being formed of mud and sand and only held together by the main land supported by the roots of the trees, and unable to stand the weight of the walls of said fort. On the ground of this conclusion a walking stick was sunk in the excavation made, and, being lower by a quarter of a yard than the foundation, the force of this only sunk it for three-quarters more, and in proportion of the profundity the bottom became more damp and full of mud and sand.

76. *Fifth*: I became sure, in my opinion, when considering the great difficulty to stop perfectly the whole of said splits, so as to avoid the introduction of the Orinoco waters, during the whole of the month of August and part of September, when they are about one-fourth of more elevation than the socle and the daily showers that are so copious, allowing very little intermission, and both apt to make splits, on account of the imperfections of the work, as it was to be expected and

has taken place, the greatest split of all has been noticed after the repairs of the other nine, being now ten in all.

77. *Sixth* : The sixth reason I had to agree in opinion with Parrilla was the bad quality of the mortar, which this person and Luque had disapproved, as the facility for the demolition is shown by trying the touch of the fingers and the impression of the least knock on the work, showing the bad quality of the material, with more sand than the proportion of lime would allow. It was not taken into consideration the objection made by the masons Luque and Parrilla and not denied by Salaverria, that a great portion of the work was made of pieces of brick. As that is all covered I could not verify the fact. If it is true that broken bricks have been used in halves, and less than halves, the cohesion of the work must be poor, and in more or less time the headquarters will crumble through the crevices, although, as Luque said, the oval shape may support it, as well as the eight interior counter forts, which supported by the terre-pleins will make more difficult an overturn of the walls they support.

78. *Seventh* : The seventh reason for the short duration of this fort is the terre-plein. It was made of several beds of loose stone under other beds of poorly pounded earth, all by the hands of Indians, with only one overseer to attend the work, but without any capacity for a useful work, the consequence being that the waters are introduced through the crevices left by the imperfect poundings of the earth lowering it and discovering the stones, and although another filling has been done and some repairs made with bricks and other things to facilitate the course of the waters and drainage of the parade grounds, nothing solid is obtained at the terre-plein, nor to avoid the accumulation of waters at the parade grounds and much less to stop those penetrating through the floors; these causes make impossible the construction of a house that ought to exist, and could not be built, when the foundations (already built) are not deep enough and upon a poorly pounded terre-plein, only 2 yards and 26 inches deep.

79. It is not advisable to build in what remains of the parade ground the mortar and plaster flooring, as a safeguard

against the waters from the esplanade of the artillery, and if it is done, in whole or in part, it will run the evident risk of sinking in a short time, no matter what precautions may be taken to prevent it. This defect might possibly be remedied by changing the position of said fort, renewing the terre-plein, but this manœuvre, so necessary, might be useful if the fort itself were of any service, but this expense is useless and undue in the present condition of the quarters, with the ten splits around the work, dividing the whole of the wall, as shown by figures 4 and 5 of the accompanying map.

80. Those are the reasons that I had to accept the report of the master mason Parrilla, and I shall have to expose those that have moved me to assure in my note 9 of the memorandum, that the fort of San Fernando was not worthy of being kept and that it ought to be abandoned. Anybody who has paid any attention to the navigation of the rivers Magdalena, Orinoco, and others, although not so important in these countries, may have observed that in their great floods, islands may be swept away and disappear, as well as the margins covered with trees may be easily converted into islands and margins that had no existence before, and that during the low waters of the same rivers, with the extreme heat of the climate, in a short time a variety of trees is produced subsisting in the water, and sometimes below, after the subsequent floods, and in a few years they raise in strength and size, forming groves, and their roots supporting the earth and sand and forming islands and shores. It is a notorious fact that notwithstanding the strength of the roots and groves in a few years the river carries them away with more or less force, making incomprehensible the turns of the water and other accidents, as that of laying down the groves, showing in consequence the inconsistency of the islands and river banks, which may disappear at the first, second, or at any other successive flood.

81. That is the quality of the land of the Island of Limones, and of the other islands formed by the creek Patapataima, which are shown by the accompanying map, and what is called mainland is about the same, divided by the creek Guarapo, being about half a league wide, until reaching the outskirts

of what really is the mainland, where the Franco Cattle estate is situated, being all plain ground, swampy, and covered with high and thick clusters of trees, as those of the Island of Limones and the other islands above mentioned. What is called mainland begins to be flooded by the Orinoco River about the end of June, and the water rises gradually up to the end of July, when it attains the highest point maintained, during all the month of August and part of September, in which it commences to lower down, until the beginning of the middle of November, when they reach the lowest stage, below the islands and the mainland, as shown by these acts at folios 55 to 67.

82. Overlooking the want of solidity of the ground, the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, the engineer Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, (this one took his precautions), the Governors of these Provinces, Don Carlos de Sucre, Don Gregorio de Espinosa and Don Diego Tavares, the engineers Don Antonio Jordan and Don Gaspar de Lara, Father Joseph de Gurnilla and other persons, conversant with the Orinoco, were of the opinion that a fort ought to be built on the Island of Limones, and it was approved by His Excellency, Don Sebastian de Eslava, Viceroy of Santa Fé, in virtue of the exposition of the engineer director of the fortress of Carthagena, Don Juan Bautista MacEvan.

83. After having cleared part of the Island of Limones, it was found to be 36 yards wide, and when the work was to be commenced the river had left only 23 yards, and besides this loss of space, the ground was found to be all mud and sand, and by no means solid or suitable for the construction of a stronghold, and in consequence it was decided to build it on the mainland, where it stands at present, as is shown at length in Chapter 6 of the accompanying proceedings.

84. Notwithstanding that the Governor Don Diego Tavares, and those who concurred with him in the selection of the new ground, as a more advantageous site, they did not anticipate the inconvenience and difficulty that were to make it useless and the existence of said fort on that ground impossible, as I will show.

85. In order to build said fort enough part of the ground was cleared, and the foundations were opened, and although doubts were entertained about the safety of the ground, the opinion prevailed that it was solid, but before the work was finished and under the inevitable impending ruin it has become evident that the ground is as unsteady as that of the Island of Limones, and by no means solid, and consequently its defects are not capable of remedy, said fort being useless, besides the greater inconvenience of its want of solidity.

86. The Island of Limones was given up as useless, after the loss of the 23 yards taken by the river, after it was cleared of the trees, the roots of which had kept that space. The same thing has happened on the mainland, for at the beginning of the examination, the banks in front of the Castle of San Francisco were 80 yards far from the actual ground, where the fort stands, which were all cleared so as to keep free all that space in front of said castle, but not enough for the play of the artillery on the river below and notwithstanding it was found, at the time of the visit, that from the bank of the river to the fort the distance was only 20 yards, giving a loss of 60 yards of the open ground occupied by the bed of the Orinoco River and within three or four years, it is to be feared that said banks may be at the foot of said fort, or else sink the same, and the bed of the Orinoco River take 80 more yards from the space it held at the time of the beginning of the work and the clearance of the space to build it.

87. Reflecting at the time of the visit upon this pernicious detriment, no proper way was found to remedy the evil, as the banks of the river on all the lengths of that region are about 11 or 12 yards high and the ground is sand and movable earth, and from the foot to the bed of the Orinoco River, at its lowest ebb, forms a steep quicksand bank, being 6 or 7 yards from the lowest bed of the river to the bank. The want of solidity and abruptness of this sand bank, its elevation, and the circumstance of the overflow of the river a yard and a half above the surface of the mainland, flooding the socle of the fort, make impossible and useless any kind of repairs in order to prevent the river from carrying away that bank, and sooner or

later the fort itself, and if this one were removed farther inland and the ground cleared of trees, it is no doubt that the river should spread there its waters, extending its bed and rendering useless the fortification of San Francisco and Padrastro, and allowing a free entrance to the embarkations of the Caribs and other foreigners to pass close to that bank against the object in view. These were my reasons, at the time of the visit, for my positive orders to forbid the clearance of the 20 yards intervening between the fort and the banks, allowing the trees to grow freely, in order to avoid the fall of the fort with that of the banks, and before undertaking any repairs or its abandonment, if that was His Majesty's pleasure, according to the report of the engineer sent to examine said fort.

88. But, even if said fort were built with due safety, and the difficulty of securing said bank overcome, its uselessness is unquestionable when taking into consideration the plague of mosquitoes, sand fleas, horse flies and other insects produced by the stagnant waters around the Island of Limones and its surroundings, so as to make unbearable the life in that place all the year around, especially after sunset. When this land is inundated it is impossible to stay there for even half an hour in daytime, and much less by night, on account of the clouds of mosquitoes kept in the woods, and other insects. There is no exaggeration, as everybody can see the fact, even if Father Gumilla, in his (illustrated Orinoco) Orinoco ilustrado, would not confirm the fact. This defect is not susceptible of a remedy, and was not anticipated at the time of locating said fort. The ground may be cleared, on what they call mainland, and its immediate islands (a not very easy or cheap affair), the stagnant waters in which the trees are imbedded will always produce the same insects, as it is the case in muddy grounds and lagoons without having any trees. In order to keep the ground clear, an annual expense would be necessary to remove the encumbrances, which should bring another inconvenience, endangering the very existence of said fort in its present condition even if constructed anew, running the risk of a clear sweep of both bank and fortification, under a change of bed of the Orinoco. I have considered these reasons

sufficient for the abandonment of said fort, as stated in my note 9 of my memorandum.

89. In said note I said that the garrison of the fort is composed of a captain commander, a lieutenant, two sub-lieutenants, a constable, a chaplain, two sergeants of fusileers, two corporals, 12 artillerymen, a drummer, and 77 private soldiers, making in all 100 persons. Most of them (except the officers and very few white persons) are mulattoes, mestees and negroes who can stand better the climate; that the said 100 persons are annually paid \$13,994, as may be seen by the corresponding statement of the general map. This amount is paid out of \$14,000 drawn by His Majesty on the Treasury of Santa Fe. The above 100 persons are employed to-day as follows: nine men and one corporal detached to the Island of Trinidad; 16 to 18 in custody of the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins; an officer, one corporal, and six men that are employed most of the year in traveling to Santa Fe, in quest of the \$14,000 of the apportionment; two detached by order of the chief of squadrons, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, considering as daily sick 10 to 12 men, and remaining in the service of the fortress, without including the commander, chaplain, constable and drummer, 43; in which number there are 26 men daily employed in this way: one officer, one corporal, and 12 men in the Castle of San Francisco; one sergeant, one corporal and four men in that of San Diego; six men, one acting as corporal at the headquarters, and the orderlies at the commander's house. It is therefore evident that having no more than 46, as the total remaining after the service of the fortress, not only they have not the rest allowed by the regulations, but the guard relieved has to redouble the service of six men, and in consequence it is indispensable to increase this garrison, as I expose to His Majesty in my representation of the 27th of August of 1761, dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya.

90. I said likewise in my note 9 that all the neighborhood of the fortress forms a militia company of fifty-eight men in arms, including the officers, without excepting whites nor mixed; that said company of militiamen is the one that



works in all the garrison, on account of the frequent detachments of the regular troop to the Mission of the Catalan Capuchins, to control the Indians in their incursions, and other occurrences of the fortress.

91. By the statements of the above-mentioned acts of the visit in said note 9, it is shown that there were ninety families, including those of the regular troop, and in all five hundred and thirty-five souls, occupying sixty-six houses. Out of these one was burned, but an increase of eight more and the roofing with tiles of ten have been noticed, giving an actual existence of seventy-three houses, situated in the order shown in figure 2 of the accompanying map. Besides the eight newly-built houses and the ten roofed with tiles, a great deal of stone has been gathered for the church that is in project to be built of stone and mortar, and in the country three or four farms have been added to the twenty-five and twenty-six existing at the time of said visit, the only increase noticed since that time.

92. In my memorandum and last chapters of notes 9 and 10 I have briefly exposed, by way of notice, the state of the new cities of Real Corona and Ciudad Real, the establishment of which in the Province of Guayana was undertaken by the chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga, and that shall have to fail and ought not, therefore, to be counted as settlements of said Province.

93. I could not explain in said notes, nor can I do so here, the use or uselessness of said new cities, the expenses that they may have occasioned and do occasion to the Royal Treasury, nor the advantages nor disadvantages to these Provinces, on that subject is fully under the competence of the chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga, whom His Majesty has allowed the necessary powers for the formation of the settlements that he considers proper to undertake, commanding the Viceroy, Governor and Justices of the Kingdom to facilitate what he requires in carrying out the various charges intrusted to him for the Royal service, as shown by the Royal Cedula dated at Buen Retiro, on the 14th of September of 1753. I am not conscious of having exceeded my limits in what

by way of notice, as settlements of the government in my charge, I have exposed in the above-mentioned notes, nor that I should exceed any in representing the condition in which said cities are found to-day, and that of San Fernando which he undertook in the territory of the new Kingdom of Santa Fe, as it is of the utmost importance to show, in the course of this representation, the insurmountable difficulties found in the way of establishing Spanish populations in remote countries, without anticipating the pacification of the Indians inhabiting the country, and that after said Indians are reduced these Spanish settlements are easily formed without any great expense of the Royal Treasury, and only on the allowance of the privileges and franchises granted by His Majesty and by the Royal laws, for the good government of these his dominions.

94. And I say that in virtue of the power with which the above mentioned chief is invested he undertook to establish in the Province of Guayana the cities Real Corona and Ciudad Real. For the first one he commissioned with the title of Captain Settler, and under his orders one Alonso de Soto, to whom he assigned the annual salary of \$500 to be paid by the Treasury of Santa Fe, and I do not know whether he has drawn said pay. On account of the Royal Treasury a church and about twenty-five houses were built and assigned to the new settlers brought from the Provinces of Caracas and Barcelona. In order to obtain them they were offered by the said Alonso de Soto many other advantages, out of proportion and in disregard of the Royal regulations about the new settlements. But as the new settlers were not allowed what had been promised, and under the experience of irregular extortions, they gave up the new city, recrossed the Orinoco and returned to their old homes, from where they had been removed, and they gave me an account of what they had done and their reasons for so doing.

95. I found that it was impossible to compel them to remain in a settlement that did not suit them and it was not in accordance with the Royal regulations to force them, besides many other reasons that I omit and will explain if necessary. For the purpose of serving God and the King I found proper to

gather all of said neighbors in the settlement of Pao situated on the plains of Barcelona, where they are suited, and from where many of them had been removed, induced by the offers of advantages promised by Soto at the new settlement.

96. The steps that I took to meet the requests that I received and the reason given for the abandonment of the new city are shown at folios 162 to 177 of the accompanying evidence of the non-existence of the said Ciudad de Real Corona and the irregular beginning of the same.

97. Of the establishment of Ciudad Real de Uyapi, said chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga took charge, and by the repeated information I have received it consists to-day of a church, paid by the Royal Treasury, but already fully ruined, and fifty houses built and paid by the same Royal Treasury, thirty of them are deserted and empty and twenty are occupied by Don Joseph de Iturriaga, his family, sergeant, chaplain, and other clerks, depending on him, in the expedition of boundaries, that remain there yet, the Sergeant Major of this fortress and the detachment of this garrison under the orders of the above mentioned chief together with six or seven families. One aggregated to that of Don Joseph de Iturriaga, another of a Dutchman (very injurious there) called Adrian, two of the island of Margarita, and three who were formerly at the settlement of Cabruta; and all are supported at the cost of the Royal Treasury.

Such is the condition of the Ciudad Real, without any hopes of any greater advantages, but the promise of a total dissolution at the time of the absence of the said Don Joseph de Iturriaga, the only one who has it in existence for his family and those who depend on him, as the seven families remaining to-day will give it up as soon as their rations fail, and the rest will quit whenever they are allowed to do so.

98. The city of San Fernando, founded by the third commissioner, Don Joseph Solano, was still more unfortunate than the two preceding cities, as most of the settlers perished. This city has been placed above the Vichada River, shown by the general map on the banks of the Orinoco, within the territory of the government of Santa Fe, inhabited by Indians still to

be reduced. The first settlers were compelled to go from the Province of Caracas, and some other reluctant persons, not exactly enchained as the former, but a strong detachment was in the custody of both settlers, from the garrisons of Cumaná and Araya, the whole of them under the orders and direction of the third Commissioner, Don Joseph Solano.

99. On account of the opening and clearing of the woods, for the establishment of the new settlement, and the bad climate on the banks of the Orinoco River, with the extreme scarcity of victuals, the greatest portion of the unwilling settlers perished, together with some of the soldiers detached for their custody, making in all 150 fatalities, during the time of the residence there of Don Joseph Solano, after his withdrawal and shortly after the retirement of the military detachment, leaving the miserable settlers in that desert, without provisions nor spiritual attendance, without any escort, and destitute of all human help, with the Indians at their back, the great Orinoco in their front, and no embarkations whatever suitable for the navigation.

100. For a few days they remained in that place under the greatest affliction, but, pressed by want, they went inland, and no traces have been left or signs of what became of them. The remaining settlers went down the river in small boats, two of which were lost and the people drowned, with the exception of a good swimmer, who brought the news of the misfortune; four or five others reached the Missions of the Jesuits, where their wants were attended, and thence they proceeded to the plains of the Province of Caracas and Barcelona, where they are full of precautions to avoid their being apprehended again. That was the end of the city of San Fernando, and shows the great difficulty and irreparable injuries of undertaking any settlement in places so remote and desert before being reduced.

101. If the settlements in distant places, deserted and not reduced, are difficult, their establishment, after the Indians are pacified, is very easy, and of no expense to the Royal Treasury, as it is shown to-day in the same Province of Guayana

with the new settlement of San Antonio de Upata, which commenced in the year of 1762, for the following reasons:

102. Having undertaken my general visit, in the year 1761, and while making that of the Missions in that Province in charge of the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, and with the knowledge and examination of the fertile lands occupied by the establishment inland, distant from the banks of the Orinoco River, fit for breeding cattle and every kind of farming and for sugar-cane and cocoa plantations, in a temperate climate, healthy, and free from the insects produced in the neighborhood of the Orinoco River, I had a conference with the Prior of the Community about the importance of the establishment of one or more Spanish settlements to answer for our safety and residence of the Missions, as well as a barrier to the Dutch Colonies and defence of the fortress of Guayana, that ought to be abundantly provided with the products of said Spanish settlement to be established, so as not to have said fortress dependent on the short crops and Indian farms as at present.

103. My proposition was satisfactorily heard by the Missioners who promised with pleasure on their part to attend to the spiritual wants of the new settlers, and keep an eye on their operations and advancement, feeding them with bread and beef for one year and facilitating Indian laborers free for the building of houses, churches, and sowing the first plants, supplying them with free transportation and the use of horses for their baggage from the fortress to the new settlement, and having the said horses ready to receive the families, at the time of their landing, so as not to have to stop at the fortress; and on my side taking care of soliciting persons willing to go to the settlement, sure of the fertility of the grounds in that region. Of all of what may inform Father Fr. Fidel de Santo, then Prefect of said Missions and now the Attorney-General of the same, residing at the Court.

104. Having returned to this capital I made propositions to several persons to send explorers of their own choice and inspect the lands and examine other circumstances, and after

being sure of the fertility, salubrity, and other conditions, to send twenty-four families, going of their own free will and without the least expense to the treasurer, as it was done, and they reached Guayana in safety, and from there they were taken to the projected place for the new settlement, between the Missions of Alta Gracia and Copapui shown in the general map, at two hours' journey from Alta Gracia, and nine to ten leagues from the fortress of Guayana where they are at present, after having built twenty-one houses, the church with His Divine Majesty already inaugurated, a condition never attained by the cities of Real Corona, Ciudad Real, nor San Fernando.

105. Besides the above-mentioned twenty-four families, thirteen more were ready to set out, but they are discouraged and have suspended their voyage, on account of the news generally spread in these Provinces that the Province of Guayana is being depopulated. In that case I will not doubt that the new settlement of San Antonio may partake of a similar fate, on account of being exposed to the incursions of the Indians, who may not be to-day in fear of the troops of the fortress. But if it is not depopulated (as I expect His Majesty will command it) I have no doubt that the new population will be the beginning of other settlements, and the great horror of the insalubrity of the climate of that Province will disappear, followed by many temporal and spiritual advantages and the pacification of the many Indians contained in said Province, and the benefit of its fertile and abundant soils, upon which a reliable information may be had from the Reverend Fr. Fidel de Santo, and it will lead to a great deal of good—His Majesty's support of the bodies of Missioners, as I have requested, and it appears in the accompanying proceedings—and will expose in my third part of this representation.

106. Another similar case happens in this Province of Cumaná as an evidence of the difficulty of establishing population in places where the Indians have not been reduced, and the unfortunate result of overlooking this condition.

107. By old and repeated Royal Cedulae His Majesty has decided to make one or more settlements on the banks of the

Guarapiche River, so as to protect the rear of this Province and that of Barcelona, avoiding the entrance of foreigners and the frauds of the residents.

108. In consequence the Governor, Don Joseph Carreño, undertook the settlement of the village of San Carlos, for which a few families commenced to establish their residence on the southern bank of said Guarapiche River; but they soon desisted from the enterprise on account of the assault by wild Indians supported by the French, and for want of a greater number of settlers who would dare to keep the place.

109. In time of the Government of Don Juan de la Tórnera an establishment was undertaken on the northern bank of said Guarapiche River, called the city of Maturín, which could not stand, on account of the want of population of those territories and the indifferent safety of the Indians recently settled in that neighborhood.

110. As a result of my general visit, and sure of the extension and fertility of the land at the south of this Province, with high mountains, near the banks of the Guarapiche and the importance of that place for one or more Spanish settlements, to avoid the clandestine traffic carried on through that river, (as explained by note 2 of my memorandum,) I commenced to influence several parties to go to that settlement, promising the portions of fertile land and the other privileges granted by the laws to the new settlers. Several persons having an intention to settle there have examined said land and ascertained its fertility and extension for cattle farms as well as sugar-cane and cocoa plantations, and there are about 40 families already enlisted in this city, Barcelona and its plains, besides many others, in expectation of the progress of the settlement to follow their turn.

111. I have already appointed a captain settler who awaits my approval of the site in which to found the new city which is in Maturín, where it was undertaken by Tórnera. I will carry out the plan, as soon as my many occupations permit, not entertaining any doubt of the success, for there is no fear now of any embarrassment opposed by the Indians, as all the surrounding settlements in that neighborhood are under a Mission

and well trained and reduced formally in the way of catechisation.

112. Once said city is settled as intended, there is no doubt that other settlements will follow, as the lands invite, with their many advantages, new settlers from these Provinces and and even from Caracas. Within twenty or twenty-five years we may expect a production of as much cocoa or very little less than what is produced in that of Caracas. The present case shows that the countries after being pacified, may be settled with very little diligence and more facility, and that that is practicable, without the least expense to the Royal Treasury and only by the inducements of the grants and privileges allowed by law.

---

### Chapter X.

*The fortress of Guayana is the most important stronghold held by the King our Lord in these his American dominions, Havana and Vera Cruz only excepted.*

1. The more or less estimation of a settled place is regulated by the commerce and wealth it contains, its strength, extent, and usefulness of the territory defended. Those are the reasons that recommend Havana and Vera Cruz, without controversy, the most important held by the King in America.

2. The fortress of Guayana has no claim to any estimation by its contents, as they are miserable, as shown by the exposition of the preceding chapters, being of considerable more value in this respect the fortresses of Carthagena, Panama, La Guaira, Puerto Cabello, Buenos Aires, and all the rest held by His Majesty, with the exception of Puerto Bello, with which Guayana may be compared.

3. The stronghold of the garrison can not be taken into consideration at present, although the castle of San Francisco, in point of situation, resistance of its walls, difficulty for an attack and other circumstances explained in the foregoing chapter is



a somewhat regular fortification, becomes useless by the want of defence of the Padrastro, from where a dozen muskets may surrender it, as has been already stated.

4. On account of the extent and value defended by the fortress, no other of the many held by the King, except Vera Cruz, can compete with it, because all the other fortresses protect ports, but do not prevent the landing on the coast nor the entrance of the enemies, introducing their commerce in diverse Provinces more or less indefensible. On the contrary, the fortress of Guayana is the masterpiece of the defence of its own Province and those of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, Popoyan and Quito, countries under the control and traffic facilities of the grand Orinoco River, having no other defended or fortified place so advantageously situated as this fortress is to-day. If it is abandoned or lost, the nation holding it might control freely said Provinces and that of Guayana. The enemy could never succeed in doing so while the fortress is held and well fortified.

5. I will exemplify this case, comparing this place with those of Havana and Vera Cruz, that have no equal either with those of La Guaira, Puerto Cabello, Buenos Aires, Montevideo nor the others of the southern sea, but only with that of Carthagena, considered to be of the greatest importance after the two first quoted and of less advantage than the fortress of Guayana, for although that one may be more recommendable, on account of the commerce and wealth it contains and the strength of its fortifications, it is not by any means covering all the territory defended by this fortress, being surpassed in that most important point, which I will show in order to have it done at the earliest possible convenience, explaining briefly the favorable and unfavorable circumstances of the fortress of Carthagena, and then I will compare them with the advantages possessed by the fortress of La Guaira, so as to allow the preference in being fortified like that one.

6. The port of Carthagena was very well fortified before the British invasion, and His Majesty has, since that time, expended large amounts of money to increase its fortifications and secure it against another attack as the last one, believing

that said fortress is precisely the key of the Kingdom of Santa Fe. And what is defended but the fortress of Carthagena besides its own contents? Does it defend the entrance of the Magdalena River by an enemy? Not at all, as an entrance could be made through the Province of Santa Martha, where the mouth of said river stands.

7. Does the fortress prevent the navigation of said river by strangers? Nothing of the kind; as, from Carthagena to the Barranca (bank) of the King, the nearest margin to Carthagena, there is a distance of 12 leagues by land and 20 through the ditch.

8. Are the 20 leagues through the ditch or the 12 by land defended by that fortress so as to keep free and safe the communication with the Magdalena River? Not in the least, as both ways are at the mercy of an enemy who may land on several points and intercept both ways at a short distance without being stopped by the fortress.

9. After the loss of the fortress of Carthagena could the enemies prevent the subjects of the King from navigating the Magdalena River? With difficulty, unless Barranca were fortified and a large garrison kept there with proper vessels to oppose those trying to go up the river, before said Barranca of the King, and not being so held an enemy could enter through the mouth of said river and go up from Santa Martha as far as the town of Honda.

10. If the fortress of Carthagena were lost, could the enemies go inland and introduce their commerce by land to the Kingdom of Santa Fe? That is impossible, as from the Province of Carthagena to the Kingdom of Santa Fe, all the way is covered by a chain of inaccessible mountains, cut by large rivers and sierras closed to traffic, as there is not an open road at present, nor any one found practicable, so that the only way left is the Magdalena River. Could this river be freely navigated by the foreigners in control of the fortress of Carthagena and Barranca of the King? It is as difficult as by land, for, at every step, their progress might be disputed, having no place where the river might be so wide as not to be exposed to cross fires by an artillery of 12-pounders, and in most of

them of 6-pounders, and in the straight place of Carare it may be defended by muskets. Besides, this river can not be navigated under sails, nor by every kind of vessel, but only those fit for it, and called "champanes," at the point of poles, close to the banks and the woods, to avoid the force of the current, which makes the navigation of that river so protracted as to require from thirty-five to forty days to reach the town of Honda, at the time when the river is low and more propitious. When it is full it takes two or three months, adding to what has been said that they must go in front of the town of Monpos, to Tamalamaque and other settlements and farms on the banks of said river, and through the strait of Carare, where stoning might be sufficient to stop and prevent the pass of an enemy on board said champanes, which nobody could manage with the ability and facilities displayed by the Indians used to their management.

11. After overcoming the difficulty of the river, though morally impossible, it remains to overcome afterwards that of the land, for which it is indispensable to secure horse transportation at the town of Honda, to go through rough and difficult mountains, taking about eight days to reach Santa Fe, and well understood that horses or mules are not always found at the town of Honda, as there is no subsistence possible there for cattle, and it is necessary to bring them from the plains of Santa Fe to take the loads carried by water up to the town of Honda, as it is well known to those conversant with the traffic of that road. These circumstances make impossible the introduction not only of an enemy, but likewise of any kind of goods. From the Kingdom and other Provinces they come down to Carthagena, with the liberty of traffic with strangers, precisely through the Magdalena River.

12. Allowing the case of the loss of the fortress of Carthagena and the fortification of Barranca by an enemy, so as not to allow any river communication, should the city of Santa Fe and the other Provinces be prevented from receiving any goods or sending back in return their products? It would so happen, if other places could not answer the purpose, such as Maracaibo, Puerto Cabello, La Guaira, and Cumana, although

involving so much labor and expense to an amount beyond limit, if there was not a recourse to the great Orinoco River, through which with less expense and labor than through the Magdalena River, we could introduce in the Kingdom of Santa Fe and other Provinces all kinds of merchandise, with facilities for the return of all products, and moneys produced which are carried to-day through the Magdalena River to Carthagena.

13. If by the defense of the Magdalena River the foreigners and their commerce with the Kingdom of Santa Fe may be stopped, without any need of the fortresses of Carthagena, and even when said city were lost and Barranca fortified, the communication through the Orinoco River should keep it open, at less expense with the Kingdom of Santa Fe and the other Provinces, guarded by said fortress of Carthagena, for what purpose was such an amount of wealth laid out in fortifying the same and keeping it in such a high esteem? It is the guard of the port, the best on all that coast, and the only one where any kind of vessels, no matter how large or how many, can get in, and it keeps all of its contents, as a general depot of all the merchandize received from Europe and distributed afterwards through the same Province, and by the Magdalena River, to Santa Fe, Popoyan, and Quito, bringing back the funds and products from the same Provinces, through the same river, to Carthagena, where they are kept until forwarded to Europe, and this commerce is done through the port, fortress and city of Carthagena, held in such high value as to be worthy of the strongest defenses and fortifications.

14. It seems to me that I have shown the reasons of usefulness or uselessness of the fortress of Carthagena, and it remains to explain which are those equivalent or superior, on behalf of the fortress of Guayana, by far to be preferred to that one, and I will follow the order of the preceding answers, omitting the interrogations only wanted there.

15. It has been stated in the first place, that the fortress of Carthagena does not defend the entrance of enemies in the Magdalena River, as said river disembogues within the Province of Santa Martha, not so the fortress of Guayana, the only one defending the entrance of all the Orinoco, as it stands situ-

ated, close to the islands, where it begins to expand and divide into a labyrinth of mouths and creeks, as seen in the general map, facilitating through various ways the entrance to the said fortress' waters, a necessary pass for the navigation of the Orinoco River, and the only one which may be properly fortified, as there is the narrowest body of the river, except the Angostura, which does not guard it wholly, as shown in the general accompanying map forwarded to His Majesty.

16. I have likewise stated in the second place that the fortress of Carthagena does not prevent the enemies from navigating the Magdalena River, on account of the distance to its nearest margin on Barranca,  $12\frac{1}{2}$  leagues by land and 20 through the ditch. On the contrary, the fortress of Guayana stands on the very border of the Orinoco River, and is the only place that, when well fortified, may fully defend the navigation and stop the entrance of vessels, as may be seen in the accompanying general map.

17. In the third place, I have stated that the distance of 20 leagues through the ditch, or 12 by land, is at the mercy of enemies who may land on different parts of the coast and cut up both ways, for which the fortress can not afford any means of resistance. It is of no importance to the fortress of Guayana the landing of an enemy, as the means of subsistence becomes impossible without taking the castle of San Francisco and the mountain of Padrastro, possessing no means of preventing the Orinoco River's navigation or of availing themselves of the same if the said fortifications are not taken.

18. In the fourth place, once the fortress of Carthagena lost, it will be difficult for an enemy to prevent the navigation of the Magdalena River by the vassals of His Majesty, unless they fortify Barranca, or keep there a strong detachment and vessels fit to oppose those intending to go up the river and pass in front of Barranca. It is not so on the Orinoco River, kept only by a well fortified fortress without any need of other defence nor detachment. If the enemies would take it they could keep said Orinoco River more easily and at a less expense than that of the Magdalena River.

19. In the fifth place, I said that once the Carthagena fortress lost the enemies can not make the interior commerce by land with the Kingdom of Santa Fe nor the vassals of His Majesty come down to Carthagena, as there is no open road nor is there any possibility of opening any, through the inaccessible mountains intervening. And now I say that after the loss of the fortress the enemies are at liberty to communicate by land through the way of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas and Santa Fe; and those of the country may come to the fortress and extensive banks of the Orinoco River, being in contact with said Provinces, from the headwaters of said river and the extensive plains shown by the accompanying map and the general one already sent.

20. I have likewise exposed in the sixth place, that once the fortress of Carthagena lost, the enemies can not navigate freely on the Magdalena River, as it will be easy to erect strongholds at several places and dispute the pass, preventing at the same time the people of the country from going down to Carthagena and trade with foreigners. But, if the fortress were lost, it would not be possible to prevent the foreigners from navigating the river at their pleasure. The Orinoco River, on account of its great breadth, can not be fortified in any other place than the present spot, where the fortress stands, and at the Angostura, but this latter spot does not guard the whole of the Orinoco, nor the Provinces through which it runs, as it is shown on the accompanying map. Nor said Angostura, no matter how well fortified it may be, could be defended after the loss of the fortress. An evidence of this point is furnished in my second part, in answer to the Royal Order of the 27th of May of last year, in which His Majesty orders the transfer of the present city of Guayana to said Angostura.

21. In the seventh place, I have said that the river Magdalena is only fit for the navigation of a certain kind of vessel called champanes; the greatest capacity of the same will hold about 100 packages of ordinary size at an expense of \$500 for the transportation from Carthagena or the Barranca (of the King) to the town of Honda, distant respectively from 80 to 100 leagues. They are not propelled by sails or oars, but by

means of poles, taking from thirty-five to forty days in the favorable season, and during the flood season from two to three months. At the Orinoco there are greater advantages, as sloops of thirty-five to forty tons may sail and go up the river above the confluence of the Meta, up to a place where the first rapid is met, where the Missions of the Jesuits are located, as shown in the general map, and by way of the rivers Vichada, Meta, Apure, Sinaruco, La Portuguesa, Pao, Care and others, not represented in the general map, where launches can enter and carry loads more or less like the *champanes* of the Magdalena River, going inland to the Provinces of Caracas, Barinas and Santa Fé; the sloops and launches may sail, which is a saving of money and time, duplicating the trips of the *champanes* and carrying more loads than they do.

22. In the eighth place, I have said that by the Magdalena River the town of Honda is reached, and from there to the capital of Santa Fé it is necessary to go through very steep and rough mountains, and the loads are easily escorted and defended. It is not so with those carried on the Orinoco River and the Meta, Vichada and others, running through extensive plains, with the facilities of several roads, and therefore impossible to be escorted. The horses or mules for the transportation are easily obtained in the prairies, intervening between the mountains and the Orinoco River, where there are pasture grounds in abundance, as well as mules, which is not the case at the town of Honda, where said mules are to be brought from the plains of Santa Fé.

23. I have likewise exposed in the ninth place that if the fortress of Carthagena falls in the hands of enemies who fortify and hold the place of Barranca (of the King), the pass of the Magdalena River is stopped for the vassals of His Majesty to transport their merchandise from the Province of Santa Martha, to the Kingdom of Santa Fé, but that at the same Magdalena River the pass of foreigners with their merchandise can be stopped, and those of the country prevented from going down to Carthagena to trade with said foreigners, in which case the Kingdom of Santa Fé and the Provinces of Popayan and Quito remain in communication only by the

way of the Orinoco River, both for the transportation of the merchandise received, as well as for the return of the proceeds and the products of said countries, making amends for the want of correspondence through the fortress of Carthagena. But if the fortress of Guayana is lost there is no remedy for the entrance of foreigners as far as Santa Fé, Popayan and Quito, with their merchandises which are transported to-day through the Magdalena River, and by the same Orinoco they could bring back their values and products from the Provinces of Barinas, Caracas, Barcelona and Cumana, without any need of the same foreigners going inland, as it will be enough that the goods be taken by way of the Orinoco to any places desired by the merchants of the Province who will be the real importers of the same. All what has been said seems to be very remote, and indeed it is not to be done in a few days nor years, but if the door is opened and the fortress of Guayana abandoned it is all very practicable, and I will endeavor to show this point in my second and third part.

24. In the tenth place, I have stated that the port of Carthagena admits vessels of all sizes, no matter how large they are, an advantage not possessed by the Orinoco River, but for the return trip from said port to Europe it is necessary to go to Havana, and from there to have to clear the channel of the Bahama Island, with the risks and terrors known to nautical men, until the channel is fully cleared. In the Orinoco no vessels can enter of more than 30 to 35 cannons or 500 tons, but there is another advantage that is not possessed by Carthagena, and that is, that as the land is more to the eastward of America, the return to Spain is easier, on the straight way, with the same days of navigation, as from Havana, without the least risk or any necessity of calling at any other port, until the anchors are cast in Europe.

25. In the eleventh place, I am of the opinion that the fortress of Carthagena is very important, on account of the facility of commerce, as a central depot of the merchandise from Europe and the values brought down, through the Magdalena River, from the Provinces of Santa Fe, Popoyan and Quito, and for that reason it must be well defended and fortified.



The same reasons, in favor of the fortification of the fort of Carthagena, strengthens my opinion for the fortification of that of Guayana, which if lost, there is no doubt that the foreigners would introduce by way of the Orinoco River the necessary merchandise for said Provinces and take back all the values brought down at present through the Magdalena River to Carthagena, besides those from the Provinces of Barinas, Caracas, Barcelona and Cumana, making of less service said port and fortress of Carthagena and those of La Guaira, Puerto Cabello and Cumana, on account of the greater facility and lower price of transportation to all said Provinces, through the Orinoco River, by which their products that have not the same facility, through the above-mentioned ports, will be transported.

26. If it is alleged that the best climate of the port of Carthagena and the Magdalena River affords a sufficient ground for the preference of said port over the Orinoco River and fortress of Guayana, I answer by stating that it is not so, as the port of Carthagena has not been, nor is it at present, a better climate than that of Guayana, and that disadvantage will be partially remedied by an abundance of provisions, of which it now stands in need, and by having good surgeons, doctors, medicines, and other conveniences possessed by Carthagena, where, in spite of the possession of all these facilities, they are subject to continual epidemics.

27. The Orinoco River is very healthy as compared with that of Magdalena, and the reason is because the navigation is practicable under sails, on account of its broad width and ventilation and the greater capacity and convenience of the vessels for travellers and passengers; it is not so on the Magdalena, where they are deprived of these comforts and the vessels are smaller, carrying no sails nor oars, outside of the channel of the river, at the point of poles on the banks close to the woods, under great difficulties overcome by the men and passengers, under continual showers and heat, deprived of the winds, on account of their close proximity to the borders and the elevation of the mountains, besides the inconvenience of the numberless mosquitoes and other insects, incumbering the vessels on account of the constant calm prevailing on the

river banks. These inflictions are not so frequent on the Orinoco River, or at least they are less intense and more tolerable, on account of the strong winds and the navigation under sails through the main channel.

28. Many other favorable and powerful circumstances might be adduced in favor of the fortress of Guayana and the Orinoco River, making them preferable to the Magdalena River and the fortress of Carthagena; but I omit them so as not to make too extensive this chapter, although it will remain pending to be continued in my second and third parts, in which I will be as brief as possible, as it will take a long time to enumerate all the circumstances connected with this subject.

29. In justification of what I have stated in this chapter, in favor of the fortress of Guayana, I have no other documents than my experience, during the long time I have been in America in the service of His Majesty, having had particular reasons for my observations of the port of Carthagena, its city and fortifications, as well as the distance of 12 leagues by land and 20 through the ditch from said city to Barranca. I have gone up the Magdalena River, on board of the *champanes*, as far as the town of Honda, and from there, through the rough road available to the capital of Santa Fe. I have noticed the many roads leading from the capital of Santa Fe to the Orinoco River, and in the time that I have served as a Governor I have traveled through the sierras, situated towards the north and coast of the provinces of Cumana and Barcelona, and the plains lying at the south of said sierras, down to the banks of the Orinoco River. I have likewise traveled through the plains of the Province of Caracas, on my way to the settlement of Cabruta and the Missions of the Jesuits, situated in the Province of Guayana, from where I came down, through the Orinoco River, to the fortress, and after having visited the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins, the settlement and fortification of the fortress, I embarked and went down to the mouths of the Orinoco, going through the Gulf Triste, the mouth of the Guarapiche, and the creeks of Santa Isabel, landing at Colquar, where I visited the Missions of this province, under the charge of the Aragon Fathers. As a result of

my travels to Cabruta and the general visit I am well posted in all that belongs to my position as Governor. I formed the general map which I have addressed to His Majesty, and if my many occupations might have allowed me the time to make a fair copy of the general map of the Viceroyalty of Santa Fe that I have formed in sketch, I should make more visible all the contents of these chapters and whatever else I omit, so as not to make it too extensive, but I refer to the examination and opinion of practical persons that His Majesty may appoint for the investigation of all that I have said, if it will meet his pleasure, as I most humbly pray.

30. And in reference to the greater utility and preference which I give to the fortress of Guayana over all the other fortresses kept by the King in America, I do not say so without being well posted, for I have seen at the South Pacific those of Valdivia, Conception and Valparaiso in Chile, and those of Callao, and I have a sufficient notice of what are those of Panama, Acapulco and Sonsonate. On the north I have seen those of Buenos Ayres, Montevideo, Carthagena, La Havana and Cumana, at present in my charge, and I have an idea of those of La Guaira, Puerto Cabello, Maracaibo, Puerto Bello and the Windward Islands, and taking all in all, I have come to the conclusion that none could bring as great loss as that of the fortress of Guayana, and that if the enemies would take it, their possession would multiply the advantages of that of Sacramento, held by the Portuguese on the La Plata River, which I have likewise seen, and I know in what its commerce consists.

31. I think I have proved with sufficient reasons and documents all that I proposed to show by my No. 4 at the beginning of this consultation, and with the ten chapters contained in this first part and other documents that will be adduced, I will prove by the second and third, whatever I have stated. That is my purpose, trying to avoid confusion, after having anticipated the contents of said ten chapters.

## Part Second.

1. In this second part I will produce evidence of the irreparable injury which might follow to the service of both Majesties from the enforcement of the Royal Order of the 27th of May of 1762, as I have stated in No. 5 at the beginning of this consultation. In order to do so clearly and with the fewest words possible, I will place at the margin in said Royal Order, and will answer its contents, showing what I shall have to expose, with several instruments that I will quote, and the ten chapters of the first part of its numerated paragraphs, which may be necessary, and where the documents I may refer to will be seen and compared.

### Royal Order.

“The King bearing in mind what your honor exposes by letter of August 27th of last year.”

2. By the two Royal Orders of the 21st of July of 1759 and 13th of May of 1760, His Majesty was kind enough to point out that many times the demolition of the castle of Araya had been contemplated, and the opinion had been shown that I ought to expose my ideas, as to the utility or inutility of said fortification, after having examined by all possible means both bearings of the subject, so as to come to a final conclusion in the case.

3. In order to fulfill my commission I instituted the proceedings that I considered necessary, and formed a plan of the location of the castle, the salt pits lost under its protection, and the surrounding grounds. On the 27th of August of 1751, with the accompanying proceedings and plan I represented to His Majesty, the inutility of said fortification, the large annual and undue expenses involved in its subsistence, showing my opinion that the Royal service required its demolition.

4. I likewise represented to His Majesty that if it was His Royal pleasure to demolish said castle it was advisable to transfer the two bronze culverins of said fortress to that of San Francisco de Aşis, in Guayana, as they were wanted there and

were sufficient to control the full breadth of the Orinoco River. That it was indispensable to have a new regulation for the garrison of this fortress, by adding 25 more men. The fortress of Guayana is more important and requires the greatest attention of His Majesty, being imperative to increase the garrison with one more captain, one lieutenant, one standard-bearer and 70 men, including the corresponding corporals; but in no manner the garrison of Araya was available to increase that of Guayana. I ask His Majesty that the \$41 received there from Mexico for the annual pay of the garrison of Araya be continued without alteration, in order to pay that amount to the garrison of Cumana and increase that of Guayana, and escorting the Catalan, Aragon and Observant Missioners, preaching the Gospel in this Province, all for reasons fully explained in said representation and the chief points of its contents.

5. By the Royal Order of the 6th of January of 1762 His Majesty kindly instructed me to proceed to the demolition of said castle, and the transfer to this garrison of the troops of said castle and the utensils of said fortress, as it was done and reported under date of November 1st of last year.

6. Lately, and by the present Royal Order, I am instructed (among other things), to send fifty-two men from the garrison of Araya to the fortress of Guayana, fifty to the island of Trinidad, and to increase the garrison of this place with twenty-five more men, as proposed in my representation of the 27th of August, and that those remaining from the garrison of Araya be sent for the greater protection of Guayana, besides the fifty-two before mentioned. To these points I will refer in the regular order at the proper time, giving better reasons than those expressed by my said representation of the 27th of August, showing the impossibilities opposing the march of these detachments.

“And the advices sent to His Majesty about the situation of the city of Guayana, the population of which is 460 persons, including the garrisons of the fort.”

7. I do not know upon what grounds said advices have been

VOL. 1, VEN.—7

sent to His Majesty, nor do I presume that they had any other object in view than the Royal service, but by the contents of the Royal Order it is plain that they are not entirely accurate and show no knowledge of this country nor of what may be easy or impossible; the above advices have been sent to His Majesty with a view to fortify the Orinoco and take steps to reach that end without any proper instruction on these controverted points, having confused ideas and informations which had produced said advices in their own way and without reflection, as I will show it.

8. The situation of the city of Guayana is in the best place, and as well ventilated as that place permits. It was held as such by the Engineer Don Antonio Jordan, who established it in the year 1741, on account of the destruction of the old Guayana by the English, who set it on fire, when it was situated on the bank of the Usupama River, as stated in my first part, Chapter 7, Nos. 2 and 3, and in the figure 2 of the accompanying map, where the present site is shown, without having been reproved by anybody, nor any other place found more convenient for subsistence and salubrity, and a very necessary post, for without it the fortifications could not be maintained in the condition in which they are, as the only place that can defend the Orinoco.

9. The population has not only 450 persons, including the troops, as they have informed His Majesty, but 535, as shown in my first part, Chapter 9, No. 91.

“The condition in which the chief castle called San Francisco de Asis is found, the wall of which has little resistance.”

10. In the accompanying map, figure 2, may be seen the situation of the Castle of Asis. In figure 3 its plan settled, and the precise and punctual scale placed at the margin, with the condensed explanation of the same. And in Chapter 9 of the first part, from 1 to 31, an extensive explanation of its circumstances, repairs made on account of the walls, and its condition at the time of the visit and at present, without any contradiction of what I explained there, as it is such as represented, and may be verified at any time.

11. With my exposition in the said Chapter 9, and the numbers quoted, it is evident that the Castle of San Francisco de Asis is a very regular fortification, even if situated in another place, where men of war of the line could open an attack, and where it is more than ordinarily good, and very strong, if the Padrastro is fortified (as I will explain in my third part), which is the point to make it useless as stated in Chapter 9, No. 43, where it is shown how solid it is, and not any fault of resistance of its walls, as His Majesty has been informed.

“And it is under the guard of one Castillian captain, one lieutenant, two standard bearers, and 100 men.”

12. His Majesty has not been informed with more accuracy in regard to the garrison of said castle, as it does not consist of one Castillian captain, one lieutenant, two standard bearers, and 100 men, but one Castillian captain, one lieutenant, two standard bearers, one constable, one chaplain, two sergeants of fusileers, two corporals, 12 artillery men, one drummer, and 77 soldiers, making in all 100 men, who receive salaries and are employed, according to my exposition, in the first part of Chapter 9, No. 89. .

“ With 18 cannons from 6 to 24,”

13. In the year 1720 the fortifications of Guayana of the then indefensive Castle of San Francisco were only four to six guns of small calibers and one of 15, as I have exposed in Chapter 5, No. 2, and it was thus kept, until the year of 1752 in which by Royal Order communicated by the Most Excellent Marquis of La Ensenada to the President of Commerce of Cadiz, who was then your Excellency, there were sent, by way of Caracas, ten iron cannons, four of the caliber of 18, two of 12, three of 8, and one of 4, and through the same way there were received in this capital and forwarded to the fortress of Guayana, in August of 1756, and were mounted in the Castle of San Francisco and a few of inferior caliber were dismounted and transferred to the Padrastro, and at the time of the visit, which I

made in the year of 1761, the existence at San Francisco was of twelve mounted cannons, four of 18, one of 15 useless, two of 12, three of 8, and two of inferior metals, as it is reported in Chapter 9, No. 26, and at present, and from last year, there are in said fortification seventeen cannons for the reasons explained in said Chapter 9, Nos. 28 and 29, without room for any more artillery, as may be seen by the plan and figure 3 of the accompanying map. Therefore there is sufficient evidence that said castle has never had nor has now eighteen cannons, and of those existing at present, none is of the 24-caliber as reported to His Majesty.

“Their poor temper.”

14. In the year 1720, and even in 1740, the Castle of Guayana was insupportable, on account of its bad temperature and total scarcity of victuals, and other reasons explained in chapters 5 and 7 of my first part, but to-day, with the more or less provisions brought from the Missions (as it is shown in the first part, Chapter 8, from No. 5 to 9), it is inhabitable, not being any sicklier than the rest of the banks of the Orinoco River and the settlements of Piacoa, Aripuco, Encaramada, Uruana, and Raudal, the banks of which are marked in the map, nor any less healthy than Carthagena and the settlements at the margins of the Magdalena River, and much more important than said fortress, as I have shown in the first part of Chapter 10, making indispensable the subsistence of said fortress, without minding its bad temper, which will undoubtedly improve (as experience shows it) when victuals are abundant and the natives find other conveniences of which they stand in need now, not being sure of healthiness with the change of locality, but on the contrary, as I will explain in another place, while the present matter will remain pending yet.

“And that the houses are built of wood and mud, covered with palm branches, and the church likewise.”

15. It is evident that the church and the 66 houses existing at the time of the visit, and 73 at present, are built of wood and mud (called “Bajareque” in this country) and covered



with palm leaves, except 10 of them, that after the visit have been roofed with tiles and two which were already tile roofed, as everything is shown in the first part, Chapter 9, No. 91; but whoever sent this report to His Majesty had not seen, nor had noticed that all those of the government are of the same material, except the capital, having about 80 of stone and mortar and 150 of "Bajareque," all covered with tiles as well as the church, and about 20 of this same material and cover; and the church of San Phelipe de Austria, which is of stone and mortar material covered with tiles, and the rest of the houses of the capital and of the other settlements of the Province are of "Bajareque" covered with spread mud and straw or palm leaves, as is shown in the first part, Chapter 4, No. 3 to II, with the particular notice that, aside from the settlement of Pao, none else shows as good order as that of Guayana, nor in all the Provinces are found two-story houses, roofed with tiles, as those belonging to the commander and the standard bearer Ferreras. In the plan figure 2 of the accompanying map, they are marked with Nos. 3 and 8.

"Having in the south in the interior 18 settlements of reduced Indians by the Catalan Capuchin Missioners."

16. All the settlements of the Missions reduced by the Catalan Capuchin Missioners are not in the interior of the south, nor do they amount to 18, as reported to His Majesty; those of Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, and Aguacagua are on the banks of the Orinoco River, and to the east and west of Guayana (a circumstance of importance for what it shall have to be said), as it is shown by the accompanying map, and in the general one, where the remaining settlements are shown, but not to the amount of 18, but only 16, the greatest and the only number that they have attained, for although eight of them have been lost, it was at different times and before ascending to the above-mentioned number of 16, existing at the time of the visit and at the present, as it is shown in my first part, Chapter 8, No. 2, showing the want of information of whomsoever sent said advices to His Majesty.

“That it is easy to insult its garrison by a “coup de main” and lose the Padraastro, with which no defense could be made of the little fort of Limones, nor of the Province, leaving the Orinoco open and uncovered the rear portion of Cumana, Caracas, Barinas, and even Santa Fe, without remaining there a sufficient force to stop the progress of an enemy, nor those coming from the neighboring Provinces will find embarkations and stores to stand a siege.”

17. It is undeniable the facility with which the garrison, not that of the Castle of San Francisco, which is in condition to avoid and resist a surprise, but that of San Diego or Padraastro, consisting at present of one sergeant, one corporal, and four men, as I have stated in Chapter 9, No. 89, without means for increasing this fort for want of lodgings, according to the said chapter and numbers 44 to 49, nor in time of war may said garrison be more numerous, unless kept in the open air, which is impossible in that country, on account of the excessive rains most of the year, and even during months that are not of the rainy season, it seldom fails to rain every day, and the dew is always damp and sickly.

18. It is likewise evident that in case of a surprise of the most important mountain of Padraastro no defense is left to the Castle of San Francisco, as it is dominated by the summit of said mountain at an elevation of 36 yards above the level of the parade ground, and at a short distance of a regular musket-shot's range, as shown in No. 43 of the said Chapter 9.

19. It is likewise certain that once these fortifications lost, the whole Province remains defenseless and the Missions in charge of the Catalan Capuchins unprotected, the navigation of the Orinoco free and at the mercy of whomsoever controls and fortifies the mountain of Padraastro, just as well the Provinces of Cuimana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, Popayan, and Quito likewise, as it is exposed in the chapter and number above quoted, and in the whole of the tenth and of the first part, without any possibility of sufficient force concurring to stop the progress of the enemy, while not dislodged from the Padraastro, which is a very difficult task if they mount batteries and lodgings to keep 40 or 50 men on said mountain, and if

that were the case (not as remote as it seems to be, and I will explain in time), said Provinces would be lost because, even if not controlled by the enemies, they might take all the advantages wanted and make useless the ports of Carthagena, Puetro Cabello, La Guaira and Cumana, as I have explained in my tenth chapter of the first part.

20. Bearing in mind the utmost importance of said mountain and fortress, I represented to His Majesty on the 27th of August, 1767, while dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya, that said fortress was of supreme importance, among those of His Royal dominiions, and in note 9, of my memorandum with the general map of this Province, addressed to His Majesty, I exposed that it was the only advantageous spot, of all the Orinoco River, that could be fortified with safety, and that it ought to be strengthened, and that the chief purpose of this consultation is addressed in the same spirit, and if it is done as I will explain in the third part, the Orinoco will remain perfectly secure, and it will be very difficult, if not impossible, for an enemy to possess it; on the contrary, if they succeed in securing said mountain, it is the only key and the door to enter into the other Provinces.

“His Majesty has decided that the city of Guayana be removed 34 leagues above the castle to the Angostura, where the Orinoco's breadth is reduced to 800 yards.”

21. This transfer of the settlement of Guayana to the site of Angostura, or whether it will remain where it is, so that the King our Lord may secure or lose a great portion of America defended and pending from said fortress, is an affair of the greatest importance that is necessary to treat with more particular extension than the rest of the contents of the Royal Order, so that His Majesty, well informed of the case, may decide what it may meet his Royal pleasure.

22. The great Orinoco River, after having received the waters of the Meta, follows its course for 200 leagues, more or less, until it empties its waters into the sea, through the labyrinth of mouths seen in the general map; its breadth in all this distance, the extensive plains through which it runs, the large

margins left in them, during its lowest waters, the great extent covered by its floods at the highest point, the confusion of branches in which it is divided, the infinity of islands formed by them, has raised doubts and opinions controverted, for the last seventy years, about the fortification of this most important river, so as to prevent its navigation by foreigners and secure the whole of all these Provinces, facilitating the inter-nation in the same, for which only three places have been considered adequate, that is to say : Angostura, 70 leagues far from the mouth and the sea, or labyrinth of mouths through which it empties its waters; the Island of Fajardo, 12 leagues below Angostura, and the fortress of Guayana, 7 or 8 leagues further down below said Island of Fajardo, and 20 from Angostura, (and not 34 as reported to His Majesty). These three locations are shown in the general accompanying map and I will deal with them separately, in justification of the opinions pro and contra of each one of them.

23. In favor of Angostura was the report to His Majesty by the Governor of Cumana, Don Juan de la Tornera, as it is shown in the first part, Chapter 2, No. 1; but by the document quoted there, in support of the Governor's opinion, he did not consider or inform His Majesty, on the point of fortifying the Orinoco River, and only had in view to prevent the access of the Caribs and strangers through Angostura and prevent the ravages occasioned in the Province of Barcelona, then unknown and not pacified, having in mind, said Tornera as well as the explorers of the Orinoco and Cari rivers, that Angostura was the only place fit to prevent the access of the foreigners, who were already acquainted with the road, leading from the fortress of Guayana to the plains of Barcelona and Caracas, as shown in the accompanying map, and was not known to the Spaniards when Tornera, in the year 1784, sent his report to His Majesty. It is likewise shown that said Governor considered one fort as sufficient, and for the subsistence of the garrison he thought a few settlements were enough of the Missions in that neighborhood, but he does not show that he was of the opinion that the population of Guayana, of which he had very remote ideas, was to be transferred to Angostura, so that

he could not inform His Majesty upon the more or less importance of the fortress, and whether it was to be preferred or not over Angostura.

It was likewise in favor of Angostura the report of Father Fr. Francisco del Castillo, a Missioner of the Province of Barcelona, as it is shown in Chapter 6, No. 4, and folio 47 of the corresponding proceedings. Said report elicited the Royal resolution, quoted there, for the fortification of said Angostura, and not of the Island of Fajardo, as had been decided before, on the ground that said Reverend Father Fr. Francisco del Castillo did not consider that it was fit for the purpose, taking the same view and the same terms as the Governor Don Juan de la Tornera, so that nothing was done or thought, in regard to the fortress of Guayana, nor the fortification of the Orinoco, to prevent the enemies of the Royal Crown from seizing it, and it was only in contemplation of the unfitness of the Island of Fajardo, for the construction of the fort, under His Majesty's directions, and the selection of Angostura for the same fortress, in order to stop the ravages of the Caribs and foreigners, among the Missions of the Province of Barcelona in charge of that community. No other reports in favor of Angostura are known to exist, besides those above-mentioned, not dealing with the subject of fortifying the Orinoco, and having in view only the protection of the Missions of Barcelona, just as the fort of Clarines was erected for their safety, as it may be found by the above-mentioned instruments existing at the Supreme Royal Council and the acts accompanying the same, for although Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman proposed to His Majesty to build a fort on the site of Angostura, his petition was refused, as shown at folio 46 of the proceedings.

25. In favor of the Island of Fajardo were the Reverend Fathers of the Company, Juan Capitel and Juan Romez, who with other persons, and by special commission, explored the Orinoco in the year 1719, as shown in Chapter 6, No. 2, and in view of the documents presented at the time, His Majesty directed the construction of a fort in said island, as extensively shown in said No. 2; but the Fathers of the Company and the other persons accompanying them, who left Angostura, did not

disapprove the fortress of Guayana, and on the contrary they expected that the one, on the above-mentioned island, would increase its strength, and that both this one and that of the island closed and secured the Orinoco. That is the only report in favor of the Island of Fajardo, which has been objected by every one who has had to do with the subject, as I will show.

26. The fortress of Guayana has deserved the general attention of all the professors on fortifications, and of those conversant with the Orinoco, in favor of which, repeated representations have been made to His Majesty, rejecting Angostura and the Island of Fajardo.

27. In the year 1541, according to Father Gumilla, folio 8 of the "Orinoco Illustrado," the first Spaniards were located in the Orinoco River. For their first establishment the Angostura was not selected nor the Island of Fajardo, nor Guayana, it was the mouth of the Caroni River, marked in the accompanying map, undoubtedly for the want of knowledge of the river and its more advantageous grounds. They subsisted in their first settlement until the year 1579, when the Hollanders destroyed it by fire, its inhabitants already familiar with the Orinoco, setting aside Angostura and the Island of Fajardo, were located 7 leagues below, from there, in that gorge of said river, where for the second time the breadth of the water is reduced to 1,400 or 1,500 yards, and there they founded the city of Santo Thome of the Guayana, and as they found it possible, they fortified the rock that forms to-day the Castle of San Francisco, the ground of which is so hard, and they kept it, until the year 1720, with constance, exposed to misery, as shown in Chapter 6, No. 1.

28. It is well understood that the first settlers of Guayana foresaw, that that was the only strong and advantageous spot, to prevent the navigation of the Orinoco and the entrance in the Provinces through which it runs, and not the Angostura, that although the breadth of the water is reduced to 800 or 900 yards, it is too far inland to prevent the landing on the whole length of the 20 leagues distance from Guayana, and that in the present situation of Guayana the whole of the Provinces and the navigation of said river was defended.

29. They likewise foresaw that the immediate surroundings of Angostura, the grounds of the same Province, were inundated five or six leagues inland, leaving at low water extensive lagoons, such as that of Caimanes, shown in the accompanying map; that they had no kindling wood or timber for building, no farming grounds, and the extensive sandbanks around were unfit to keep cattle, and that so indispensable conveniences and circumstances were at 8 or 9 leagues further inland; and on the opposite border of the river, within the Province of Barcelona, there were the same difficulties, so as to prevent even the Indians from settling that territory.

30. They likewise found that the land is not fit for any defence as it is all plain and sandy, where no fortifications could be erected except in Guayana, as they conceived it and did it, as the shape of the land itself contributes its share, and the experience has shown that they could never be dislodged, although the miserable party could not oppose any greater resistance to the foreigners, as shown in my quoted No. 1 of Chapter 6. They entered freely in front of that unhappy fortification, and that was the origin of the repeated appeals to His Majesty, as shown at the following No. 2.

31. The number 3 shows that the engineer, Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, and the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, by Royal Order herein quoted, were commissioned to examine the fortifications of the Orinoco and the utility or inutility of the same, and of those that ought to be constructed, setting aside the Angostura and the Island of Fajardo, they informed His Majesty in favor of Guayana, alleging reasons so solid, that to-day there is nothing to add to said well grounded report, and there is nothing said of what was the result.

32. After the engineer Fajardo and the Governor Arredondo, followed the Colonel and Governor of Cumana, Don Carlos de Sucre, who came down with a commission to fortify Angostura and the Island of Fajardo, and having well examined the ground they informed His Majesty, rejecting the Island of Fajardo, and although it is to be inferred from the documents concerning the proceedings that he was inclined to fortify Angostura, it was without prejudice to the fortress of

Guayana, to which he gave the preference, as more advantageous, as may be seen in his above mentioned conduct, No. 4 of said Chapter 6, the original of which is at the Supreme Royal Council of Indies.

33. In favor of the fortress of Guayana, and refusing Angostura and the Island of Fajardo, was the report to His Majesty, by the Marquis of San Philipe, as may be seen at No. 12 of the memorial presented by Father Gumilla in the accompanying proceedings, as from the consultation of the Marquis of San Philipe, quoted there, there is no copy found in the archives of this government, but it will be certainly found at the Supreme Royal Council of the Indies, together with the one sent by the Governor of Cumana, Don Carlos de Sucre, for the reasons explained in Chapter 6, No. 4.

34. Father Joseph Gumilla, by means of a memorial presented to His Majesty, through His Supreme Royal Council of the Indies, contradicted the opinions given by Sucre and the Marquis of San Philipe, and sustained those of the Fathers of the Company, who explored the Orinoco in the year of 1719, insisting in the fortification of the Island of Fajardo; but afterwards he confessed, in discharge of his conscience, that he had presented said memorial to His Majesty, in obedience to the wishes of the Provincial Father, notwithstanding that he knew that the Island of Fajardo was not a fit place, and that the only advantageous location on the Orinoco was Guayana, as it is shown by the above-mentioned document at No. 5 of said Chapter 6.

35. The memorial of Father Gumilla and other circumstances brought about new steps taken by the Supreme Royal Council of the Indies, as shown in No. 6 of the same chapter and of the 7th. It appears that the Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa and the Engineer Jordan, under his orders, came as commissioners to fortify Angostura or the Island of Fajardo, according to the instructions given them, as shown in the above No. 6. In order to carry out said instruction the Engineer Jordan went to Guayana and commenced the repairs of the fortifications and the rebuilding of the city which the English had destroyed by fire, but the Engineer Jordan died before he



could send his report to His Majesty, and in order to do so he awaited the arrival of Don Gregorio Espinosa, who went afterwards to the fortress, and rejecting the Island of Fajardo and Angostura sent his report to His Majesty in favor of Guayana, as may be seen in his consultation quoted, Chapter 6 and No. 7.

36. After said report His Majesty appointed the Brigadier Don Diego Tavares to succeed Don Gregorio de Espinosa, with the same commission to fortify the Angostura and the Island of Fajardo, giving him for that purpose a copy of the instructions given to Espinosa, with several other documents, so that he could, in accordance with their contents, proceed as directed by the Royal Cedula quoted in Chapter 6, No. 8, where the several instruments are quoted in justification of all that has been exposed hereto.

37. The Brigadier Don Diego Tavares brought with him from Spain the Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara, with whom he went to Guayana and examined the ground, in accordance with said engineer and other experts, who concurred and disapproved the Island of Fajardo and Angostura, and according to his instructions sent his report to the Viceroy of Santa Fe in favor of Guayana, as shown by No. 9 of said Chapter 6.

38. The Viceroy of Santa Fe, after the report of the engineer director of the fortress of Carthagena, Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, approved the opinion of Tavares and directed the construction of the fortress in the Island of Limones, as shown by No. 10, Chapter 6.

39. From what has been expressed heretofore, it appears that Angostura has had in its favor the opinions of the Governor of Cumana, Don Juan de la Tornera, and of Fr. Francisco del Castillo, a Piritu Missioner, and that they contemplated avoiding and stopping hostilities from foreigners and Caribs, in the Province of Barcelona, and that they never took into consideration the utility or inutility of the fortress of Guayana to protect the Orinoco, so that the foreigners could not hold on it their establishments, as it is not likely that they should have considered Angostura the proper place for that purpose.

40. That the Island of Fajardo has had in its favor only the

report of the Fathers of the Company, Juan Capitel and Juan Rumez, that explored together the Orinoco River and thought that it could be closed by fortifying said island, adding a new strength to the fortifications of Guayana, which were not discarded, as nothing was mentioned about it on said report.

41. In favor of the fortress have been the report of the Engineer Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, the Colonel and Governor of Cumana, Don Carlos de Sucre, his lieutenant, the Marquis of San Philipe, Father Joseph Gumilla, with very powerful reasons notwithstanding his former report in support of the opinions of Fathers Capitel and Rumez, the Engineer Don Antonio Jordan, the Brigadier Governor of Cumana, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, the Brigadier and Governor of Cumana, Don Diego Tavares, the engineer director of the fortress of Carthagená, Don Juan Bautista Mac Evan, and in virtue of his report the approbation of the most excellent Don Sebastian de Eslava, and as many as in the company of the above-mentioned persons have attended to the exploration and examination of the ground, as experts or conversant with the subject of fortifications, all unanimously were in favor of the fortress, and the same thing will happen with every engineer and practical person, familiar with the Orinoco, sent by His Majesty to examine the subject accurately, if they do so impartially and without any private ends, and only in the interest of the best service of God and the King.

42. But there is no need of any new and repeated explorations, reports of engineers, experts of the Orinoco nor modern addresses, when experience has decided this point so much controverted and of paramount importance, showing what steps are proper to be taken, without contention or contrary opinions, and as it has been settled by experience I shall have to say in a few words.

43. In the year 1720, the Province of Cumana was at the lowest condition of misery, as stated in Chapter 1, suffering constant ravages from the Caribs supported by the Hollanders, English, and French, who with the Caribs, overran this Province, that of Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, and the Province of

Guayana, enslaving the Indians and killing all those that they could not keep, except the Caribs, burning the Spanish settlements and those of the Missions established in said Provinces, notwithstanding the steps of the Governor, my predecessors, and the active measures enforced within their powers, as it is shown in the following instances.

44. After the destruction by fire set to the population of San Felix, (of the Penitence), the Governor, Don Joseph Carreño, at the head of all the people that he could gather, marched through the mountains of Cumana and entered the Guara-piche River, on the banks of which he fought seriously the Caribs and French together, reporting the affair to His Majesty, as shown in Chapter 1, No. 5.

45. During the government of Don Juan de la Tornera, several visits were made to the plains of the Province of Barcelona, and in one of the earliest, an encounter took place on the banks of the Huere River, fighting the Caribs and English, as reported by Governor Tornera to His Majesty in November, 1727, and before, in January, 1724, he had applied and requested likewise the fortification of Angostura, as shown in Chapter 2, No. 1.

46. During the government of Don Carlos de Sucre, several steps were taken to persecute said Caribs and the foreigners, opening a road to the plains of Barcelona in the direction of the fortress of Guayana, and other most useful measures, that I omit out of brevity, but it was not enough to avoid the unfortunate event, which occurred at the Mission of Our Lady of Remedios, carried out by the Caribs and French, as explained in Chapter 2, from Nos. 2 to 6.

47. During the government of Don Gregorio de Espinosa he endeavored to the utmost in stopping the foreigners. The plains of Barcelona commenced to be settled, as well as the pacification of the Carib Indians who inhabited the same, as shown in Chapter 2, already quoted, from Nos. 7 to 10.

48. During the government of Don Diego Tavares efficient measures were adopted for the continuance of the settlements and to stop the foreigners, especially the fortress of Guayana, as I will show by and by and successively, during the

time of Don Mateo Gual, Don Nicolas de Castro, and in my time.

49. But the vigilance of my predecessors was not enough to prevent all the ravages that at different times had been carried out by the Carib Indians, always supported and encouraged by foreigners, especially by the Hollanders. See the accompanying proceedings, from folios 21 to 24, and there the contents of Nos. 2 to 7 of the memorial of Father Gumilla, omitting the exposition of many other outbreaks, by many foreigners perpetrated at the remotest Provinces in communication with the Orinoco.

50. Evident as it is by the contents of Chapters 2 and 7 that the tranquility of said Provinces, most of them inhabited by Indians, except the unknown parts of the Guayana, has been secured, and the Caribs are bringing no more trouble, except once, and then on account of intoxication. From said Caribs several settlements have been established in the Province of Barcelona under the Father Observants of Piritu. The same thing has been done in the Province of Guayana, under the Catalan Capuchins, where the gentiles and inhabitants are in the vicinity of the Dutch Colonies, shown in the general map, and in fear, and discouraged from entering into the Orinoco, nor in the Province of Guayana, but very seldom and with the utmost precautions. The care taken with them leads to their withdrawal, and facilitates the work of the Catalau Capuchin Missioners, as shown in Chapter 8, followed likewise by the establishment of the new settlement of San Antonio de Upata, as shown in Chapter 9, Nos. 101 to 105.

51. That in none of said Provinces are noticed at present any foreigners going around as enemies, nor inducing the Carib Indians to hostilities, except the Hollanders, their allies, who purchase from them all the Indians that are not Caribs. There are no foreigners navigating the Orinoco, that is above Guayana, for at their mouth and in the neighborhood of said fortress they do so freely, but without being able to land, in any of the above quoted Provinces, nor do any more trade than the fortress allows, and within the terms exposed in my note 13, of my memorandum of news, and without said condescendance, nothing at all can be done, as the remedy to this

short and despicable injury will be exposed on the third part. There is no case of foreigners travelling through the Orinoco since 1746, except the case of a Frenchman, called Ignace, a great expert, who navigated the Orinoco in the year 1752, up to the mouth of the Apure River, where he took a stand, as shown on the back of folios 84 to 86 of the accompanying proceedings, but his vessels were seized then, and on two other occasions in which he tried to do the same; and being thus undeceived and rich in troubles and misfortunes, he desisted from undertaking similar enterprizes, and no other persons have been willing to try the experiment of like misfortunes, imitating said Frenchman Ignace. All these facts are true, and subject to no contradiction. It is likewise a fact that, during the tranquility of these Provinces, several settlements of Spaniards and natives have been established in the plains of Caracas and Barcelona, and the fields contain now large herds of cattle, yielding positive advantages and profits to all the inhabitants, as shown by Chapter 2, Nos. 11 to 14.

52. The pacification and settlements of the Indians of this Province is due to my predecessors and to the bodies of Missioners spreading the Gospel throughout, as stated in all of the Chapters 3 to 8.

53. And what is the reason why the foreigners do not enter farther inland, through the Orinoco River, in this Province nor those of Caracas, Barinas, and Santa Fe? Is it on account of the steps taken by His Majesty, in consequence of the various appeals of the governors and bodies of Missioners mentioned in Chapter 6, No. 2? No, indeed, as from the latter appeals a confusion of opinions has resulted, stopping the construction of the unfortunate port of San Fernando, as shown in all the Chapter 6.

54. Is it due to this fortification? Neither, as not one cannon had been yet mounted, and before it was finished it had been made an armory and fully worthless, as shown by Chapter 9 and numbers from 50 to 88.

55. And why is it that the foreigners who so freely entered the Orinoco until the year 1746 are not doing so to-day? Who prevents them or has closed the doors for them to do it? It is

clear, and a notorious fact to all the inhabitants of these Provinces and to the same foreigners, that the reason is the formation of the fortress of Guayana, placing its fortifications in state of defence, completing its small garrison and increasing that neighborhood that, although in a short number, it is enough to keep closed the entrance of the Orinoco and to resist the foreigners intending to force it, as it was not possible in the year 1720, in which that fortress was in a state of infelicity as shown in Chapter 5, Nos. 1 to 6, and in the same condition was kept up to the year 1747 on account of the fires set to it, and it commenced to be kept in proper form by Governor Tavares.

56. And is this formalization of said fortress the result of Royal direction, in virtue of the repeated appeals made by the Governors, my predecessors? Nobody could say so, as there is no Royal Order whatever on the subject, in the Archives of this Government, directing the least help for these fortifications, and only those quoted in Chapter 6, for the construction of the fort San Fernando, and a Royal Cedula under date of the 21st of March of 1750, approving the request of the Governor, Don Diego Tavares, for the construction of the fort San Diego, carried out as shown in No. 44, Chapter 9.

57. As there is no Royal order for the increase or repairs of the fortifications of Guayana and the formalities of their strength, to place in a respectable condition, how is it that the foreigners do not dare to go up the Orinoco and can not repeat their incursions, as they did before in this Province and their neighbors? I say that my predecessors, well aware of the utmost importance of that place, and that it was the key of the Orinoco, and of all these Provinces, and as responsible for the same, have extended their powers to the utmost, and besides the representations sent to His Majesty, every one in turn has taken particular steps towards the state of repairs in which the fortress is now.

58. And what particular steps are those taken by the Governor since the year 1734, when Don Carlos de Sucre took charge of the fortress of Guayana, and separating himself from the Governor of Trinidad was aggregated to that of Cumana?

To justify the particular appeals made to His Majesty and the steps taken by my predecessors for the safety and improvement of the fortress I do not consider necessary, for in virtue of the documents held in these Archives, it may be done with more or less extension whenever it may be convenient, bearing in mind for the present what I have stated in Chapter 7, Nos. 5 to 8, and Nos. 27 to 31 and 44 of Chapter 9, and other places of the first part.

59. But I think it is proper to find out whether the above-mentioned steps of my predecessors, and those taken in my time have placed the fortress of Guayana in good terms of defence, and able to resist the enemies of the Royal Crown intending to take it, in order to hold it or sack it and destroy it, as they have done at other times.

I will satisfy the questions by answering that in Chapter 9, in the first part, and from Nos. 8 to 49, the actual condition of the Castle of San Francisco is shown, as well as that of the fort San Diego or the Padrastro, and the more or less resistance which they may oppose. From Nos. 50 to 88 the inutility of the fort of San Fernando is shown. In No. 49 the garrison of the fortress, its employment and necessity of an increase are stated. In No. 90 the short number of militia-men and the great help they render to the garrison. And in all the above-mentioned places and numbers it is shown that the fortress is incapable to resist an enemy of the Royal Crown, intending to establish there or to sack it, but sufficiently fortified to prevent the foreigners and illicit traders from navigating the Orinoco and landing in these Provinces, or going inland to carry any hostilities in those of Caracas, Barinas and Santa Fe, as they did until the year 1734, and more or less until that of 1746, which is as far as the Governors my predecessors could extend their powers and lay before His Majesty the necessity of fortifying said post, increasing its garrison, so as to prevent the enemies of the Royal Crown from establishing there and become masters of the great commerce of said extensive Provinces guarded by it. I have represented the same thing, laying the case before his Royal Majesty as a result of my general visit, and in answer to the consultation of the 27th of

August, dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya, besides the repairs that, on account of the war, I had to carry out in these fortifications, as it is shown in the above-mentioned numbers of Chapter 9.

60. Now, if the only fact of the Governor formalizing that fortress has been sufficient to close the pass to the foreigners not only to navigate the Orinoco, but from landing and going inland to carry hostilities to the Provinces through which it runs, and if this fact has facilitated the pacification of the Indians inhabiting Barcelona and Caracas and part of Guayana, and the establishment of several Spanish settlements and populations of natives in said Provinces and their extensive countries full of cattle, without any hostile demonstration nor disturbance by the Caribs or the foreigners their allies, it is fully justified also what the engineer Don Carlos Diaz Fernandez, and the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, and the rest of persons who followed them, in rejecting the Angostura and the Island of Fajardo and giving their reports in favor of the fortress, until the approbation of the Most Excellent Don Sebastian de Eslava who acted with perfect knowledge, and consequently it is not necessary to go into new examinations and reports of engineers and experts about the Orinoco, nor entertain any doubts about the situation of this fortress, as the only and most advantageous spot of this river and said stronghold closes the navigation and internation through those extensive dominions under its guard, depending from the same; and for this reason it must be fortified even for better reasons than that of Carthagena, not only to prevent the navigation of foreigners through the Orinoco, but likewise to make impossible for them their establishment along the river; for if they had such an intention (which is not far from happening) it should be easy for them to succeed, on account of the want of defence at present, and after having succeeded, the loss of the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, Popayan and Quito would be inevitable, according to the terms exposed in all the Chapter 10 of the first part, and for a better proof, I shall have to extend the contents of this consultation. I do not think that in consid-



eration of the irreparable injury, fully explained, the abandonment of this most important fortress will meet the Royal pleasure, transferring to Angostura the small population and the lodgings of the short garrison of its fortifications, with the loss of the Mission under the Catalan Capuchins, the bulwark of the Dutch Colony. Said Mission could not subsist without the settlement of Guayana nor this one in Angostura, nor even where it stands at present, without said Mission, as has been stated in all the Chapter 8 of the first part, and at the end all that has been advanced in the way of safety of the Orinoco, as well as the Provinces which will be brought back to the miserable condition in which they were in the year of 1734 (which will be the best that may happen), or the establishment, at the fortress of Guayana, of a foreign colony, even more injurious than that of Sacramento in the Platte River, for this one can not control any more territory than the circumscription of the place, and that of the fortress might control the extensive Province of Guayana, that of Cumana, and those of Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas and Santa Fe, with more ease than Sacramento can control the Province of Buenos Aires and its surroundings.

61. It is no wonder that the report sent to His Majesty was in ignorance of the previous measures for the fortification of the Orinoco and the other circumstances that I have shown, as the documents existing in the archives of this government were not noticed, and they have been necessary for my present report. I have good reasons to presume that they did not anticipate, in their report to His Majesty, the insuperable difficulties, large expenses and irreparable injuries which will necessarily accompany the transfer of the city of Guayana to Angostura, for if they had reported the case with the proper accuracy no such a transfer could have been directed. On this point I think it is due to the Royal service that I explain the great difficulty, expenses and injuries attending the transfer contemplated, so that His Majesty may decide whatever may be His pleasure.

62. Among the insuperable difficulties making impossible the transfer of the city of Guayana to Angostura, is the poor

quality of the soil and the want of the necessary conveniences for the location and subsistence of a population. The western ground of Angostura in the Province of Guayana is very low and exposed to the inundations of the Orinoco River, which may flood 4 or 5 leagues, more or less, of the eastern portion of Angostura, while during the low waters a large portion of the river bed is dry and lagoons like that of Caimanes appear, as may be seen by the accompanying map. The waters flooding the western part of Angostura are not in communication with the floods from the eastern portion, as there is on that side a kind of causeway of continued hills and low mounds of earth. The breadth there is about half a league and the length about 4 leagues. Towards the north, the narrowest part of the causeway of Angostura is formed and widens in a direction from north to south, following inland about four leagues, where it is incorporated to a low ridge of hills.

63. On the extensive ground left dry by the Orinoco, from east to west of Angostura, and all that sandy country, which is not inundated, nor on the causeway and low ridges formed around, no timber exists fit for buildings, nor grass for the pasture of cattle or horses, nor farming lands, unless going inland for a distance of 9 to 10 leagues.

It is to be added that most of the year the people have to use the flooded water from the surrounding country gathered in the main river, which keeps unchanged only during one month. All the other borders of the neighborhood are prone to produce fever, according to the report from the Indians, which can not be overlooked, especially as they never settle or stay in that neighborhood. The new population contemplated receives the breeze from the Caimanes lagoon, which is certainly unhealthy, besides many other inconveniences, not only on the grounds of the Province of Guayana, but likewise on the opposite side, on those of Barcelona, which the first settlers had undoubtedly in mind when they established themselves on the Orinoco in the year 1541, and the settlers and founders of the fortress of Guayana in the year 1579. The foreigners were not ignorant of this fact. If the ground were suitable and the Angostura would defend the Orinoco they

should have tried to establish themselves there as they did in other places when freely navigating said river. Said inconveniences have likewise influenced the report to His Majesty of those who have rejected Angostura and favored the fortress of Guayana. (See their reports given before.) Indeed, the fact is so plain to the eye of the most indifferent person that I hardly need to continue giving any further justification. With the inundations of the country around, the want of building timber and kindling wood, pasture and farming grounds, and the poor water near the whole year, with a sickly climate exposed to fever, it seems to me that there is no further reasons necessary to convince of the impossibility of the subsistence of this population, and therefore I will undertake to expose the second part, and no little difficulty of the transfer of the same.

64. In Chapter 9 of the first part and in No. 91, I have said that the city of Guayana consists to-day of a church, the headquarters of the troop, and 73 houses situated in the order shown by figure 2 of the accompanying map, with the marginal and especial explanations. Said 73 houses at a moderate estimate averaging \$400 each, are worth \$29,200 added to \$4,000, the cost of the headquarters, and \$4,000 that of the Church and materials gathered for its rebuilding, the whole will amount to \$37,200, as the lowest value I believe of the material cost of said city. In the same Chapter 9 and map, will be seen marks of from 28 to 30 small plantations, belonging to the neighbors, some yield fruits and some of them sugar cane, used in the manufacture of liquors and sugar of very poor quality, which they call papelon, the only kind in use and consumption at that Missions. Other farms are reduced to a few cocoa trees, beginning to yield, and among them all, there is a yield of six to eight hundred pounds (6 to 8 fanegas). On the opposite side of the river, in the territory of the Province of Barcelona, they have herds of cattle for the supply of the fortress. Said establishments as an average are valued at \$1,000 each, and the whole at \$30,000, considering the tithes paid during five years, which are awarded annually at \$118.6 reals, as shown by the corresponding statement and general map with the accom-

panying proceedings. Adding to the \$118 and 6 reals exhibited by the collector of tithes, and the more or less moderate profit of the principal value of said plantation, more than the above-mentioned \$30,000, taking for granted that they yield about 4 per cent.

65. The 75 houses alone, together with the church and headquarters of the troop, are worth, as they are, \$37,200, they could not be built in Angostura for any less than \$50,000, considering the absolute want of building materials, timber, straw and the rest, such as mechanics for the construction, Indians for the work, and the necessary boats for carrying said materials and provisions for the subsistence of all.

His Majesty has drawn \$4,000 to help the construction of the church, as I will explain: to said sum we must aggregate \$5,000 to \$6,000 from the Royal Treasury for the construction of suitable military headquarters in Angostura, answering for parade grounds and fortress, as the constant rains of the country do not permit drilling on uncovered ground nor the reviews and other military daily exercises, which may be performed inside and not always outside, when the weather is not propitious. Subtracting these two amounts from the total of said \$50,000 there remains \$41,000 as the necessary amount for building the 73 houses above mentioned, for the lodging of the 90 families existing and residing at present at the fortress. Said amount shall have to come out of the pockets of those poor people, besides \$30,000 value of their small plantations, that they shall have to abandon (here is now the difficulty) as how is it possible that such a miserable people and their families, that are only dependent upon their salary as soldiers, and the corresponding officers, should have to abandon the houses they have built at the expense of many years' savings and labor, to go over to build them again in a sandy place, without any convenience or means to secure any support? And how is it credible that the neighbors, not soldiers, give up their own farms and fields and their city houses, being left in the direst poverty, to go to Angostura to establish their houses and new farms on unknown grounds, distant 9 or 12 leagues from the population, without Indians to help them in their

work, or money to pay the same or the provisions for their subsistence? That is, notwithstanding the reports sent to His Majesty, morally impossible, unless there is a lapse of many years, and then by perseverance and at considerable expense, that so serious difficulties could be overcome.

66. The want of provisions is the third powerful reason making impossible the transfer of the city of Guayana. The 535 persons composing the 90 families derive their supplies and live from the products of the 30 small plantations in cultivation and from the short crops of the five settlements of the Missions in charge of the Catalan Capuchins, as I have extensively shown in Chapter 8 of the first part, Nos. 6 to 12, the total amount of victuals brought to the fortress is short, and there is very seldom a year of real abundance, but very frequently they endure extreme wants, and in the happiest times not 100 men may come to the fortress, without producing a famine for them and the inhabitants, besides sickness, as it has been demonstrated by experience. (The boundary expedition may attest it.) Their wants are not remedied, on account of the distance of the coast, as the only resources come from the Province of Cumana and the valleys, along the northern coast, whenever they are not suffering the same inconvenience, as it so happens not infrequently.

67. As it is undeniable, everything I have exposed in the above Chapter 8, and notorious to all those who have been in the fortress, it follows as a consequence, that even if the ground of Angostura were not so entirely unfit and easy for the transfer of the 90 families, their subsistence is impossible after having to abandon the 30 small plantations and the 535 persons and over, to be aggregated there by directions of His Majesty, having to depend on the few supplies produced by the five settlements of the Missions, not sufficient to-day to support half of said number of persons, who must have the necessary victuals in Angostura at excessive prices, on account of the unavoidable expenses and losses occasioned by the transportation from the Missions to Guayana and from there by water to Angostura.

68. Perhaps whoever sent the report to His Majesty thought that the new farms undertaken by the new settlers of Angos-

tura would be sufficient to afford the necessary supplies for those persons transferred from the fortress and the rest of those aggregated to them, not thinking of the vast space of the dry borders at Angostura and the barren grounds around, through the space not inundated, the necessity of going inland 9 or 10 leagues in quest of proper grounds, the want of Indians for the cultivation, the short number of inhabitants who may work the fields and the inability of the soldiers to do that kind of work, and much less at such a distance from the population, the risk they run in those unknown deserts not yet reduced, and the absence of means of the neighbors to buy slaves, implements, carriages and horses and open roads in those wild woods, to till and plant them, building a few houses, in which to find shelter, as it has been done in their abandoned plantations, and many other difficulties which are met with in that desert country, not permitting the establishment of farms before the lapse of half a century of continuous and efficient work, with the loss of a great many persons contriving to open and settle amid those woods, requiring a large amount to keep and support the laborers. In justification of all that has been said it is only necessary to reflect on the unhappy actual condition of Guayana, after 180 years of its establishment and in spite of all that has been done to improve it, and the people that have perished, out of want at all times, as I have said in Chapters 5 and 8 of the first part.

69. But admitting and not allowing that the Angostura ground was fit for the location of the settlement, and that the inhabitants of Guayana should be transferred there, as well as those directed by His Majesty to be aggregated of their own free will and pleasure without the least inconvenience, other difficulties are yet to be encountered, on account of the excessive expenses required. The 100 persons of the service of the fortress, and the 58 militiamen of the company of residents formed in that neighborhood, are frequently employed to render the service of the regular troop, as I have said in Chapter 9, part first, Nos. 89 and 90, the garrison is very small for that fortress. So have my predecessors represented the case to His Majesty, and on account of the general visit and in the

consultation of the 27th of August, while dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya, I repeated the same request of my predecessors, asking His Majesty to kindly increase said garrison with 60 persons more, including the corresponding corporals.

Transferring now that settlement to Angostura, it seems to me that the detachment that ought to garrison the fortress should correspond to 100 regulars and the 58 forming the militia company, and the necessary increase should be in all 228 men, enough to draw the detachment for the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, another for the Island of Trinidad and the guard of the presidial ground, and the number of sick to be taken into account, with another supernumerary force for sudden contingencies, such as the armament of launches, the re-enforcement of detachments, whenever there is any incursion of the Hollanders going inland of the Province of Guayana; all these movements are frequent enough in that fortress in which the militiamen take a part, but supposing that there were no more than 170 regulars, and from these 30 to go to the Missions and 10 to Trinidad, leaving in the fortress 130 men, between sound and sick persons; where are these people to be quartered? The Castle of San Francisco has no more than the small body of the guard, marked in the plan of the accompanying map, figure 3, letter J, where there is no kitchen or extension even for two bedsteads.

In the fort of San Diego or Padraastro there is only one lodging room of 4 square yards as represented in Chapter 9, No. 47, and consequently, if there is no lodging room in these fortifications, it is necessary for the King to build and keep formal headquarters with the corresponding officers, bedsteads, and other utensils for the troop as well as for a hospital, drug store, surgeon, and assistants with twenty-five or thirty bedsteads for one-fourth part of the garrison and detachment, which is the least that in that climate ought to be considered with permanent sickness, and where the sick are now taken care of in their private houses. His Majesty would keep likewise a chapel and chaplain, as well as a store to keep the provisions brought by the Indians from the Missions.

and the person who, on account of the Royal Treasury, has to pay for the same or a regular Purveyor to attend to that subject, and send to Angostura the provisions received, as the Indian who brings three or four small loads of casave, eggs, chickens, rice, and fruit, could not on his own account and risk take upon himself the transportation or be delayed to await for the proceeds. Taking into consideration the expenses thus pointed out and how indispensable they are, it will be found out that they will amount to large sums, involving losses and difficulties. In that fortress a few more houses are wanted (not on account of the King), for lodgings of the traders of these Provinces, and for the Indians bringing supplies from the Missions, who at present come to the Syndic of the Community, and with his intervention the sale is made to the public of what they bring, and the other traders come to their acquaintances among the neighbors, and without this recourse they would keep in the open air, thus making very scarce the communication with these Provinces. It is necessary to keep there a storekeeper of the ammunitions and appliances for the fortification, and a lieutenant of the Royal officers to collect dues from the vessels making the traffic as with the first port of entry. And finally it is necessary to have the same population that is raised and not sufficient in that fortress, or that its fortifications do not subsist.

“So that in this manner the troop may hold a second place where to repair their wants, stop the progress of an enemy, and congregating there superior forces, they may go down the river and dislodge it, preserve the population, and increase and reinforce the troop of the Castle.”

70. From the fortress of Guayana to Angostura there is not a distance of 34 leagues, as reported to His Majesty, but only 20; there is the same distance from the settlement of Cari, situated on the table lands of the Guanipa, from north to south of Angostura, down to the port of Camino real (main road), opposite the fortress, (see the general accompanying map and the particular one, to which I refer for an examination, besides



what appears from various instruments in the proceedings herewith); although it seems to me that said Fortress of Angostura by the land route of the same Province may be distant 34 leagues, and probably more, according to the times. In summer, on account of the difficulties in wading the Caroni River in the neighborhood of the Mission of Murucuri, when the country around is not inundated, it is no doubt the road will be much shorter. In the rainy season it is necessary to go up and wade the Caroni River, before it is reached by the Paragua River, for, once both of them joined together, it can not be waded, and to cross it becomes very risky, on account of the strong current up to the Missions of Aguacagua. Once the Caroni and Paragua Rivers waded, the country around becomes more or less inundated, making necessary several detours towards the mountain, up to the place where the low ridge and causeway before mentioned forms Angostura, after inverting the time necessary to make 34 leagues; but we are not certain of this simple news of the Indians, as nobody from Guayana is conversant with the country and western surroundings of Caroni and Paragua, knowing only those towards the east, where the Missions are located by the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers.

71. As all that I have said is positive beyond question, it results that if the enemies of the Royal Crown would invade the fortress with the object to sack it and destroy the fortifications, as they have done on previous occasions, or else to hold it; and supposing, in such a case, that unfortunately it would be lost, the troop of its garrison has no second place where to recuperate, nor any other course left than to withdraw to the settlements of the Mission inland, as the only and best means in their choice, not only to defend said settlement, but to deprive the enemy from receiving any supplies which they might find there. If Angostura is chosen to make any stand and repairs, it should be reached either by water or land; if by water, who could imagine that the enemy in control of the Padrastro mountain and the Castle of San Francisco would allow the garrison to embark and take a stand at Angostura, without persecuting the embarkations by those of

superior force, either under sails or by oars, and that in case of readiness of launches, as well as crews well provided with the necessary stores for the transfer of the garrison on board, without the disorder and confusion attending similar unfortunate cases. And if the way by land is chosen, it will be no less difficult for want of provisions and horses, having besides the large Caroni River to be crossed, and in want of the necessary boats and means of transportation, through roads not opened or known, through strange forests, according to the time in which the necessity of such a withdrawal should occur. If this is undertaken by way of the Province of Barcelona it is necessary that the enemies allow the pass of the Orinoco, and on the opposite side to take the main road shown by the map, having ready horses and at least the required provisions to be carried by the men for a distance of 20 leagues' journey to the settlement of Cari, the only pass practicable to reach Angostura, about 6 leagues from north to south from said settlement, and recrossing again the Orinoco to be incorporated with the garrison and fortification of the settlement of Angostura, being impossible, that with so many difficulties as are met with in those deserts—the frequent showers, the heat, the want of provisions and spring water, and the pass of the river through the thick clusters of the palm trees called Moriche, the transfer and reparation could be attained without disorder or tragedies leading to the dispersion of the troops.

72. But supposing that either by land or water the withdrawal is carried out successfully and that Angostura is reached, the enemy could not be detained there in its progress; on the contrary, it will succeed in subduing the defenders of Angostura by depriving them from the provisions supplied by the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins, and being in control of the navigation of the river, excluding the Spaniards, there is no remedy left to those holding Angostura and in want of provisions and of vessels to procure the same, and even if they had these vessels the enemy could seize them, and if in the future they would establish plantations and settlements by the Missions, in the neighborhood of Angostura, the enemies in control of the Orinoco might without any difficulty

destroy them and employ many other devices facilitated by their control of the navigation of the river, and without wasting any powder surrender the fortifications of Angostura, no matter how strong and the number of its garrison, which may be reduced by want. It may be claimed that they could receive their victuals by way of the plains of Barcelona ; but that will only show the want of knowledge of the country and of the difficulties for transportation from the city of Barcelona and the other settlements of the required supplies. When they would be ready, who can assure that the enemies, while absolute masters of the Orinoco, would permit their conveyance and transfer from the Province of Barcelona to that of Guayana?

73. And supposing that the garrison of Guayana might safely withdraw to Angostura and find there all needed supplies and superior forces enough congregated, how could they go down the river and dislodge the enemy? If they would intend to do so by water, how could their vessels, inferior in number and capacity, resist those of superior strength from the enemy and the fire of the fortifications? If by land, with what carriages, provisions, and campaign trains could they attempt to do so? They certainly can not do so by the sword as against fortifications, even if they could gather around 4,000 well disciplined soldiers. The whole will only show that once the Padrastró Mountain lost, and consequently the Castle of San Francisco, the enemies could freely control the navigation of the Orinoco River, and that Angostura can not be defended, nor the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins in that Province, nor prevent any hostilities to the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, and Santa Fe, as extensively exposed in all the Chapter 10 of the first part.

74. Similar convincing reasons could be exposed besides to prove the difficulties, expenses and irreparable injuries following the transfer of the settlements of Guayana to Angostura, but I omit them, so as to avoid any further delay, especially when the answer of the remaining chapters of the Royal Order contains many more reasons in justification of the two previously stated, concluding with the following reflection :

75. If the fortress of Guayana is the chief key of the whole

Orinoco River and the Provinces through which it runs, and the only advantageous spot that must be fortified, according to the opinions of the engineer Fajardo, the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo; the Governor of Cumana, Don Carlos de Sucre; his lieutenant, the Marquis of San Philipe; Father Gumilla, the engineer, Don Antonio Jordan; the Brigadier Don Diego Tavares, the Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, the engineer Don Gaspar de Lara, the engineer director of the fortress of Carthagena, Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, and in virtue of the approbation of his Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, and of many other persons, who have examined the subject and whose accurate and unanimous judgment has been well justified by experience, as after the Governor gave shape to the fortress up to the condition shown in the foregoing number 59, the entrance and navigation of the Orinoco River by foreigners has been fully stopped, as well as their landing in the Provinces, and their going inland, it is showing evidently that said fortress is precisely the only door to all those Provinces.

The Fathers of the Company, as well as Juan Capitel and Juan Romez, consider this fortress as very useful and necessary, notwithstanding their opinion that the Island of Fajardo ought to be fortified, a report not accepted by the Governors and Engineers commissioned by His Majesty for the fortification of said island; all those persons directed by particular Royal Orders to examine the subject have acknowledged that Angostura is useless for the fortification of the Orinoco and defence of its navigation by strangers, intending to effect an entrance in said Provinces, in spite of the opinions of Governor Tornera and Fr. Francisco del Castillo, who did not dwell on the question of the fortification of the Orinoco and only with that of preventing the ravages experienced by the Missions of the then unknown Province of Barcelona; and there is not a single opinion in favor of Angostura, as it is shown that the country around is inundated, that there is a want of building timber, kindling wood, good water, pasture grounds, farming lands, and only abounds in lagoons, bringing about the unhealthy condition reported by the neighboring Indians. To all these

inconveniencies must be added the difficulties and large expenses of the transfer of the inhabitants, the impossibility of their subsistence on account of the present scarcity of victuals and the prospective continuance of the same for many years to come, and although the transfer might be carried out wholly or partially, and the Angostura fortified, that place can never be defended, nor from there could be undertaken the recuperation of Guayana in case of its loss, nor the protection of the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins, preventing the control of those Provinces by the enemies and their invasion of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, and Barinas, with many other difficulties, expenses, and injuries that are yet to be exposed. What benefit follows or is expected by our holy religion and the service of both Majesties, the State, the Royal Treasury, or the inhabitants of this Province from the transfer of the small and necessary city of Guayana? I do not see any, nor do I believe that these sad results have been duly anticipated and foreseen by those commissioned by the Royal Order to handle this most important subject. But I consider as certain that the depopulation of Guayana is very easy, and that the population of those families in Angostura is very difficult, and if the intended new projected city shall partake of the same unfortunate fate of the two cities of Real Corona and San Fernando, this one founded by the third commissioner Don Joseph Solano, and the other by the chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriga, and the same that inevitably awaits Ciudad Real, founded by said chief, as I have exposed briefly in notes 9 and 10 of my memorandum of reports, and from Nos. 92 to 100 of Chapter 9 of this work.

In order to realize the transfer, as directed by the Royal Order, it will take many years, excessive expenses and the risk of many lives in that new and unknown territory. And after having secured all that is needed as projected, the Orinoco will remain indefensive and exposed to the enemy. And if by misfortune an enemy could take and fortify the Padrastro mountain (the Gibraltar of these Provinces) they should become masters of all these Provinces in spite of the fortifications of Angostura, if they could be held. I consider

out of question that if the population of Guayana is removed and the small population it contains be dispersed, and later on the necessity of this settlement should be fully understood to be as I do represent it now, it will be difficult to bring it back, and many years shall have to elapse before a similar congregation of families come together, used to the climate and well attached to the spot, as they are now, (the only way to make them subsist.) In the meantime it is very possible that the enemies may assault that most important place from which they are not far nor forgetful of the past, as I will show in the third part of this work. And finally I have to repeat that I do not entertain any doubt that if His Majesty had been duly and accurately informed about all the above inconveniences and whatever else I will submit to His Royal kindness, the transfer of the population of Guayana, should not have been directed, as it will be prejudicial to our holy religion, to the Royal Sovereignty, to the Treasury and to all these vassals.

---

“That to the 100 men of the full assignment of Guayana the 73 of the escort of the Mission of the Jesuits of the Orinoco and the Barinas dominions be aggregated.”

76. In note 10 of my memorandum of reports I state that the Reverend Father Jesuits of the new Kingdom of Granada teach the Gospel at the Missions established on the margins of the Meta and Casanare rivers, shown partially in the general map; that these Missions belong to the Government of Santa Fe, except those called Eucaramada, Uruana, Carichana, and Raudal, situated to the south of the Orinoco River in the Province of Guayana, belonging to the Government of Cumana; that for the escort of said Missions His Majesty keeps 48 soldiers and one captain at the annual salary of \$995 for the latter and \$132 for the former, to be paid from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fe; that the progress of the Jesuits in the Province of Guayana was very slow, on account of the great amount of work in the pacification and settlement of the

gentiles inhabiting the unknown regions in the neighborhood of the Meta and Casanare rivers, and that the Missions on the banks of the Orinoco River were established more for the purpose of keeping an eye on the Caribs and preventing them from navigating it and assaulting those of the Meta and Casanare than to spread the same into the interior of the Province of Guayana, as shown by the above quoted note. What was then sufficient to give a general notice of said Missions, especially of those (four in number) within the government in my charge, is not so to-day for showing the impossibilities in regard to their escort and that of the dominions of Barinas coming down to be aggregated to the garrison of Guayana. It becomes necessary to show the territories occupied by the two Missions. From their remotest settlement to the fortress there is a distance of from 300 to 350 leagues, through the roads in use to reach those Missions. The quality of the troop employed in these escorts and the method of serving their places will show, after it is well known, how difficult and prejudicial should be their aggregation to the garrison, and that the reports sent to His Majesty on this particular point, show not the least knowledge of the previous circumstances for the transfer of the city to Angostura.

77. Very near to the capital of Santa Fe, and at the highest point of its mountains, is the source of the Meta River, which after several windings falls to the valley called Turmeque, the name of an Indian settlement so called and situated in the same valley. From this settlement it continues its windings through the mountains until coming out to very extensive, and in its greatest portion unknown, prairies called the plains of San Juan, where there are several missionary settlements governed by its Corregidor provided by the Viceroy of Santa Fe. In the year 1753 there were in charge of the Augustine, Recollect, and Calzado orders of that Kingdom, but I am ignorant whether they have passed or not to secular clergymen according to the last Royal provisions on the subject. Not far from this doctrinal settlement, on the same plains of San Juan, the Jesuits have different Missions on the margins of the Meta River, among them those named La Concepcion, San Miguel,

and San Francisco Regis, not embraced in the general map, which does not reach the whole of the same within 80 leagues, and thus the said Missions, La Concepcion, San Miguel, San Juan, San Francisco de Axis, and others situated in said plains, at a distance from the Orinoco by elevation 160 leagues and from Guayana about 26, which calculated at one-third more, on account of the windings and detours of the Orinoco and Meta rivers, it is understood that said last Missions are far from Guayana from 340 to 350 leagues at least

78 On the Orinoco, and at seven days' journey from the capital of Santa Fe, the high and snow-bound sierras intervene, called the Paramos of Chita. From there comes the Casanare River, which after several windings descends to the plain and the place where the general map represents the Mission of San Salvador de Casanare and from there follows until it empties into the Meta River, with the name of which empties its waters into the Orinoco, as shown in the general map. Before the Casanare River comes out to the plain, and in the same sierras of Chita, it receives the waters of the Purari and Tacaragua rivers. On the banks of these two last mentioned rivers the Fathers of the Company have the two Missions called Pautos and Patuti, distant about 20 leagues from that of San Salvador. Lower down, below the Mission of San Salvador, the Casanare River receives the waters of the Tame, on the banks of which are situated the Missions of Betoyes, Tame, and Jiraras, distant by elevation from those of San Salvador, Pauto, and Patuti 95 leagues from the Orinoco and 230 from Guayana, to which increasing one-third of allowance for the windings of the rivers it results that from the fortress of Guayana to the Missions of Pauto and Patuti there is a distance of about 300 leagues and of 350 to the Missions of La Concepcion, San Miguel, San Juan, Francisco Regis, and others situated on the above-mentioned plains of San Juan, as shown in the general map, with that of Father Gumilla at the beginning of his work "Orinoco Ilustrado," and what is exposed from folios 21 to 23, dealing with the subject of said river and Missions, which he did with particular knowledge of all those territories, having been with them for many years as an Apostolic Ministerial Delegate and



Superior of the Missions. Said distances agree with those kept at the fortress of Guayana for the annual journeys to the capital of Santa Fe in quest of funds for the payments, and the carriers of those funds take a long time in that long journey, as I will briefly state.

79. Since His Majesty has kindly designated the Royal Treasury of Santa Fe for the payment of the funds necessary for the subsistence of Guayana until last year, 1762, an officer was sent from that fortress who, in order to reach the capital of Santa Fe, was to navigate the Orinoco as far as the settlement of Cabruta, where the first Mission was in charge of the Jesuit Fathers, as shown in the general map. From said Mission, and passing through those of the Encaramada, Uruana, and Carichana, also in charge of the Jesuits, and all situated in the Province of Guayana, he continued his navigation up to the Meta River, taking in all twenty-five days. From the Orinoco he navigated up the Meta river to the mouth of the Casanare, taking eight days, and thence he followed to the Mission of San Salvador de Casanare, which required fifty-five days. From there by land, and after four days' journey, he passed that of Pautos, taking from there to the capital of Santa Fe fourteen days more. Summing up, it results that from the fortress of the Mission of Pauto, the last one in charge of the Jesuits within the jurisdiction of Casanare, ninety-two days were required, thus justifying the calculation of the Field Marshal, Don Eugenio de Alvarado, accompanying a copy of the Royal Order communicated by Your Excellency on the 22d of January, 1762, by which His Majesty directs that in future the journey in quest of these funds be discontinued by the way of Casanare and carried out by that of the Meta River. Said Royal Order has been duly enforced in the present year by the receiver and bearer of said funds, the lieutenant of the garrison of Guayana, Don Felix Ferreras, who, on his return from that fortress on the 31st of last August, has given me an account, confirming said calculation of the route, except in regard to the open roads, by the above-mentioned Don Eugenio de Alvarado, that he found impracticable. His travel through the Meta River is the following.

80. After having navigated thirty-three days, through the Orinoco and Meta rivers, up to the confluence of the Casanare, this one is not followed as before, but the navigation continues on the Meta, and after eight days the Mission of San Miguel, the first in charge of the Jesuits, in the jurisdiction of the Meta, is reached. From there, passing to those of Surimena and Casimena within six days, the mouth of the Rio Negro is reached. After three days navigation on this last one the brook called Pachaquero is reached and navigated for one day; from there by land to the Mission of Apiay, there is another day, and thence to Santa Fe five days, making in all from the fortress to the Mission of Apiay, the last in charge of the Jesuits within the Meta territory, fifty-two days at the best time required by the Royal Order, when the Orinoco River is at the lowest ebb and the winds in full force and propitious for the navigation.

81. Having produced an evidence of the distances between the fortress of Guayana and the Missions of Pautos and Apiay, the last under the Jesuits in the Departments of Meta and Casanare, and the only roads in use at present for the traffic between them, it remains necessary to give a similar report of distances in regard to the Missions of Barinas as follows.

82. The Reverend Dominican Fathers of Santa Fe keep a body of Missioners in that of Barinas. The Gospel field of the same and that of those under the Jesuits of Casanare are divided by the great Apure River, which receives its waters from the great sierras of Santa Fe, and after having run 300 leagues it empties into the Orinoco, as represented by Father Gumilla at folio 18 of his "Orinoco Ilustrado," and is shown in the map which he brings at the beginning, and in the general map which I have addressed before to His Majesty.

The Mission of the Dominican Fathers does not follow the route of the Jesuits, as this one comes from the neighborhood of the capital of Santa Fe, following the waters of the Meta and Casanare rivers to the south, down to their confluence with the Orinoco, and from there it takes the direction towards the cities of Barinas and Merida and thence to the west in going through the mountains down to Maracaibo, as shown by

the general map, which only comprises the Missions of Tico-poro, Santo Domingo, Las Tapias, La Mesa, San Joseph, and Lagunillas down to the Taravita, situated on the Chama River. Said Missions and those in the interior of the mountains towards Maracaibo enjoy a cold and dry climate, on account of the elevation of the mountains covered with snow around the same. Those of the Jesuits enjoy the same climate, except those situated on the plains between the sierras and the Orinoco, where there is a warmer climate although not so damp as that of Guayana.

83. On the same general map the Missions of San Joseph and Lagunillas are shown close to said Taravita at a distance from the Orinoco of about 80 leagues by elevation, and from Guayana 200, adding one-third more for the windings of the Orinoco, Apure, and Santo Domingo Rivers and the land roads from the settlement of Lagunillas and pass of the above-mentioned Taravita, it results that the distance between this one and the fortress is 270 leagues.

84. The general map and that of Father Gumilla show very well how difficult it will be to travel by land from the fortress of Guayana to the Taravita of the Chama River and the Missions of Lagunillas, as it should be necessary to cross the tableland of Guanipa and the extensive plains of the Province of Barcelona, Caracas and Barinas to the city of Merida, and from there to the Mission of Lagunillas, for which, besides the traveling of 300 leagues, it must be added the sufferings and inconveniences of desert countries of an ardent climate, copious showers, and the pass through numberless rivers, shown in the general plan, with other difficulties which I omit.

85. In order to make more tolerable such a long journey it is considered that the best and only way should be that of the Orinoco River, navigating the same up to the mouth of the Apure River, and following this one until it meets the Santo Domingo River, and from there going to the city of Barinas, thence by land to Mérida, and proceeding through the Mission of San Joseph to Lagunillas. There is nobody in Guayana unfamiliar with this route, nor any one who may give an account of the possibility or impossibility of the navigation of

the whole of the rivers Apure and Santo Domingo, nor how many days it takes to reach the pass (Taravita) of the Chama River and the other Missions in the interior of the mountains not reached in the map; although it is to be inferred that the travel will not be in any way shorter than that from the fortress of Guayana to the last Mission of Pautos, in the jurisdiction of Casanare, for which they take ninety-two days; but in order to dispel these doubts it will be necessary to examine the subject, and they did not, in order to send positive information to His Majesty, and that is all I have to say in regard to the situation of these Missions, and the distances from them to the fortress.

86. For the escort of the Missions under the Jesuit Fathers, His Majesty keeps 48 soldiers, under one captain only, who draws a salary of \$995 a year and the soldiers \$132 a year, making in all \$7,331, as it is shown by the certificate given, in virtue of a decree at the time of the visit, by Don Juan Antonio Bonalde, who was then their captain, and is found at folio 71 of the third part of the proceedings, that I sent to His Majesty, through his Royal and Supreme Council, with the other acts of the visit. The \$7,331 are received from the Royal Treasury at Santa Fe, by the attorney of the Missions and by direction of the Superior of the same, are distributed among the persons of the escort. The captain is appointed by the Viceroy of Santa Fe and the soldiers are mustered at the pleasure of the Superior, who likewise discharges them, whenever he finds it convenient or unfit for the escort. The whole of the people serving in it are horsemen, but not trained as military men, nor acquainted with the handling of muskets, nor their armament is equal or proportionate, as it is in the style of new simple chasseurs. That they are not military men, acquainted with that profession, is shown by the fact that the fortress of Carthagena, Puerto Cabello, La Guaira, Caracas, Cumana, and Guayana (the only places where there are regular bodies of troops) there is no detachment for the above escort, and this one is not under the direction of a military chief, but a civilian as well as the soldiers, who are familiar with the country in every respect and travel inland with an admirable knowledge.

and rare facilities, just as if they should do so through the best roads, keeping themselves in those places without any other help than the facilities of their muskets and other devices which only are known to themselves and to the regular troop, that have never performed these travels and could not easily acquire the knowledge of the country, woods, mountains and sierras as these civilians do, used and brought up in this kind of practice, although ignorant of the military service. Those who are serving in that escort are detached from the more advanced Missions, and they are less domesticated, kept at the entrance of the mountains, in order to gather around and bring with them the Indian fugitives from the settlements, they have to keep and reduce those that have never been settled, and are accompanied by one or more missionaries, as directed by the Superior. They are employed in doing whatever is thought to lead to the safety of the Missions, and for that purpose (notwithstanding their want of military training), they do better work than the veteran grenadiers. Said civilians, as a rule, are married and keep their families in the settlement from where they are detached; the Missionaries prefer those possessing these conditions, so as to avoid other inconveniences in detriment of the welfare of the Indians.

87. I do not know the number of men serving as escort to the Dominicans of Barinas, but if there is no mistake in the reports sent to His Majesty on this subject, 24 men make their corresponding share to complete the full number of 73 allotted by the Royal Order. I am likewise ignorant of the pay they draw, but I am sure that they receive it from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fe, by means of the Attorney of the Missions of said dominions, and that the quality of the troop and methods of the service agree entirely with those of the escort of the Jesuits and of the other persons in the custody of the bodies of Mission kept by His Majesty in America, except those of the Catalan Capuchins that have been escorted by a detachment of regular troops from Guayana, and were better if they were civilians and good horsemen.

88. For better justification of what has been stated in this chapter, I refer to the report of the Viceroy of Santa Fe, if

His Majesty would be pleased to direct him to carry this method into effect or direct an investigation by competent persons, being sure that nobody would entertain a contrary opinion in any of said points.

89. And under this conviction I say that as the persons serving as escorts to the Father Jesuits of Orinoco and of the dominions of Barinas have not been bound to submit to the rules, penalties, and terms prescribed by the Royal ordinances, and they are all horsemen, less those who are civilians under a salary, without any fixed time, ignorant of the military discipline, without the armament as such, residing in cold and dry climates, most of them married persons and with their families spread through various settlements from where they are detached far from the fortress, some 270 leagues, others 300 and 350 leagues, with extensive deserts intervening, it is not practicable to make them all abandon their families and become aggregated to the garrison of Guayana and bound there to the military subordination, being instructed in the infantry service, paying for their uniforms and accoutrements, which they do not wear, and exposed to a warm and damp climate. The soldiers bound to serve in the infantry already settled in that fortress, used to its bad climate, married there with \$20 less salary, as they only draw \$120 a year, reduced to \$112 after the necessary discount for the transportation of the money, ought not give up their families to serve as escorts to the Missions under a civilian, such as the captain of the escorts of the Jesuits is, nor they ought to pay for their horses, saddles, and trappings, becoming horsemen and experts of the country and the mountains that they never saw, and providing themselves with woollen clothing to stand the cold and dry weather, in opposition to the warm and damp weather that they leave behind.

90. In the event that the regular troop should be assigned for the service of the escort (as enjoined farther on by Royal Order), and that they should be aggregated to the garrison, it should be necessary to send three launches of the fortress, one for the navigation of the Orinoco up to the mouth of the Apure River, going through it as far as the confluence of the Santo

Domingo River and navigating through the same to the city of Barinas, and thence by land, said detachment going as far as Merida. From there and across the Taravita (or pass) of the Chama River and thence to the Missions, in the interior of the mountains of Maracaibo, for which horses must be brought from the city of Barinas, and while there to await the launch of the relieved people, and return by the same to the fortress, consuming in that journey about six months. That the other two launches navigating the Orinoco up to the Meta River, enter by the mouth of this one, following up to that of Casanare and parting company there, one going through the Casanare up to the Mission of San Salvador, and the other through the Meta up to the Apiay. And the detachment of the fortress of Meta and Casanare being relieved, return to the fortress by the same way it came, requiring for this journey another six months. But the expense of the launches, their crews, stores for the same, and troop carried on board and returning, may be set at \$1,000 each, costing so much the garrison of the fortress, while sending yearly to Santa Fe for the allotted money, as shown by notes 1 and 9 of the memorandum. And that at every time of the change of these detachments they make an expense of \$3,000, and with the greatest economy it is no less than \$2,500. And could the troop relieved and relieving spend all that money? By no means; as they will not fail to leave behind some help to their families and keep their respective places. If the troop can not bear these expenses it is necessary that they should be made by the Royal Treasury, as if it is not so they must not be borne by the escort aggregated to the garrison of Guayana.

91. And in case that the removal of the garrison should be facilitated, His Majesty paying for the transportation, there is no doubt that the troop leaving Guayana might take lodgings in the suburban districts of the Mission; but how could the civilians and the escort do so (being strangers both in the fortress and in Angostura)? Where would they lodge, and how are they to be attended while sick? There is no house in Angostura, and at the fortress only 73 exist, occupied by 90 families contained in the population of the city, and the headquarters of

the troop reduced to a small store, under four bare walls covered with tiles, without any kitchen, bedsteads, or any other indispensable utensils, and only fit to pass the monthly and daily reviews, and answer for the lodging place of the six men doing the guard duty as the main guard of the fortress, as stated in Chapter 9, No. 89. Therefore, for the lodging of the escort and rest of the troop that His Majesty directs to be aggregated there, it is indispensable to have regular headquarters provided with bedding and other appliances, and a suitable hospital for the care of the sick. If that is not the case, this troop can not succeed nor its aggregation carried out.

92. And although the regular troop might relieve the escorts and these be aggregated to the garrison and His Majesty accedes to do so on account of the Royal Treasury, paying for the transportations, lodgings, and hospital for the fortress, it is necessary to carry out said aggregations by means of new regulations about salaries. If the civilians of the escort of the Jesuits are paid yearly \$132 and the troop of the fortress \$120, of which they only receive \$112, as explained before, it is to be feared that this inequality of salaries for the same service may raise complaints and pernicious consequences. It is therefore necessary to make the payments daily or monthly, as the annual payments (as practiced heretofore) prevent them from keeping in their own post and supplying the families they leave behind in their homes.

93. And supposing that the troop of the fortress goes to the relief of the escorts, and that these without any difficulty are aggregated to the garrison, and that the Royal Treasury pays for their transportation, lodging, and hospital, that a new regulation is issued and the pay of the troop of the fortress raised to \$132, drawn by the civilians of the escorts, and that said civilians' salary is lowered to \$120, allowed to the soldiers, or the \$112, which is all they receive, and that the salary allowed to both is paid daily or monthly, so as to carry out the aggregation without disorder, it is necessary that each one of the launches carry an officer, and that the number be increased at the fortress, and that those detached on the launches be allowed some compensation, as those going after the allotted funds, as



the captain, who is allowed \$600, only receives \$560 after the discount of the transportation, and the lieutenant, drawing \$450, only receives \$414, for the same reason, and the standard-bearer out of the \$372 only receives \$343, and they can not afford to bear the expense of the journey without the suggested compensation and without being relieved in this kind of service, as the one going three consecutive times for the funds would become unable to continue. The escort of the Jesuits, although drawing \$995 a year for the captain, may afford to go up and down the Orinoco, but although (badly missed at the Missions) he can only carry one launch without an officer at each time, carrying detachments to their destinies, no doubt liable to desertions, and in those bare and miserable settlements of the Mission, through which he is at liberty to go thefts, quarrels, and disorders may happen, very painful to the Indians, or at least long delays, increasing the expense of the launches, crews, and stores.

94. In conclusion of this subject, omitting many other reasons, making impossible the aggregation of the escorts to the garrison of Guayana, a subject that will be dealt with farther on, and the difficulties of which have been already explained, as not having been anticipated by those who sent the previous reports to His Majesty, I shall have to say that I have not the least doubt that if the intended aggregation of the escorts to the fortress and of this one to the garrison, serving as escorts before that is done twice, there shall not be any troops left to relieve them, nor the escort of civilians to be aggregated to the garrison, and that necessarily things should return to the condition in which they are to-day, after some difficulty in the way of settling them.

“And the 25 of the fort of Limones, owing to increase this total 50 and 2 of the troop of Araya.”

95. In order to be able to aggregate to the garrison of the fortress the 25 men of the fort of Limones I have endeavored to inquire exactly where they are, and in consequence I have ascertained that there are not 25 men there nor ever have been,

and that the report sent to His Majesty on this subject was incorrect and not founded on real facts, which I related from the beginning.

96. In the year 1740 His Majesty appointed the Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa as Governor of Cumana, with the special commission of fortifying the Island of Fajardo or Angostura in keeping with the instructions given by orders of the Council to the Attorney Don Joseph Borrul, found in the accompanying proceedings, at the back of folio 42, where, besides other things, he was requested to form an estimate of the annual expense of the troop that ought to garrison the fort, the construction of which was entrusted to him, and to give a report to His Majesty by the first opportunity and immediately to the Viceroy of Santa Fe.

97. Espinosa took charge of his commission under the Royal instructions, finding in a most deplorable condition the fortress of Guayana in the same year of 1740 after having been set on fire and ransacked by the English, killing some of the neighbors and dispersing others, as it is stated in part first, Chapter 7, Nos. 2 and 3 of the proceedings, under date of the 30th of September, 1743. Among the various points which he submitted to His Majesty, through the Supreme Council, he proposed that it was advisable to increase the service of the fortress of Guayana with 73 soldiers, and he informed likewise on this particular point, the Viceroy of Santa Fe, who was at the time His Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, but there is no record in these archives of what decision was arrived at by His Excellency.

98. In the year 1745, His Majesty appointed the Brigadier General, Don Diego Tavares, as successor to Don Gregorio de Espinosa, with the same commission to pacify the Orinoco, in the terms mentioned in the part first, Chapter 6, No. 8, and in consequence he proposed to said Viceroy the increase of 30 men for the garrison of the new fort of San Fernando, and the answer on this point was in the following words: *But in regard to the increase of 30 men distributed in the form proposed by Your Honor, I should like to know whether the full allowance of 100 for Guayana are complete, and whether there is enough people*

to fill the 30 men of the increase, or if reducing to this number the 60 half places, as contrived by Don Gregorio de Espinosa, it should open the way to aggregate insensibly more neighbors with the same zeal with which he promoted his idea without failing to remove some of the obstacles that heretofore have retarded the enforcement of the repeated orders from His Majesty, as it is shown on the back of folio 89 of the proceedings.

99. Under date of the 12th of January, 1752, Tavares urged the Viceroy, who was at the time His Excellency, the Marquis del Villar, for the increase of the 30 men, and he received the following answer: *Having not thought convenient to extend my powers to the increase of the 30 men in the company of the Castle of Guayana, and the corresponding salary of \$5,325, and having no orders from His Majesty, to whom Your Honor asserts to have reported the subject, I restrain from doing so for want of a resolution to your consultation. I will do so likewise with a copy of Your Honor's communication, so as to proceed with more accuracy in resolutions of this gravity. As it is shown at folio 92 of the proceedings, having no record in these archives of documents, showing the date of the representation sent by Tavares to His Majesty on the subject.*

100. At the instance of the Missioners of Piritu, His Majesty issued the following Royal Order: *On account of the Father Missioners of the Indians of Piritu, it has been represented that since the year of 1736 these Missions have been increased with five settlements and one hospitium in the new city of Barcelona, and that at present there are 26, and in them 11,850 souls under the charge of 28 Reverend Fathers and one layman, who asked permission for the transportation of 20 more Missioners, on account of the Royal Treasury. His Majesty, after being informed of this instance, and of the exposition about the same of the Council of Indies in consultation of the 11th of February of this year, bearing in mind the new commission, entrusted to these Missioners with the commission for procuring the establishment and foundation of settlements on the opposite bank of the Orinoco River, an idea which was supported by a representation of the Secular Council of New Barcelona, he has allowed the permission for the transfer of 20 Reverend Fathers with the purpose of preserving the old Mis-*

sions and establishing the new one, that has been projected by His Royal Order and with which I make you acquainted hereby, enjoining that in regard to the custody of troops wanted by these Missioners and corresponding to both objects, 40 soldiers are to escort them, notwithstanding His Majesty has decided to leave this point to the discretion of Your Honor, directing that from the garrison of the Castle of Araya a competent number of soldiers be detached so as to stop the Caribs from assaulting the old and the new Missions that have to be formed, taking Your Honor the surest steps and giving me an account of the progress obtained, and Your Honor will give the above-mentioned escort, in case that you think it is necessary. The above resolution is brought to your notice, so as to have it carried out.—May the Lord keep Your Honor's life for many Years.—Madrid, July 14, 1752.—The Marquis of La Ensenada.—To Señor Don Diego Tavares.

101. And at the instance of the Catalan Capuchin Missioners, His Majesty issued the following resolution: *The Catalan Capuchin Missioners* of the jurisdiction of Guayana have represented the injuries and deaths perpetrated in their Missions at some settlements by the Caribs, under the influence of the Hollanders from Esequivo, as it is surmised, on account of their having taken refuge in said Colony and because the Governor of the same grants them letters patent to make slaves of all the Indians whom they meet, and as a remedy they ask, among other things, the increase of their escort, up to 40 men, one captain and one subaltern, assigning them the salaries of those of Santa Fe, said soldiers being well qualified, of good morals and habits, replacing them with those presented by the Prefect and Judges of the Missions, in case of being found inadequate; and in order to rescue the souls of the rebellious Caribs, to have them pardoned for the present offence, His Majesty being informed of this representation and of what Your Honor exposed by letter on the subject, and the report of the Council of the Indies, has decided that Your Honor take very particular care that the Missions of the Reverend Fathers be well guarded, detaching for this purpose the troop that you may find sufficient from that in your charge, and even by detaching a portion of that of the Castle of Araya, as Your Honor does not

consider necessary this fortress, according to the advice of a further letter, and in case that you do not find convenient to do so, Your Honor may increase the number of men that you think fit for the fortress of Guayana, in order to afford the required protection, being of the approval of the Viceroy of Santa Fe, to whom Your Honor will send a report, as well as to His Majesty, for approval. His Majesty directs likewise that Your Honor take particular care that the soldiers of the escort be of the best morals and habits, separating and replacing them if they do not answer, or cause any apprehension to Your Honor, after receiving the reports of their faults from the Missioners. And in order to dispel any fears on the part of the rebellious Indians, His Majesty desires that Your Honor in His Royal name and behalf pardon them for the crime of rebellion, *exhorting and cautioning them for the future.*—*May the Lord keep Your Honor's life for many years.*—*Madrid, March the 30th, 1753.*—*The Marquis of La Ensenada.*—*To Señor Don Diego Tavares.*

102. The foregoing Royal Orders, although addressed to Don Diego Tavares, were received by his successor, Don Matheo Gual, who, after being informed of their contents and of others, twenty or twenty-five, for the same purpose, and issued at different times, and that have never been carried out, and of what his predecessor represented to His Majesty, under date of the 30th of April, 1755, he submitted to His Majesty, that in order to render assistance to the Reverend Observant Missions of Piritu and to the Capuchins of Guayana, and better security to the fortress, it was necessary to form a company composed of one lieutenant-captain, a sub-lieutenant, and 70 men, including the corresponding corporals, and that the annual salaries will amount in all to \$10,017. This consultation brought about the Royal Order issued by command of Your Excellency, as follows: *The purser of the Missions of Piritu of this jurisdiction has represented that notwithstanding the orders issued in the year 1752, for the purpose of granting them a suitable escort, had not been carried out, and making a punctual narrative of the progress of said Mission, he has repeatedly urged the same request. In this state of things the letter of Your Honor has*

VOL. I, VEN.—10

been received, under date of the 30th of April of last year, 1755, in satisfaction to the order communicated to your predecessor on the 14th of July, 1752, and proposing for the escort of these Missions and those of the Capuchins of Guayana, the formation of one company, composed of one captain, one lieutenant, one sub-lieutenant, and 70 men, with the corresponding corporals aggregated to the fortress of Guayana, at an annual expense of \$10,017, and the King, well informed of all that is wanted, directs that these Missions be attended without the new company proposed to that end, and that the garrison of Guayana be detached for the purpose. I make Your Honor acquainted with said directions for their observance.—May the Lord keep Your Honor's life for many years.—Madrid, March 3d, 1756.—The Bailiff, Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga to Señor Don Matheo Gual. The contents of this Royal Cedula and of the others, for the same purpose, above quoted, have never been carried into practice for various good reasons intervening, and on which I will dwell in another place.

103. His Majesty having kindly directed me to make a statement as to the utility of the Castle of Araya, under date of the 27th of August, 1761, I brought to His Royal notice the inutility of said fortification, meantime representing the utmost importance of the fortress of Guayana; and having paid due attention to the Royal Orders and other circumstances for the increase of the garrison and the necessity of the escort of the bodies of Missions, I represented extensively how important it was to the Royal service the establishment in the fortress of Guayana of a new company with a captain, lieutenant, sub-lieutenant and 70 men, as proposed by my predecessors, Don Matheo Gual and Don Gregorio de Espinosa, and that from there the necessary assistance should be given to the Missions in the terms proposed in my representation. Those are the only circumstances connected with the increase of the garrison of the fortress of Guayana and stronghold of Limones without the existence of any documents on the subject, nor in connection with the 25 men reported to His Majesty.

104. In order to increase said garrison with 73 more men

represented by Espinosa to His Majesty, and the sixty half places he proposed to the Viceroy, the thirty places that Governor Tavares considered necessary to garrison the small fort of Limones, the company proposed by Gual (for which I have made a new request in my consultation of the 27th of August), and the 25 men that have been lately reported to His Majesty, a Royal resolution is necessary, as well as the assignment of funds for the subsistence of the troop so increased, and to be added to the garrison as soon as said funds are assigned.

105. In another place, in its proper order, and as I have proposed in No. 6 of this part second, I will expose whatever else I judge in regard to the 52 men of the garrison of Araya to be added to the fortress of Guayana—

“That the Commander of Guayana, without loss of time, fortifies the two planes in front of the eastern and western forts of the small fortification of Guayana with a strong palisade and parapet raised with sticks and earth, and that, from there to the eastern plane’s caunons of large caliber be mounted, to defend the rear of the castle and the pass to the lagoons Baratillo and Zeiba, so as to make flank shots in protection of the northern side of the fort and the western part of the palisade, and from this with smaller artillery to embarrass the ascent of the enemy by way of Baratillo. That he must raise the parapet of the western curtain and place there in position three 6-pounders, covering the front with a second palisade. That the towers of the small fort be laid down and the interior square covered with tiles upon the pillars of thick and hard wood fixed to the terre-plein, touching the inner face of the parapets of the curtains, without embarrassing the defences.”

106. The same want of reflection and judgment observed in the reports to His Majesty, in regard to the 25 men of the fort of Limones, is found in what concerns the palisade of the small fort of Padraastro of Guayana (many years ago it was projected, and it was carried out last year, on account of the war), and the tower and small house upon it, on account of not having been placed in the possibility or impossibility of constructing them, nor the utility nor inutility of the same, as I will expose at the proper place.

107. In the instruction given by order of the Council to the attorney, Don Joseph Borrul, found in the proceeding at the back of folio 42, directions were given to Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, for the construction of a fort in the Island of Fajardo or Angostura, provided the expense would not exceed \$16,000, or rather \$1,000 more or less, limiting the powers so as not to incur a greater expense. Espinosa was aware that Angostura and the Island of Fajardo were not the proper places, and under date of the 30th of September, 1743, he represented to His Majesty that the above mentioned fort ought to be located at the Island of Limones, in front of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, and while he awaited the Royal resolution he became aware of the indefensive condition of the Castle of San Francisco and the other fortifications built in Guayana, if the Padrastro mountain was not duly fortified. He contrived the construction of a small fort guarded by palisades around, and a fosse on the western part, making these expenses from the funds of fines imposed by the tribunal of the Governor, for want of powers to use the funds of the Royal Treasury for that purpose. The greater fortification necessary there was not commenced, but the collection was made of \$900 on account of fines. While things were in this condition he was relieved by his successor, Don Diego Tavares, who was entirely in accord with Espinosa's ideas, and in order to carry them out he continued applying the fines, up to the amount of \$1,775, to the construction of the fort of San Diego; but after having undertaken the work he found it was not sufficient to carry it to a full completion, and finally decided to finish it with funds from the Royal Treasury to the amount of \$475, and report to His Majesty his resolution, in order to obtain his approval, as it was done by the cedula of the 21st of March, 1750, as I have exposed in Chapter 9, Nos. 44 up to 48, where an account is given of the material of the work, and in fig. 6 of the accompanying map the plan is displayed and explained by a marginal note, but nothing was decided about the construction of the palisade and fosse on account of the Treasury, as Tavares did not take the responsibility of doing so, expecting to be able to raise the funds for the purpose; but there



were only \$87 at the time he was relieved by Don Matheo Gual, who, having examined the fort, accepted the report of his predecessor and directed at once the opening of the fosse, as indeed it was done during his government, but only to the extent of one-half of said work, besides gathering stones for the building of palisades.

108. At the time of my general visit, and among other works considered necessary in that fortification, was the construction of the opening of the fosse and the protection of the fort by means of the esplanade formally projected, and for which I ordered an estimate of the expense, including the other repairs, with a view of reporting the result to the Viceroy of Santa Fe. While absorbed in this project, I received the Royal Order under date of the third of October, 1761, in which His Majesty cautioned me, enjoining the greatest care as in time of an open war. Therefore I took every proper step to furnish that fortress with the gun carriages, ammunition and other elements that were needed, and thinking that I ought not to defer and await the resolution of the Viceroy for the undertaking of the works and ordinary repairs for the best defence and protection, I concluded to go on with the work under the terms exposed in Chapter 9, Nos. 27 to 31, in consequence of which the esplanade was made as it appears in the plan, figure 6 of the accompanying map, marked with the letters E E E E, which consists of a thick, low wall, built of stone and mortar, about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  yards high and three-quarters of a yard thick, and the stakes spliced with it, and the embrasures for the fire of the artillery, marked with the interior number of said plan. The fosse was finished, having 10 yards in breadth and  $3\frac{1}{2}$  in depth, all built in a solid rock as exposed in No. 49, Chapter 9, and is seen in figure 6 with a special marginal explanation of the map.

109. On the strength, undoubtedly, of a few confused ideas derived from these antecedents it was devised, as a new plan in connection with the utmost importance of the mountain of Padrastro, to bring to the notice of His Majesty the usefulness of the palisade on the same and a second one below on the ground, but they did not think of the different and uneven

rocks forming the mountain, and as solid as flint, and therefore very difficult, if not impossible, to open the necessary holes for bearing the stakes. They did not think that there was no earth on the mountain, and that at its foot and 2 leagues around Guayana there is only sand, in spite of the manufacture of brick and tiles there, as that is done with the mud taken out from the bed of the lagoons Zeiba and Baratillo, containing a great portion of sand that makes the material of a poor quality. They did not think that even if they had soil it should be expensive to carry it up to the mountain. They did not think of the difficulty of pounding the earth for the esplanades on account of the excessive rains. They did not think that during two or three months the waters are not so frequent, and that if built within the remaining nine months of the year, no matter how solid and strong, they can not resist the strength of the copious showers by means of which the soil or earth contained in the palisades should be carried down. They did not think that the palisades of earth and the one projected of stone and mortar and lime (at present already built) is a very weak defence for the fort of San Diego. They did not think that this one and its esplanades are a ridiculous defence for the paramount importance of the Padraastro mountain, from which the safety of the Orinoco and the Provinces through which it runs depends. And, lastly, they did not think that this advantageous site required a formal fortification irrespectively of expense, and that the armament it has at present is provisional and through the devices of the Governors, who have not been able to extend their powers to the greatest wants of that work, laying the case before His Majesty.

110. Many persons feel persuaded of the convenience of covering the whole of the small fort of Padraastro with a tiled roof on wooden pillars, and I was of the same opinion, at the time of the visit, but I became convinced, as the rest of the other parties, of the solid reasons alleged and submitted to me by the Commander, Don Juan de Dios Valdez, and the other officers present there at the time, who, after having heard of my ideas, they asked me: Where is the place for the garrison to sleep, because in the fort of San Francisco and in the settle-

ment around nobody sleeps exposed to the open air, and whoever does so is soon affected with fevers and other malignant complaints; that in order to avoid these consequences, the garrison was compelled to make three hours sentry duty in the daytime and only one by night, covered with a small cloak of rough material that they showed me. They reminded me of what they had formerly insinuated (and that I had already noticed by experience), and that is, that from 5 o'clock in the afternoon it is necessary to wear a woollen cloak if you have to keep out doors, and in a short time this cloak is so damp as though it were exposed to the thickest fog in winter, and to this humidity, as shown by experience, the sickness and other complaints experienced there are attributed, and therefore the inhabitants try to retire early and sleep under cover, protected from the dew; that it should not be the case with those sleeping under the tiled roof of the fort, if opened on all four sides, and consequently it would subject the persons of the garrison to many kinds of complaints. On account of the same humidity there should not be a fit place to keep the powder and wadding existing in that fortification, nor where to keep stores for eight days if it was necessary to gather them there.

111. I was made to understand, besides, that the tiled roof on pillars could not avoid the penetration of the waters within the 10 yards square space, which is all there is at that fortification, as being situated on the summit of the Padrastró mountain, and as it rains all around, with strong and squally winds at that elevation, said winds will introduce the water through the four open sides, and consequently in that small space the garrison could not be sheltered, unless it were on the two sentry boxes shown in its plan.

112. All these well-considered reasons, vindicated by experience, persuaded me that the small house ought not to subsist, consisting of 4 square yards, with a high and low room, and on this a wooden box to keep powder in cartridges and the waddings, leaving a space for the necessary provisions for eight or twelve days, and in that, (accessible through a wooden ladder), the troop of the garrison sleeps, guarding such a small fortification, the house of which, although in poor condition,

I ordered its preservation, as far as possible, while I would inform the Viceroy in reference to its new construction, and what I have done, and that he approved, as shown in Chapter 9, Nos. 27 to 31.

113. If all that I have exposed had been reflected and borne in mind, when the report was sent to His Majesty, undoubtedly they should not have moved him to order the fortification of the most important mountain of Padraastro by means of useless earth palisades, nor the injurious tiled roof of the small fort, but the building of a respectable fortification necessary there, and the only useful expenses to be made, according to the opinion of engineers, governors, and many other persons acquainted with the subject of fortifying the Orinoco, as I exposed by way of notice in note 9 of the memorandum, and is plain to the eye of the least qualified person.

“That Your Honor be restricted to the small fort of Limones, with counter-foundations distant 9 feet, drawing 4 feet more than its foundations; and that the terre-plein be lowered, so as to measure  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet high; that the embrasures of the artillery be opened and the same placed within the portholes, covering all the fort with a flat roof upon the bank of the parapet, leaving one skylight for the communication with the sentries. That afterwards, four 8-pounders be mounted in position to defend the water avenues, and two 4-pounders to defend the land avenues and the said flat roof upon which four swivel-guns must be mounted on their crotches.”

114. In Chapter 6 of part first, I have made a full and well authenticated statement of the antecedents which have originated the construction of the fort San Fernando and the small fort of Limones; the steps that have been taken from the year 1694 to that of 1762, in regard to the fortification of the Orinoco and all the events that have taken place in reference to this subject, down to the time of the receipt of the present Royal Order. In Chapter 9, Nos. from 50 to 88, I have specified the condition of the fort, its shape, diameters, the want of solidity of the ground where it stands, the ten splits from top to bottom, dividing the whole of the work, the

inevitable total ruin, that even placed in perfect shape of security it can not subsist in that place, as the banks of the Orinoco come near it and will in time sink it; that the serious danger threatened of a wider bed of that formidable river might make useless the fortifications of Guayana; that the loss of that ground already effected by the waters will be irreparable, if the groves and woods are not allowed to stand on the banks from which they were removed, and that the plague of insects produced by the waters flooded, where the fort is situated makes the whole of that location inhabitable, as well as the rest of the muddy islands flooded by the Orinoco. And here with the contents of the two chapters I will show the uselessness of the expenses of the counter-foundation and other works called for by the Royal Order, and the want of intelligence of those who reported to His Majesty the circumstances relative to the security of this unfortunate fortification.

115. The surrounding of the small fort of Limones with counter-foundations is not difficult, and may be done by means of stakes or stone and mortar construction built by a mason, but it was not understood by those who sent the report to His Majesty that the ablest engineers could by means of counter-foundations make solid the ground where the fort stands, as it is muddy, sandy, and movable, just as the ground of the refused Island of Limones, and that these works should only make it more muddy and swampy, especially, the mason work, having overlooked the circumstance that these counter-foundations (might prove very serviceable and advantageous if the ground were solid and the weakness were only noticed in the foundations of the work against the current) are useless and injurious when there is no solidity in the ground in which the counter-foundation can not absolutely sustain the weight of the work that as heretofore will continue bending the center, and with it the counter-foundation, if they are built of sand and mortar, as this kind of device is never used to keep a building on its level, and only to defend and support the foundations which are not the cause of the ruin of the fort, but only the want of solidity of the ground where it stands, which the best and most practical engineer could not possibly unite and consoli-

date, by means of counter-foundations on the ten places where the oval form of the fort is already split; they did not see that no matter how covers and repairs are intended for stopping the ten splits, they will never be as solid again, nor waterproof against the inundations of the Orinoco River (as foreseen by the master mason Luque), and they will open again, as experience has shown to be the fact, without any help from the construction of counter-foundations that will never keep the heavy weight of the oval construction and the ten quarters that form the same. They did not see that by uniting and stopping the ten rents no engineer could, by means of counter-foundations, avoid the introduction of the rains so continuous in that country, nor of the waters of the Orinoco River during the month of August and part of September, when the fortification is flooded over and above the socle and several yards from the surface of the land. They did not think that any engineer could prevent, by means of counter-foundations, the Orinoco carrying away the banks (more elevated) nearer to the fort, nor the sinking of this and the counter-foundations, nor the expanding of the bed of the Orinoco 20 yards over the 60 that have been already spread during the work, as the result of the removal of the trees, the roots of which kept together such frail ground, just as the abandoned Island of Limones, on account of the loss of ground sustained while clearing it of trees. They did not see that counter-foundations do not remove the intolerable plague of mosquitoes and insects, produced by the floods and close groves, nor did they find out by experience that this plague make uninhabitable that ground and every other of the kind.

116. The lowering of the terre-plein to  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet high does not offer the least difficulty, but they did not know when they reported the fact to His Majesty that the terre-plein of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet high shall be from the end of July to the middle of September under another foot and a half of water, as such or more is the elevation of the Orinoco waters inundating the fort, said waters, even without the ten splits dividing the work around, would penetrate through the inner part of the terre-plein, and will raise up to the level of the outside waters, and to-day,

without any difficulty, they will come in and go out through the said ten splits that rise from the very bottom of the foundation, and to prevent the waters from going above the terre-plein and keep this structure  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet higher, it is necessary that above the surface of the ground with the contents of the earth will measure nearly 7 feet high, and thus keep the desired  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet above the river waters at their highest point. They did not see that besides the elevation of the river waters above the  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet of the terre-plein the continual rains of the year will introduce the water through the ten splits *dividing the work from* the parapet to the very foundation, keeping in the interior of the fort an inexhaustible well (and the same should happen with the 7-foot terre-plein), without any possibility of remedy by any engineer, without joining and consolidating the ten splits, which is as impossible as the solidity of the ground on which the oval stands.

117. The opening of portholes from the ten quarters in which the fort is divided, is not impracticable at a more or less expense, but those who sent the report to His Majesty did not understand the loss of strength of the structure already disfigured, if kept standing only on account of its oval shape and the eight interior counter-forts that adjusted to each other in the terre-plein prevent this one and the ten quarters from falling outside, and that the portholes (even if the fort were in good service), not having been built with the work, will now break the wall, and its thickness of 2 yards and 26 inches would extenuate the strength of the oval fortification. They did not see that if the portholes would be opened at competent distances over the  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet of the terre-plein, they would be just on the level of the socle, and from the end of July to the middle of September at the level of the water, being 2 yards and 26 inches in breadth, and that in order to reduce this thickness the wall should be proportionally reduced and therefore weakened. If the portholes are placed at  $8\frac{1}{2}$  feet above the ground and  $5\frac{1}{2}$  above the socle, and just above the same, the 7 feet of the terre-plein, they should have 2 yards and some inches thickness, which is all the breadth of the wall in that part, and hardly fit to show the mouth of a 24-pounder.

118. The arrangement of the artillery with two guns of 8 caliber and two of 4, firing from their respective portholes is very easy, but those who sent the report to His Majesty did not see that the fort in the present condition does not permit the loading of the artillery on the terre-plein nor the repetition of the discharges, without the risk of the ten quarters or part of them bulging out. They did not see that after placing the artillery over the  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet of the terre-plein it would be submerged into the water from the latter part of June to the middle of September, and that for the rest of the year has to play through the portholes 2 yards and 26 inches in breadth; and that therefore the mouth of the cannon will not come out of the wall. That the discharge of the cannon will damage the work and make it all shake. That in its present condition, or even if it were in perfect security, it could not bear the alteration and therefore the ruin of one or more of the said quarters is inevitable, as well as evident the danger of the men within this fortification. The same thing will happen if the artillery be mounted on the 7 feet of the terre-plein, playing through their corresponding portholes of 2 yards and several inches broad. They were ignorant of the fact that the interior of the oval contained eight counter-forts, and that these structures have to encumber the management of the artillery which is to be placed precisely in their midst. They were equally ignorant that with the  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet of the terre-plein the water will submerge the artillery and that 7 feet are required so as to have  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet above the water, and that this ground is not solid enough for the construction of esplanades strong enough to support the artillery.

They did not consider that the artillery, placed inside of the fort and firing through its portholes of 2 yards in breadth, could only play on a level, without offending the embarkations navigating the river close to the high bank, and the reason for the construction of said fort which will be so far frustrated. They did not understand that, with the two 8-pounders and the two 4-pounders, this fortification remains defenceless, as the artillery can not make more than one straight shot through its two-yard-wide portholes. The enemies will take



good care not to face said portholes and attack the fortification on its sides. They did not think that in the present condition of this fort it is unable to resist the fire of a 6-gun sloop without the fall of part of its quarters, and that said sloop may very well attack it, without receiving any injury from the two 8-pounders with their straight shot, as it has been explained. They did not understand that the eight counter-forts of this fortification occupy a large part of the lodgings considered necessary for the garrison, which, from the end of July to the middle of September, would have to remain in a well of a foot and a half of water. The impossibility of arranging lodgings for the garrison is aggravated, on account of the dense clouds of mosquitoes produced by the muddy ground. These mosquitoes would be intolerable in the interior of the fort, on account of its partial or total want of ventilation, the extreme dampness through the ten rents affecting the work, as well as the waters of the Orinoco all around. They did not foresee that the interior of these fortifications can not hold any powder, on account of the dampness and the risk of keeping it in a wooden box which must be open for the use of the artillery, which, being fired from the interior of the fort, it may possibly blow out said box, which is likewise shown to the necessary fire kept within said fortification, especially for cooking, during the months of the inundation of the ground, when it is not possible for the garrison to go outside for their meals, nor to have them brought up to the fortress. And, finally, they did not calculate that even if the ground were solid, free from mosquitoes, and that the Orinoco should not carry away the banks, it would be easier, cheaper, and a great deal better to build a new fort, rather than to have its counter-foundations newly built, reducing the terre-plein, opening new portholes, fixing their ports, building a flat roof and mounting the artillery, remaining after all these improvements in as useless condition as it is now. And if they had reflected and understood the above inconveniences and others that I have to omit, they ought to have reported to His Majesty the necessity of abandoning the small fort of Limones and fortifying the Padraastro mountain as the only advantageous spot for the de-

fence of the Orinoco River and the Provinces, through the territories of which it runs, and that spot may be fortified with safety, according to the judgment of the Governors and the engineers who have been commissioned by His Majesty for the purpose, as I have exposed by way of reference in note 9 of my memorandum.

“That the stones taken out of the small fort be left at its foot and defend with loose stones the eastern point of the Limones creek.”

119. To leave at the foot of the fort the stones taken out from its interior portion, I am not persuaded that it has any other advantage than saving the expense of removing them away, nor any other disadvantage than encumbering that weak ground with that new inconvenience around the fort.

120. To defend with loose stones the eastern point of the Limones creek, besides being expensive is impossible, notwithstanding the report sent to His Majesty that ought to have been originated, on account of the ignorance that the creek of Limones is so called with reference to the Orinoco River, that in certain times of the year contains more water than the deepest cut of Aranjuez during its greatest floods, and that no rivers of this magnitude can be stopped by means of loose stones. According to the observations which, by order of the Governor, Don Diego Tavares, were made by the commander of the garrison, Don Juan de Dios Valdez, in the years 1749, 1750, and 1752, of which he made an authenticated copy, found in the proceedings from folio 55, it appears that the Limones creek is over 20 yards wide, its banks 6 yards high, with a quicksand bottom, that at the earliest part of May it begins to receive water, and keeps growing up until the end of July, at which time those of the Orinoco and of the creek fall together in one body and inundate the Island of Limones, its surroundings and what is called mainland, where the fort is situated, with an elevation of six quarters (of a yard) above the highest point of that ground, so that by the end of July the said Limones creek is over 20 yards wide and 9 deep, continuing so

full until the middle of September, when the waters of the Orinoco begin to fall, and at the same time those of the creek, until the end of November, when it is entirely dry, and so it keeps until the following May.

Upon this supposition, I say, it is very easy, during the six months when it is dry, to throw all the loose stones wanted and place them in any way desired, but as said stones have to be thrown upon quicksand and on a steep slope to the depth of 80 fathoms, the depth of the Orinoco during those months, it will not be possible to resist the strong current of the Limones creek, during the months in which its channel is 20 yards wide and 8 or 9 deep, and thus the current should certainly carry away with the moving sand all the loose stones to the bottom of the Orinoco or else the stones become embedded below the sand. And if there was any such resistance and the stones were not embedded nor carried away, what is to become of the sandy Island of Limones and of what they call mainland? The waters of the Patapaima creek enter into that of Limones and can not retrocede against the force of the Orinoco impelling them, and they will continue their course, sweeping along with them everything in their way. An examination could be made, with an expense of \$500 to \$600, by throwing one hundred launch loads of loose stones in the creek, and if they stand the first flood and at the first low ebb should be found in the same place where they were thrown down, it will be an evidence of the accuracy of the report sent to His Majesty, but if said one hundred launch loads of loose stones are found embedded in the sand or carried away to the bottom of the Orinoco, (as I have no doubt it will turn out to be the case), it will be understood that this inconvenience was not properly anticipated, and that they were ignorant of the fact that in order to stop that creek the Orinoco or any other river from carrying away the ground with their current, the best supporters are the trees with their roots. They were likewise ignorant of the fact that the Orinoco had carried away 23 yards from the Island of Limones, on account of having cut down the clusters of trees that held together the banks, and that as soon as new roots commenced to grow they stopped the loss of ground

which had taken place in what is called mainland, when they have cleared about 60 yards of trees, whatever else is likewise cleared of trees, will be carried away in future. The loose stones thrown on the mainland or the Island of Limones will not stop it, as reported to His Majesty, as the stones may stop and gather the waters of a mill, but not the powerful Orinoco and its more violent creeks, larger and more rapid than the most renowned rivers of Spain.

“That two Canarian launches be constructed, one for the service of the garrison of the forts, and the other to be kept at Angostura.”

121. My predecessors have all considered necessary one or two armed launches for the fortress of Guayana, well manned for cruising at the mouth of the Orinoco River, and other uses submitted to His Majesty by the Marquis of San Philipe in his memorials above mentioned, Nos. 4 and 5 of Chapter 6, and that their crews be paid so as to avoid the evil consequences explained by the Marquis in his second memorial; but neither myself nor my predecessor have been detained by the cost of the launches, which in that country is very limited, and each one could be built for \$300, and I, without expense to the Royal Treasury, should have employed two of them seized and confiscated in my time. The difficulty has been on account of the soldiers and stores for the crews, and so I say, that in constructing the two launches reported to His Majesty, it is very easy, and will only cost \$600, but if they must be armed and manned for cruising purposes, \$3,000 a year will be required in this way: 8 sailors and one pilot at \$8 each sailor and \$10 the pilot, will cost \$1,776 a year; a real (one dime) for each ration every day, \$827; careening and repairing of oars and boot-tops, \$100; making in all \$2,690. To this amount the daily ration of the troops must be added when on board, it will be more or less, as the case may demand. That if said launches are kept doing only the service of bringing stores to Angostura and shipping them from the Province of Cumana, the cost will not be \$3,000 a year, as there will not be any troop and the crew may be composed of Indians from

the Missions, who are only paid \$4 a month and the daily ration. That in order to be accurate on this subject, it is necessary that His Majesty kindly designates the exact service, and in proportion to order the payment from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fe, or wherever his Majesty finds it convenient, of \$3,000 for the cruising service, and \$2,000 for the traveling service only, and when that is done, said vessels may be constructed and seafaring men mustered into the service, aggregating them to the fortress for the performance of their duty, and if the case is not as I have stated, it will not be carried out, notwithstanding the report sent to His Majesty, founded on vagaries and vague ideas heard and accepted, without examining the difficulties for the establishment and performance of said launches, in ignorance of the representation sent to His Majesty by the Marquis of San Philipe, and the report of the Governor remaining yet unanswered.

“That meantime, and pending these works, which must be paid out of the funds assigned for the construction of the fort of Limones, Your Honor will separate the southern bank of Angostura and at once direct the transfer of all its cattle and have them pastured above said place.”

122. For the construction of the fort of Limones there is no branch of revenue assigned by His Majesty, but only fixed amounts. The first one of \$16,000, by the Royal Order issued through His Excellency the Marquis de la Ensenada, as it is shown at No. 10 of Chapter 6, and the second one of \$9,204 one and a half reals, by the same Royal Order communicated by Your Excellency and mentioned in Nos. 14 and 15 of the same Chapter 6, making both amounts a total of \$25,204 one and a half reals, to which must be added \$343 and 1 real and 19 maravedis, of various fines applied to the same purpose, making altogether \$25,550, 3 reals and 12 maravedis, of which \$25,035 have been expended in the construction of the fort, including what is due to Don Juan de Dios Valdez, whose account is still pending, as is shown by the accompanying act to the representation of the 23d of September, 1761, by which he shows His Majesty the deplorable condition of the fort of San Fer-

nando and the funds expended as balance of what has been assigned for its construction, \$500 more or less, the only amount that His Majesty assigns for the enterprise of works described by his Royal Order and those issued in consequence, and for which \$300,000 are necessary, and if they are completed the Orinoco is fortified, as it is necessary, \$100,000, and perhaps more, besides, will be needed to bring things back to the condition in which they are to-day, notwithstanding the facilities reported to His Majesty, without any proper knowledge and concealing the great expense involved. The three or four hundred thousand dollars are inexcusable for the exact compliance with what His Majesty directs to be done and for the fortification of the Orinoco afterwards, with no other funds in hand than \$500, and only on that account, even if not followed by irreparable injuries and the difficulties already explained, I ought to suspend the enforcement of said Royal Order until His Majesty, well informed of everything that I have submitted to His Sovereign consideration, decides what will be his pleasure on the subject.

123. In the foregoing numbers, from 21 to 25, I have shown part of the irreparable injuries, large expenses and unavoidable difficulties, making impossible the transfer of the city of Guayana to the site of Angostura, and I will continue here dealing with the same subject and stating that even if the inhabitants of Guayana were reimbursed of the \$59,200, the lowest valuation of their 30 plantations and 73 dwelling houses which they possess, many years will be necessary for the transfer of the city so as to do it with ease and convenience. For that purpose other plantations ought to be prepared, as well as a good portion of the 73 houses for the accommodation of the 90 families who are occupying them at present around the fortress. That should be all carried out slowly, even where there are good farming lands close to the settlements to be provided with said necessities. The location of Angostura, with bare empty grounds around, without wood, grass, or fertile lands, could not be made accessible within twenty-five or thirty years. As an evidence of the fact, I will produce four instances, one of them the same city of

Guayana, founded in the year 1579. What has been advanced in the same settlement within the 184 years of its existence? All the improvements found possible are reduced to the congregation of 90 poor mustee families, including mulattoes, negroes, the officers, and 6 or 8 white families, the building of 73 houses, one church covered with palm leaves, and the repairing of the fortifications in the terms exposed in Chapter 7, besides the establishment of 30 small plantations, as shown in Chapter 9, No. 91. Therefore, if in the 184 years, and with all the work performed, the improvements are so very few, it is not to be expected that in a short time could Angostura and its extensive bare grounds do much better and obtain happy progresses. The second instance is that of the city of Real Corona, founded by the chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga, in which large sums from the Treasury were expended; and what was the result? It is stated in Nos. 93 and 96 of Chapter 9. The third instance will be that of Ciudad Real de Uyapy, founded by the same chief of squadrons, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, at the expense of the Royal Treasury; and what is its condition or its improvements after eight years of labor? See No. 97 of said Chapter 9. The fourth instance is the city of San Fernando, projected and undertaken by the third Commissioner, Don Joseph Solano, and in which he worked three or four years, expending large amounts of money from the Royal Treasury, and the result of what has become of said city is found in Nos. 98 to 100 of Chapter 9.

Therefore if these cities, after having been settled at the expense of the Royal Treasury, have met with such an unfortunate result, it could not be expected any better end to the projected city of Guayana, even distributing \$59,200, value of the houses and plantations, among the inhabitants and owners, and if the said amount were not paid to them, it is not difficult to persuade them to go to Angostura to establish a new city. By that I do not mean that it will be impossible to make them remove from there; on the contrary, I think it is very easy and practicable within two months, or even eight days, if it were so desired, but it will be necessary for doing that to fill three conditions; the first should be the use of force,

to which those poor inhabitants could not resist, except by means of tears and regrets for the abandonment of their small plantations and dwelling-houses which they possess, in order to be conveyed to a long bare bank of the river, 100 leagues far from any settlement from where to secure any help, having the great Orinoco River across. These complaints began as soon as the report of the transfer was heard, when several inhabitants came to me and expressed their desires to abandon the fortress and come over to this Province, and part of the troop under various pretexts tried to obtain leave of absence. In order to dispel their fears I felt compelled to write to the commander of the fortress to assure them all that there should not be any such transfer; that I would submit the subject to His Majesty so as to quiet their feelings, as it was done, according to the report received by letter from the commander, copied authentically at the back of folio 207 of the proceedings, and other documents remaining at the office of the Secretary of this Government; but notwithstanding if they are directed to transfer their residence they will readily do so. The second condition should be to pay from the Royal Treasury a daily ration to each person of the 90 families to be removed, as it has been done with those of the Real Corona, Ciudad Real, and San Fernando, as otherwise it will become impossible the subsistence of the 535 persons composing said 90 families, nor the others that His Majesty desires to aggregate to them. The daily rations for 535 persons, including transportation, stores, and other contingencies, will make an annual expense of \$20,000 to \$24,000, and may be \$30,000, if the troops have to be added, as directed by the Royal Order, and as the entries of the Royal Treasury will not be in condition to meet this indispensable expense in less than eight or ten years, the transfer will be made, but not the payment of the subsistence of the 90 families and the other troops to be aggregated. The third condition should be that His Majesty kindly fixes the penalty of those inhabitants of Guayana who withdrawing from there to other places do not go to Angostura, as there is no penalty by the present Royal laws for the change of residence, and if the new settlers do not fear any



penalty they are liable to cross the Orinoco River in quest of homes at any other settlement in the Provinces of Barcelona, Cumana, or Caracas. It will be very likely to happen so, if they are compelled by actual want, as there is no way in that barren country to secure the necessaries of life. His Majesty will kindly state whether those who settle in any other population may be removed from it, compelling them to reside in the new city or cities. The chief of squadron, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, asked me to apprehend and send to him those persons who abandoned the city of Corona Real, and I do not know what must I do about this subject, being persuaded that none of these inconveniences were anticipated or foreseen when they sent their reports to His Majesty.

124. The bovine cattle estates owned by the neighbors of Guayana are not situated within the limits of that Province; but on the opposite side in the Province of Barcelona, such as those owned by Franco, Ferreras, Pinto and other persons; and they are not represented in the accompanying map. There never were in Guayana any other cattle estates than those belonging to-day to the Mission, with 14,000 to 16,000 heads (as shown by the tenth note of my memorandum of reports), situated 40 or 50 leagues inland in the neighborhood of the Missions of Yuruari and Avechica, and from that stock they take what they want for the 16 Missions—what they call the troop cattle estate established at the cost of said Mission, in the neighborhood of the fortress, as marked in the accompanying map, by order of the Governor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, of which there was never any product, for want of pasture grounds on the banks of the Orinoco River, and the plague of insects around the lagoons and swampy ground, only existing at the time of my general visit about 70 to 80 heads of cattle, which were donated to the church by the said troop in order to help the building of it. That was the end of that extinguished herd of cattle. I do not understand what reasons induced the authors of the report sent to His Majesty to state that in the said Province there was cattle to be transferred to Angostura, and that if it existed it was easy to keep it in those extensive shores.

“That Your Honor does not permit the sowing of green vegetables on the banks of the Orinoco below Angostura.”

125. Once the transfer of Guayana to Angostura carried out the abandonment of the plantations will follow, as it will not be possible to continue their cultivation at a distance of 20 leagues, and while the transfer is in process of completion the inhabitants will be prevented from planting new farms and shall have to destroy by fire or otherwise those which they possess. It will be necessary to allow the inhabitants daily rations at Angostura, as otherwise they could not subsist, even if they would remain at the fortress, when the products from the interior Mission are not sufficient to support the 535 persons composing the 90 families already mentioned in Nos. 66 and 68, and those quoted in said numbers. These circumstances were not thought of at the time of sending to His Majesty the report referred to. At the margin of the Orinoco River are situated the four Missions of Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, and Aguacagua, as represented in No. 6. Said four settlements do not afford any assistance to meet the wants of the fortress, but do not depend from it nor from the inland Missions, their inhabitants have their own farms, that, although small and not abundant, on account of the poor land, they derive their own subsistence from them, and if these Indians are forbidden from continuing in their own grounds on the margin of the Orinoco, they could not subsist unless at the expense of the Royal Treasury or compelled to go farther inland, and that would be still more difficult than the transfer from Guayana, and if forced to do so the loss of the Missions recently founded will ensue, as shown in the accompanying proceeding from folios 145 to 148, and some of these Indians will go back to the mouth of the Orinoco from where they have been removed at a great expense and labor.

“That at the same time the Indian settlement of Suay is to be removed with all the cattle kept there.”

126. The Mission of Suay is situated  $2\frac{1}{2}$  leagues to the south of the Guayana fortress, has no cattle, and, as the rest of them,

in charge of the Catalan Capuchins, is supplied from the cattle estate known as the property of the Mission, situated 50 leagues inland, as I have already stated. It draws its subsistence from their farms in poor lands, such as those of Piacoa, Aripuco, Caroni, and Aguacagua, that do not render any help in the way of provisions to the fortress. It is the oldest settlement, and was founded in the year 1724, as shown by Chapter 8, No. 2. Their natives are talkative and well educated. It is one of the three Missions where to the present time they have not been able to build a church. Their municipal house is held by the community, with a library and the archives. They have a good jail and a hospitium for the inland Indians bringing provisions to Guayana by way of said Mission. From there they go to the city and leave their loads in the hands of the Syndic, returning on the same day to Suay. If this settlement is removed the communication and commerce with the inland Missions will suffer a serious interruption, as the nearest stopping place at the south, through which the city is supplied, is that of Alta Gracia at a distance of 10 leagues from the fortress, and there is no stopping place or lodgings for the Indians nor Missioners through that distance. If the settlement of Guayana is removed it will be a distance of 20 leagues without any refuge or stopping place for resting. And notwithstanding all that has been said, there is no difficulty to withdraw this settlement from a high ground but that of running the risk of the flight of the natives to the mountains, where it is difficult to take them back from their native haunts. •

I do not dwell any longer on this subject, as it is well known to every one who has been in America and acquired a knowledge of what the Indians are, and that the Royal laws for the good government of the Indies enjoin the greatest tact and reflection to be observed in the process of removing the Indians from their native places, as nothing is apt to convince them of any good reason for such an abandonment, and when removed they are subject to fits of extreme melancholy followed by death. Various instances I could mention of what I have personally seen in the part of America through which I have traveled, and even at this very place of the government

in my charge. Therefore I can assure that if the Indians of Suay are compelled to remove from their land and those of Aripuco, Piacoa, Caroni, and Aguacagua, forbidding them from planting their grounds on the banks of the Orinoco, the greatest number of them will take to the woods, from where they had been brought down. These inconveniences were not minded when the report was sent to His Majesty, nor the importance to the Royal service of settling Missions on the banks of the Orinoco, which in time will secure these Provinces and attract the establishment of Spanish settlements, as those of San Antonio de Upata and Maturin, mentioned in Chapter 9, and Nos. 101 to 112, and otherwise they will be impracticable.

“That once the works of the fortifications finished, the commander transfer his residence to Angostura, closing it with a battery mounted, on the part called San Philipe, on the eastern slope of a hill in the rear, where a stronghold has to be erected as headquarters, and defend the rear of the population and the battery, and that from thence he shall have to attend to the garrison of the fort and prevent the entrance of foreigners, extending due protection to the Missions, allowing them the necessary escort.”

127. I consider superfluous everything that I might say, in answer to the above part of the Royal Order, as I have in the course of this part second of my statement placed in evidence the great over-floods of the eastern and western sides of the strip of land formed by the Angostura, where there is no kindling wood, timber material, pasture grounds nor farming lands, and that this circumstance and the want of victuals makes impossible the transfer of the Guayana inhabitants and their subsistence. Angostura does not defend nor can defend the entrance of foreigners and their commerce with the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, and Sante Fe, nor prevent them from keeping an open trade with all of them. The safety of these Provinces depends from the fortifications of Guayana, and if they are lost Angostura can not in any way be defended, even by a stronghold like the one demolished at Araya.

The repairs and steps taken at will by the Governors, for the security of the fortress, stop the foreigners from continuing their illicit traffic, their landing and their incursions through the Provinces through which the Orinoco River runs, as they did until the year 1734 and even in that of 1746.

At present they only navigate through the labyrinths of the mouths of said rivers, without daring to reach as far as the fortress, which is entirely indefensive against the enemies of the Royal Crown, intending to take it and holding it. In such a case, (which is very near at hand), His Majesty would lose a great portion of America, depending upon said fortress, while the Orinoco River facilitates an entrance. The long distance from Guayana of the Missions of the Jesuits and Dominicans in Barinas does not permit the aggregation of their escorts to the fortress nor their protection from the same. For the construction of the battery, stronghold and other works directed by the above-quoted Cedula there is only the amount of \$500, when there is an actual need of from \$300,000 to \$400,000; and I have finally shown how erroneous is the report to His Majesty, tending to disarm the fortress, the only advantageous spot and key to all these Provinces, considering sufficiently fortified with the construction of counter-foundations and other useless works of the small fort of Limones and the land attacks of the Padrastró mountain, and with said useless work and a simple battery of Angosturá they thought the important Orinoco River safe, as also the extensive Provinces easily reached through it.

This is the only favorable report upholding Angostura up to the present time, and contrary to those of the Governors, engineers, and competent persons, and to the one that, in virtue of a Royal Order was approved by His Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, who, like the Governors and engineers, held the fortress of Guayana as the only advantageous ground to secure the safety of all these Provinces, and that it must be fortified as I have shown in my note No. 9 of the memorandum previously sent to His Majesty, and in my representation of the 27th of August, 1751, while dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya.

“In consideration of the occupations and expenses of the transfer of Guayana that may for a time deprive the inhabitants from a church, His Majesty has granted \$4,000 for the building of one, and to this end an order has been issued to the Viceroy of Santa Fe.”

128. I consider sufficient for the building of the church the four thousand dollars (\$4,000) that Your Majesty has granted for that purpose. It will be equal to that of the fortress, the ornaments of which, as well as the images and bells contributed by means of alms, can be taken to the new church; but in such a case (and that of a transfer of the Guayana inhabitants) it will be necessary to keep another church ornamented in that fortress at the expense of the Royal treasury, so that the garrison may attend to mass, receive the sacraments, and be buried, as there is no hope that the old church, already dilapidated, may answer for that purpose. The building of the new church, for which materials have already been collected, has been suspended, and they may be applied for the construction of the new one to be built on account of the King.

“And in this respect I am directed by His Majesty to tell Your Honor that at once, and from the troop of Araya, 52 men be sent to Guayana to serve in that garrison, and besides, 50 men to the Island of Trinidad, trying at the same time to send to both places the artillery considered necessary, and Your Honor will send instructions to the Governor of said island about the means of defence that may have been adopted, besides the help of Your Honor, in keeping with the urgency and possibility of the case.”

129. As the principal object in view, when I came to take charge of this Government, was to render assistance to the chief of squadron, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, and afford him the facilities of money, provisions, and the troops he might want to undertake his journey, as soon as I took possession of the Government, and became familiar with the state of things, I sent to said chief \$40,000, the cash existing then, and another sum of \$40,000, which for the same purpose was paid to me in Cadiz. The stores and other things that he asked me for, and in order to send him the 180 men that he requested, besides

those under his orders, I inspected the garrisons of this place and the Castle of Araya and found them in great decadence, on account of the large detachment taken from here by said chief, and the greater portion of which had deserted or died of starvation in the fortress of Guayana; that the troop that remained here in the service had sustained many desertions, and that every day the desertions continued for fear of being made a part of the detachments sent to the Orinoco River and on account of not having received the payment of the salaries due and to be drawn from the Caracas Treasury, then three years in arrears. In order to make this payment I applied to that Governor with a notice of the orders that I had and the importance to the Royal service of sending, at the disposal of the above-mentioned chief, the 180 men that he asked for, the impossibility of doing so for want of funds to pay the salaries due, and of keeping a part of them in that destination and the rest of the garrison here, if proper means were not taken to pay from that treasury the amounts allotted and already due and to be due in future. And not having succeeded, I could not send the 180 men requested nor avoid more desertions.

130. On the 20th of July, 1759, and through Your Excellency, I laid before His Majesty all that I have stated, requesting that his Royal kindness issue the corresponding orders to the Treasury of Caracas or that of Mexico for the payment of the \$41,250, due on account of arrears to this garrison and their future payments, in order to avoid frequent desertions at the time; and to my representation His Majesty kindly answered by means of Your Excellency, under date of the 13th of May, 1760, approving my conduct in the matter, and directing (among other things), that on account of the difficulty that had been met with for the payment at Caracas of the allotted funds proper steps should be taken, after the resolution about the subsistence of the fortress of Araya, upon which my report was expected about the utility or inutility of the same.

131. In compliance with this Royal Order and those previously communicated on the subject, under the date of the 27th of August, 1761, I laid before the consideration of His Majesty the inutility of that fortification; and that I had considered

as a good service to His Majesty the demolition of said castle and the reform of its garrison, and that in case that it was so decided, it was indispensable to adopt a new regulation for the garrison of Cumana, which ought to be increased by 25 more men, and likewise that of the fortress of Guayana, with a company consisting of one captain, a lieutenant, a sub-lieutenant, and 70 more men, so as to be able to detach escorts to the Missions to the Catalan Capuchins and Observant Fathers of Piritu, besides the detachment to Trinidad for the better defence of its fortress; but it was not found convenient or easy to have formed out of the troop taken from the garrison of Araya for the reason then stated. I likewise brought to the notice of His Majesty that in regard to the Treasury of Caracas the 10,000 ducats assigned to the garrison of Cumana could not be collected, nor the alms of the Catalan Capuchin Missioners and those of the Observant Fathers of Piritu (*sic*), directions should be given so as to continue the remittance of the 30,000 ducats from the Treasury of Mexico for the payment of the Araya troop and the garrisons of Cumana, the increase to be furnished to Guayana and the alms to be distributed among the bodies of the Missions in charge of spreading the Gospel in this Province, as it is shown extensively in that communication.

132. And now I have to submit to His Majesty that the Treasury of Caracas has continued opposing the same difficulties to meet the payment of the annual allotment in favor of this garrison, already in arrears for eight years, amounting to \$110,000, as it is shown at folio 149 of these proceedings, that these garrisons are awaiting yet the payment of three allotments from Mexico that have not come yet on account of the war, one of them having been lost in Havana. The three allotments amount to (\$123,750) one hundred and twenty-three thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars, and adding those of Caracas (\$233,750), two hundred and thirty-three thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars, both from Mexico and Caracas. During the war all these garrisons have been partially helped by this Treasury with small monthly advances, but not sufficient, as it has not been possible to allow any more



for want of funds. The non-payment of salaries and the continual detachments to the Orinoco River have brought about more desertions, which, together with the losses by death in that quarter, amount to 394 men, from the time of the arrival of that expedition, as shown in folios 150 to 156 of the proceedings. Said garrisons have been materially reduced to an actual existence of 189 men, including the staff officers and 12 invalids, as shown at folio 157 of said proceedings, where it is noticed likewise a deficit of 182 men to make up the whole number, and I might as well call it 260 men, as many of them in actual service might be discharged on account of age, sickness or invalidity, and they are only kept for want of substitutes. From the 189 men in actual existence, 33 are in Orinoco, under the chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga, and on duty in this place, including detachments, 144 men, counting officers and the staff, which is almost precisely the garrison, as shown in the last mentioned folio.

As the existing troop is so small, it is not possible to send to Guayana 52 men nor 50 to the Island of Trinidad, as directed by the Royal Cedula. In order to do so it should be necessary that His Majesty would direct that by the Royal Treasury of Caracas or of Mexico the arrears due the troops be paid and the annual assignments for their payment, in which case I have to submit to Your Excellency that it will not be possible to muster in this country all the people needed for the service of this garrison and of that of Araya, existing before now, because the whole of the garrison does not exceed 1,000 men of those who are called white persons and look like such, as shown by No. 12, Chapter 4, of part first, and it is very difficult that 400 of the latter class would like to fill the places left vacant in the two garrisons. It might be possible if they would be restricted to serve in them, but impossible if wanted in Guayana, as that country is adverse and injurious to the Cumana natives, as shown repeatedly by the experience of the detachments that at all times have been sent there, and the greatest part of which have perished or returned while suffering of chonical diseases. The fact is fresh in their memory, past and present, with the existence of 250 widows now in

Cumana. Some of them are really so and the others are considered so on account of desertions or abandonments by their husbands, whose whereabouts are not known, notwithstanding the Royal pardon published. To muster single men into service for Guayana is likewise impossible, not only because there are not so many as required, but on account of the difficulty of subsistence in that country, which is better secured by married men, kept in the place by their wives and children. The increase to be added to the garrison of Guayana could only be secured on the terms I reported to His Majesty in my letter of the 27th of August, 1767 ; otherwise it has not been found practicable, notwithstanding the repeated Royal orders kept in the archives of this government directing that detachments from the Castle of Araya go over to the Missions of Orinoco. Whenever in virtue of those Royal orders the experiment has been tried the only result has been the loss of so many men and the upsetting of the garrisons, reducing the population of the city and neighboring Spanish settlements, where people such as that of Guayana are wanted.

133. I will not stop to justify and show to Your Excellency other injuries and inconveniences making impracticable the removal of so many people and their substitution if they die or desert ; the difficulties subsisting in regard to detachments and the removal of families to remain steadily at the fortress of Angostura, and the want of provisions for so many people ; the difficulty for the prompt construction of dwelling-houses and hospitals for the invalids if the King does not pay for them or for the headquarters. Having to meet all these requirements, it is not an easy matter to remove these garrisons, whether by detachments or with their families, from this their native place, for the distant, warm and damp one of Guayana, and to replace those who die. The 52 men and others that His Majesty directs to be sent to the garrisons of Guayana, the 25 of the small fort of Limones, the 73 of the Jesuits and Dominican escorts of Barinas, the 100 of the regular allowance of the fortress, besides the impossibility of residing in it, for want of provisions at present, it is an excessive garrison that, after being placed in Angostura as resident, is sent from there to

increase the strong detachment of the fortress and that of Trinidad, the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, those of the Reverend Father Observants of Piritu, of the Jesuits of Orinoco and of the Dominicans of Barinas, it is a small number of men, as it should be necessary to properly fill these detachments and relieve them, fully 500 men, or they may have to remain steadily in their respective headquarters as at present. These insuperable inconveniences and others which I omit, were not taken in consideration when the report was sent to His Majesty, nor did they know the decadence affecting the whole of this country on account of the expedition and the misery spread throughout by so many poor widows and families, in detriment of the service of God, and followed by so many misfortunes.

134. I will not stop to acquaint Your Excellency with the large expenses and difficulties of sending 50 men to Trinidad, as I have already done so before in my representation of the 2d of November of the previous year of 1762, in answer to the Royal Order of December, 1761, directing this detachment, and His Majesty's approval of my conduct in the matter by His Royal order of the 17th of October of this year, just received through Your Excellency.

135. On the same occasion on the 1st of November, 1762, I rendered an account to His Majesty of the various reasons that influenced my remittance to the Governor of Caracas of the fifteen bronze cannons found in the Castle of Araya and the description of the quality and number of the rest of the artillery of the same fortification remaining in this place, and by the Royal Order of the 27th of October ultimo I have received the approval of His Majesty. This time, under a separate representation, I send with these proceedings an account to Your Excellency of what, in virtue of the present Royal Order, I have sent to the Governor of Trinidad, to wit: thirteen iron cannons, and to the Governor of Caracas I have decided to send the rest of the utensils and ammunitions shown by the same proceedings, corresponding to said separate representation, leaving in this place no more artillery than the two bronze culverins which, under date of the 27th of August, 1761, I informed

His Majesty that I considered to be appropriate for the service of the fortress of Guayana; where, however, I have not sent them yet, on account of not having obtained your Royal decision, and because without the construction of the necessary fortification in that city, it would be a pity to risk so fine and useful pieces. Thus I answer the point in question.

“That the fortress of Araya be dismounted (as directed) and its cistern made useless.”

136. The fortress of Araya has been wholly demolished, so that no gun could be mounted; and I did so in virtue of the Royal Order of the 6th of January, 1762, and I gave an account to His Majesty of what I have done under date of the 1st of November of the year 1762, having been favored with the kind approbation of His Majesty by the Royal Order of the 26th of September of the present year, which I have just received.

“That in this city the 25 more men requested by Your Honor will be increased, as suggested in your letter of the 27th of August of last year, and that filling up the vacancies for the regular complement of said allotments with the soldiers of Araya the remnant be detached for the service and defence of Guayana.”

137. I submit to Your Excellency that at present there is no need of any increase of 25 men in this city, as the fault is supplied by the diminished garrison of Araya, the increase of which will be done when His Majesty be pleased to direct the completion of the former garrison of Araya and of this place, or if in the latter, the increase of the 25 men has to replace its vacancies with those from Araya, or if this one has to discharge the few persons remaining and settle the funds for the annual payment of the 25 men of the increase, which aside from their not being needed at present in virtue of the law, it is not in my power to change the place for the collection of the funds unless His Majesty (if it were his pleasure) should wish me to settle this point.

“And I make you acquainted with all the above circumstances by order of His Majesty and for the understanding and the corresponding steps to be taken to comply with the whole of this Royal resolution.—May the Lord keep Your Honor’s life for many years.—Aranjuez the 27th of May, 1762.—The Bailiff, Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga.—Triplicate.—To Senor Don Joseph Diguja.”

138. As soon as I received the present Royal Order, and in order to be well prepared to issue the corresponding measures for its prompt and exact compliance, I tried to be informed in every point mentioned by His Majesty’s directions; and being fully aware of the insurmountable difficulties, large and useless expenses, and irreparable injuries that its enforcement might bring about, the many years necessary, the impending danger of the loss of these vast dominions, and the want of accuracy of the reports submitted to His Majesty, I consider it to be my duty to suspend its effect, laying the case before His Majesty with all the proceedings and documents justifying my views sent herewith to Your Excellency, so as to submit the same to the Royal consideration, and decide whatever it may meet his pleasure.

---

### Part Third.

Being well aware of all the antecedents and of the present condition of the dependence in question, and following the accurate judgment of the founders of the city of Santo Thomé of Guayana, of the engineer Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, of the Governor of Trinidad, Don Augustin de Arredondo, of the Governor of Cumana, Don Carlos de Sucre, of the Marquis of San Philipe, of Father Joseph Gumilla, of Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, of engineer Don Antonio Jordan, of Brigadier Don Diego Tavares, and of engineers Don Gaspar de Lara and Don Juan Bautista MacEvan, and the approbation of His Excellency, Dón Sabastian de Eslava, with the profoundest respect, I submit to His Majesty in my sense of duty—

That the fortification of the mountain of Padraastro, if it meet His Royal pleasure, be carried out at the Castle of La Concepcion.

VOL. 1, VEN.—12

That either, with the Castle of La Concepcion, or any other one meeting His Majesty's pleasure, be fortified without loss of time, as otherwise it is most exposed to loss in the first war.

That the city be preserved, and that by all means possible the population be increased to twice its present number of inhabitants.

That the garrison be increased by 73 men, as proposed by the Governors Don Gregorio de Espinosa and Don Matheo Gaul, as I have requested His Majesty in my representation of the 27th of August, 1761.

That the fort of Limones be abandoned and a launch be kept at the fortress, as represented to His Majesty by the Marquis of San Philipe, and if Angostura is to be fortified to be so with only the battery which was proposed by the Governor Don Juan de la Tornera and is shown by figure 9 of the map.

That the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers and of the Observant Fathers of Piritu be attended to on the terms that I have submitted to His Majesty. To these six subjects I will reduce the corresponding chapters of this part third.

---

## Chapter I.

*That the fortification of the Padrastro Mountain, if it meet His Royal pleasure, be carried out at the Castle of La Concepcion, as shown in figures 7 and 8 of the map.*

1. In the course of this communication I have shown that from the time of the discovery of the Orinoco nobody has considered Angostura as an appropriate spot to stop the navigation by foreigners and their entrance in these Provinces or their seizure by them. That the Governor Don Juan de la Tornera and Fr. Francisco del Castillo; the only persons in favor of Angostura, did not deal with the subject of fortifying the Orinoco River, but only with the question of a fort that, like the former one of Clarines, might protect the new reduction of Indians of the, until then, unknown Province of Bar-

celona, but nothing was said in regard to the utility or inutility of the fortress of Guayana. But, although the Fathers of the Company, Juan Capitel and Juan Remez, were of the opinion that the Island of Fajardo ought to be fortified, they in no way underrated the fortress of Guayana. On the contrary, they were under the impression that by fortifying said island the force of the fortress should be increased and the Orinoco well secured. That the first founders of Guayana, the engineer, Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, and others followed, besides the approbation of His Excellency Don Sebastian de Eslava, all of whom have unanimously considered as unsuitable and totally unfit the site of Angostura for the situation and construction of fortification intended for the security of the Orinoco, and that only the fortress of Guayana has been considered the proper spot to stop the navigation and secure all these Provinces; and in this view (besides my having so represented the case to His Majesty) they have taken particular steps, by means of which the entrance of foreigners has been stopped, as well as their hostilities and their establishment on the same Orinoco. That the same engineers and Governors have considered that the Padrastro mountain must be fortified, as the most important spot of the place, and the one that secures and quadruplicates the fortress of the Castle of San Francisco, and without the knowledge that I have at present of all the antecedents of this matter, and by only my observation, at the time of my visit to said mountain and its circumstances, shown in my note 9 of my memorandum, by way of notice, the great necessity of securing this most important place, and now I say :

2. That (if it is the pleasure of His Majesty) I am for the construction at the Padrastro mountain of the Castle of La Concepcion shown by figure 7 of the accompanying map showing it in project. Said fortification will measure from 65 to 67 yards in length, 50 to 72 yards in breadth, and that its surface is shown in figure 8 and quoted in the explanation; that it will have a sufficient parade ground for the management of the artillery numbered in the interior of figure 7. It will assure and increase the strength of the fort of the Castle of San

Francisco, which will never be surrendered or occupied by the enemy if the Castle of Concepcion, dominating the same at an elevation of 36 yards over the level of the parade ground, is not taken. It will close the door of the Orinoco, and, by its heavy artillery, will reach and beat the opposite bank. It will stop the landing on the Provinces of the Cumana and Barcelona sides, as the first possible landing is above the fortress at the creek of Patapataima and the port of Camino Real (Main Road) to the plains of Barcelona, as shown in the map, as no landing is possible below that point on account of the swamps and close thickets all around, being six months of the year inundated and under water all the way through, up to the neighborhood of the cattle estate and sugar mill of Franco. It can not be taken by surprise, as there is no other ascent than by the winding one and very steep, shown by figure 8, which may be guarded by two or three doors.

3. If the enemies should intend to take the Castle of Concepcion and for that purpose should beat the bulwark of San Joseph (not so easy a task, on account of the muddy ground to the east of the Castle of San Francisco and the Usupamo River banks), even if they should succeed in opening a breach they could not give the assault, as the ruins would crumble down from the upper part of the mountain defended by the Castle of San Francisco, and on account of the 51 yards elevation of the mountain in that direction. If they should beat the bulwark of Santa Ana they could not give an assault on account of the same elevation and the Baratillo lagoon at its foot. To beat and open a breach to the bulwark of Santa Isabel is impossible, as the Orinoco River is not accessible to men-of-war of the line, and only to frigates of 30 to 35 guns, and frail vessels, unfit to stand the horizontal fire of the Castle of San Francisco and the nearly perpendicular one from that of Concepcion, that can not be beaten under sails, and only by heaving down, and for that manœuvre they must cast anchors in 65 fathoms, or even 80 in full flood, against a strong current and wind, when in these circumstances they could hardly direct a sure and lively fire, while receiving the leisurely addressed horizontal fire of the Castle of San Francisco and the



perpendicular one from the heavy artillery of Concepcion, and even if they could open a breach, it comes then the difficulty of landing and undertaking the difficult ascent of the mountain, in a great part defended by the Castle of San Francisco, and many of the steep windings are defended by the cannons of La Concepcion.

4. The weakest point of this castle, and through which it might be assaulted, is by the bulwarks of San Joaquin, San Juan, and their corresponding curtain, but in order to beat this fort, a manœuvre not very easy is necessary, as it should require a landing between the Arevia and Usupamo rivers, overcoming their muddy grounds, trees, sands and inequalities of the ground for carrying artillery behind the population, and thence in front of said bulwarks, in short slopes, found on the opposite of the channel F, to build batteries, and after opening the breach to clear the trees and muddy grounds of channel F, well understood that it can not be done, while the Orinoco River is flooded, as through said channel the waters enter and fill the lagoons of Baratillo and Zeiba, until they are level with the Orinoco River, as it has been shown extensively in Chapter 9 of part first, and after overcoming the difficulty of said channel F, the enemies will find themselves before the steep and unequal ascent shown by figure 8, and with the fosse that in that rock may be opened very wide and deep at pleasure.

5. What has been shown is not an affair of eight days, and if the castle resists fifteen or twenty days, keeping the enemy exposed to the dew for as many nights, and the continued rain, unless recourse be had to the lodgings of the population, all under the fires of the Castle of La Concepcion, it is not necessary to use any more powder to make them recede; but notwithstanding, in consideration of what may happen, its greatest force is in the bulwarks of San Juan and San Joaquin and their curtain. And if it meet the pleasure of His Majesty, a ravelin may be built between the fosse and the channel F, and when placed under the fire of said bulwarks and curtain, it will have a like effect as that of the Castle of San Francisco in defense of La Concepcion, and will beat on the Orinoco and

dominating that of La Concepcion with such an elevation and short distance to those of San Francisco, and the ravelin will prevent their being taken by land, unless under a formal siege with very superior forces and bombarding the Concepcion without the risk of any of the other three fortifications being undermined, not only on account of the situation, but likewise on account of the solid rock upon which they stand, just as hard as flint, and if that of San Francisco is furnished with the curtain denoted by the diagonals P of figure 3, and its particular application is done, the three fortifications will be safe against surprises, which must be a subject of the closest precautions. See Chapter 9 of part first.

6. These two or three fortifications may be defended with a few men and render assistance to each other and keep close within them their garrisons that never will be of well-trained veteran troops, and therefore must not be risked on any operation outside of the fortifications, but kept close within them, and the militia and garrison secured only by the artillery will be respected and allow time for re-enforcements without any possibility of being stopped by the enemy, while they are not in control of the Orinoco, an event impossible for them without taking the Castle of Concepcion.

7. This is my judgment, following the engineers and Governors already mentioned, with the only difference that those persons made their projects according to their respective time, and I base my opinion with a better knowledge of the Orinoco and the Provinces, the entrance of which it facilitates. The foreigners come frequently to the Orinoco and draw near it with greater care than ever, and therefore it is indispensable to take more precautions with the fortress of Guayana and fortify the Padraastro mountain as well as possible, as the only key of the Orinoco River and the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, Popayan, and Quito, as I have shown in Chapter 10 of part first.

## Chapter II.

*That His Majesty kindly order the fortification of the Padraastro mountain, either by the construction of the Castle of Concepcion or any other at His pleasure, or else it may be lost in the next war.*

1. In my parts first and second I have shown that as soon as the first Spaniards were settled in the Orinoco, the foreigners commenced to stop their progress and took pains to dislodge them and establish themselves, and for that purpose the English made armaments, the Hollanders set fire to the old Guayana, and the French set fire and sacked the new one established on the site of the present fortress. That during the last century the French, English and Hollanders, supporters of the Carib Indians, navigated freely the Orinoco and insulted the new Missions on the Meta and Casanare rivers, in charge of the Jesuits of the Kingdom of Santa Fe, and in one of their assaults killed four Missioners and the captain of their escort. Those of the Andalusian Capuchins were established in the Province of Caracas. Those of the Province of Barcelona, in charge of the Observant Fathers. Those of Cumana in care of the Aragon Capuchins. And in the Province of Guayana they did not permit any of those established by the Catalan Capuchins, and the Hollanders protected especially the barbarous Caribs, and enslaved as many Indians of the other tribes as they could meet, and were then taken to their new establishments at Esequivo, Berbice, Surinam and Corentin, where they were sold as negroes. That in the year 1719 the Caribs and French set fire to the town of San Felix of the Penitence, and on the banks of the Guarapiche they had an encounter with the Governor, Don José Carreño. That soon after they assaulted the village of San Carlos, situated on the banks of the same Guarapiche, which resulted in its depopulation. That in the year 1727 the English and the Caribs had another encounter with the Governor, Don Juan de la Tornera, at the margins of the Huere River, close to Barcelona, where said English had established 11 houses in the shape of stores,

and in them quantities of arms were taken, and in the year 1735 the same Caribs and French set fire to the new Mission of Neuestra Señora de las Remedios, hung the Missioner, killed 37 Indians in arms, and carried away with them the women and children; that at the same time the Hollanders and Caribs assaulted various settlements in charge of the Jesuits in the Province of Santa Fe.

That the fortress of Guayana, on account of its weak, ruined fortification and small artillery, in want of men to handle it, could not resist the free ingress and egress through said place, with the result that all these Provinces were in a continual alarm, and nobody dared to enter into those extensive plains, nor keep away from their settlement on the high lands.

That in the year 1734 Don Carlos de Sucre went to the fortress, repaired the Castle of San Francisco as well as the limited funds on hand permitted, and increased the garrison and population of that place, opening the road to the plains of Barcelona and Caracas from said fortress, persecuted the Caribs and foreigners who traded and entered in the Orinoco, and took other most timely measures by which, to a great extent, the tranquility of these Provinces was secured. This condition of things lasted only a very short time, as the English noticing the progress of the fortress, shortly after the declaration of the previous war, in the year of 1740, invaded that fortress, took the Padraastro mountain, from where, by the fire of their muskets, they dislodged the garrison of the Castle of San Francisco, which they took, and destroyed everything they found there, set fire to the city and neighboring settlements of the Missions, and then set sails and left, leaving the Orinoco as unprotected as before the visit of Sucre to the fortress.

That the Governor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, and the Engineer, Don Antonio Jordan, came back and rebuilt the city and partially repaired the ruined Castle of San Francisco, but for want of funds and powers they could not advance very materially their improvements during their government. That in the year 1747 the Brigadier Don Diego Tavares went to the fortress and took most important steps for the restoration of the Castle of San Francisco, built the small fort of Padraastro, congregated

a greater number of residents and completed the garrison with 100 men, the total of his allotment. These timely measures were continued by Don Matheo Gual, the Governor *pro tempore*, under Don Nicholas de Castro and myself up to the present time.

During that time the Orinoco has been successfully closed and the illicit trade of foreigners stopped, and the Caribs, their allies, do not come to the fortress or up the river nor land and offer any hostilities to these Provinces; but it has not been possible to prevent the navigation and traffic of the numberless mouths and branches, in which the Orinoco River is divided below the castle, for want of a suitable force. Although the fortress of Guayana is sufficiently strong to stop the navigation and illicit trade of the Caribs and foreigners, defending the same against them or others, and preventing their landing on the Provinces and the navigation above the fortress, it is entirely defenceless as against the enemies of the Royal Crown, who may attack and destroy it, as they have done on other occasions, and they may hold it, which is still worse.

2. And now I say that I perceive lately a greater knowledge of the Orinoco and of the Provinces, through which an entrance is facilitated, and the individual reports given on every subject.

Last year, even before the Provinces were acquainted with the declaration of the war, an English brig entered the Orinoco through the large mouth, went up the river taking sounds of its channel, and returned doing the same thing, according to the deposition of three neutral prisoners of this Province whom they had on board. As soon as the English were disengaged from their attentions at Havana they sent a corsair to await at the port of Temeraria (Damerara), belonging to the Dutch of Esequivo, to await greater forces and with them to fall on Guayana, which was not done on account of the receipt of news of the peace, as shown at folio 196 of the proceedings, and other extra-judicial and positive news that I possess.

I see, likewise, that in order to conclude the peace the English have restored the fortress of Havana and Martinique, and

placed great stress so as to keep Granada, Saint Vincent and Tabago, the nearest islands to the mouth of Orinoco, and otherwise unimportant.

As soon as peace was adjusted they detached one frigate, two sloops and one schooner to the mouth of the Orinoco, where they continued for some time taking soundings at the several mouths, Gulf Triste, the neighborhood of Trinidad and the coast of Paria. His Majesty has been notified of the great importance to the Royal service of the fortification of Angostura, taking there the greatest part of the garrison of the fortress, which is equivalent to fortify Cordova, in order to prevent the enemies from entering through Guadalquivir and San Lucar of Barrameda into Andalusia, and their commerce in said Provinces and the Kingdom.

3. The foregoing antecedents and the present appearances do not seem to show that the English have forgotten the Orinoco, and that they will sooner or later try to possess it, as they are not unaware of its importance and of how much interest it may be to them. In the first place, the great commerce facilitated through it with the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, Popoyan, and Quito, where they can be introduced with the facility explained in Chapter 10 of the part first. In the second place, on account of the certainty already attained of the communication of the Orinoco with Rio Negro and Marañon, securing to the English a closer correspondence with the Portuguese Provinces. In the third place, that after securing the fortress of Guayana, the only key to the entrance of the Orinoco, they will become masters of that desert part of the mainland of Brazil, and the Orinoco may be their frontier along with ports of the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Barinas, and Santa Fe, so that the dominions of the most faithful King and those of the English in the Windward Islands and the Provinces of Guayana, will all become joined in one; they will avail themselves of the communication of the Orinoco, avoiding a great detour, and will carry through the Marañon all they may want from the interior of said dominion and those of His Majesty, and will enjoy the same facilities in their Provinces.

4. But even were it not of such a great importance for the supplies of their colonies, the English stand in need of a footing on the mainland, and that is in Guayana, as I shall explain.

5. In all their colonies to the windward there are no grounds fit for breeding cows or horses, as the land is not fertile, and fit only for sugar cane plantations. They have only salt meats brought from the north, and the fresh that they can get in a clandestine way, taken from this Province and that of Caracas in the shape of livestock, as in ordinary times a head of cattle is worth in the colonies from \$40 to \$45, and a mule from \$80 to \$100 for the use of the sugar mills where they have no water power or facilities for windmills. In the time of war, when they miss the facilities of trade, and pending other contingencies preventing the transportation of salt meat, a head of cattle is worth from \$80 to \$100 and a mule \$150, the colonies being exposed to extreme wants not easily supplied by fresh fish, likewise scarce in said colonies and most abundant on the coasts of the mainland, especially turtles, for which they come to the mouth of the Orinoco River, and in ordinary times they pay from \$18 to \$20 each. Fishing in the Orinoco River can not be stopped, either to the English, Hollanders, or French, as there are no embarkations fit to prevent it, unless His Majesty will take further steps on the subject, as said foreigners violate the treaties of peace.

If the English have to be established on the main land, no spot is more desirable to them than Guayana, which, besides the advantages of its commerce, it may facilitate the navigation of the Orinoco, the communication of the Portuguese, and their becoming masters of the extensive Province of Guayana, the fisheries of turtles both on the Orinoco River and its mouth, from where they will exclude all the other nations, deriving great profits. They shall have the shipment of the cattle from the banks of the Orinoco, where they are reared and in which the Province of Guayana will soon abound, on account of possessing large pasture grounds fit for live stock. In that case they will not want any from the Spaniards. By shipping at the Orinoco and coming out through its mouth,

the carrying vessels will gain the windward of the islands and colonies, which they may reach in a very few days with fair wind, without any inconvenience for the cattle. These advantages are not possessed by the English situated on the northern coast; besides the difficulties of subsistence, and others, they could not enjoy the advantages found in the Orinoco, nor secure enough cattle, which is reared only on the plains of Barcelona and Caracas, at the rear of the elevated mountains running along in the proximity to the coast, as shown by the general map, the plains of which follow up to the Orinoco in front of the fortress, as it is likewise shown by the map. In order to ship said cattle from the northern coast, it will be necessary to bring them across the mountain, where the want of pasture grounds and the rough land, to which they are not accustomed, injures the cattle and renders them useless before being shipped, and afterwards they have to tack about for fifteen or twenty days before reaching the colonies, and after that long and protracted voyage the animals are all worn out. That is not the case with the Orinoco shipments, where the cattle is embarked in the best condition, and have only from four to six days' navigation.

6. The foregoing reasons persuade of the great care that must be taken with the fortress of Guayana, as the only spot fit to secure the Orinoco and that can be fortified with safety, without trusting anything to the Angostura; which, besides the great expense and difficulty of its fortifications, no matter how strong they are, they can not defend the fortress below, which is the door for the entrance of the supplies of war, materials and provisions, especially those that are not to go farther inland than the city of Barcelona and through its mountains and plains to the Orinoco, at a distance of about 80 leagues, and thence crossing over to the other side of Angostura, where the new city and battery must be located. Neither this battery nor any stronger fortification could prevent the landing of foreigners on the length of the 20 leagues distance from the fortress of Guayana, nor the entrance and commerce by the way of Camino Real, shown by the map, in the direction of the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, and Barinas, or



through other roads which may be opened and that ought to be protected. These reasons impel me to request from His Majesty the fortification of the Padrastro mountain, and to call His Royal attention to the fortress of Guayana as more important than that of Carthagena, on account of the largest interests involved. And I suspect that the English are projecting something about the fortress of Guayana, and for that reason the Padrastro mountain ought to be fortified before going to a new war with said nation, because if it so happens and they seize the fortress, it could not be recovered by force without liberal allowances by capitulation.

---

### Chapter III.

*That the city shall be preserved, and by all possible means the population increased to twice its present inhabitants.*

1. I have shown, likewise, in parts first and second, that those who discovered the Orinoco founded Guayana in front of the Island of Fajardo, near the banks of the Caroni river, as shown in the map. That having been burnt by the Hollanders, the natives, not minding Angostura and being already acquainted with the Orinoco, founded the city of Santo Thomé de Guayana, eight leagues below said Caroni river, where for the second time the breadth of the Orinoco river is reduced to from 1,400 to 1,500 yards, and begins to be divided into a labyrinth of mouths, through which it empties into the sea. That in the last century the French set fire to the city, and the residents being certain that there was no other ground more adequate for a fortification and a stopping point of the Orinoco, rebuilt it, and although in the year 1740 it was burnt by the English, neither the residents, nor the Engineer Don Antonio Jordan, nor the Brigadier Don Gregorio de Espinosa, thought proper to change the place, and reconstructed again the new Guayana, locating there all the forces necessary, as the only point fit to secure the Orinoco.

That was, besides, the opinion of the Engineer Don Gaspar de Lara and Brigadier Don Diego Tavares, notwithstanding

that they had come, like their predecessors, under particular directions to fortify Angostura. His Excellency Don Sebastian de Esclava, Viceroy of Santa Fe, in virtue of Royal directions approved the report of Tavares and his predecessor, Espinosa, and ordered all the forces in charge of the safety of the Orinoco to be located at the fortress. To-day it is sufficiently fortified to prevent the foreigners' illicit trade and the entrance of the Caribs, their allies, in the Orinoco river, and their landing and hostile demonstrations against these Provinces, as they did before until the year 1747. Tavares made the repairs needed in the year 1740, caused by the English attacks, and increased the garrison and the neighborhood, but it is unable to resist the enemies of the Royal Crown that may come to hold it and destroy it again, on account of the want of corresponding fortifications and efficiency of the garrison and residents to defend those that they have already, nor those that may be constructed. The eastern and western lands around Angostura are inundated, and have no timber, kindling wood, pasture, or farming grounds. Angostura stands on a narrow strip of land of low and continuous hills, in no way fit for the establishment of a population, and very difficult to be defended on account of the conditions of the place. The transfer of the residents of Guayana will reduce them to a miserable condition of poverty, on account of the abandonment of their homes and plantations which they possess. They can not subsist in Angostura for want of supplies, unless they are supported at the expense of the Royal Treasury, which will involve a very serious outlay. It is not practicable to aggregate to that garrison the escorts of the Jesuits of the Orinoco and Dominicans of Barinas, nor the detachment of 52 men from the remnants of the garrison of Araya, and still less to keep them permanently there with their families. The desert part of the Province of Cumana can not furnish the necessary men for the numerous garrison of Angostura, where, in order to relieve the detachment of the Jesuits, Dominicans of Barinas, Catalan Capuchins, Observants of Piritu, the Island of Trinidad and the fortress, 500 men are necessary and must be kept as a standing garrison in their corresponding post, as they are now.

No matter how Angostura be fortified it will be impossible to avoid the landing of foreigners and their entrance in the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, and Santa Fe, if the fortress of Guayana be lost, nor is it feasible that the natives of this Province reach said fort, by the way of Camino Real, shown in the map, or through other roads to be opened in those deserts. No matter how Angostura be fortified it can not defend the fortress of Guayana nor, after the loss of said fort, defend itself, no matter how well fortified and how strong the garrison which it contains may be, nor avoid that the foreigners become masters of the place of the Orinoco river, and of the extensive Province of Guayana and their free entrance in Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, Popayan, and Quito.

2. Bearing in mind all these circumstances and undeniable facts, and following the opinion well founded of the founders of the fortress of Santo Thomé, that of the Engineer Fajardo and the rest, following up to the approval of His Excellency, Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava, and in view of what has been demonstrated by experience, I crave, most humbly, that His Majesty may decide that in no event the transfer of the city to Angostura be attempted, as entirely contrary to the interest of His Royal service and the safety of these his vast dominions; and I crave, likewise, that His Majesty may order that the city and fortress of Guayana, by all possible means, be increased to the number of 200 inhabitants, so as to have the men enlisted in two or three militia companies, rendering assistance to the garrison and managing the artillery, in which exercise they must be trained and well disciplined, with very especial care, as they may be of great service; the increase of neighbors will not be difficult if His Majesty grants some exceptions and privileges to those going to settle and stay there, being well understood that this object can not be attained in a short time, on account of the want of victuals and houses where to stop, but it will be easy, within three or four years longer, through diligent agents and the corresponding measures for the help of the new neighbors and those who are now existing and cultivating their farms, improving the same, and in the

Missions already well trained, and enjoying good farming lands, and with those of the new Spanish foundation of San Antonio de Upata the same care may be had. By this increase of the neighborhood of the garrison, and the corresponding fortification that I have explained, His Majesty will feel most safe; the foreigners will stop before putting into practice their project, and will not attempt to take and fortify Angostura, without taking the fortress; their illicit commerce will be very easily stopped; the large expenses considered necessary, as reported to His Majesty without sufficient knowledge, will be reduced, and the residents of Guayana will be spared the infliction of the loss of their plantations and their homes in the city, in order to have them build new houses in Angostura while exposed to the open air, and the sure inconvenience of the new grounds, when they are newly opened and cleared, and from this exposure many of the new neighbors may perish or give up the place under the affliction of various diseases, and Guayana may be depopulated, costing more labor, money and time the congregation of a like number of neighbors as now exist, and those who are thought necessary, in order to have them accustomed to the climate, and in condition to undertake new plantations and farms, without which no population can exist there or in Angostura.

---

#### Chapter IV.

*That the garrison of the Fortress be increased by 73 men, as proposed by the Governors, Don Gregorio de Espinosa and Don Matheo Gual, and as I have requested His Majesty in my representation of the 27th of August, 1761.*

1. In part second I have shown that it is not practicable to aggregate to the garrison of the fortress of Guayana the 73 men of the escort of the Jesuits of Orinoco and of the Dominicans of Barinas, and that even if it were practicable, by relieving these detachments, the expense of doing so will amount from \$2,500 to \$3,000. That the 25 men that have been reported to

His Majesty as belonging to the fort of Limones are imaginary, as there is not, nor ever has been, any such 25 men there, nor ever will be unless His Majesty requires them, allotting the necessary funds for their subsistence. In that case it will be very easy to muster the men into the service. It is not practicable to complete the garrison, which used to belong to Araya, so as to send them by detachments or as a standing force with the 25 men and others remaining from that garrison to serve in Guayana. If it were practicable that the 73 men of the escorts of the Jesuits of Orinoco and the Dominicans of Barinas, the 25 men of the Fort of Limones, and the 52 of the garrison of Araya, aggregated to the 100 of the allotment of the fortress, in all, 250 men existing in Angostura, in order to provide the detachments of the Missions of the Jesuits of Orinoco, Dominicans of Barinas, Catalan Capuchins, Observants of Piritu, the Island of Trinidad and the fortress, this force is too small, and no less than 500 men are wanted to relieve said detachments, or else they must remain in their fixed posts and respective employments where they are at present. Although His Majesty may allow the 500 men suggested for the post of Angostura at the fixed corresponding annual salaries, involving an expense of \$64,000 to \$65,000, it is not practicable, for want of provisions, to keep them without houses or adequate headquarters, nor hospital, apothecary shop, or surgeon, and because this desert Province can not furnish such a large number of single or married men for said garrison, as in the eight settlements under this Government only 1,000 men are able to bear arms who are considered to be white persons, and it is not possible that these 500 men go to Angostura and be replaced whenever they die, desert, or are disabled to do duty. Even if it was practicable, 500 men, or even a greater number, placed in Angostura, can not defend the fortress of Guayana; and if this is lost, that of Angostura itself can not be defended or prevent the enemies from taking it as well as the Orinoco, and go inland into the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, and Santa Fe, and introduce at least their trade in every one of them, and in Popayan and Quito, becoming masters of the deserted Guayana.

2. I have shown, likewise, that according to the opinion of my predecessors, Espinosa and Gual, and with the knowledge that I acquired in my general visit of this Province, the Orinoco, and the fortress of Guayana, I submitted, under date of the 27th of August, 1761, to His Majesty, that if it was his Royal pleasure the Castle of Araya ought to be demolished, and that it was convenient that the fortress of Guayana should be allowed the increase of its garrison with one company of a captain, lieutenant, sub-lieutenant, and 70 men, so as to facilitate the corresponding escorts to the Misions of the Catalan Capuchins and the Observants of Piritu, but by no means it ought to be counted for that purpose the troops, serving at the Castle of Araya, for the reason adduced in that correspondence, and that it should be easy to form that company with men who, of their own free will, would be ready to go and reside, doing duty at the fortress of Guayana.

3. Well aware now of the unavoidable difficulties and large and useless expenses that might be occasioned by the accumulation of so many men at Angostura and the indefensive condition in which the Orinoco river might be left, with the greatest veneration I renew my humble request to His Majesty for the increase of the above-mentioned company, considering in keeping with the convenience of the Royal service that said company be composed of men willing to go and serve in that fortress, without having to compel the natives of this city to do so, for the reasons I have shown in part second as being impracticable, with the only difference that in my report of the 27th of August I represented to His Majesty that the new company might answer for the escorts of the Missions. And now, with the same reverence, I submit to the Royal consideration of His Majesty, that in case he decides the construction at the mountain of Padrastró of the Castle of Concepcion, the 73 men of said company, and the allowance of 100 more for the garrison of the fortress, to fill all the posts and contingencies of the fortification, can not be detached to escort the Misions, and that will be the only thing that, out of convenience of the Royal service, has to be changed of what I have stated in my communication of the 27th of August. I con-

sider injurious and onerous to the Royal Treasury the greater increase, that has been represented to His Majesty as necessary, of a company of 100 men, as a similar number of militiamen may be aggregated to the fortifications, as I have suggested; and I consider sufficiently safe the Orinoco river, commanding the respect of the enemy, whose squadrons could not come and assault that place but with smaller vessels, and unable to stand the fires of the castle of San Francisco and of the projected fortress of Concepcion and the ravelin, being defended by 173 regular soldiers, and as many or more militiamen, who could not be surprised nor surrendered without giving ample time to receive the support of this government with provisions and superior forces, which the enemy could not stop, as they will never be masters of the Orinoco river, without taking the Castle of Concepcion and its collateral of San Francisco and the ravelin. The large annual expense of keeping 500 men in Angostura, and the detachments to defend the fortress of Guayana, Orinoco, and Angostura may be saved, and it will be unnecessary the increase of funds for the maintenance of the 73 men of the suggested company, as they may subsist out of the savings of the demolished and suppressed fortification of Araya, as I proposed to His Majesty in my above-mentioned communication of the 27th of August, and have been already done by the Governors in dealing with this subject and the fortification of the Castle of Guayana, as shown by their corresponding representations quoted in the present one.

---

### Chapter V.

*That the fort of Limones be abandoned and a launch be kept at the fortress, as represented to his Majesty by the Marquis of San Philipe, and if Angostura is to be fortified, to be so with only the battery which was proposed by the Governor, Don Juan de la Tornera, and is shown by figure 9 of the map.*

1. In Chapter 6, of part first, I have stated all the circumstances which gave rise to the construction of the fort of Limones and those following up to the time of the receipt of the

present Royal Order. In Chapter 9, from Nos. 50 to 88, I have explained the situation, shape, and diameters of the fort, the want of solidity of that ground, and how it is inundated by the Orinoco; that said fort is divided into ten quarters, useless and out of repairs; that it is uninhabitable and intolerable, the plague of insects produced by the flood of the ground upon which it stands; that in its present condition, and even if it were in perfect order, it could not subsist in that place, close to the high banks of the Orinoco, that has taken out 60 yards in front since the time of the commencement of the work, and will take many more in that movable ground if it is cleared of trees, and may spread and extend its bed as far as to render useless the Castle of San Francisco and the projected one of Concepcion. From Nos. 53 to 60 of part second, I have shown that by the present form already given to the fortress of Guayana, and without any help or need of the fort of Limones, the Orinoco has been closed to the foreigners and their illicit trade, and to the Caribs, who often invaded the Provinces, and that if the mountain of Padrastro is fortified the foreigners could not take it nor continue their commerce. From Nos. 114 to 118 of part second, and other works (*sic*) directed by Royal Order and reported to his Majesty (*sic*), they in no way prevent the inevitable ruin threatening the fort nor the inundations of that ground, nor its want of solidity, the plague of insects produced, nor the sinking of the fort with the banks of the Orinoco, nor the spread of its bed, requiring only large disbursements and undue expenses. In note 9 of the memorandum of reports, without being well aware of such powerful reasons, I show that the fortress of Limones ought to be abandoned. And now I say that being divided into ten quarters, useless for the service and out of repairs, becoming uninhabitable on account of the plague of insects produced in that swampy ground, where the Orinoco river carries away every part which is cleared of trees, spreading its bed and making useless the fortification of San Francisco and those of Padrastro, and the experience demonstrating that without the fort of Limones the Orinoco has been closed to foreigners and may be secured only by the fortification of the Padrastro mountain, I am of



the opinion, if it meet the approval of his Majesty, that the fort of Limones must be abandoned and the banks of the river be preserved by not allowing the cutting of trees or removal of timber from there, nor opening any new roads. That will be the best way to secure the ground and prevent the river Orinoco from spreading its bed above it, and probably restore the 60 yards which have been taken away, and the 23 from the Island of Limones.

2. With the same profound reverence, I submit to His Majesty, that in order to stop the illicit trade of the foreigners navigating the mouth of the Orinoco, I consider necessary to the Royal service to keep a launch, of the Galera shape, at the fortress, with capacity for an 8-pounder on the prow and four or five swivel guns on the sides, well manned and paid, and not with unwilling parties and residents to the fortress without a salary and at a great injury of their families, as it has been done heretofore, with the necessary evil consequences represented to His Majesty by the Marquis of San Philipe in his memorials quoted in Nos. 4 and 5 of Chapter 6. The launch so armed, manned, and guarded by some troop on board could not be opposed by any sloop or schooner of those trading on the Orinoco, no matter how well armed; it could not be resisted, on account of the difficulty of turning around in the narrow creeks and against such a rapid current.

3. I submit, likewise, to the Royal consideration, that the said launch and fortification of the Padrastro mountain defended by the Castle of Concepcion and the ravelin, I consider as certain that the illicit trade of the foreigners will not continue at the mouth of the Orinoco, which will be safe, and the fortress in capacity to resist any enemies of the Royal Crown intending to give an assault; but if, notwithstanding all those circumstances, the fortification of Angostura meet the Royal pleasure, I consider sufficient the only battery shown in figure 9 of the map, located where it was proposed by the Governor Don Juan de la Tornera, in a ground not subject to inundations, where it may be furnished with provisions and people of the settlements of Aragua and Pao, without any need to cross the Orinoco, and other convincing reasons which I omit. To serve this battery,

a sergeant with 8 or 10 men from the fortress may be detached, and I do not consider it entirely useless, as it will always command some respect, presenting a second pass of the illicit traders of the country, the only employment of the said battery, but not for the defense of the Orinoco, as Angostura without it, nor with any fortifications whatever, can defend itself nor the whole of the Orinoco if the fortress of Guayana be lost.

---

### Chapter VI.

*That the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers and of the Observants of Piritu be attended to, as I have requested before, in consequence of my general visit.*

1. I have shown in Chapter 3 of part first, that although the bodies of Missions spreading the Gospel through the Provinces of Cumana and Barcelona have been always in want of more Missioners to make up their corresponding numbers, and deprived of sufficient alms for their subsistence and ornaments, images and bells for their Church in their new settlement, without sufficient escorts to keep and improve them, it is due to them the pacification of these vast Provinces and the establishment of sixty-nine townships, containing from 26,000 to 27,000 Indians; among them the village of Aragua, the settlement of Pao, Rio Caribe and Carupano of the Spaniards, besides other improvements known and already explained, that without these bodies of Missioners should have rendered useless all the measures of the Governors on the subject.

In Chapter 8 I have explained that to the Mission of the Catalan Capuchins, spreading the Gospel in the Province of Guayana, is due the establishment of 24 settlements, although only 16 are now in existence. The fortress of Guayana has been formed and brought up to its present condition, which could never have been obtained or subsisted without the help of the Missions, and lately the establishment of San Antonio de Upata is due to said Mission. In consequence of my general visit, I submitted to His Majesty the condition of these bodies of Missions, their

wants, and the abuses introduced, making impossible the collection of the alms assigned to them; the necessity of more Missioners as well as ornaments, images and bells for the new settlements, and sufficient escorts for the protection of those established already and the future settlements. The great convenience to the Royal service for the safety of those extensive dominions and the spiritual benefit of so many poor Indians spread throughout them, require the support of these bodies of Missions and their progress, going farther inland through the extensive Province of Guayana, as shown by the copies of said communications and other documents therein quoted at folio 247 of the proceedings accompanying the present report.

2. And to-day I most humbly submit to His Majesty, in the interest of the Royal service, His Sovereignty, the safety of these Provinces, and the propagation of our holy religion, that the Catalan Capuchins be protected and their alms made effective, allowing them more Missioners and a sufficient escort; that the same protection be extended to the Observants of Piritu, and that the greater part of this body of Missioners go over to the Orinoco (as it has been ordered), and be established in the Province of Guayana within the terms expressed in said communication; that in the same Province of Guayana, at proportional distances, two or three bodies of Missions be kept where they have sufficient work to do; and that the four or five bodies established there go farther inland on the banks of the Orinoco to the south, as it is done by the Catalan Capuchins, thus succeeding in occupying the countries in the rear of the colonies of Esquivo belonging to the Dutch, and those of Cayena occupied by the French. The extensive Province of Guayana will be known, the infinite number of Indian inhabitants will be pacified, and it will be ascertained how the Portuguese are going inland and coming to the north. At the same time the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, and Caracas have been increased with new Spanish settlements without the least cost to the Royal Treasury or violence to the settlers; and in the same way those of Guayana, which have been already commenced, may be settled, as that of San Antonio de Upata.

But if the Indians are not pacified, or in capacity to help the Spaniards in their labors, it will not be possible to establish any settlements, and still in such remote countries, as by repeated instances it has been demonstrated in America, and lately in the same Province of Guayana in the cases of the cities Real Corona, Ciudad Real, and San Fernando, in which, notwithstanding the immense amounts already expended for their establishment, the only results obtained have been troubles and misfortunes, and they never reached the conditions of the settlement of San Antonio de Upata, that has cost nothing to the Royal Treasury, as shown by Nos. 93 to 112, Chapter 9, of part first.

3. In my representation of the 27th of August, 1761, I suggested to His Majesty that by an increase of 73 men to the fortress of Guayana the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins and the Observants of Piritu might be escorted. In the previous chapter I have shown that by fortifying the Padraastro mountain, as I request His Majesty to do, the 73 men are necessary for that garrison, so as to cover the posts of the fortifications and other contingencies of the fortress, allowing the corresponding escorts to the Missions.

4. And now I most reverently submit to His Majesty to allow the Catalan Capuchins 20 or 24 men as a standing escort of the Mission; that they must be horsemen, as the infantry is not quite as useful and has to be idle most of the time, without any action distributed around the settlements; which is not the case with the horsemen, who must go every day around the country and become familiar with the different places, keeping the Indians in fear, when not settled, and avoiding many difficulties, rendering prompt assistance wherever wanted, and such is not the case with the infantry. It will be advisable that the persons of said escort be married men and keep their families there, as it is the case with the escort of the Missions of the Jesuits, as that will be the only way to avoid disorders and injuries to the Indians with soldiers from the fortress detached to the new settlement, where they forget the duties of their profession, the military subordi-

nation, and become otherwise objectionable. The families of the married men are attached to the places where they are brought up, and the result is beneficial to the populations, without need of any grenadiers, as the Indians are very easily controlled.

5. I am likewise of the opinion that the Observants of Piritu ought to be allowed 12 men at present while they do not go farther inland to establish other settlements, besides the three which they keep in said Provinces, and proportionally to the other bodies of Missions spreading the Gospel in their territories, so that within 20 or 25 years, without any excessive cost to the Royal Treasury His Majesty may have a Kingdom, now unknown in that extensive Province, while the miserable Indians will be reduced and brought to the bosom of our holy religion, trained for a social life and useful for the help of the Spaniards, who may establish any trade there, protecting the same Province and reimbursing the Royal Treasury of the outlays and moneys expended now for their settlement and education, the only proper way considered adequate for the conquest and population of America, especially those countries where the allurements of mines and the interest of commerce do not attract visitors, and prescribed by repeated laws of His Majesty for the good government and pacification of the Indies and the newly discovered regions.

6. This is, most Excellent Sir, what I consider my duty to represent to His Majesty, in answer to the serious matters involved, as a good vassal, and in the discharge of my conscience, being responsible to His Royal kindness for the truth of every thing that I have stated. Your Excellency (if it is necessary) may kindly lay it before His Royal notice, and I beg to be excused for the unusual length of this communication in my desire to fully expand the various points embraced in the Royal Order, not permitting more conciseness. May the Lord preserve the life of Your Excellency for many happy years, as it is my desire.

Cumana, December (15th) fifteenth of seventeen hundred and sixty-three.

Most Excellent Sir.—Kissing the hand of your Excellency.—  
Your most obedient servant.

JOSEPH DIGUJA—[here is a flourish.]

To the Most Excellent Señor

Baliff Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga.

---

This copy agrees with the original existing in the General Archives of the Indies, in Stand 133—Case 3—Docket 16—Seville, October 13th, 1891.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish.]

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the general Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, 28th of October, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

Stand 131.—Case 5.—Docket 7.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

1761.

---

**Memorandum of Notes explaining the general map of the Government of Cumana sent to His Majesty by the Governor Don José Diguja.**

---

CUMANA, *December 18, 1761.*

---

*Notes sent to His Majesty by the Governor, Colonel Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez, in the year 1761, for the prompt and readier understanding of the general map of the Government of Cumana.*

This memorandum contains thirteen notes. In the first, twelfth and thirteenth, a general and short notice is given of the government of Cumana, and the rest refer to the other Provinces under said government, particularly the settlements shown by the map, and taken from the acts of the general visit and other instruments therein quoted and observed and recognized in the course of said visit by the present Governor.

**Government of Cumana.—Note First.**

A general notice is given of the government of Cumana, the Provinces composing the same, the climate, the place of residence of the Governor, the Tribunal to which the same government is subordinated, its Diocesan Prelate, the Tribunal of Crusades, that of the Inquisition, the neighboring governments, and other notes showing briefly what this Government is.

*Government of Cumana.*

The Government of Cumana is one of the more extensive among those within the dominions of the King our Lord in these His Royal possessions and lies more to the eastward of the two kingdoms of Santa Fe and Peru.

*Provinces composing it.*

It contains three Provinces, to wit, that of New Andalusia or Cumana, the capital of which is Santa Inez de Cumana; that of New Barcelona, the capital of which bears this name; and that of Guayana, the capital of which is the fortress of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, although the largest in territory, is totally unpopulated, and a little less is true with respect to the other two. In these three Provinces there is a variety of lands, elevated and extensive sierras, spacious plains, important rivers, especially the great Orinoco that runs through the center of all the Government territory, and others of less importance; and, without being unproductive, many countries depending upon only rain water.

*Its height and temperature.*

The greatest height found within these Provinces is the Cape of Three Points, on the coast of Paria, which is at 10° 20' north latitude and 313° (*sic*) and 30' west longitude; but withal, the climate is mild, free from the excessive heat of other countries of similar situation, that might be experienced in this country, if it were not exposed to the northern and eastern winds generally from the beginning of November to the beginning or middle of June, and during those months there is hardly any rain. From beginning to the middle of June the winds are variable, from the northwest and the south, with frequent showers and greater heat, but not as excessive as that of Cartagena and the Province of that name. The months of frequent rains are called in this country the "winter" (*enviernio*), in spite of being warmer and less healthy.

*Residence of the Governor.*

The Governor always resides in the city of Santa Inez de Cumana, the capital of the three Provinces. He is named



Governor and Captain-General of them, and exercises the Vice-Patronage (in ecclesiastical vacancies), the Superintendence of the Royal Treasury and of the branch of the Crusade. The rank of the men appointed for this Government has generally been for some time to the present that of a Colonel and a Brigadier, although sometimes Lieutenant-Colonels have been appointed.

*Tribunals to which the Government is subordinated.*

By the reserved way the Royal Orders from His Majesty are received from the Secretary of the Universal Despatch of the Indies, as in all the rest of America, and through the same this Government addresses its representations and affairs, corresponding to that classification.

*Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies.*

In the same way in which the rest of America receives the Royal Cédulas of His Majesty, through His Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies, where this Government sends its consultations and affairs corresponding to this class, but with the circumstances that this Government, being on the mainland, as those of the Kingdoms of Santa Fe and Peru, and subordinated to the Viceroyalty of the former, the Royal Despatches are received by way of the Secretary of New Spain by which, and not by that of Peru, His Majesty addresses his above-mentioned communications to this Government, having no Royal disposition found in these Archives to trace the origin or the cause and beginning of this practice.

*Viceroy of Santa Fe.*

In Government affairs the Governor is subordinated to the Viceroy of Santa Fe; the correspondence with that capital is so very rare that only from year to year despatches are received from the hands of an officer of the fortress of Guayana going after the funds assigned at the Royal Treasury of said Capital for the payment of the garrison. The officer brings the despatches to this government, to the Island of Trinidad, and to that of Margarita, likewise subordinated to the Viceroy, who on the return of said officer sends his replies to the aforesaid

three governments, as the only occasion available, and costing said garrison \$1,000, paid to the officer, and discounted from their own salaries, *pro rata*, at the time of effecting the annual payment to each person of the garrison.

*Royal Audience of Santo Domingo.*

In regard to the Provinces of Cumana and Barcelona, subjects of contention (in the lawsuits) are subordinated to the Royal Audience and Chancery of Santo Domingo in the Island Española.

*Royal Audience of Santa Fe.*

They are likewise subordinated to the Royal Audience and Chancery of Santa Fe (all subjects of contention), in the Province of Guayana.

*Viceroy of Mexico.*

To the Viceroy of Mexico an annual report is sent, giving an account of the branch of bulls of the Holy Crusade. He disposes of this fund, after deducting the greater amount remitted from that Royal Treasury to meet the payments here of the garrison of the Castle of Araya.

*Chief Accomptant of Caracas.*

The Royal Treasury and everything that appertains to it in this government is subordinated to the Chief Royal Accomptant of Caracas, who receives the accounts of these Royal officers and the other Ministers of the district.

*Diocesan Prelate.*

The Diocesan Prelate in all the territory of this government, the Islands of Margarita and Trinidad, is the Bishop of Porto Rico, who by Royal Order, and in consideration of the long distance intervening, appoints a Superintendent Vicar of all these annexed territories residing at the capital of Cumana. It is very remote and casual the correspondence with this Prelate, so that for the despatch of the affairs of the same territories certain powers are delegated by said Superintendent Vicar, one of them being to fill the ecclesiastical beneficial vacancies. Before this Minister all the oppositions, appointments and presentations by the Governor are made, and the vacant benefi-

ciary post is filled, according to the Royal directions, and everything is attended to by said Vicar in the affairs connected with the Royal patronage.

### *Tribunal of the Crusades.*

The Tribunal of the Crusades resides in the city of Cumana, under a particular Commissioner, Sub-Delegate from that of Porto Rico, and this one from the Commissioner General of the Crusades, in conformity with the last Royal directions for the administration and collection of this branch, in conformity with which this particular Commissioner exercises his powers and issues his decisions, in accord with the Governor, as Superintendent of the same branch in this district, and at the end of each proclamation of the bull takes the accounts from the Treasurer, and with his approval or the objections made they are forwarded to the Government, who submits them to the Royal Officer for revision and auditing, and after his report he approves the same and orders the delivery by the Treasurer of the amount to the Royal coffers.

### *Tribunal of the Inquisition.*

The Tribunal of the Holy Office (the Inquisition) of the City of Carthagena of Indies has at present two Commissioners here, one who resides at Cumana, and the other in Barcelona, who, according to their powers, institute proceedings on the subjects within the jurisdiction of their tribunals, and forward the cases, after being substantiated, to their Superiors.

### *Neighboring Governments.*

The neighboring Governments are those of the Island of Trinidad to the leeward, Margarita, Caracas, and the Province of Santa Fe, as shown in the map; and to the south those of the Province of Guayana with the dominions possessed by the Most Faithful King of Brazil, but to a great extent, containing an unknown territory without any precise or reliable description sufficient to form a correct knowledge. I will treat what concerns said Province in a special note in which notice will be taken of the Dutch and French Colonies to the east of them.

*See Notes 12 and 13.*

In the general summary contained in note 12, and in dealing with the subject of the illicit commerce, embracing all of the note 13, the reports of the present are extended, and they show, in a condensed way, the chief features of the government of Cumana and the other Provinces, as contained in the memorandum with individual references.

**Part of the Province of Guayana.—Note 8.**

Reference of the few and confused notions about the Province of Guayana, its limits, principal rivers, gold and silver mines, Dutch and French Colonies and populations of all.

Everything that has been shown about the Provinces of Cumana and Barcelona is based on the perfect knowledge obtained of their situation, lands, temperature, etc.; but of the vast extension of Guayana very little is to be said, and most of that derived from Indian reports, or rustic people deserving less credit. At present we have to accept those reports as the only data we have of this Province, and in this connection an explanation will be added of what seems to be sufficient to make it comprehensible.

*Province of Guayana.*

This is a vast Province, most of which is unknown, as no intelligent person has visited enough territory inland of it, except the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, and that through only a short distance, as shown by the map, and will be explained when dealing with the situation of the Missions established by the Capuchins. Through several Carib Indians who, yielding to their wandering and warlike propensities go far inland, away from their native haunts, it has been discovered that in the center of extensive prairies and high, elevated sierras, some with fertile soils and many covered with snow, and being the source of large rivers, including the great Orinoco; that in some of said sierras and forests there are a great many Indians of various tribes; that in some of those sierras, although under the equinoctial line (*sic*) (equatorial), the weather is excessively cold, and the reason why said Caribs have so little

traffic with them is for fear of dying, as they say, and should not be strange, on account of their nudity and habits of warm countries. They likewise give confused reports of the lagoon of Parima, assuring to have seen in it various islands, most of them populated by Indians who live on the abundant fish of said lagoon, which receives large rivers, running from the sierras covered with snow towards the north and south of the lagoon; that those of the north, and where the source of the waters of the Orinoco is found, are shown in the map situated at 5° latitude (*sic*) and 313° longitude (*sic*) in a north to south direction from Angostura and the Tableland of Guanipa. The Spaniards have only surveyed the banks of the Orinoco and 8 or 10 leagues inland, by the way of what they call Muitaco and the Missions of the Reverend Observant Fathers of Piritu.

*Boundaries of the Guayana Provinces.*

The boundaries of the Province of Guayana are: On the east all the coast in which the Dutch Colonies are situated, Esquibo, Bervice, Demerari, Corentine, and Surinam, and further to the windward that of Cayena belonging to the French. On the north, the banks of the Orinoco river dividing the Provinces Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, and Popayan, forming a semicircle, returning to the east to reach the sources of the Parima lagoon, as it will be seen in the general map of said Provinces and river. On the south, with the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the confines of which, as well as those of the Province of Guayana and their central contents, are unknown.

*Principal rivers of the Province.—Orinoco River.*

The first and most famous river of the Province is the great Orinoco, receiving its waters within the same Province and being the receiver of those of all the other rivers coming from the Provinces of Popayan, Santa Fe, Barinas, Caracas, and Barcelona. To treat of all of them should go beyond the limits of the present report about the Government of Cumana, so that as the rivers from the Province of Barcelona flowing into the Orinoco are mentioned, it will likewise contain those more

important and well known of the same Province of Guayana, from which it comes and flows into the sea, and the other rivers shown in the map. Those that are not represented may be seen in the first four chapters of Padre Gumilla's "Orinoco Illustrado," where with his knowledge and individual notice he explains what the Orinoco river is, and the other great rivers it receives, except those towards their sources that said Father considers to be in the Province of Popayan or Timana. From the exploration of the late Commissioners of the expedition (of boundaries) in charge of the Chief of Squadron, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, for the demarkation of limits, it is located at the Parima lagoon, which receives its first waters from the snow mountain to the north of said lagoon, as shown in the map. The mistake of Father Gumilla denying the communication of the Orinoco river with Rio Negro has been rectified, as said communication was not in doubt at the time of the exploration of the Commissioners, having been discovered before and after the work of Father Gumilla by Father Manuel Roman, of the Jesuit Company, and a Missioner. The source of the Orinoco, its communication, by means of the Casiquiari with Rio Negro, and the Guaviari river, descending from the Province of Santa Fe and receiving the waters of Timana and Pasto, in the Province of Popayan, which is the one that Father Gumilla mistook for the Orinoco, will be seen in the general map, and as it has been said will be added with every detail gathered about the Orinoco river, its tributaries, during its extensive course, and those that are navigable, and to what extent, with marks of the places; having very little more to add to that of Father Gumilla, on account of reliable reports.

#### *Caroni River.*

The river called Caroni enters into the Orinoco at a distance of 8 leagues above the fortress of Guayana, being divided in two bodies, forming the island called Caroni. The river is broad and rapid, but is not navigable on account of the strong current and numberless rocks and islands it contains, besides a fall near the Mission of Aguacaua; its waters are very clear, although they look dark and turbid on account of the black

sand at the bottom of the river, brought down from its sources, the course of which is not known. The Caribs say that it comes from mountains close to those covered with snow, and the same furnishing the lagoon of Parima with water, as shown in the map, and from the ridge of mountains traced by Father Gumilla.

*Aruy River.*

At about 24 leagues from the Caroni, the river called Aruy empties its water. It is not as broad as the river Caroni. Its sources are not well known; the Caribs, however, state that they are at about 50 leagues distance, in some mountains less elevated than those originating the Caroni. Between these two rivers there are a great many Indians located on plain and mountainous grounds, but all very pleasant.

*Caura River.*

Fifty leagues above the Aruy river the Caura empties its waters, and is broader and more important. It comes through large rocks, preventing the navigation to all vessels above the sizes of canoes and small launches. The sources of this river are at about 60 leagues distance from its mouth, taking its waters from the elevated sierras, inhabited by many Indians, who are harrassed by the Caribs, who take them to the Hollanders, making prisoners of the women and children and exterminating the grown people. These three rivers are the greatest and best known of those in the neighborhood of Guayana entering the Orinoco River, without mentioning the small and infinite streams of the Province not possessing any importance.

*Gold and silver mines.*

On the mountains of this Province the existence of several gold and silver mines is supposed, but none in actual operation nor even known at present. It is thought that they exist, according to the Royal Cedula dated at Aranjuez on the 9th of June, 1740, registered at the Accomptant Office of Guayana, in which it is mentioned that in time of Don Carlos de Sucre, while Governor General of these Provinces, several samples

were sent to the Court, and from the assays it was ascertained that there was very fine silver in one of the samples, and the other was of gold of twenty-one carats, and His Majesty directs Governor Don Gregorio de Espinosa, successor to Don Carlos de Sucre, to have said mines surveyed, and report the possibility of enforcing the measures proposed by the Chief Assayer, and for that purpose to send his report to the Viceroy of Santa Fe, to whom instructions had been communicated. That is the only reference obtained about those mines, no doubt on account of the want of population of the Province and the absolute want of experts for this kind of assays and labors.

*Dutch Colonies.—Esquivo.*

To the east, on the coast of this Province, are situated the Dutch Colonies of Esquivo, Demerari, Bervice, Corentin, and Surinam. According to the reports obtained by Don Juan de Dios Valdez, Commander of the fortress of Guayana, a person of information and ability, the Esquivo Colony consists of several sugar-cane plantations that the Hollanders have planted for a distance of 30 leagues on the banks of the Esquivo River, beginning from its mouth, and likewise several islands formed by said river with lands fit for plantations. The greatest part of those plantations are of sugar-cane, with dwelling-houses and grinding mills at a distance of about two or three leagues from each other.

*The Esquivo River, and continuation of details of the Colony.*

The Esquivo river, from which the Colony takes its name, at its entrance into the sea is one of the important rivers of America. The source of its waters is to the south, and its bed diminishes in proportion to its approximation to said source. It is navigated by launches for a distance of about six days' journey up the place where its waters diminish and are divided into various rapid streams, with many islands amongst them; and up to the present time there is no Hollander who has ever been at its source, and the only report they hear is from the Carib Indians, saying that its sources originate from



the great lagoon of Parima. This river receives other very important rivers, especially those called Mazeroni and Cuyuni, that enter together into the Esquivo, at a distance of 8 to 10 leagues from its mouth, the reason why it is so bulky, when it reaches the sea, where it empties its waters through five mouths, and in every one of them with a sufficient channel for the navigation of sloops and schooners, but not of larger vessels. In two of its islands formed by its mouths there is a plantation in each one of them, with several houses for negroes and Indians. Every owner has a group of those, resembling small villages, and the same appearance is noticed at the plantations on the river banks. On the third island, more to the east, they have about twelve houses erected for the residence of the Governor of that Colony, the Captain of the troop, and the Surgeon, that of the Secretary, minding the interests of the Company, two or three inns, two blacksmith shops, a few stores and lodgings for the negroes of the Company, besides the church or place of worship. This small number of houses form the only population of the Colony. On the highest spot of the island, close to the house of the Governor, stands the fort, Zeeland, built upon stakes on muddy ground, beaten by the river and the sea at high water, a reason why they very often have to undertake new repairs. Besides this fort there is a horizontal battery on the level of the water of both river and sea, with twelve pieces of artillery of 24-caliber. It is commanded within the fort Zeland. The garrison of these fortifications and the Colony consists of a company of regular soldiers, in all 70 men, 40 of whom are paid by the Company and 30 by the inhabitants. A detachment of a sergeant and 30 men is sent to the garrison of the small fort kept at the mouth of the Demerari River, at a distance of 5 leagues from the Esquivo along the coast to the east. The commander is a subaltern and a lieutenant of the Governor.

#### *Demerari River.*

The Demerari river does not go far inland as the Esquivo does, and is only navigable by launches. Its banks are covered with plantations; its inhabitants are English deserters

and delinquents, paying tribute to the Hollanders for the grounds that they possess. The products of their plantations are sugar, coffee, and cotton. They navigate to Europe under the same formalities that the Hollanders of the Esquivo river do. This Colony is supported from Europe with two annual shipments, on account of the company and of the inhabitants, including those of the Demerari river who, at their own risk, send the products of their plantations, paying so much to the Company as the owners of the vessels, carrying likewise the products belonging to the Company from their own plantations, and those purchased from the inhabitants not willing to risk their shipment on their own account, and likewise those brought from the Colonies of Bervice, Corentin, and Surinam, among which a constant trade of minor vessels is kept gathering these products. From the three Colonies of Bervice, Corentin, and Surinam there is no particular knowledge, and it is only known that they are different from that of Esquivo, not reached in the map, and therefore it is omitted to refer to them ; and for the same reason nothing will be said of Cayena, belonging to the French.

*Injuries occasioned by the Dutch Colonies, especially that of Esquivo, in the Province of Guayana.*

The Dutch Colonies are very injurious to the Province of Guayana, especially that of Esquivo, as the nearest to the Orinuco river.

They go by this river and those of Mazaroni and Cuyuni, protected by the Carib Indians, pillaging and capturing the Indians that are not Caribs, from this Province, and reducing them to slavery, in the same way as they do with the negroes, and sell them and employ them in their plantations and farms. In order to seize them they employ every device that tyranny and avarice can suggest, keeping in close friendship with the Caribs, a ferocious and warlike tribe overrunning all this extensive Province and part of those of Barcelona, Caracas, and Santa Fe, in persecution of other Indians, on whom the Caribs hold control, on account of their peaceful and gentle character, being continually assaulted in their

ranches or grounds; the old Indians are killed and the young and the women captured to be reduced to slavery. These incursions disturb very frequently the Mission of the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, not quite so well established, enticing away their Indians who take to the woods at the least news of the approach of the Caribs, in spite of all steps taken by the Missioners to stop them, in consequence of their cowardly and pusillanimous disposition, which may sometimes be overcome by the presence of Spanish escorts in the settlement to which they resort for protection and defence. The native Hollanders of those Colonies who accompany the Caribs, teach them how to manage the arms, and they are even more inhuman than the Caribs themselves, so that a close watch is necessary to stop them and defend the Missions which they procure to destroy in order to remove that obstacle from their Colonies, as shown in the map.

*Settlements of the Guayana Province.*

All this extensive Province contains no more Spanish settlement than the fortress, known under the name of the City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, for although the Chief of squadron, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, tried to establish the cities of Real Corona and Ciudad Real, neither the one nor the other has been successful, as will be explained, but there are 16 settlements of Missions under the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, four settlements likewise of Missions under the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, and three more under the Reverend Franciscan Fathers and Missioners of Piritu, as it will be seen in the following two notes.

*City of Santo Thomé or Fortress of Guayana—Note 9.*

Details are given of the fortress of Guayana, its fortifications, the troop and garrison, the salaries of the troop and the Royal Treasury where to collect them, the militia, the neighborhood, the families, the stores contained, the plantations possessed, the Church, the Pastor, the want of a Minister for the administration of justice in ordinary cases, and what the settlements are that bear the names of Cities of Real Corona and Ciudad Real.

After having said what little is generally known of the extensive Province of Guayana, it remains to explain in particular what those settlements are, as it has been done with those of the Provinces of Cumana and Barcelona.

*Fortress of Guayana.*

The fortress or the city of Santo Thomé de Guayana is situated at 8° and 17' north latitude and 314° (*sic*) 17' longitude. It is the capital and only township of all this unknown Province, its temperature is warm and damp, and very unhealthy. The ground is not fertile, on account of being sandy, it is situated on the bank of the Orinoco river, at its narrowest point, and close to the first mouths or islands dividing the river. Its breadth from the fortifications of the city to the opposite part of the river is hardly within range of a 24-pounder, and its bottom is from 70 to 80 fathoms.

*Fortifications of the Castle of San Francisco.*

Upon the same bank and in a quasi horizontal position with the water line is the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, its irregular figure, with the greatest front to the river. To the east it has another small front, but so low that it may be scaled with great facility. The front towards the south is defended by a great lagoon at its rear; on that front there are a few short compartments for stores, headquarters, and the guard for the troop. The front towards the west is where the gate is located, and all its work is of stone and mortar. At a small expense it may be improved and secure this fortification, but it is not to be relied upon if the Padrastro mountain is not fortified, as it will be explained. The cannons and their caliber, balls and powder contained in this Castle may be found in the statement corresponding to the same, in the map where six small guns are included, a little more than swivel guns, that are placed on the Padrastro or Castle of San Diego, as it will be explained; the other utensils exist in the Castle of San Francisco, and are described in the first part of the Acts of Visits, as also those of this fortress, at folios 229 to 298.

*Fort San Diego or Padrastro.*

Besides the Castle of San Francisco there is another called San Diego or Padrastro. It is situated upon a rocky mountain which dominates the fortification of San Francisco and at such a short distance as to be within the range of a musket shot. Said mountain is really the spot that ought to be fortified, as it is only in name called Castle of San Diego, which is but a small tower of four equal fronts built of stone and mortar, and its parapets of mud and adobe. It has six swivel guns mounted, that can hardly be played within the short space they occupy, and besides what has been said it is so low that a man with a very little help from another man may penetrate into it, without the least difficulty, so that by no means can it deserve the name of Castle or fortification, being really the advantageous and only spot of all the river that may be fortified with safety and a little less than Angostura, being the two places where the river may be rendered impassable. In the rear of this mountain, upon which the Padrastro stands, there is a large lagoon similar to the one defending the Castle of San Francisco, and it is not easy to drain it. The two lagoons around contribute to the unhealthiness of the population settled to the south of the lagoon of the Padrastro and within a short range of the same.

*San Fernando.*

On the opposite side of the fortress, and in the creek called Limones, is situated the fort named San Fernando, in the shape of a round tower, still in course of construction, for the reasons explained to His Majesty, under date of the 23d of September, 1761, being built of lime and brick material. This fortification deserves the close attention of that of Padrastro, with the difference that this one must be fortified very well, and the other abandoned altogether.

*Troop for the garrison of these fortifications and place where to be paid.*

In this fortress in charge of the custody, of which His Majesty keeps a captain commander, a lieutenant, two sub-

lieutenants, a constable, a chaplain, two sergeants of fusileers, two corporals, 12 artillerymen, a drummer and 77 soldiers, among whom there are a very few white persons, most of them are mulattoes, mustees and negroes, who stand better that insalubrious climate. The salaries paid annually to these persons are found in the corresponding statement of the map, and likewise the total amount of \$13,994 paid out of \$14,000 that His Majesty has assigned for this payment from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fe. Said fund is collected by an officer sent every year for that purpose and bringing the same to the fortress, at the expense of the garrison, to the amount of \$1,000, paid as explained in note 7.

This officer undertakes the journey through the Orinoco river up to the confluence of the Meta, continuing the navigation through it for half the distance shown by the map, and thence going by land sixteen or eighteen days through the roughest mountains up to the capital of Santa Fe. The increase of this garrison is indispensable on account of the reasons laid before His Majesty in my representation of the 27th of August, while dealing with the subject of the demolition of the Castle of Araya, besides those that will be exposed in the following note.

### *Militia.*

Besides the regular paid troop, all the residents are enlisted in a company of 58 militiamen, including officers, as may be seen in the corresponding statement of the map. These militiamen do all the work of the government, as the regular troop is detached to escort the Mission of the Reverend Catalan Capuchins, in order to stop the frequent Indian incursions that take place.

### *Neighborhood.—Families.—Inhabitants.—Slaves.—Houses.*

The reports of the general visit of this fortress already mentioned at folios 229 to 298 show an existence of 90 families, including those of the regular troop, in all 535 souls, including in that number 113 slaves. They inhabit 66 very reduced houses built on sandy ground, which, together with the con-

tinual rains, the heat and the vicinity of the lagoons, makes the climate very insalubrious and insufferable to all those that are not natives, except the negroes, mulattoes, and mustees, who stand better its effects, and some of them become corpulent.

*Plantations.*

The inhabitants possess 20 plantations, some of them of sugar cane and some corn fields, besides a few herds of bovine cattle, containing about 1,800 heads of all kinds.

*Church.—Pastor.*

There is only one parochial church in the city, straw roofed, on heavy timbers and mud walls, attended by the chaplain of the troop, who is a Reverend Capuchin of the Catalan Mission, drawing the salary of the chaplain, and the small parochial fees to whom a fourth of the tithes collected belong, reaching in a few years over \$30 ; and the alms of the residents and troops are dedicated to keep the church.

*Want of an Ordinary Justice.*

There is no common council nor ordinary justices in the city. The military commander refused to entertain those cases, on account of the large expenses they entail, and only attends to those within his jurisdiction or by commission from the Governor, before whom the parties appear first.

*Cities of Real Corona and Ciudad Real.*

The chief of Squadron, Don Joseph de Iturriaga, in virtue of his powers undertook the establishment of two settlements, under the name of Real Corona and Ciudad Real, for which he congregated several persons dispersed on the banks of the Orinoco and the Provinces of Caracas, Barcelona, and even from the Island of Margarita, who were supported for some time at the expense of the Royal Treasury, but after the withdrawal of that support they recrossed the river and returned to their old places, notwithstanding that the Chief remained still in Ciudad Real with several families and clerks attached to his expedition. It will disappear entirely when the Chief quits

it, on account of the insuperable difficulties experienced in places so far away from all human help, without any interest to attract inhabitants, even if they were protected against the continuous assaults by the Indians, so that they can not be considered as settlements of this Province.

**Missions of the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers ; of the Reverend Fathers of the Company of Jesus ; and of the Reverend Franciscan Observant Fathers—Note 10.**

The Catalan Capuchin Missioners—Beginning of their Missions—First settlement is established by them—Sixteen settlements existing—Men of arms—Families—Souls—Houses—Churches—Land occupied—Education of the Indians—Number of Reverend Fathers—Alms allowed them—Their cattle estate—The importance of these Missions—Those of the Jesuits—Father Observants of Piritu in this Province—Those three bodies spreading the Gospel in the Province.

*Bodies of Missioners Spreading the Gospel in Guayana.*

Three bodies of Missioners spread the Gospel in this Province of Guayana. They belong to different orders, to wit: The Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers; the Reverend Father Jesuits of the Province of Santa Fe, and the Reverend Observant Fathers of Piritu, under whom are the Missions and ecclesiastical settlements of the Province of Barcelona, as heretofore explained.

These three bodies of Missioners and the settlements under their charge, as well as the progress obtained, will be the subject of a separate note.

*Catalan Capuchin Missioners.*

The Capuchins of the Catalan Kingdom keep in this Province a community of Missioners, who at the expense of the Royal Treasury were transported from their Province, until incorporated in this Mission; all those existing in it appoint their Prelate every three years, under the name of Prefect, but neither



the community nor the Prefect are subordinated to the Provincial Prelate of the Catalan kingdom, but to that of the Province of Andalusia, their only Superior Prelate. This community performs the duties of their ministry with wonderful diligence, good order, and success, without sparing labors, and due to these circumstances are the happy progresses accomplished by the Missions in their charge.

*Beginning of the Missions.*

They were established in the year 1724, notwithstanding that other Missioners had undertaken the same work before. This conclusion is derived from the contents of a book of baptisms, showing that from the year 1664 several other Priests at different times had tried the pacification and reduction of these Indians, such as Father Joseph Sanpayo, a Reverend Father of the Dominican order, and Father Manuel de la Purification, of the Bare-footed order (descalzos) of Saint Augustine; the Clergymen Don Francisco de Rojas, Don Miguel de Angulo, Don Joseph de Figuëroa, and the ration canon Don Andres Fernandez; the Father Jesuit Juan de Vergara, Dionisio Mestand, Francisco de E. Mauri and Ignacio Cano, the Catalan Capuchin Father Angel de Mataro and Father Pablo de Blanes, the Capauchins and others. The Fathers of the Company made an assignment of said Missions, and the act was authorized by the Governor of Trinidad, Don Tiburcio de Harpe y Zuniga, in the year 1681, as shown by the Royal Cedula of the 7th of February, 1668, and the 29th of April, 1687, by which His Majesty approves the assignment made by the Jesuits, and sends the Catalan Capuchin Fathers to attend the Missions of the Province of Guayana. These two Cedulae are kept in the Archives of the Community. From said year 1687 they took charge of the Missions and commenced their work, but the miseries and deaths, without any help in their wants, were so discouraging, having nobody to replace those who died, many long interruptions of the Apostolic ministry followed, losing at the same time whatever advancement had been made previously for the good of the souls and the pacification of the natives.

In the year 1723 the Mission of Guayana was in want of Father Missioners and without means to bring the few that might have been obtained, for want of provisions and the necessary alms for their support; but during that year several pious persons, especially the Missioners of Piritu, gave and facilitated the transportation of 100 head of cattle, which have kept on the increase and are to-day the support of the Missions in all the extreme necessities of the Indians, for want of meat, whenever they were to be attracted to the townships, as this element is an inducement securing exemption from famine and want.

*First Settlement in 1724.*

Upon this basis, in 1724, the first Mission was founded, under the name of Concepcion de Suay, two leagues inland from the City of Guayana, and to-day they have planted 16, as it will be shown, going inland about 40 leagues to the south of said city, situated at that distance from the Mission of Avechica, as it is shown in the map.

Besides the 16 Missions existing, 8 previously settled have been lost, on account of the misfortunes of the pestilence of small-pox and measles, besides the invasions of the Caribs, the hostilities of the English in the year 1740, with the loss of over 1,000 Indians, several settlements and their furniture, having proved a dreadful drawback aggravated by the want of payment of the alms assigned by His Majesty to these Missioners from the Treasury at Caracas, and the indifferent help afforded by the escorts in charge of the custody of the settlements to stop the invasions of the Caribs and restore order in the population occasionally disturbed by intoxications. Although part of the garrison from the fortress is detached for that service it is not sufficient, as 25 to 30 more men ought to be ready to meet these contingencies whenever they happen. Twenty-five or 30 men not always can be detached from the fortress, where there is very often no more than the required number for its custody. From that of Araya it is impossible, on account of the distance of 200 leagues, aside the other reasons submitted to His Majesty by my representations of the 27th of August, 1761, in reference

to its demolition as useless, not being of less importance the consideration of the isolation of all the Missions, where nothing is found of the necessities and conveniences of human life, nor any one ready to supply this want at any cost, and for that reason the same Missioners, with the poor help of the Indians, are the masons, carpenters, and mechanics of other trades for the formation of the settlements and the works required for the same purpose, except churches, which are not so easily built, and for which bells, ornaments, and other furniture are needed, without the means to buy them, and for that reason only three of the settlements have churches.

*The Sixteen Existing Mission Settlements.*

The 16 Missions established at present are those of Capapui, Altagracia, Suay, Amaruca, Caroni, Arepuco, Aguacagua, Murucuri, San Joseph de Leonisa, Guarimna, Carapu, Miamo, Guasipati, Palmar, Avechica, and Piacoa, as shown in the map, in the corresponding statement of the men of arms, families, souls, houses, and churches existing in every one of the said 16 settlements.

*Men of Arms, Families, and Souls.*

One thousand and eighty-one men of arms ; 1,031 families ; 4,392 souls ; 408 houses ; and three churches.

*Lands of the Missions.*

These Missions are most of them situated in very fertile lands, fresh, salubrious, abounding in water and well provided of all the necessary products fit for the maintenance of the Indians, except those of Suay, Arepuco, Caroni, and Piacoa, that are not salubrious nor abundant in eatables on account of their proximity to the Orinoco river and sandy ground. The houses of all the settlements are built with symmetry in extension and sufficiently convenient for the Indians. The three churches, although poor, are very clean and capacious, the same as the house of the pastor close to the church. Near the parson's house there is a sort of tower built of timber and mud, covered with straw, where they keep two or three swivel guns. The

tower, house, and church are defended by a round fence of stakes so as to take care of the Caribs if they do not come in company with the Hollanders, for whom the swivel guns, if there are experts in the population to handle them, the noise alone may impose fear on the Caribs, who would not dare to reach the settlement and much less the palisade defended by the tower, where the women and children and even the Indians take refuge, in case that the enemy's forces are superior and do not allow sufficient time for the use of arrows in their defence.

*Education of the Indians.*

The education of the Indians is not the same in all the settlements; in some of them they are not all baptized, when just taken out of the woods, incapable of a Christian education, and only in cases of need they are baptized, but this sacrament is administered to all their children born in the settlement and the infants arriving from the woods. Other Indians are already Christians, but without having forgotten the crowd of vices so common with them, and both sexes remaining naked, out of their natural rusticity and habit, as well as the impossibility to pay for clothing. The Fathers try their best to provide them with iron utensils for the cultivation of their fields. In four or five of the oldest settlements they are dressed, in keeping with the good government of the Missioners, who gather with the greatest care and keep an account of the casave, superabundant with them, send it to the city of Guayana where there is a demand, and out of the proceeds buy clothing for the people in return for their casaves. This recourse is not available with those who are at a greater distance from the fortress, on account of the cost of transportation wiping out any possibility of profit. The Indians of these five settlements are well instructed in the Christian doctrine and sufficiently conversant with the Castillian language. Many of them learn music and play several instruments skilfully, and most of them are applied to the service of the Church, where the solemn functions are carried out with really edifying ceremonies. Indeed, all these Missions are proportionally well established, and governed with very

particular harmony, economy and education, so that in the visit of the same I had nothing to observe that was not highly laudable, a reason why, in the name of the King our Lord, the government rendered thanks to the community, encouraging them in the continuation of their holy ministry, as it is shown in part third of the acts of the visit to said Missions.

*Reverend Fathers present at the time of the visit.*

The fourteen Reverend Fathers and one layman, making in all fifteen, were present at the time of the visit. The layman attends to the sick, and this number is very limited, considering the amount of work they have to perform taking care of the settlement and new conversions for new establishments.

*Alms assigned to each Mission.*

To every Missioner His Majesty has assigned, by way of alms, \$150 a year, drawn on the Royal Treasury of Caracas, where the present arrears to the Community amount to (\$32,000) thirty-two thousand dollars, according to a certificate given by the Prefect and shown in the third part of the acts. This delay in the payment of these alms has been felt and is felt, bringing about extreme want to the Reverend Fathers.

*Cattle estate of the Missions.*

The same certificate shows that the cattle estate of the Community contains from 14,000 to 16,000 head of bovine cattle for the maintenance of the settlements and the Missioners. The cattle has been placed on new grounds in proportion of its increase, and to-day it is kept in the Mission of Guarina, where the fields and mountains are most abundant in grass and water, in a cool climate. On account of these circumstances, the multiplication of the cattle has been incredible.

*High convenience of the expected help to this Community.*

If His Majesty kindly assigns the payment of these alms to the Missioners at a Royal Treasury's Office, where they do effectively pay, enough to maintain 25 or 30 Fathers, allowing this Mission the bells and ornaments established by law, and

an escort of 25 to 30 men, in a very few years a great increase should be noticed and many more, if as the community desires, His Majesty applies similar alms for six or eight lay Brothers, good carpenters, masons, blacksmiths, and weavers, so as to teach these trades to the Indians, especially weavers, of which they might avail themselves for the use of the large amount of cotton which they may gather, and is not fully used in the manufacture of hammocks done by the Indians, and taking a long time and labor for want of instruments.

These Missions are most important to the service of God and the King. Besides the spiritual advantage obtained by the natives, they help the fortress of Guayana with their provisions and interposition between the same and the Hollanders, who by all means endeavor to enter inland in this Province and the mouth of the Orinoco, the key to these dominions—upon the subject of which the necessary reports are sent to His Majesty.

*Jesuit Missioners from the Province of Santa Fe.*

In charge of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers of the Kingdom of Santa Fe are the Missions established on the Meta and Casanare Rivers, shown in the map. These Missions belong to the Government of Santa Fe, excepting four of them which are established at the south of the Orinoco river, to wit:

*Settlements of the Jesuits in Guayana.*

Encaramada, Uruana, Carichana, and Raudal belong to the Province of Guayana, although they have been established and reared by the Jesuit Fathers. The four settlements are very poorly situated, on account of the sandy ground and little fertility of the banks of the Orinoco, and on account of its proximity they are not salubrious; but the necessity of temporizing with the Indians who are settled in them does not allow, for the present, anything better.

The distance of these settlements from the communication and treatment of the Spaniards keep them totally ignorant of the Castillian language, but they are in every thing else well instructed with that profusion of the Missioners, as far as permitted by the recent date of these four Missions.

*Men of Arms—Souls—Houses—Churches.*

The statements presented at the time of the visit by Father Manuel Roman, their Superior, and the other acts of the visit found in the third part of said acts are those concerned with this Mission, folios 71 to 76, and show that the four Missions contain 160 men of arms, 1,423 souls, 61 houses, four churches, and their ornaments. It shows the good order of the settlements, the time of their foundation, and the method for the instruction of the Indians.

In every one of these settlements there is a Reverend Missioner whom the corresponding alms are paid by the Treasury of Santa Fe, as well as to the other officers of the Meta and Casanare rivers, and the escort for the custody of these Missions, who guard likewise the four settlements of Guayana. The escort consists of 48 men and one captain, to whom the salary of \$995 is paid annually, and each soldier \$130, paid from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fe. The progress of the Jesuits in the Province of Guayana was very slow, considering the many Indians whom they have to reduce and pacify around the Meta and Casanare rivers and neighboring countries, and it was difficult for them to go far inland in the Province of Guayana, where most of the Indians are found, and not on the banks of the Orinoco river, that are very sickly and uninhabitable, and their lands hardly fit for populations; but there is no possibility of going further inland without establishing first a few settlements on each bank. Those on either side of the Orinoco river are rather watching places for the protection of the Meta Missions from the assaults of the Caribs navigating the Orinoco, and not for the purpose of going farther inland in the Province of Guayana.

*Missions of the Observant Fathers of Piritu.*

All the ecclesiastical establishments and missions of the Province of Barcelona are under the Reverend Father Observant of Piritu, as stated in note 7, but having no longer any more Indians to reduce and pacify in said Province, as they are all settled, as has been likewise explained in the above-mentioned note, they went over the Orinoco river and settled the place called

Muitaco, within the Province of Guayana, building a lodging house, and then established the settlements called Platanar, Atapidere, and Guazapairo. These three settlements are comprised in the seventeen of the Mission of the Province of Barcelona in the acts of the visit, and the statement of the map, where there is a brief description of the number of souls contained in each one. They are almost abandoned by the Missioners, on account of the want of persons to send to the Province of Guayana for the purpose, without being missed in that of Barcelona, for which there are not enough persons, and even if it were easy to employ them on the other side of the Orinoco, they have no means of subsistence except what is impossible of collection from the Royal Treasury, on account of alms assigned to these Missioners, the arrears of which amount at present to \$31,605 (thirty-one thousand six hundred and five dollars). If these alms were paid, an escort granted as requested from His Majesty under date of the 27th of August, 1761, explaining the inutility of the Castle of Araya, there is no doubt that this body of Missioners might work with more utility than shown at present, as it has been reported to His Majesty in a separate representation.

Pending His Majesty's decision in regard to the escort, 12 men are detached from the garrison of Cumana, so as to prevent the loss of those three settlements; but being 60 or 70 leagues far away, the continuation of this detachment is not possible without serious difficulties stated in the representation already mentioned of the 27th of August.

If this community, with a like conduct, charity and efficiency similar to that of the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, should work in this Province, besides the spiritual good attained by the many Indians inhabiting the country, a better knowledge than what we possess at present should be secured and the entrance of the Portuguese, who are perhaps advancing inland towards the north, would be prevented, while now nothing is known of the establishments that they are forming in this direction, and the Orinoco would be secured, as it is the means of navigable communication with all the other centers of these vast provinces.



*Territory corresponding to each body of Missions.*

These three bodies of Missions have among themselves an understanding about the territory to be occupied by each one, and this understanding has been authorized by the Governors, Don Carlos de Sucre and Don Augustin de Arredondo, in the year 1734, and afterwards approved by His Majesty, as shown by Father Gumilla in his "Orinoco Ilustrado," Chapter 1, folio 12, and is shown by the Royal Cedula found in the archives of this Government, and the boundaries are as follows: The mouth of the Orinoco to Angostura, under the Catalan Capuchins; from the Angostura to the Caura River or Cuchivero, under the Observant Missioners; from the Cuchivero to the west, all under the Jesuits, with the understanding that each body of Missions should go always to the south, as the only means of settling and knowing this most extensive Province. The establishment of townships, as intended by Don Joseph de Iturriaga, becomes impossible, on account of the distances intervening through the extensive desert plains, between the new foundations and those already established by the Spaniards of the north, and the coast in the Provinces of Caracas and Barcelona, and much more of that of Santa Fe, being the readiest and surest recourse to the fortress and city of Guayana, that after so many years of its foundation has not secured any of the advancements; but notwithstanding, through this way, though at a great expense, all the other townships could be helped, on account of the greatest facility and convenience of the water communication. Horse transportation from Barcelona and Caracas is not either easy or reasonable, still less when the return is not effected in silver, as these populations have no way to procure it in this shape, but by means of products when practicable. At present they are all engaged in rearing cattle, which abound in all the prairies, and it is without consumption or estimation in Guayana. With so few advantages presented by this territory, few people of wealth will come to establish here, and as a consequence these settlements shall have to suffer, as explained in the preceding note.

CUMANA, *December 18, 1761.*

JOSEPH DIGUJA—[here is a flourish].

The foregoing copy agrees with the original existing in the General Archives of the Indies in Stand 131—Case 5—Docket 7—Seville, October 13th, 1891.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies. Madrid, October 28th, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

**No. III.**

Stand 131.—Case 2.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES —(SEVILLE.)

---

1769—1779.

---

**Testimony of a certificate given by Don Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant Officer of the Royal Treasury of the city of Guayana, about the confiscations and seizures made under the command of the Commander General Don Manuel Centurion.**

---

Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Accomptant Officer of this city of Guayana and this Province for His Majesty, (whom the Lord may protect).

I certify in due form, for the notice of those whom it may concern, that: From the time of the possession of Don Manuel Centurion of his post, as captain of the Royal body of Artillery and Commander General of this Province, and due to his great diligence and constant zeal displayed in the Royal service, the following confiscations and seizures have been effected: On the 27th of January of the year 1767, at a port out of the way of the fortress of the old Guayana, a launch coming from Esquivo, a Dutch colony, with two slaves, a cargo of brandy and other goods to Don Vicente Franco. On the 6th of March of said year, at the same fortress, several goods to Bernando Montes, coming in a small boat from the same Colony. On the 11th of April of the same year, inland from the fortress, four mules loaded with goods and foreign clothes, without permit or landing certificate. On the 22d of the same month and year, and above the port of this city, several goods, without permit or landing certificate, to Lorenzo Yeguas. On the 16th of July of the same year, at the fortress of the old Guayana,

sixteen small barrels of brandy, to the Pilot Gaspar Vidal, who brought them furtively and had buried them in a small island of the Orinoco. On the 28th of September of the same year, at the port of Piacoa, below the fortress, an Indian boat, (curiara), loaded with Dutch goods from Esquivo, to Pedro Sanchez.

By the Sergeant of the Company of Pioneers, Cipriano Mayorga, with the boat in his charge, one of the cruisers of the Orinoco held by the foreigners trading in the clandestine shipment of mules, horses, cattle and other products of the Guarapiche and Teresen rivers emptying into the Paria Gulf; one English sloop called "*La Sevillana*;" a Spanish schooner, "*La Esperanza*;" two Spanish launches; likewise an English boat, with four wild African negroes, some cattle, several packages of foreign merchandise, and a few more in the country; and before returning to this city, a French schooner, called "*Maria Luisa*," with two wild African negroes, two casks, one containing red wine and the other brandy, and ten pounds of coarse thread fit for hammocks; and at the same time by the same cruiser, manned at the Island of Trinidad, one French sloop and another French schooner, with merchandise and wild African negroes, from which, after deducting all expenses, a sixth part was applied for the ministers, and one-half, amounting to seventeen hundred and ninety-two dollars and twenty-four maravedis, the proceeds of which in this city were two thousand and eighty-five dollars three reals and one and a half maravedis. These seizures were tried and adjudged as good prizes, awarded to His Majesty, on the 30th of April and the 29th of July of the year 1768. Besides the above mentioned prizes and confiscations, the Captain of the Company of Pioneers of the Orinoco, Don Francisco Civito, with two launches armed as cruisers of this river, commissioned by the Commander, Don Manuel Centurion, apprehended two foreigners who had been established at the Barima creek in the jurisdiction of said Province, two boats, and several iron implements and agricultural utensils that, by the award of the 19th of April of said year of 1768, were confiscated. All these acts appear to exist in ten portions of the

several proceedings instituted, and the total amounts in all to seven thousand and one dollar one real and twenty-five and a half maravedis, out of which the corresponding Royal duties for His Majesty were two thousand seven hundred and ninety-five dollars seven reals and thirty-three maravedis. And finally the above Captain, since the 13th of October of last year to the present time, with the launches of his command, by direction of the Commander General of the Orinoco, has seized in the rivers Guarapiche and Teresen a Spanish launch with twelve batteries, an English sloop with eighty mules, six horses and five negroes; two large sloops, one English and the other French; three English schooners and one small sloop of the same nation; a Spanish launch with seven horses and other merchandise and utensils, the trial of which is still pending. And at the verbal request of said Commander General, Don Manuel Centurion, I issue the present certificate for whatever use he may see fit.

Given at this Royal Accomptant Office of Guayana, on the twenty-eighth day of January, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.

ANDRES DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

We, Don Joseph Rexi, Captain of Infantry, and Don Vicente Diez de la Fuente, Sub-Lieutenant, Adjutant Major of this troop of Orinoco, attest that the signature authorizing the preceding instrument or certificate is the same used in his office by the Royal Accomptant Officer of this city and Province, Don Andres de Oleaga, and that it is entitled to full faith and credit everywhere, and for those whom it may concern we certify to the fact in the absence of a Notary Public, and sign herewith, in this city of Guayana, on the twenty-eighth day of January of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.

JOSEPH REXI.

VICENTE DIEZ DE LA FUENTE.

[There is a flourish in each signature].

The foregoing copy agrees with its original in the General Archives of the Indies—Stand 131—Case 2—Docket 17—Seville, July 2d, 1891.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish.]

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

Madrid, July 17, 1891.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

## No. IV.

Stand 131.—Case 2.—Docket 20.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

 1790.
 

---

Two letters from the Governor of Guayana, Don Luis Antonio Gil, to Don Pedro de Lorena, informing him of the situation of the Dutch Colonies located on the coast at forty-five leagues, (he says), from the mouth of Navios of the Orinoco River, and about the kind of Independent Republic which had been formed by the fugitive slaves, at the sources of the rivers between Surinam and Esquiyo.—1790.

---

1790.—*Strictly confidential.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:—In consequence of the strictly confidential Royal Order of the 4th of last June that your Excellency has kindly communicated to me, in order to find out, through all prudent and cautious possible means what is the amount of fugitive persons from the Colonies of Surinam, Bervice, Demerari and Esquivo, that are established in the interior of this continent, and if among them are the two nephews of Tupac-Amaro, with the other matters therein contained. In accordance with the Captain General of Caracas, as I am instructed to act, I will carry out this important measure through the safest, most reserved and cautious means possible, advising subsequently of all details and the result.

May the Lord keep your Excellency's life for many years.

GUAYANA, *October 16, 1790.*

LUIS ANTONIO GIL—[there is a flourish.]

Most Excellent Don Pedro de Lorena.

*Strictly confidential.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: Well aware of what your Excellency directs me to do, by the strictly confidential Royal Order of the 4th of last June, I have been informed with the greatest secrecy, reserve and necessary precautions for finding out the number of fugitives from the Dutch Colony of Surinam, and whether among them are the two nephews of the rebellious Tupac-Amaro, if they have any dealings with the Indians, and whether the latter look upon them with any consideration. Upon these particulars and the other points communicated to me, (simulating a desire to be posted as to the extension of this Province, their boundaries and frontiers, number of inhabitants, whether white or colored, of the Indian tribes, reduced and wild, inhabiting the country), I have succeeded only in obtaining the following information:

That the amount of fugitive persons from Surinam is very large, and that it is further increased by the accession of those who go to join them from Bervice, Demerari, and Esquivo, all foreign colonies situated on the same coast at a distance of 45 leagues from the *Boco de Navios* of the Orinoco River; that they are in communication with the interior part of this Province; that these Colonies carry on an active commerce with Holland in products which they gather in abundance from their cultivated possessions by European inhabitants, the greater part, with the help of numerous negro slaves which they bring from the coast of Guinea. These slaves find their local situation on the respective rivers easy to escape, and they use it at different times, withdrawing and making themselves strong at the sources of the rivers, to the extent of threatening the same Colonies, so as to have had to capitulate after several unlucky encounters with said fugitives, under conditions far from decorous, and of injurious transcendence, as it is to be expected from the operations, contrivances, and devices of a free, independent Republic, composed of ferocious and barbarous people, and the neighborhood of which has to be the source of constant care and vigilant attention.

The territory occupied by the fugitive slaves is situated between Surinam and Esquivo, where it ends, and it is defended



(to prevent our communication with them) by the Carib Indians and other tribes, under the domination of a petty King or Casique, supported by the Government of Esquivo, that, by way of commerce, permits the inhabitants of that Colony to supply him with blank and fire-arms, powder, balls, iron implements, and dry goods in exchange for Indians, whom they enslave for the works of their plantations, keeping stores and commercial houses for that purpose on the frontier of their possessions not so far as to remove the possibility of their coming in force from the interior, if they so intend it, to invade our own Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, and even those of the high Orinoco and Rio Negro, as there is no force in the way to prevent it nor Spanish settlement to oppose them.

The tribes of natives above mentioned have been always our avowed enemies, opposed to the expedition sent by this Government a few years ago for the discovery of the Parima lagoon, having had several encounters with them, having found them armed with muskets and powder and balls furnished, as it is said, by the Hollanders from Esquivo, who have sent several cases as presents to the petty King or Casique.

Embarrassed as it is, the communication with the fugitives, there is nobody from whom to obtain reliable reports as to the existence with them of the nephews of the rebellious Tupac-Amaro, nor is there any sure way left to investigate the fact, without risks and difficulties, as we have the barrier of the above-mentioned tribes in the interior to prevent it, and from the seaport it is hardly possible, on account of the extreme vigilance of the Hollanders, withdrawing our communication for fear of the evil consequences that might follow. For the same reason they take every precaution to avoid the publicity of what happens with the people of the obnoxious savage Republic.

Since the time of my possession of the government and Command of this Province, I have not spared any means conducive to the elucidation of this subject. I have tried to be present at the visit of the vessels trading with the foreign Colonies, so as to find out whether among the passengers.

brought by them any one may be suspected, on account of their answers to the questions set to them by me with the same caution required by the secrecy of the subject. I will continue following the same policy and keeping your Excellency well informed of all the details that I may find out, besides those that I have already conveyed to your Excellency, and likewise to the Captain General of Caracas, availing myself of every favorable circumstance to secure that end and the safety of this Province.

May the Lord keep Your Excellency's life for many years.  
Guayana, November 8th, 1790.

LUIS ANTONIO JIL—[there is a flourish].

To his Excellency Don Pedro de Lorena.

---

The foregoing copies agree with the documents existing in the General Archives of the Indies in Stand 131—Case 2—Docket 20. Seville, December 31st, 1891.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[there is a flourish].

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, January 14th, 1892.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.





# DOCUMENTS

RELATING TO THE QUESTION OF BOUNDARY

BETWEEN

VENEZUELA AND BRITISH GUAYANA.

---

SUBMITTED TO THE BOUNDARY COMMISSION  
BY THE COUNSEL OF THE GOVERN-  
MENT OF VENEZUELA.

---

VOL. II.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C.  
PRESS OF MCGILL & WALLACE,  
1896.

VOL. II, VEN.—1



## No. 5.

[Translation.]

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

---

Document No. 2.

---

**1758.—Testimony in regard to two Hollanders imprisoned at the river Coyuny [Cuyuni] by the secret expedition, which went out from the City of Santo Tome de Guayana in the year 1758.**

(This document came with a letter No. 13, from the Commander of La Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, dated on the 5th of April, 1770.)

---

Forming a part of the proceedings instituted in consequence of the claim made by the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Orinoco Spaniards against the colony of Esquivo [Esequibo].

---

*1758.—Testimony taken in the case of the two Hollanders imprisoned at the river Cuyuni by the secret expeditionary party which left this city in the year 1758—Number 2.*

Señor DON FELIX FERRERAS.

DEAR SIR: The Caribs from the mountains having killed the captain and his companion of the Guayca Indian Station, who with their people formed there a population upon good principles and with hopes of making it a large establishment on the banks of the Supama river, within the Hauchica district, that settlement has now been lost on account of the above deaths. The Guaycas have therefore again taken to the woods, and as other folks of the said tribe there may be yet found in

the Missions of the Turuario, they are oftentimes clamorous for vengeance; but the Father of that Mission, with his usual prudence, has made me acquainted with the fact, and stopped them, explaining his very good reasons, and his fear of still worse misfortunes. I requested the Commander, Don Juan Valdes, to be kind enough to make himself available to Your Honor with his long practice and experience about these Indian affairs, in order to proceed, with proper directions, farther in the interior of the country, and investigate and discover the reason of that slaughter, and if possible to find out the names of the offenders. You have carried out the directions of the Commander and made the necessary inquiries and investigations contained in the information you rendered to me about your inquest. Having been as far as the Miamo, Carapo and Turuario Missions, and fully investigated the case about the middle of May of last year, it was found that they had carried away a wife to be sold at Esquivo. It was found out besides that the murderers were certain Caribs from the settlement of Tupuquen, who had rebelled in the year 1750, commanded by the Indian Cayarivare, who had been an Alcalde at Tupuquen and headed the ringleaders of said rebellion who were staying at the time in the interior of the Cuyuny river, at the mouth of the river Corumo, which disembogues in said river, and where a few Hollanders of the Esquivo Colony were purchasing Poytos Indians and carrying them away. The principal cause for their having killed the captain was on account of his settlement in the above mentioned site of Auchica, closing thus their way to the Usupama river, preventing their coming out without being discovered. By word of mouth as well as by letters from the Reverend Fathers, your Honor has been made acquainted with the permanence of the said Hollanders, in company with the Caribs at the mouth of the river Corumo, buying Indian slaves.

Now, by your letter of the 30th of May, your Honor kindly requests me to make an accurate statement, informing Your Honor whether the Hollanders remained at the same site or at any other parts around there, if they continue their trade in dry goods, hatchets, etc., and in what consists their means of defence; if they keep any artillery, and its caliber, so that



Your Honor, as commander *ad interim*, may send in proper time a suitable report to the Superior Government.

My answer, as well as that of all the Reverend Fathers of our Missions the nearest to the frontiers, and that of the Father Presidents of those of Miamo, Carapo, and Yuruario, will be that the Caribs of the Miamo very often have asked the Father of that place to allow them to go and arrest and kill those Hollanders at the mouth of the Corumo, who make ransoms for the purchase of Poytos, as they were informed by the Barinagotes of Yuruario. Very often they had heard that the Hollanders had threatened to set fire to the Mission settlement on account of being an obstruction in their way to Yuruario. The Caribs from Carapo reported to the Father that a negro who was at Cuyunyi went to the Mission and out of fear came back again. The Caribs have advised repeatedly that three white Hollanders and ten negroes, with many Caribs, were building houses and clearing the woods so as to establish settlements on the Cuyuni, but they do not know whether they had cannons. They have, however, large blunderbusses and many carbines. They likewise employ Aruaca Indians from Esquivo to fell very large trees, involving a great deal of work, which the Caribs avoided by running away. Of this case we have no more news than what has been conveyed to us by the Indians, such as has been represented to me by several other persons of the Mission. It is not unlikely that the Hollanders stopped their purchase of Poytos at Cuyuni, because they do not hesitate to continue doing this illicit trade in the neighborhood of the Missions. Your Honor knows well that Captain Bonalde, within a day's journey from the Missions, arrested a Hollander who used to buy Poytos or Indians, who were sold to them by the Caribs, and although he was not actually found in the Carib's house, three Indian Poytos were rescued and several machetes and bugles were found in his ranch and distributed among the Miamo Indians. We know, besides, that very often the Hollanders pass by Paraba, Caura, and the sources of the Carony. They do that every year, and there is no need to mention in particular these things, which Your Honor knows very well, after having resided for a long

time in these Missions, and travelled several times through these mountains. I have, however, to say that a large number of young Indians are carried every day to foreign colonies by Caribs and Hollanders. Taking into consideration that the Caribs keep an active trade for the purchase of Poytos, in exchange for iron tools, dry goods, knives, beads, looking glasses, fire-arms, and many other things, it will not be an exaggeration to estimate the yearly sale by the Caribs at more than 300 young Indians, killing the old ones, over 400, which are not salable to the Hollanders, because they run away, as we know they do, through some of the fugitives found in the Missions and recognized by the brand that a great many of them have painted on their bodies, as the Esquivo Company orders that all the Indian slaves be iron-branded, under penalty of forfeiture. I am not able to name all the tribes that are persecuted by the Caribs to be made slaves, save those that we have near our frontiers and those well known to the Barinogotos, Maomacos, Amarucotos, Camaracotos, and Añaos, Parabinas, Guaycas, etc. The Hollanders and Caribs, in order to reach these tribes, go to the Esquivo river for about 20 leagues, up to the point where there is a station. As there is a deep cataract on the way they take their boats by land, and resume the navigation up the river till they reach Rio Negro on the upper Esquivo, taking on the right side the river Aripamury, up to a place where there are a few small lagoons, after going up the Aripamury as far as possible, having to carry the boats for a distance through land for about half a league, where said lagoons form the river Mao, through which they meet Rio Negro, and going down through the latter on the left they reach the Amazonas, and going upwards enter the river Orinoco. I have made this statement so as to show that the Esquivo navigation was the way of communication of the Hollanders in their trip, both to Barinas and to Paraba at the sources of the Carony. As this is a long and tedious navigation from the Esquivo they enter Corony and Paraba, as all these rivers are in communication with the Esquivo, which receives the waters of the Coyuny, Yuruama, Supama, and Yuruario.

And this Yuruamata has many brooks by thickets of Moriche palm-trees that reach Carony. We know also that many Hollanders, besides those going up Paraba, remain to make purchases of Poytos among the tribes of Tacupo, Capi, and Paraman. These sites inland are about three and four days' journey from the last Missions. They are in the mountains and run as far as the plantations on the Esquivo, where there is no more level ground. In these places there are generally Hollanders who purchase from the Caribs the Poytos which are carried there and several horses, as was the case in the year 1749, when a large quantity of mules were purchased from them at the Esquivo, which is seldom the case, as there is no forage for keeping them around those mountains, where the purchasers have to lose them. Purchasers from the Esquivo come to these sites of Tacupo and Paraman by land, making the Indians carry, on their shoulders, the baskets containing the ransoms for Poytos, or else they go through Esquivo, Coyuny, and Corumo. This latter is a river that before joining the Coyuny carries the waters of the rivers Tucupo and Marenambo, all navigable, during the rainy season, for a short distance only, having no means of navigation to reach their sources for any longer than four or five days, enough for the enemy to penetrate conveniently through our land, and the traders in Poytos reach likewise the Tupuco tribe through the river Moruca, in which the Esquivo station is situated, or through the river Vaini, all of which come out near the mouths of the Orinoco, and follow their navigation up to the river Paraman, in which the Caribs are found in abundance at Moruca and Rainy. The traders in Poytos come likewise through the Orinoco as far as Aquire, Carapo, and although they have no fixed time to undertake their trips, they come and go always whenever they please, but it is known that for the most part of the year they keep about there, sometimes for as long as ten years, among the Caribs, keeping the trade in Poytos, and sending them to the Esquivo in charge of their agents, in quest of other ransoms to continue the purchase from the Caribs. At least they stay there from one to three years.

This trade in Poytos keeps the Caribs busy all the time, without any other attention than that of going and coming to resume the war, buy and kill the Indians of the above tribes, not only in the mountains but even those in the Missions, who can not be kept away from them. Many run away to meet them. It is easy to shut the doors to these enemies, so as to prevent their communications with the Hollanders and from joining Caribs from the Esquivo, Coyuny, Yuruario, Carony with those tribes, forming a people, which, if it can not be Spanish, ought to be of select Indians, which under ten soldiers at least keep continually at the mouth of the Corumo or the islands of Cununy, so as to close the entrance to the Turuama and Yuruario, and consequently succeed in stopping their communication and keeping them away from Corumo.

These people will command the respect of the Hollanders, preventing them from trading in Poytos at Tucupo, no matter how near it is. The Indians of said place will be soldiers, and it will be convenient to keep them away from enemies coming, through those rivers, and from the Caribs from Miamo, Curapo and Conury descending the Esquivo with Poytos. I think the Missions will be kept safe by cutting their communication with the Caribs from Conuny and Esquivo. If it is not closed, we may soon lose the pacific tribes which, if persecuted as they are now, will be carried away as slaves. It would be a sad thing to see these Indians carried away as slaves from the Yuruario. I believe the Hollanders are in earnest trying to buy Poytos. Therefore it is more difficult to convert the Caribs, while under the advice of the Hollanders, in order to avoid their staying in the place. Many go back to the mountains, and through the bad advice of the Dutch, ran away from the Missions in the year 1750, when they had four settlements rebelled, on account of having been told that if they settled in the villages the Spaniards would make them slaves, preventing them from going to war and trading with the Flemish.

I have to inform Your Honor likewise, that I have heard from Moyo N., that while he was coming from Esquivo to become a Christian here, after he was baptized, he told me that he had brought many papers from Esquivo, among them a

chapter, in which the Governors had delineated their jurisdiction, which he said extended as far as the mouth of Aquire, and from said mouth a straight line drawn towards the south, making the boundary line for the Governor, so that said line reaches as far as the skirts of the last praries (savannahs) of our Missions of Miamo, etc.

Said line goes through Tucupo and Curumo, reaching the above-mentioned Apipamary, and I think the above news to be true, and if so, the Governors yonder have suited themselves to the best of their ability, by robbery, so as to give their permits under those limitations.

Whatever I have stated heretofore is well and publicly known, and it is a pity that the purchasers of Poytos are never severely punished when His Majesty recommends to all the justices to endeavor to extend the best treatment to the reduced Indians and to those who have peaceful intercourse with the Spaniards, taking care to defend them from those waging war against them. All the above-mentioned nations are in such a condition that if they had sufficient help they could go and bring many of them to the village, as it is done already with the Barinagotos. The hatred is such that the Caribs call all these tribes Guaycas Poytos, Barinagotos Poytos, Amarucotos Poytos, and they are all Poytos before they are caught, etc. All these nations would be glad to know how the Spaniards defend them by arresting their purchasers; it is true, however, that it will be advisable to seize them in order to prevent the long delay in their conversions, and if Your Honor follows this plan I think it will be a great service to God and to the King.

God preserve Your Honor many years.

I remain Your Honor's most obedient servant.

FRAY BENITO DE LA GARIGA.

To DON FELIX FERRERAS,

Infantry Ensign of His Majesty and Commander  
*ad interim* of this station and the Province  
of Guayana.

SUAY, June 9, 1758.

*Ruling.*—Whereas I have received news from the island of Caramacuro, in the river Cuyuny, in the interior of this Province, stating that there is there a Hollander by the name of Jacob, and a colored man of the same nation, living in permanent houses and making the inhuman trade of Indians enslaved, purchased from the Caribs in exchange for coarse cloths, hatchets, knives, ammunitions of war, and other kinds of ransoms; whereas such a commerce is forbidden by law and repeated cedulae, for the enforcement of which fortresses have been erected and kept under proper custody of a detachment of troops, so as to protect the Missions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, who have sustained, and are in fear of sustaining the total loss of their settlement through an obnoxious traffic kept up and maintained by the Hollanders and other foreigners, who incite the gentile Indians against the establishment of those settlements—the result being that the Gospel is not more extended in this Province. Therefore in order to stop these injurious difficulties, and carry out the good intentions of His Majesty and prevent the Hollanders from encroaching every day, more and more, upon this country, I ordain and command, to Don Santiago Bonalde, in the first place, and in the second place, to Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, to depart to-day for the interior, in the direction of the settlement of Yuruari, and embark there on the vessels found in said river with their crews, provisions, ammunitions of war, and the soldiers which will be enlisted and placed under them, with the ablest and most trustworthy pilot. They will march towards the said island of Caramacuro and apprehend said Hollander and all those persons besides, who may be found with them, whether Caribs or from any other nation, and bring them as prisoners well secured to this garrison, leaving in the hands of, and under the Reverend Father Prefect, all the Indians that they may have found enslaved.

In order to succeed in the object of this expedition on the part of the King our Lord, I pray and commend the Reverend Father Prefect, and the other Fathers of his Holy Community, to give all the necessary aid to the above mentioned Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, as

they have been accustomed to do, with a holy zeal on every occasion; and I order and command that the soldiers and the other people who are going in the same vessel, keep themselves under the orders and pleasure of the above mentioned chieftains, alternately, and it will be the same with all the Indians through the settlements they visit, being well aware if they fail to obey their orders that they will receive the corresponding punishment. Wishing the best success to this expedition, under the arrangements made by said Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, with the instructions that will be furnished them, expecting, from their well known love of the Royal service, that they will acquit themselves with the present commission, I grant them every power necessary for their full discharge.

Dated in this garrison of La Guayana, on the 27th day of the month of July, in the year 1758.

FELIX FERRERAS.

---

*Instructions.*—Instructions to be observed in the first place by Don Santiago Bonalde, and in the second by Don Luis Santos de la Puente, in the entrance to the island of Caramucuro to the station occupied by the Hollanders therein established, making the trade of ransoms in Indians, which they enslave.

1. They will set out to-day for the settlement of Yuruario, where they will find the necessary vessels, furnished with crews, stores, ammunitions of war and soldiers, and without detention they will pass in review everything, and if anything else is wanted they will ask for it from the Reverend Father President of the settlement, and they will continue their march towards said island, having all the vessels united, without advancing or going behind, giving to the cockswain of each the order which they have to carry out.

2. If on their way they meet Indian vessels they will seize and carry them along with them, finding out every particular upon the subject of their march which they can possibly acquire, keeping them as guides with all the necessary precau-

tions, so as to avoid their desertion and secure the 'end of their journey.

3. They must employ the best means to ascertain how the Hollanders keep their establishment; if they have their houses barricaded in the lower or higher part; if they have any cannons or light guns, or either class; under what kind of people; if the Indians accompany them under arms; in which way they may be reached without being perceived, so as to take them unawares by surprise; if they keep stakes around, and whether the ends of said stakes are poisoned; if they are disguised with false floors in the transit; if they keep lookouts, in which places, and how they can be caught.

4. When everything has been found out they will advance towards the houses of the Hollanders at daybreak, and not by night, to avoid the risk of offending one another, and the protection of the obscurity and the knowledge of the ground enabling the offenders to escape. But, in case that a night advance be required, to have every one of the party under a white device, covering their heads, so as to recognize each other.

5. The prisoners once well secured, if there is any information about other Dutch places on the lower or upper portion of said river Cuyuni, and if there is a certainty of their apprehension, they shall go after them, proceeding with the same precautions observed in regard to the others, and with the same security they shall be brought to this garrison, as well as the Carib Indians found with them, and the Poytos, which must be treated with love and charity, and delivered to the Reverend Father Prefect, Fray Benito de la Gariga.

6. As said Reverend Father Prefect has had the first information upon this painful subject and the serious injury done to the success of their holy administration, a conference must be had with said Reverend Father, so as not to make any mistake. The war instructions already mentioned will be carried out by said Bonalde and Puente as it may be found proper.

7. If the Carib Indian named Bumuro be found, he must be secured, as I am informed he controls all the Indian settlements of his tribe, and imprisons those of other tribes, to be sold the Hollanders, as well as to other Indians employed in sim-



ilar negotiations, taking from him all the slaves that he may have in his possession and delivering them to the order of the Reverend Father Prefect, for their Christian instruction and population.

8. If it happens that during the navigation they are attacked from the banks of the river by any enemy, embarrassing their way and destination, and that the same vessels are not suitable for returning the fire with advantage, they will leave them in custody, so as to be able to land and charge the enemy until every one be apprehended.

9. Everything will be carried out as directed by the above-mentioned Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, whose valor and zeal for the Royal service promise the best success under these instructions, to which they will adjust their conduct in everything connected with their orders, in virtue of the present commission intrusted to them.

Guayana, the 27th day of July, 1758.

FELIX FERRERAS.

The greatest care will be taken so as to secure the ransoms and all the articles of commerce which may be seized, making an inventory of everything, and not allowing anything to be taken out and kept in the vessels in which they make the commerce.

Date, Ut Supra.

FERRERAS.

---

*Appointment of witnesses.*—In the city of Santo Tomé de Guayana, on the 27th day of the month of October, in the year 1758, Señor Juan de Dios Valdes, Castillian captain of the fortresses of His Majesty and Commander-in-Chief, said: That in order to make and institute a summary information, according to the chapter of instructions from his Honor, the Captain General and Governor of these Provinces, upon the secret expedition and the result of the apprehension of two Hollanders, with their wives and a negro slave, in the river Cuyuni, and as one of the Chiefs in command of the expedition is the Notary Public of this city, Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, not able to

act as such in this matter, it has become necessary to appoint two satisfactory persons highly trustworthy, so as to make them witnesses in all the acts corresponding to this subject, and these circumstances concurring in the persons of the Ensign of Infantry, Don Luis de Alemán and the Cadet, Don Francisco Xavier Filgueyra, I ought to appoint, and do appoint the same, so as to act as witnesses, after having been notified for their acceptance and the oath of office ; first, and before everything else, they must faithfully attest to all the acts that will be performed in their presence, and then it will follow every other act in the same manner.

It was so ruled and signed.

JUAN VALDES.

*Notification.*—Immediately following, I, the expressed Commander, Don Juan Valdes, did notify his appointment as a witness of the preceding ruling, to the Ensign Don Luis de Alemán, and, being well understood, he said that he accepted and did accept it, and swore before God our Lord, making the sign of the cross, to perform faithfully and well his duties, as explained to him, and he signed with me. I certify to the same.

LUIS DE ALEMÁN.

*Another.*—And then I, the expressed Commander, notified the other witness of his appointment, according to the above rule, the Cadet Don Xavier Filgueyra, who said that he accepted and did accept it, and swore, in proper form, \* to keep and observe faithfully the duties devolved on him in the premises, and signed with me. So do I certify.

VALDES.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

*Rule.*—In the city of Guayana, on the 30th day of the above month and year of the Lord, Don Juan Valdes, Castillian

---

\* The Spanish form of the oath of the previous notification will be thus reduced by the translator.

Captain of His Majesty and Commander in Chief of this Province, said : That, in order to proceed and substantiate these proceedings according to law, he ought to command and does command to have at the head of them the letters of the most Reverend Prefect of these Missions, which were the motive of the sending and organizing of the above-mentioned expedition, together with the instructions and appointment of the chiefs in command, signed by the Ensign Don Felix Ferreras, who, in his absence, was the Commander *ad interim* of this place ; and afterwards the above-mentioned witnesses, Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, the appointed chiefs, will be summoned to appear at eight o'clock to-morrow morning before his Honor, said Commander, to render their sworn affidavit about all the incidents, acts, and resistances on the part of said Hollanders opposed to them, exhibiting the papers that they may have found with them, and stating distinctly which of them was the aggressor who took the life of one of the soldiers of said expedition and badly wounded another in his arm, answering to all the questions of his Honor from the beginning to the end of the above-mentioned expedition until their return to this city. To the same end several other soldiers who went in the expedition will be examined, and after their affidavits have been taken, the declarations of the two prisoners, the Hollanders, will be heard, and they shall be brought under a suitable custody to the presence of his Honor, so as to state the reasons for their sojourn and business in those places, by whom they were posted there, and for what purpose ; all of which being accomplished, the other necessary acts connected with these proceedings will follow.

Done under the authority and in presence of the undersigned, who certify to the same.

JUAN VALDES.

LUIS DE ALEMÁN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

---

*Summons.*—Following in order, we, Don Luis de Aleman and Don Francisco Xavier Filgueyra, the witnesses appointed

to substantiate these acts, called at the residence of Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente and summoned them, as ruled by the above act, for to-morrow morning at eight o'clock, in person. We certify to the same.

LUIS ALEMÁN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA.

---

*Affidavit by Don Santiago Bonalde.*—In the above city of Guayana, on the 31st day of October, in the year 1758, appeared before his Honor, Señor Don Juan Valdes, and the witnesses, Don Santiago Bonalde, in order to render his affidavit in compliance with the above rule as one of the chiefs appointed for the secret expeditionary force that was sent to the Cuyuni river, and after having been duly sworn \* in the proper form, and promising to state the truth of all that he knew, and upon which he would be interrogated, and being questioned, he said as follows:

1. That having departed from this city with the order and instructions that he shows to reach the settlement of Yuruario, where he found the armed people ready, and that he reviewed immediately and examined their arms and vessels, and finding everything in proper shape and ready for the march, he gave orders to the cockswains and people to embark and have the vessels to proceed in good order one after another.

2. In regard to the second chapter of his instructions, he said that he had failed to carry out its directions as to apprehending and carrying along with him those Indians that he would meet, because he thought a more convenient policy to attract them with friendship and affection, so as not to frighten them, which policy proved correct, as he succeeded in securing their help in everything that was wanted. If he had seized and tied them, after apprehending them, a few at least, he was afraid, would have rebelled and brought about mischief, as they are numerous and their fields afforded no facilities for any defence.

---

\* The same form of the oath as above quoted by the translator.

3. That in regard to the third chapter, he performed with every possible skill everything therein expressed, and did not find any old houses staked in, nor any other kind of ambush.

4. That in regard to the fourth chapter, he said that in order to avail himself of the occasion he got some of the Caribs who infest those places to befriend and lead him, without being noticed, until he reached a place, the name of which he does not bear in mind, where a white Hollander was found at noon and made no resistance, nor attempt to run away when he was apprehended. From that place they continued their march, in company with the Indians, as far as the hut where said Hollander lived. Said hut was covered with palm leaves, without any walls. They spent two days in reaching the same, going down the river. When they were near the said hut they stopped until it was dark, as he thought the darkness favorable for an advance; that he disposed his men in the best possible order at the time suggested by the Caribs, and at about eight o'clock in the evening, or it may have been seven o'clock, he undertook the assault with his men on the said hut, and found one Hollander, who seemed to be lying on a hammock, and warned by the barking of a dog he arose, and they all fell on him so as to prevent him from reaching any arms that he might have had there. At this time four or five gun shots were heard, and they were not able to find out who fired them; that he found out that his own went off accidentally, and that a soldier that had fired his blunderbuss said it was on a negro who accompanied said Hollander and was running away from the hut; that he could not find out who fired the other; that he only heard the voice of one of the soldiers, while struggling with the said Hollander, in order to tie him, saying, simultaneously with a pistol shot, "This rascal has killed me;" and without minding who it was we endeavored only to secure the person of the Hollander, and having succeeded he found out, on inquiry, that one of his soldiers had been killed and another badly wounded in an arm; that he immediately tried to find the arms held by them, and found two pistols already emptied and a musket in the hands of the Caribs; and having upbraided the Hollander for his having fired, he answered

VOL. II, VEN.—2.

that he had not, that it might have been the negro who was with him.

5. As to the fifth chapter, he followed his instructions and found out that there were no other huts or ranches up or down the river.

6. That he followed the sixth chapter just as it is.

7. In regard to the seventh chapter, he found it was better to let the Caribs come freely, as they promised and did so, as otherwise he could not have succeeded, on account of their large number. Many of them are found already in the Mission of the Reverend Capuchin Father. In regard to the Indian Tomuto, he had no news whatever.

8. As to the eighth chapter, he found nothing new in its contents.

9. As to the ninth instruction, he followed everything as directed. In regard to ransoms, he found only twelve dozens of knives, seven of hatchets, and remnants of cloth that he distributed among the Caribs, so as to keep them well pleased and safe; that the ten dozens of said knives and seven of hatchets he delivered to the Reverend Father Fray Thomas de San Pedro, as he could not bring them to this city on account of the long delay and fatigues of the road; that he did the same with five guns and a pistol taken from the Hollander, to whom he asked who had placed them in that station and for what purpose, and he answered that they had been placed there by the Governor of Esquivo, without saying anything else in reply to the other questions; that in a little box he found certain papers having the appearance of instructions, and that he delivered them on his arrival to this city in the hands of the Ensign of Infantry, Don Felix Ferreras; that from the place where they found the ranch on the river Cuyuni, to the Mission, wherefrom they had departed, the journey took twenty-two days, three of which in the navigation up the river and the remainder by land; that this is all that he knows and what is contained in his notes, and the truth under the oath that he has taken, and that he affirms and ratifies the same, and will

assert again if wanted; that he is thirty-four years old, and signs with his Honor and witnesses.

JUAN VALDEZ.

FRANCISCO SANTIAGO BONALDE.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRAY GARCIA.

---

*Affidavit of Don Luis de la Puente.*—On the same day and year it came before his Honor, the Commander Don Juan Valdes, and the acting witness, Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, one of the chiefs appointed for the secret expedition, who was duly sworn by his Honor in the usual form (as already given), and promised to tell the truth of all that he knew, and was interrogated as it was done in the order of his instructions, and he said: That having left this city with the order and instructions shown him, he took his departure for the settlement of Yuruario, and there found the soldiers, and that everything was ready; that he examined the arms and took to the boats, which left as directed.

2. In regard to the second chapter of instructions, he said: His comrade did not think it was a good policy to do the least harm to the Indians which they met on the way, and thought best to treat them kindly, so as to deserve their favor, as it was done successfully; that on account of this circumstance he did not carry out the letter of instructions of this chapter.

3. In regard to this chapter, he endeavored to find out and ascertain the points mentioned, as directed, and he could not find nor ascertain the places, or any case of ambushes.

4. In regard to this chapter, he said: After eight days' navigation he arrived at an Indian ranch of the Caribs, and there found out that a Hollander by the name of John Baptist used to come and visit another ranch of Caribs, and he sent from there the pilot, directing him that in the event of finding said Hollander in that ranch to notify his party, as it was done on the following day, when the Hollander was apprehended, without opposing any resistance to follow them as far as the site where they found the house that they had placed as a limit;

that they made a stop in order to reach it by night, as it was done at seven or eight o'clock ; that their approach was anticipated by the barking of a dog ; that on account of that circumstance they entered the house in haste to secure the person of the Hollander, who seemed to be lying down on a hammock and was already standing, at the time of being seized by a soldier ; Francisco Roblez fired a pistol shot, which caused him to address the said Roblez the words : " This dog has killed me ; " that hearing at the same time three shots more he ascertained that one of them was fired by a soldier called Pedro at a negro who was running away, and the other shot was fired by Don Santiago Bonalde without knowing how or at whom ; that the other shot, he never knew who fired it ; that he found out through the interpreter that the said Hollander thought that they were Caribs, and for that reason he fired, and the wounded man could not give any explanation.

5. In regard to this chapter, he tried to find out whether they had some Poytos, or other ranches ; that none were found, nor any news of having any either up or down the river.

6. That this chapter was carried out as it is, without doing anything to the contrary.

7. That in regard to the seventh chapter, they found no Indian there by the name of Tamuto, nor any other employed in taking Indians to make them slaves.

8. That in regard to this chapter he said : That there was nobody against whom to take any precautions, as nobody was found.

In regard to the last chapter, he said : That everything was carried out as directed, with the greatest zeal for the service of both Majesties ; and that in regard to ransoms, they found only twelve dozens of knives, seven of hatchets, three kettles, five muskets, three pistols, and a large number of cloth remnants, that were distributed among the Caribs accompanying the party, and the distribution was made by his comrade, who was the principal chief, and likewise a few papers which were taken and delivered to the Ensign, Don Felix Ferreras ; that it took twenty-two days to make the return journey to the Mission from where they had started ; and that he has nothing



else to depose on the subject, and thus ended his statement, in which he affirms himself and ratifies, and if necessary will renew the same under his oath; that he is thirty-three years old, and signs herewith with his Honor and the witnesses who certify to the act.

JUAN VALDES.

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA  
AND GARCIA.

---

3. On the same day, month and year, in compliance with the preceding rule of his Honor, the Commander, it appeared before him and the witnesses of this act Juan Jose Fragas, a military man of this castle, who was duly sworn by his Honor in due form, and under the strength of his oath he promised to tell the truth of all that he might know and were interrogated, and having been questioned by his Honor, he answered about the time of departure following the expedition, the point of destination reached by his company and the events of the expedition, saying: That he left the settlement of Yuruario under the command of Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, at the head of the party, and followed them down to a certain place (the name of which he does not recollect), where they met a white Hollander, who, without resistance nor attempt to run away, let us apprehend him, and from thence they left, in company with some Indian Caribs, until they reached the ranch they had in said river Coyuni; that before reaching there the chiefs in command stopped cautiously at a place; in the immediate neighborhood of said ranch, and there awaited until seven or eight o'clock of the evening, when they advanced toward said hut, where they met a white Hollander and a negro that seemingly was lying in a hammock, and at the rumor of the barking of a dog he rose, and having been assailed by all at once, so as to secure his person, I heard the firing of four musket shots without knowing then who fired them, and he could only un-

derstand (when he saw it) that one of the shots was fired by the military man Pedro de Rojas, outside of the house, aiming at a negro, who was found in company of the Hollander, because he ran away, and after they had all quieted from the first assault, he heard Don Santiago Bonalde say that when he left the boat he had cocked the two triggers, and one of them went off, in the act of apprehending the said Hollander, and that he did not know whether it had been himself the author of the death occurred ; that in regard to whether there are or not other ranches, he does not know of any ; and that from the Cuyuni river they returned to the Mission wherefrom they had departed, taking twenty-two days on their way back ; that he has nothing else to say than what he has already answered under oath, and that he ratifies and will repeat it over if necessary ; that he is twenty-four years old, and signs with his Honor and the witnesses who certify to this act.

JUAN VALDES.

JUAN JOSE FRAGAS.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA  
AND GARCIA.

---

4. In the city of Guayana, on the second day of November, 1758, in order to carry out the preceding rule, appeared before his Honor the Commander, Don Juan Valdes, and witnesses, the military man, Segundo de la Cruz, whom his Honor had duly sworn, and promised to tell the truth of all that he knew and was to be questioned. He was asked wherefrom did he depart on the secret expedition and where he went with his company, whom he met and whether they apprehended anybody, and what the events were on that journey, and he answered : That he left the settlement of Yuruario, in company with the troops commanded by Don Santiago Bonalde, the first chief, and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, the second ; that he followed them down to a place (the name of which he does not know) and there apprehended a white Hollander, who made no resistance, and was carried in his company until they reached a

ranch in which another Hollander resided ; that they assailed the place all at once, because they were heard, on account of the barking of a little dog found there ; that there were several shots, one of which killed a companion and badly wounded the deponent in his arm, which is paralyzed, and that he does not know who fired, on account of the obscurity, but heard saying, while suffering pain, that Don Santiago Bonalde's gun went off on account of one of the triggers having been cocked, it was a double barreled musket, and he did not know whether any harm had been done. He affirms his statement that said Hollander did not fire, nor were any arms found with him, as he was the first that seized him by the breast, and that in regard to the other shots he can not give any explanation, for the reasons already explained of having been wounded ; that he does not know anything else on the subject, beyond what he has already asserted under oath, and that he will, if necessary, repeat again ; that he is twenty-five years old, and did not sign, as he did not know how. His Honor signed with the witnesses of the act, and certifies to the same.

JUAN VALDES.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA

GARCIA.

5. In the said city of Guayana, on the same day, month and year, pursuing the same investigation, appeared before his Honor Don Juan Valdes, Castillian Captain of His Majesty, another witness summoned to appear, the military man Pedro Arochy, who, being duly sworn, promised to tell the truth of all he knew, and was questioned, and having been asked wherefrom he departed, with what people and in virtue of what order, for what purpose and where did he go, and whom he met, what houses he saw and what events took place, he said: That he left the settlement of Yuruario in company with the other military men (the number he does not know) in virtue of orders made known to him by the Ensign of Infantry, Don Felix Ferreras, and Don Santiago Bonalde, first

chief, and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, second; that he knew they were ordered to apprehend a few Hollanders, and descended the river Cuyuni; that they found a Hollander who made no resistance when apprehended, and was carried by his company up to the neighborhood of a little ranch, where they awaited the night in order to advance, following the order of the chiefs as it was carried out, between seven and eight o'clock in the evening; that there were a few shots fired in the disorder in which the advance was made, and that he is not aware who were those who fired the same nor who killed the man who died, nor who wounded the other; he heard Don Santiago Bonalde say that his gun went off and that it might have been the cause of the mischief; and he heard somebody else among the soldiers say that he fired his blunderbuss in the air, and that was outside of the ranch; that he knows that no arms were found with said Hollander, nor did he fire any; that he had no news of any other ranch up or down the river; that he came back to the Mission from which he departed, taking twenty-two days on his return, suffering many hardships; that he has nothing else to say about the matter, and that he has stated the truth under his oath; and will be ready to repeat it if necessary before any other tribunal; that he is twenty-eight years old, and does not sign, as he does not know how to do so.

His Honor signs, and the witnesses of the act certify to it.

JUAN VALDES.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA.

---

*Rule.*—Appearing from the above affidavits by the two chiefs commissioned for the secret expedition, that certain papers and instructions were taken from the above-mentioned Hollanders, and being known they were delivered to the Ensign of Infantry, Don Felix Ferreras, commander *ad interim* at this place, his Honor ought to order and does order that he be notified and requested to exhibit said documents and papers.

It was so ruled, and his Honor signed the same in the city of Guayana on the 2d day of November, 1758, under his certificate.

VALDES.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

---

Immediately afterwards said witnesses called at the house of the Ensign of Infantry, Don Felix Ferreras, and notified him of the preceding rule, and in compliance he exhibited and delivered to us four papers written in the Dutch language, and one which he said was the Castillian translation, all of which facts we certify.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

---

*Rule.*—In the city of Santo Thome de Guayana, on the 2d day of the month of November of the year 1758, his Honor, the Commander Don Juan Valdes, said: That as the papers had been exhibited in the Dutch language with a translation delivered by the Ensign of Infantry, Don Felix Ferreras, he ought to rule, and does rule, that the same be added to these proceedings, first taking the affidavit under oath, according to the creed of the two Hollanders kept imprisoned in the castle of San Francisco de Asis, bringing them under a proper custody to the presence of his Honor, and as they are not conversant with the Spanish language, he ought to appoint, and does appoint, as an interpreter for both of said Hollanders, the Artillery Sergeant, Juan Andres de la Rivera, so that he will make the inquiries of the Commander and answer clearly and distinctly what they say, without going into explanations of the terms used. He will be notified for his acceptance and sworn before his Honor, the Commander, that he will faithfully and legally interpret, according to the above statements, without fraud or deceit, and will observe the actions and motions in the way of rendering their affidavits, the said two Hollanders, and whether they contradict each other, and will warn his

Honor, the Commander, for his better government and mode of inquiry, and will keep in all the best method necessary to find out the real facts.

It was so ruled, signed, and certified by his Honor.

JUAN VALDES.

LUIS ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

---

*Notification.*—Immediately afterwards the aforesaid witnesses appointed by his Honor called at the residence of the Artillery Sergeant, Juan Andres de la Rivera, and notified him of his appointment as an interpreter, by the preceding rule of the Commander, for the two affidavits to be received from the two Hollanders, and after being notified, he said that he accepted and did accept, and we certify to the fact.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

In the above-mentioned city of Guayana, on the 3d day of the same month and year quoted, his Honor, the Commander, and the witnesses of this proceeding received the Artillery Sergeant, Juan Andres de la Rivera, who, after being notified of the above rule, accepted, and was sworn in due form and promised to faithfully and lawfully interpret the two affidavits to be taken from the two Hollanders, and signed, with his Honor and witnesses certifying to the act.

JUAN VALDES.

JUAN ANDRES DE LA RIVERA.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA.

---

*Confirmation.*—In the same city of Guayana, on the 3d day of November, in the year 1758, Don Juan Valdes, Castillian Captain of His Majesty, made appear before him and witnesses one of the two Hollanders now imprisoned in the castle of San Francisco de Asis, and, after being sworn according to the rite

of his religion (he said he was a Lutheran), he raised two fingers of his right hand, and was examined as follows :

1. Asked wherefrom he was a native, his name, and occupation, he answered : That he is a native of the States of Holland and his name is Stephen Hiz, and a laborer in mines.

2. Asked what he was doing in those places, he answered : That he was placed there by the Governor of Esquivo as the head of a fixed guard kept there.

3. Asked how many men composed the guard and the reason why he occupied that post, he answered : That the guard is composed of four men, including the two white Hollanders and two Indians, and that he keeps there in order to apprehend the negro fugitive slaves leaving the Colony of Esquivo and to restrain the Carib tribes, so as to prevent them from making any mischief, either to said Colony or the neighboring Spaniards or to the domestic Indians, as shown by the chapter of the instruction that was seized from him by the chief of the Spaniards who apprehended him.

4. Asked why he took arms against the Spaniards and fired on them, he answered : That he had done neither one nor the other, nor could he do so, as he was alone and the Spanish people were too many, and that when they advanced towards the house he was actually asleep in a hammock and at the trampling and noise made he awoke, attempting to get up and run away, thinking that they were Caribs, and in his surprise and fright he did not do so, nor did the Spaniards allow him to do so, as he was immediately seized and tied.

5. Asked how it was that if he did not fire, a Spaniard was killed and another badly wounded, he answered : That he is persuaded that the Spaniard was killed by his own companions, and that the other was likewise wounded in the act of entering and trying to tie him, when the Spaniards commenced to fire within his house.

6. Asked what arms and defence they had in that post and what is the name of it and what river is near by, he answered : He had five muskets, three sabers, three pistols, a flask of powder, and piece of lead for ammunition, and of these arms only two muskets were his own property and the rest were

furnished by the Company ; that the post is called Cuiba and close to the banks of the river Cuyuni.

7. Asked what goods or ransoms were seized by the Spaniards when he was apprehended, and if he had them for the purpose of negotiations and purchases, he answered : That they seized fourteen dozens of knives, eighteen pieces of iron utensils like hatchets, machetes, and two pieces of calico, nine bundles of glass beads, and a dozen small looking glasses, twenty-four yards of skirting, twenty of coarse blue cloth, all for the purchase and maintenance.

8. Asked how long had he been kept there and what had become of the farms, how did he carry out his trade, he answered : That it was eight months since he came there as a head man, and was commencing to till a short piece of ground so as to plant it with the yuca or tapioca plant, and has not carried out his trade.

9. Asked whether they had given him goods for the purchase of Poytos and how many had he sent to the Colony of Esquivo, he answered : That in the short time that he had been there he had not made any such purchases, nor had he been given any ransoms for them ; that he had only in his charge the collection of what was due to his predecessor, as it will appear by the said papers.

10. Asked how far is said post from the Colony of Esquivo, he answered : It is only a short distance, although they take three natural days to make it, as it is only navigable in keeping with the tides, and the navigation is performed through creeks.

11. Asked if he knew those countries, where he was found, belong to the jurisdiction of Esquivo, and if for many years they have kept those posts, he answered : That he does not know whether it is or not under the jurisdiction of Esquivo, and that for many years they kept the post in that place.

12. Asked if said site is fit for the cultivation of cane and other plants, he answered : That they are not fit for that purpose, as they are swampy, but where the post is maintained, and farther upwards, there are places fit for the cultivation of



said plants, but there is an express order from the Governor to prevent the passage upwards to any person whatever.

13. Asked whether the negro who is in his company in the prison is a slave, he answered: No; but he is bound and dedicated to servile occupations under the company who keeps him there.

14. Asked what other order he had and what other trade he kept and what general news he knew about there, he answered: That he does not know, nor any news; that that is the truth under his oath, according to his religious faith, and that he affirms and ratifies his statement and will make it again if needed; that he is forty-eight years old and signs with his Honor, after being duly certified.

JUAN VALDES.

STEPHEN HIT.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA Y GARCIA.

*Confirmation.*—On the same day, month, and year, in the same city of San Thomé de Guayana, his Honor caused the appearance before him and the witnesses for these acts, under a proper custody, of Juan Baptist Brum, whom his Honor had sworn in due form according to his faith, by raising two fingers of his right hand and promising to tell the truth of what he knew and were asked of him, and having been asked by said Commander, through the interpreter, he answered the following questions?

1. What is your name? Where are you a native from? Where is your residence? What is your trade? And he answered: That his name was John Baptist Brum, a native of the States of Flanders, and a resident in the Colony of Esquivo; that he is a tailor by trade.

2. Asked what he was doing in those places, he answered: That he was there as a soldier of the post, placed by the Governor of Esquivo, under Stephen Hiz, the head of said post.

3. Asked what reason had the Governor to keep a guard there, he answered: In order to apprehend the fugitive negro

slaves who run away from the Colony and to prevent the Carib tribe from making any mischief to the domesticated Indians.

4. Asked what reason he had to be away from the site where the Post is kept, at two days distance, as stated by the Spaniards who apprehended him, he answered: That by the direction of his superior he had come to said place in quest of a few Indians to help the work of a farm they were opening, and that shortly after being there the Spaniards arrived and tied him, without his opposing any resistance or defence, and was carried away in their company up to the neighborhood of the house he had.

5. Asked whether he knew or has any notion of who wounded one of the Spanish soldiers and who killed the other, he answered: That he knew nothing, and could give no account of anything, as he was left behind and tied up at a distance from the house within a gunshot, when they advanced, and from there he had to continue the way under said Spaniards to this city.

6. Asked what arms and defences they had, he answered: That only five muskets, belonging to the Company of Esquivo.

7. Asked what was the name of the site where he had his ranch, and what river is near the same, he answered: That the site is called Cuiba, and empties into the Cuyuni river.

8. Asked how long he had been there and whether he had made any purchases of Poytos, he answered: That he had been there eight months and never had anything to do with such purchases.

9. Asked how far is it from that site of Cuiba to the Esquivo Colony, he answered: Three days, more or less, being understood that the navigation depends on the tide, and is made through the creeks and swamps.

10. Asked whether he knew if the above-mentioned place is within the jurisdiction of Esquivo, and whether the Governor had kept that guard there for a long time, he answered: That he did not know, and that the guard had been kept there for many years.

11. Asked whether that site is fit for farming, he answered : No, on account of its being swampy land, but that in the upper part there are found portions of good land, but the Governor does not allow it to be tilled nor permit any one to stay there.

12. Asked whether the negro was a slave, he answered : No ; but he was placed there by the Esquivo Company and is bound to serve for a compensation.

13. Asked what other trade he was pursuing, what his instructions verbal or written were and to tell the truth, he answered : That he does not know or had any knowledge of anything else, except what he had stated under oath, according to his faith, and which he ratifies and will assert again if wanted ; that he is forty-eight years old, and is not able to sign, not knowing how to do so.

Signed by his Honor and certified by the witnesses of the act.

JUAN VALDES.

LUIS DE ALEMAN.

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEYRA  
AND GARCIA.

---

*Translation.*—Translation made and signed by me, Sergeant Juan Andres de la Rivera, in virtue of my appointment by His Honor, the Commander *ad interim* of this place, of the instrument of ordinance for the Post or guard kept at the Cuyuni river by a party of the States General, written in the Dutch language, and delivered to me by the present Notary Public, the tenor of which is literally as follows :

Article 1st. The head of said Post or guard, according to our absolute command, must show every friendly distinction to the neighboring Indian tribes, and if they require any help against the wild tribes, the guard or Post will be bound to render them help.

2. The head of said Post will be careful not to allow any harm to be done to the Spaniards, who are our friends, and in everything they will keep in correspondence and good terms

with them, but must be careful that in case the said Spaniards should want to cross the Cuyuni river, or any of the lands of our Colony and give us any trouble, the head of said Post or guard shall immediately send a man with the news to the Castle of the Governor.

3. The head of said Post or guard will not allow any commerce to be carried out, except in the river or in the surroundings when well provided with special passports, in which case he will allow them a permit; but if any Indians go across the Post, while coming down the Esquivo river or going up the same, and said Indians are carrying along Chinese slaves, or any merchandise to buy the same, it will be the duty of all the inhabitants of the Esquivo river to allow them, and those of all the other tribes, to pass without being molested.

4. It will be the duty of the head of the Post to be very careful in stopping any runaway slaves, and follow and apprehend them, in order to restore them to their masters, according to the directions of the States General, allowing ten florins a head as a reward to the head of the Post for his trouble.

5. If there are any slaves belonging to the inhabitants of the Esquivo river, who run away and their masters go after them, having had no time to get a passport, they will be allowed to pass through said Post, which will render them every possible help to secure the recovery of their slaves.

6. The noble Company allows the Post to carry on business, on their own account, under condition that in everything that they purchase they allow the preference to the Company, who will charge the same price for good goods.

7. The Post will be bound to collect all debts due to the previous old Post, and it will be likewise paid at the rate of ten florins a head and a florin for each hammock, and of everything purchased notice will be given to the Governor.

8. The head of the Post is likewise bound to render an account to the Governor, twice a year, and must reside in the Post as a good servant.

Esquivo river, on the 29th day of November, 1758.

LORENZO ESTOREM DE GRAVESANDE.

In the year 1747 of the transfer of accounts to the former Postmaster and stock of the same, as follows :

Nine yards of coarse cloth to buy casave (tapioca bread) for the people of the Post's maintenance.

Fifteen knives for the same.

Eleven knives that were paid to the Indians for carrying a despatch to the Governor.

A hatchet and short broadsword to buy a curiara (small Indian boat).

A looking glass to buy casave.

Four yards of new blue cotton cloth to buy casave.

Three pieces of iron utensils to buy casave.

Nine yards coarse cloth to pay the Indians for carrying several despatches.

Eighteen knives for casave.

Nine knives for casave.

One bundle of beads for casave.

Eighteen knives to pay the Indians who were employed by the Post.

Three pieces of iron utensils for casave.

Four yards of coarse cloth for casave.

One bundle of beads for casave.

Four knives for casave.

Eight yards of coarse cloth to buy palm meal.

Three yards of coarse cloth for casave.

Four looking glasses for casave.

Five knives for casave.

Six coarse combs to pay the Indians for an errand on behalf of the post master.

Four fine combs for casave.

Three looking glasses to pay the Indians who were sent to the Governor.

Eleven knives for casave.

*List of debts of the Master of the Post Tumfermant.*

Yriveno owes eight slaves .....	8
Tucunuara owes three slaves .....	3
Arinamene owes three slaves.....	3

VOL. II, VEN.—3.

Marayacano owes one slave .....	1
Aritamar owes two slaves.....	2
One more said Señor Buzon .....	1
Carinare owes two slaves to the Governor .....	2
Cumuara owes two slaves more to the Governor...	2
Asavue owes one to the son of the Governor .....	1
Arimanaca owes two slaves .....	2
Manarvay owes two slaves .....	2
Manarvay owes two slaves .....	2
Total.....	27

*Hammocks due.*

Caysamane owes three.....	3
Manayro owes eight.....	8
Canarua owes two .....	2
Other names of Caribs can not be made out on account of the paper being worn out, the total sum being .....	37

The above translation has been made from the original Dutch instruction and ordinance, having been duly and faithfully made into Spanish to the best of my abilities, under my oath of office, and I sign the same in the City of Santo Thomé, de Guayana, on the 20th day of the month of September, seventeen hundred and fifty-eight.

JUAN ANDRES DE LA RIVERA.

In this city of Santo Thome de Guayana, on the fourth day of the month of November, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, Señor Don Juan de Dios Valdes said: That having finished all these acts, in connection with the investigation required by the Superior Government of this Province, he considers that he ought to rule, and does rule, that the same be forwarded originally to his Honor and Captain General, together with the two prisoners, the Hollanders, who have rendered their statements, under a regular guard of four men and a Sergeant of the Garrison of this Fortress, with an order

to be issued to the guard of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis to deliver them to Don Juan Jose Fragas, who will take said Hollanders, well secured in irons, to be carried to the presence of his Honor, according to the full instructions on the subject, keeping at the same time a legalized copy of all these acts. So was ruled by his Honor, who signs with the witnesses of the act certifying the same.

The above is a faithful copy of the original acts sent to the Superior Government of these Provinces, from where it was drawn by the Commander above named in forty-five folios, written in common paper, as there is none stamped and sealed, making two copies of the same tenor.

Done and signed in Guayana, on the fourth day of November, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, and certified by the witnesses of the act.

JUAN VALDES [here is a flourish].

LUIS ALEMAN [here is a flourish].

FRANCISCO XAVIER FILGUEIRA

AND GARCIA [here is a flourish].

The above copy agrees with the original document existing in the General Archive of Indias, in Stand 131, Case 7, Docket 17. Seville, December 15th, 1890. The Chief of the Archives, Carlos Jimenez Placer [here is a flourish]. Seal. General Archive of the Indies.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, 30th of December, 1890.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Senor Petro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

**No. 6.**

[Translation.]

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVE OF INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**DOCUMENT No. 4.**

---

**1761.—Testimony in regard to the proceedings instituted about the seizure of one schooner, two launches, and two curiaras (small Indian boats), from the Esquivo Colonies by Lieutenant of Infantry Don Juan de Dios Gonzales de Flores.**

(This document came, together with a letter, No. 13, of the Commander of the Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, dated April 5th, 1770.)

Forming part of the proceedings instituted on account of the claim of the Minister of Holland, complaining of the proceedings of the Spaniards of the Orinoco against the Esquivo Colony.

Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Castillian Captain, by His Majesty, General Judge for the revenues of this Province of Guayana and Commander of the arms of the same, etc.

Whereas, on account of a report received from the Most Reverend Prefect of the Missions of this Province, I have become aware of the information received by him from four fugitive Poyto Indians about the tyrannic power of the Hollanders inhabiting the neighboring Colonies of Esquivo and Surinam, at the mouth of the Barima creek, coming out from this river, where five Hollanders from said colony are staying and carrying out the inhuman and lucrative commerce they maintain with the wild Indian tribes who trade in the Orinoco,



buying from them the infidels taken in their wars, making them prisoners and trading them for iron utensils, clothing, and munitions of war; and as said Hollanders are awaiting for a party of Indians, they have sent Carib agents to purchase said Indians and bring them to their Colony.

Such an illicit traffic in human beings is already going on. The four Indians who escaped were included as victims and came in quest of protection to the said Missions. As the service of our Lord and of His Catholic Majesty requires the stopping of this illicit trade and the punishment of the Hollanders of the above-mentioned Colony, who possessed them in their own country (if they had any right for this kind of possession), they ought not to be allowed to communicate through the rivers and dominions of the King. Therefore, in virtue of the powers granted to me, I order and command that the Lieutenant of Infantry and second officer of this place, Don Juan de Dios Gonzales de Flores, without any delay whatever, depart on board the Royal vessel that he will find in Port Royal with a crew of ten men and manned in the ordinary way, armed with two light guns, and the necessary stores for twenty days. He will take Spanish river pilots and the fugitive Indians, and go to the place where said Hollanders are staying. He will proceed straightway, navigating night and day, and as soon as he reaches the place, he will attack the ranch, after having surrounded it. He will imprison the Hollanders, French, and Spaniards found there, at the words, "Long live the King!" and will employ his arms in punishing and apprehending the same persons, as well as the Caribs that he may find in their company, carrying out this inhuman trade. He will likewise seize every vessel he may meet, going up or down the river, and the foreigners as well as Spaniards unprovided with the lawful and proper papers of navigation. The masters and crews of the same will be brought along to this place, well secured. The full cargoes as well, without allowing the least fraud or disorder by the troops of his command. It is expected from his fidelity and zeal a satisfactory discharge of his duty; that no doubt it will be performed with the greatest zeal for the Royal service and personal disinterestedness, avail-

ing himself of his good judgment and experience. I grant him all the powers necessary for the best service of both Majesties.

Dated at Guayana, on the seventh day of the month of September, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty.

JUAN VALDES.

*Rule.*—In the city of San Thomé de la Guayana, on the twenty-seventh day of the month of September, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Castillian, Captain of his Majesty, and Don Lorenzo Coronado, Lieutenant Royal Officer, said that the warschooner commanded by Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Dios de Flores, has just arrived at the principal port of this city; that he was sent in order to stop the inhuman commerce of the Hollanders and Carib Indians, in the sale of human beings, from the other gentile tribes, seizing them in war and reducing them to slavery, at the price paid by said Hollanders, of a few ransoms or trifles. That this information was conveyed to the Commander by the most Reverend Father Prefect of these Missions, through four fugitive Indian Poytos, who asserted that the Hollanders with some merchandise were at the mouth of the Barima creek, as it is stated, at the head of this act. As a consequence, said Lieutenant Don Juan de Flores has seized and brought along with him a schooner and two launches which were anchored under the artillery of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, which is the chief port of this city. In order to take the necessary steps, the visit of said vessels will be ordered, therefore they ought to command and did command the search of said vessels, in the presence of the Notary Public for this act, taking an inventory of the cases, trunks or other things on board, and making a full statement of all the circumstances connected with the seizure of said vessels.

It was so ordered and attested by the Notary Public.

JUAN VALDEZ.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public of the Royal Revenue.*

*Visit.*—On the same day, month and year, in compliance with the above rule, their Honors, in company with the acting Notary Public, visited the vessels lying at anchor in the Port of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, in order to examine everything found on board and make a regular inventory of the contents found—

In the first place, there was a schooner with her main and foremast, and rigging without sails.

One small anchor, with its corresponding rope.

Five barrels of salt fish.

One launch, with a mast, canvas shrouds and a round sail of coarse cloth.

Four barrels of powdered salt.

One curiara (a small Indian boat) for the service of the launch, with wash boards. Six hatchets, ten short coarse Indian drawers, ten knives, six bundles of beads and an old case.

Another launch, with its mast, canvas shroud and a round sail.

A small anchor with its corresponding hemp rope.

One curiara, answering as a boat.

And having found nothing else we closed the inventory, and their Honors ordered the discharge of every thing, so as to be kept at the Treasury Office; and that in regard to the fish, the Royal Treasury Lieutenant will find out a suitable administrator to sell the same, and carry a regular account of the sales at fair prices, deducting a suitable commission in the usual current money.

It was so ruled and provided by their Honors, who signed before me, the Notary Public.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public of the Royal Revenue.*

In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the 29th day of said month and year, in pursuance of the investigation to be made, about the seizure of the vessels, their Honors met at the Royal Treasurer's Office, and summoned to their presence the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Dios Flores, who, after being duly sworn, and promising to tell the truth of what he knew and were interrogated, he was asked where he had seized said vessels, how and what resistance was opposed with fire arms, and where were the people of the crew, and he said: That having left this port, under orders of the Commander, to proceed to the Barima creek, and having reached and tacked about the mouth of it, on the eleventh instant, at about four o'clock in the afternoon, he descried a sail towards the point of Guani, that was coming in the direction of the mouth of the Orinoco, and he went after it and having met her and fired a small gun, she stopped immediately, and having boarded her he found ten Aruaca Indians who came from the Esquivo Colony to fish in the river, three of whom ran away, throwing themselves into the river, and on the following day he continued his journey and went through the mouth of Barima, going up the creek for about three leagues, when he descried a vessel that was left aground by the low tide, at a long distance, finding no means to reach on board the same, until it was full tide, when he could draw near. The people and the crew on board, as they had seen and recognized his vessel, had left theirs, carrying away their sails and cutting the best part of the rigging. Although he tried his best to reach them, he could not succeed. Through the Aruaca Indians who had been seized he was informed that that schooner belonged to the Esquivo Colony, and came there for the purpose of fishing; that finding himself with these two vessels without any crew, he had only four men in their charge, two men in each one; that he had only six men left, and being informed that five days at least were necessary to reach the place where the traders in Poytos were reported it to be, it was natural to suppose they had been warned of his visit by those who had left the vessel; that he found necessary to return at once, as he did, finding that his order was only to reach the same mouth (Barima); that on

his return up the river he met another launch, which he had heard before was to be found there; that he sent Pedro de Salas in a curiara (small Indian boat) with orders to seize everybody found on board, without allowing any one to escape; he did so in regard to the launch, but not the people who had taken to the woods where they had a ranch, and they could be seen; that from there he continued his journey up to the principal port of this city, where he anchored with the three vessels seized; that that is the truth in virtue of his oath, and affirms and ratifies his statement, and will make it again if wanted; that he is thirty-nine years old, and signed with his Honors, of all of which I attest.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

JUAN DE DIOS GONZALES DE FLORES.

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,

*Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

*Affidavit.*—Affidavit of Pedro de Salas: On the same day, month, and year, in pursuance of the investigation on this matter, their Honors summoned before them Pedro de Salas, who appeared, and before me was duly sworn, and said he was one of the military men of those Castles, and promised to tell the truth of all he knew, and were interrogated by their Honors, and he did so, as follows: That having left this port on board the war schooner they reached the mouth of Barima, where they were tacking about, and descried a vessel; that they went towards the same, and after a blank gun shot she stopped; that they boarded her and found a few Aruaca Indians, who said that they came from the Esquivo Dutch Colony to fish, and that on the following day they went through the mouth of Barima, and, going up the creek, they descried, at a distance of about three leagues up, a schooner that had been left aground by the low tide; that on account of the long distance, they could not reach her until the high

tide came; that when they came on board of her they did not find any person whatever, as those who were on board had had ample time to escape and carry away with them the sails, part of the shrouds and rigging, which they had cut off; they ascertained from the pilot that it was a distance of about five days necessary to reach the people trading around; that there was, besides, the inconvenience of not having sufficient water in the narrow creek for a large vessel, besides being short of hands to be able to go any farther and keep the vessel already seized; that the Lieutenant-Commander decided to return as he did, going up the river; that he received news of a launch lying at a creek near a land ranch, and that he was sent with four men on board a curiara, so as to seize the same, with the crew and every thing found on board; that he found no person, and went to the ranch with no better success, thinking they all took to the woods; that from there he brought said launch to the Lieutenant in command; that thence they proceeded up the river to the chief port of this city, where they stopped and cast anchors; that that is the truth under his oath, and that he affirms and ratifies his statement, and will repeat it if wanted; that he is forty-four years old, and signed with his Honors and the Notary Public.

JUAN VALDEZ.

LORENZO CORONADO.

PEDRO DE SALAS.

Before me—

LUIS DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

---

*Affidavit.*—Affidavit of Miguel de Sosa: In this garrison of the Guayana on the same day, month, and year, in pursuance of this investigation, their Honors made appear before them and me, the Notary Public, Jose de Sosa, a military man of this Castle, who being duly sworn, promised to tell the truth of all that he knew and was interrogated, and said in reply to their Honors: That he left this port in the armed launch

of war, under the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Flores, and reached the mouth of Barima, where they undertook to tack about, and while so doing, descried a sail steering towards the mouth of the river; that they followed the same and caused her to stop by firing a gun shot; that they boarded the same and only found ten Arauca Indians, three of which ran away; that having been examined the Lieutenant found that they had come from the Dutch Colony of Esquivo to fish in the Orinoco river; that as soon as the same were all secured, leaving two soldiers in charge, they continued their sail, and the next day they entered through the mouth of Barima and navigated the creek for about three leagues upwards, when they descried a schooner left aground by the low tide, at a distance in the river, which did not permit us to draw near and board her, until high tide, when they went on board and found no person, as they had had time enough, while we expected the high tide, to run away, carrying along with them the sails and part of the rigging and ropes which they had cut off; that although the Lieutenant tried to catch the people, he did not succeed; that the Arauca Indians said that that schooner had come from the Esquivo Colony for the same purpose of fishing; that the pilot when asked, replied that the place where the Holland traders in Poytos had a ranch was about five days distance from there, and that the vessels could not go through the creek, as it was very narrow, where only small boats could pass, that for that reason, and after having placed two soldiers in each of the two seized vessels, and fearing that the Hollanders had been already warned of their coming by the people who ran away from the vessel, the Lieutenant decided to return back, as he did; that coming up the river they had news of a launch, lying on a creek, and the Lieutenant sent Pedro de Salas on board of a curiara, with orders to seize the same, and to let nobody escape; that the launch was seized and brought back, having found nobody in it, nor in a ranch they had near there; that he presumed they had run away when they had seen them; that from there they continued their return to port until they reached it and cast anchor; that this is the truth under his oath, and that he

affirms and ratifies it, and will do so again if wanted ; that he is twenty-seven years old, and signs with his Honor.

LORENZO CORONADO.

JUAN VALDES.

JOSE MIGUEL DE SOSA.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,

*The Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

*Affidavit.*—Affidavit of Antonio Ravelo: On the same day, month and year, in pursuance of the same investigation about the seizure of the three vessels, their Honors had Antonio Ravelo, a military man of the Castle, brought before them and me, the Notary Public, and, after being duly sworn, he promised to tell the truth of all he knew and was interrogated, and to the questions of their Honors he answered: That having left this port on board the war launch under the orders of Lieutenant Don Juan de Flores, they went down to the mouth of Barima, where they had to tack about, and then descried a sail coming towards the Orinoco river, and having approached the same fired a gun shot, and she stopped immediately and was boarded; that they found only ten Aruaca Indians, who, being examined by the aforesaid Lieutenant, said that they came to fish around the river; that from there they returned to the mouth of the Barima, and on the following day they went up the creek about three leagues, when they saw a vessel left aground at a long distance by the low tide of the river; that they could not reach it until the high tide allowed them to come near and board her; they found nobody, as the people had had time to run away, carrying with them the sails and part of the rigging; that the Lieutenant was told by the pilot that the Holland traders in Poytos were far away, and it would take five days' navigation to reach them; that their vessels could not pass the creek, as it was very narrow, and only small boats could get through; that on that account, and being short of hands, after the seizure of the other vessels, needing two hands each, and besides fearing the Hollanders had been already warned of their approach,



the Lieutenant concluded to return home; that coming up the river they heard the news of a launch lying on a creek on our way back, and he sent Pedro de Salas on board a small boat with four men to seize the same and everybody on board, and bring it without letting anybody escape; that he seized the launch and says he did not find anybody in it, nor in a ranch they had on the banks; that he thought they had taken to the woods when they saw them coming; that from thence they continued their way up the river until they cast anchor in this port; that that is the truth under his oath, and that he affirms and ratifies it, and will do so again if wanted; that he is forty-two years old, and signs with his Honor.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

ANTONIO RAVELO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

*Rule.*—After the preceding affidavits their Honors found better to improve the same by receiving the statement of the mustee, who came along with the Aruaca Indians, and was apprehended by Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Flores, making this person and the other Aruaca Indians answer about the questions that they may see fit to set to them.

It was so ordered and signed before me, by their Honors, on the thirtieth day of the month of September of the same year.

JUAN VALDES.

Before me—

LORENZO CORONADO.

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

*Confession of the Mustee.*—In this city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on the same day, month and year, their Honors, in order to improve the preceding investigation, made appear before them and me, the Notary Public, one of the prisoners brought by Lieutenant Don Juan de Flores, who being asked by his Honor if he was a mustee, and of what religion, where was he born, and what was his name, what business brought

him to the Orinoco, and by whom he had been sent, he answered: That he was an Aruaca Indian, from a father and mother also Indians; that they have no religion whatever; that he was born in Guacapou, near the Esquivo Post; that his name is Yana; that he came to the river Orinoco for fishing, and that he was sent by a Hollander called Fordull.

Asked what was the nature of his cargo and to whom did the schooner and launch seized belong, and for what purpose they came to the river, he answered: That his cargo was only a little barbasco (a vegetable fish poison) and a barrel of salt; that the schooner belongs also to the Esquivo Colony and is the property of a Hollander called Monk; that the launch likewise belongs to the same Colony, and was sent by a Hollander by the name of Bobro, and that both came on to do the same business of fishing.

Asked if he knew whether in the Barima creek there are any Hollanders purchasing Poytos, and if so, at what distance were they from the place where the schooner was seized, he answered: That he knew that in the said creek of Barima there are four Hollanders purchasing Poytos, and that in their company there are many Carib Indians; that from the place where the schooner was seized, to where they are, there is a distance of five or six days' navigation; that the creek where said Hollanders are found is very narrow, as he understands by the information he has from other Indians of his own tribe, and that no large vessels can go through; that the Hollanders that purchased Poytos do not belong to the Esquivo Colony, but to that of Surinam, because in that of Esquivo the Governor does not allow any Hollander to come out and make this kind of trade. This deposition being finished, the deponent said he could not tell how old he was, and did not sign, as he did not know how to do so.

Signed by their Honors before me.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

*Rule.*—In the city of Santo Thome, in the Guayana, on the first day of October, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty, the Castillian Captain of His Majesty, Don Juan Valdes, and the Royal Lieutenant, Don Lorenzo Coronado, said: That the foregoing acts being sufficient, about the seizure of one schooner and two launches, belonging to the Esquivo Colony, introduced in this Orinoco river on the pretext of fishing, but in reality to go on practicing the illicit commerce and the purchase of Poytos from the Carib tribe, we rule that an authentic copy of these acts be made and the originals be sent to the Superior Tribunal of the Treasury; and that in regard to the mustee, Jean Baptista, well known, although in his confession he denies his name and to be a mustee, calling himself an Indian of the Aruaca tribe, and dyeing himself red with annotto, maliciously, so as not to be recognized, his Honor the Commander, ordered that he be kept secure in irons in the Castle until further orders from his Honor, the Governor and Captain General, furnishing him the daily ration of a dime, as the Reverend Father Prefect refuses to admit him, on account of the serious evils brought about among the people by the mustees whom they have received before, and who had run away afterwards, carrying along with them several persons of those already settled; that in regard to the Indians, he ordered to have them sent to said Reverend Father Prefect, so as to be distributed among the several settlements under his charge, and increase the population in the way that has been regulated; that in regard to the part of the cargo consisting of fish, the Royal Lieutenant will be in charge of the sale on account of the Royal Treasury, as this is a kind of article that loses in weight and quantity.

It was so ordered, and signed before me by their Honors.

JUAN VALDEZ.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUERTO,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*

This copy agrees with the original acts kept at the Royal Treasury Office, in order to be forwarded to the Captain General and Governor and to the Officers of the Royal Treasury in the city of Cumana. It has been faithfully and lawfully taken to the letter in twenty-three folios, in ordinary paper, for want of the stamped kind. Signed on the third day of October, of the year seventeen hundred and sixty.

In testimony whereof I sign.

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

Don Jose Diguja Villagomes, a Colonel of the Royal Armies, Commissioner of the Royal Expedition of Boundaries, and Captain General of these Provinces of New Andalusia, Cumana, New Barcelona, the Main-land and Guayana, its coasts and fortresses, Superintendent in the same, and of the branch of Crusades by the King our Lord ; Don Pedro Luis Martinez de Gordon y Lugo, Accomptant, and Don Antonio de Alcala, Royal Official Treasurers of His Majesty, etc. :

Whereas the preceding acts refer to the seizure of a schooner, two launches, and two curiaras (small Indian boats), made by the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Dios Gonzales de Flores, in the Barima Creek, at its mouth, we have definitely ruled that the same, with the inventory contained therein, be inserted to the letter, and they are as follows :

*Inventory.*—On the same day, month, and year, in compliance with the above rule, their Honors went on board the vessels, lying at anchor in this port, at the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, in order to pass the visit of said vessels, and being on board, the following inventory was made of everything found by them on board :

Firstly. One schooner, with main and foremasts, with its shrouds without sails.

A small anchor and hemp rope.

Five barrels of salt fish.

One launch, with mast and canvas shrouds, and a round sail of coarse cloth.

Four barrels of powdered salt.

One curiara, answering for a small boat to the wash-boarded launch, six hatchets, ten short, coarse, Indian drawers, six bundles of beads, and an old case.

Another launch, with mast, canvas shroud, and a round sail.

A small anchor, with hemp rope.

One curiara, answering for a small boat.

And having found nothing else, the inventory was finished, and their Honors ordered the discharge of everything at the Royal Treasury stores; and in regard to the fish, the Royal Lieutenant Officer will find a suitable person to sell it, keeping a regular account of the sale, and allowing the usual commission to the agent for his trouble.

It was so ruled and provided by their Honors, signing before me, the Notary Public.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

*Final rule.*—In the city of Cumana, on the twenty-fourth day of April, seventeen hundred and sixty-one, Don Jose Diguja Villagomez, Colonel of the Royal Armies, Commissioner of the Royal Boundary Expedition, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces and of New Andalusia, Cumana, New Barcelona, Main-land, and Guayana, their coasts and fortresses, and in them Superintendent of the branch of Crusades by the King our Lord; Don Pedro Luis Martinez de Gordon and Lugo, accomptant, and Don Antonio de Alcala, Treasurer, and both Officers of the same by His Majesty, after having seen these proceedings by Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Captain Commander, and Don Lorenzo Coronado, Lieutenant of their Honors in the fortress of Guayana, about the seizure effected by the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan

de Dios Gonzales de Flores, of one schooner, two launches, two curiaras, and several other articles contained in their inventory, at the Barima Creek, at its mouth, in virtue of the order and power allowed to him by said Commander, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Judge General of the revenue, with the opinion given to them by the Licenciado, Don Jose Fernando Espinosa de los Monteros, a lawyer of the Royal Audience and Chancellor of the District; and taking everything into consideration, their Honors have agreed to conform themselves, as they do, with the above opinion, holding the same as good, and declaring forfeited and to be a good prize the already mentioned schooner, two launches, two curiaras, and the other articles, and as such belonging all to the Royal Treasury, to be divided and apportioned and applied according to the law eleventh, book eighth, title seventeenth, of the laws of Indias, and to the model sent for their observance, with the Royal cedula of the nineteenth of February of the year seventeen hundred and fifty-seven, ordering that letters rogatory be forwarded, with insertion of the inventories, and of this commission, to said Commander and Lieutenant, so as to proceed to appoint two experts of conscience and intelligence; that after having accepted and being sworn, apprise the same and bring them to public auction, after proclaiming the sale through the public crier in the customary manner for the term of four days consecutively, so that the sale and award to the highest bidder or bidders be closed on the fourth day, and the proceeds be delivered and entered, by way of deposit, in the Royal Treasury, and the original acts about the same matter be forwarded to this Superior Tribunal, with a sworn statement of the legitimate and true costs expended in the seizure of said vessels and effects, in order to liquidate said confiscation, preceded by a statement made by the present Notary Public of the costs incurred. And as the Aruaca Indians seized at the mouth of said creek have been delivered to the Reverend Fathers of those Missions, so as to people the same and distribute them, his Honor ought to rule, and did rule, that said Indians be kept for the above purpose in the said Missions; and that the mustee Jean Baptist, who, as it is very well known, will be kept in prison until the

end of this process, the said Commander, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, before a Notary Public of that city, will make a summary investigation to find out his name, country, origin, the religion he professes, the trade in which he occupies his time, and the offences he has committed, and if he is shown to be guilty his case must be substantiated and tried according to law, and if it turns out to be innocent he will be sent to the remotest Mission existing, so as to be catechized, and for that purpose his Honor empowers said Commander to follow the present instructions on separate acts, the heading of which will be a true copy, duly authenticated, of this rule.

So was ordered and ruled as a final decision—signed before me.

DON JOSE DIGUJA.

PEDRO LUIS MARTINEZ DE GORDON Y LUGO.

DON ANTONIO DE ALCALA.

Before me—

FRANCISCO RAMIREZ,

*Notary Public, and Royal Lieutenant of the Treasury.*

Therefore, in order to carry out in due form the preceding rule we order the Commander and Lieutenant of the fortress of Guayana to see the above-inserted rule be carried out in every particular in the part appertaining to him.

It was so ruled, in the city of Cumana, on the 24th day of April, in the year seventeen hundred and one.

JOSE DIGUJA.

PEDRO LUIS MARTINEZ DE GORDON Y LUGO.

ANTONIO DE ALCALA.

By command of his Honor.

FRANCISCO RAMIREZ,

*Notary Public, and Royal Lieutenant of the Treasury.*

In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the third day of the month of February, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, Don Juan de Dios Valdez, Castillian Captain Commander of His Majesty, and the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers, Don Lorenzo Coronado, said that inasmuch as the vessels seized by the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan

de Dios de Flores, in the Barima creek, belonging to several persons of the Dutch Colony of Esquivo, under sufficient instructions of said Commander, sent in a war schooner, are deteriorating in the chief port where they are lying at anchor, on account of the sun and showers, especially one of said vessels, now almost worthless, on account of her old and worn out timber, their Honors, in order to avoid further injury and the loss that the same vessels may cause to the Royal Treasury, on account of the above reasons and the action of the waters injuring them, it was found proper to apprise them by competent and conscientious experts, and proclaim them by the public crier during three days, so as to be sold at auction to the highest bidder; and likewise to prevent any further expense, to have them appraised and the effects sold at auction, according to the inventory, found in the above proceedings, about the seizure of said vessels, as they are few and of no high value; that the proceeds of all will be deposited and secured in the Royal Treasury, awaiting the instructions of the Governor, Captain General, and Officers of the Royal Treasury of His Majesty in the Province of Cumana, to whom the original acts have been forwarded, with an account of what has taken place.

And as the circumstances of skill, intelligence, and integrity concur in the persons of Don Vivente Franco and Don Jose de Salvatierra, their Honors appointed them both as such appraisers and ordered to have them notified and sworn, after their acceptance, promising before every thing else to fulfil their charge with fidelity and lawfully; said notification and the other steps will be performed by the present Notary Public, after making an inventory of every thing that may be delivered and appraised and of the above-mentioned vessels and contents.

So it was ordered, and ruled and signed by his Honor before me.

Before me—

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*A Notary Public, and of the Royal Revenue.*



*Acceptance and oath*—Shortly afterwards, I, the Notary Public, called at the residence of Captain Don Vicente Franco, to to whom I notified of his appointment, as apprizer, and he accepted and was duly sworn, promising to faithfully discharge his duty to the best of his ability, without any bias or fraud, and signed with me.

VICENTE FRANCO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTA,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

*Another acceptance.*—And shortly afterwards I called at the residence of Don Jose de Salvatierra, whom I notified of his appointment as apprizer and he said that he accepted, and was duly sworn, promising to discharge his duties faithfully and to the best of his ability, and signed with me.

JOSE LANDRE AND SALVATIERRA.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTA,  
*A Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

*Apprizement.*—Don Vicente Franco and Don Jose de Salvatierra, the appointed apprizers, appeared and said, that in virtue of their appointment, acceptance, and oath, they went to the chief port of this city, where the vessels to be apprized are lying at anchor, and being on board of the same they examined them and proceeded to apprize the same in the following manner :

Firstly.—One launch, rigged as a schooner, with the hull damaged, the main-mast in good order, the foremast damaged, with the canvas shrouds still in good use, and the small anchor with its corresponding hemp rope still serviceable ; we apprized the whole to be worth one hundred and twenty-five dollars.

One launch, with main-mast, two canvas shrouds, one round sail of coarse cloth and every thing almost worn out, with one curiara damaged at the bottom,

answering as small boat, the hull of said launch being aground; we apprized and value all to be worth twenty dollars.

Another launch with its mast, two canvas shrouds, a very small round sail of coarse cloth, a small anchor with only one hook wanting, with its hemp rope, all still serviceable, with a small curiara, answering for a boat; we value and apprise at eighty dollars.

And having nothing else to apprise at the port, we went to the Royal Treasury store, and examined four barrels of powdered salt, and found that they each contained a fanega (112 lbs. weight) and a half, making it in all six fanegas, which we valued at fourteen reals each, a total of ten dollars and four reals.

Six hatchets at six reals each, making in all four dollars and four reals.

Ten Indian drawers of coarse cloth, a yard and a half in each, at three reals a yard, making in all three dollars and six reals.

Eight knives and six bundles of beads, valued at five dollars and two reals.

And having nothing else to apprise, we delivered the above valuation to his Honor, in the presence of the Notary Public.

Guayana, February the fourth, seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

VICENTE FRANCO.

JOSE LANDRE SALVATIERRA.

Before me—

LUIS DE LA PUENTE,

*A Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

*Rule.*—In view of the above apprizement made by Captain Vicente Franco and Don Jose Salvatierra; their Honors, the Commander, Don Juan Valdes and Don Lorenzo Coronado, Lieutenant of the Royal Officers, ordered that the same articles apprized be proclaimed for sale for three consecutive days in

the accustomed place, so as to be sold on the fourth day at public auction and awarded to the highest bidder, under the understanding that the payment must be made in actual cash to the Royal Treasurer; to that end the present Notary Public shall have the sale proclaimed by the public crier, attended by a drummer, as customary, so as to bring the fact to the public notice. It was so ordered and ruled by their Honors on the third day of February, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, before me.

JUAN VALDES.  
LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

1. *Notice by the Public Crier.*—On the fourth day of February, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, I, the Notary Public of this city and of the Tribunal of the Royal Treasury, standing at the public place, where sales are proclaimed, and through the public crier Antonio Biamonte, a colored slave, who acted as a crier, having no regularly appointed crier, and at five o'clock in the afternoon, I had him proclaim for sale all the effects contained in the inventory and the apprizement of the same as above, and proclaiming in high and intelligible voice, asking who was willing to bid for a launch rigged as a schooner, with a main and foremast, with a small anchor tied by a hemp rope; one launch, with its masts and canvas shrouds and sail of coarse cloth, with a small boat; and another launch, with a mast and canvas shroud and coarse cloth sail, with a small anchor tied with a rope; with a curiara, answering for a small boat; four barrels of powdered salt, containing six fanegas of the same; six hatchets; ten Indian drawers of coarse white cloth; eight knives; six bundles of beads, all to be sold on account of the Royal Treasury, giving the preference to the highest bidder, under the condition of making the payment in cash to the Royal Treasury; and although it was repeated several times, nobody appeared to bid under any circumstances.

The act was performed in the presence of Don Joaquin de Mieres and Don Santiago Delgado, military men of this Castle.

DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public.*

---

2. *Second Notice.*—In the said city of Guayana, on the fifth day of the same month and year, I, the present Notary Public, and of the Tribunal of the Royal Treasury, standing in the same place and hour announced before by the public crier, continued the notices in the same way as the first, in like form and manner, proclaiming several times the sale until sunset, having had no bid from anybody, under any conditions.

I attest to the fact, and sign with the attendant witnesses, Jose Hernandez and Andres Torrico, military men.

Before me—

DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public.*

---

3. *Third notice.*—In the said city of the Guayana, on the sixth day of the same month and year, being a Notary Public, standing at the same place and at the same hour above quoted, I caused the public crier to repeat several times and proclaim the sale of the articles contained in the first, observing in all and every respect the formalities of the previous notices, until sunset, and having had no bidders the act was suspended and signed by me in the presence of the witnesses, Don Joaquin de Mieres and Andres Torrico, military men.

DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public.*

---

*Auction sale.*—In this city of the Guayana, on the seventh day of the same month and year, the Captain Commander, Don Juan de Dios Valdes and the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, Don Lorenzo Coronado, attending to preside over the act of the auction sale to be made of all the articles contained in the present apprizement, after having been previously proclaimed to be sold, on account of the Royal Treasury, in compliance with the orders of their Honors, by the above rule of

February the third, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one; at about five o'clock in the afternoon, and standing at the door of the Treasury Office, situated in the Public Square of this city, in the form of the Tribunal of their Honors and before me, the Notary Public, it was proclaimed by Antonio Biamonte, a colored slave, acting as a public crier, the sale at auction of all the goods contained in the three previous notices, which were to be sold on account of the Royal Treasury, repeating every item in a high, intelligible voice, and expressing the value of each one, according to the apprizement; bids were asked from all the attendant parties, and no bid having been made until after repeated calls, Manuel Hernandez, a resident of La Guaira, came out and made a bid for the price of the valuation for the launch rigged as a schooner, with her apparels, for the other, almost worthless one, with the small, damaged boat, and the third of middle use, with the round sail and apparel contained in the apprizement, the six hatchets, ten Indian drawers, six bundles of beads, four barrels of powdered salt, all of which amounted to two hundred and forty-nine dollars. Having had no other cash bids besides this one, it was admitted by their Honors, after proclaiming repeatedly and calling whether there was any other bidder, until sunset, their Honors called for once, twice and three times for a higher bid, and having none other the sale was allowed and awarded to the said Manuel Hernandez as the only bidder who, being present, said that he was ready to make the payment in cash, and it was done, and their Honors signed and not the bidder, who did not know how to write.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Before me—

LUIS LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

*Certificate of payment.*—On the eighth day of the month of February, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, before me, a Notary Public and of the Royal Treasury, appeared at

the Treasury Office Manuel Hernandez, a resident of this city, to whom I certify that I know, and said: That having purchased at auction yesterday the three vessels and the several articles sold, and received them to his full satisfaction, he exhibited and did exhibit the amount of two hundred and forty-nine dollars, which was his bid and award, for which I acknowledge the present receipt, and hand over to him the present certificate of payment in due form. He did not sign, as he did not know how to write. At his request one of the witnesses signed for him before me—

JOSE LANDRE Y  
SALVATIERRA,

*at the request of Manuel Hernandez.*

Before me—

LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE,  
*Notary Public, and of the Royal Treasury.*

---

*Rule.*—In the city of Santo Thomé, de la Guayana, on the twenty-seventh day of May, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, the Captain-Commander, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, and the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, Don Lorenzo Coronado, said: That they had just received a dispatch from the Governor and Captain-General of Royal Officers of His Majesty for the Provinces of Cumana, confirming the forfeiture and award in favor of the Royal Treasury of the vessels seized at the Barima creek by the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Dios de Flores, and directing the apportionment of the same, according to the Royal laws, preceded by the appraisement and sale at auction after the appointment of intelligent and conscientious experts for the valuation; and as all those things have been anticipated for the reasons above mentioned in the rule of February third, they ought to rule, and did rule, that an authenticated copy be made and kept in this city of the original act forwarded to his Honor at the city of Cumana, making a sworn statement at the foot of this, by the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, of the proceeds of the five barrels of salt fish, which were to be sold, according to what was ruled

at the time, and of the expenses and costs incurred. It was so ruled by their Honors and signed before witnesses, as the present Notary Public has ceased in his functions.

JUAN VALDES.

LORENZO CORONADO.

LUIS CENTENO.

DIEGO IGNACIO MARINOS.

I, the undersigned, swear and certify, as Lieutenant of the Royal Officers of this Fortress of this Guayana, that the five barrels of salt fish of the size of flour barrels were sold, on account of whomsoever might be favored with the award of the forfeiture of the same, with the other articles contained in the present act, amounting in all to twenty-five arrobas (twenty-five pounds weight), at the rate of five arrobas per barrel at five reals per arroba (of twenty-five pounds), which is the general price for river fish; the proceeds of said twenty-five arrobas amounted to fifteen dollars and five reals, which together with the two hundred and forty-nine dollars, the proceeds of the other effects, make in all two hundred and sixty four dollars and five reals, errors excepted, etc., and as it agrees with the proceeds of said fish, I give the present on the twenty-seventh day of March in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

LORENZO CORONADO.

*Sworn statement made and signed by me, the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers, about the costs incurred in these proceedings, as follows:*

Firstly, for three cargoes and a half of casave furnished by the Commander, at the rate of three dollars a cargo, amount to ten dollars and four reals.

For nine arrobas of beef furnished by said Commander, at the rate of six reals an arroba, amount to six dollars and six reals.

For two hundred and forty-two (days) subsistence of the imprisoned mustce for rations, from the twenty-eighth day of Semptember, inclusive, to the twenty-seventh day of May of the following year, at the rate of a real per ration of each day, thirty dollars and two reals.

For thirty-three folios copied and certified in the present proceedings, remaining at this Treasury Office.

The above costs are the same as incurred in this city of Guayana, until the twenty-ninth of May in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

LORENZO CORONADO.

---

It agrees with the original acts forwarded to the city of Cunana, and left in testimony herewith with the intervention of the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, after having been verified and corrected in thirty-three folios, exclusive of the despatch accompanying the same.

In testimony whercof, we sign the present, on the second day of Junc, seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

LORENZO CORONADO.

---

Don Jose Diguja Villagomez, Colonel of the Royal Army, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of New Andalusia, New Barcelona, The Main-land, and Guayana; Don Pedro Luis Martinez de Gordon y Lugo, Accomptant, and Don Antonio de Alcala, Treasurer, Royal Officers of the Treasury of this City and the Provinces, by the King our Lord, etc. :

Whereas the acts promoted for the seizure of a schooner, two launches and two curiaras in the river Orinoco, we have ruled that the liquidation made, as well as the apprizement, of costs is as follows :



*Expenses.*—Sworn statement made by me, the Lieutenant of Royal officers, about the costs incurred by this expedition, which were as follows :

First.—For three and a half cargoes of casave furnished by the Commander, at the rate of three dollars a cargo, ten dollars and four reals.

Nine arrobas (twenty-five pound weight) of beef furnished by said Commander, at the rate of six reals per arroba, six dollars and six reals.

For two hundred and forty-two days subsistence of the imprisoned mustee for rations from the twenty-eighth day of September, inclusive, to the twenty-seventh day of May, in the following year, at the rate of a real per day, thirty dollars and two reals.

For thirty-three folios of authenticated copies of these acts remaining in the Royal Treasury.

Said costs are correct, and the same as were incurred in this city of Guayana, up to the twenty-ninth day of May, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

LORENZO CORONADO.

Statement of costs of these acts made by me, the undersigned Notary Public, in virtue of the appointment made of myself, as follows :

First.—To the credit of the Royal Treasury for twelve folded sheets of stamped paper of the fourth class, wanted for the conclusion of these acts, at seventeen maravedis, six reals .....	6.
For twenty reals paid from the Royal Treasury to the assessor, in compliance with the rule of the sixth of last November, as exhibited herewith.....	20.
To the Lieutenant of his Honor, Don Lorenzo Coronado, credited for ten signatures in these acts and statements, at the rate of twenty-	

four maravedis for every attendance to receive four sworn statements at one real and two confessions of the two prisoners, at nine reals each, being in all.....	28.02
For attendance at the port on board of the embarkations and their inventory, eighteen reals, and nine more for the attendance to the auction sale, on the day of the sale.....	27.00
Due to the apprizers, Don Vicente Franco and Don Jose Landre de Salvatierra, for their steps and apprizement at nine reals each one, eighteen reals.....	18.
Due to the original Notary Public for authenticating six acts at twenty-four maravedis each, and for his attendance to six affidavits, including six acceptances of the apprizers, the first at twenty-four maravedis, and the rest at sixteen; two notifications and acts at forty-eight; twelve original folios used in writing the acts and affidavits, and thirty folios of copies, according to the entry and statement of expenses, at thirty-six maravedis; and thirty-two of the seal, and three reals for common paper used in said copies and original acts all worth.....	58.18
For the attendance to take two confessions to the prisoners, at nine reals each, and eighteen for the inventory made at the river of the vessel and other articles, all of which is worth.....	36.
For the attendance to the publications concerning the auction sale, at nine reals each, and four for the receipt of the articles and exhibit of their value, and sixteen to the public crier, for the four evenings attendance to the publication of notices of the auction sale, at four reals each, all amounting to .....	56.

Due me, the Notary Public, for authenticating four acts on the liquidation to be made, including the statement of the present act, at forty maravedis, and the rest at twenty-four; and for countersigning the two rogatory letters that have been sent, at forty; a notification and act, forty-eight maravedis; six original folded sheets, written in the original acts, and the liquidation that has to be entered, and three folios of the copy delivered to the Royal Officers, at twenty; the one sent to the assessor, at thirty-six maravedis; sixty-four of the two seals and nine folios of the despatches to be forwarded containing this valuation, at fifty-one and one real spent in paper for said copy, amounting in all to .....	53.25
For the time and work employed in this valuation .....	6.00
Making the total sum of three hundred and nine reals and eleven maravedis, as it appears to be the sum due, errors excepted, &c...	<u>R.309.11</u>

This valuation I have made according to the Royal rates in force, and in the usual way observed by regulation, in this city of Cumana, on the twenty-first day of July, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

FRANCISCO RAMIREZ,  
*A Notary Public for the Governor.*

*Rule for the division and liquidation.*—In the city of Cumana, on the twenty-second day of July, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, Don Jose Diguja Villagomez, Colonel of the Royal Armies, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of New Andalusia, New Barcelona, The Main-land, and Guayana; Don Pedro Luis Martinez de Gordon y Lugo,

Accomptant, and Don Antonio de Alcala, Treasurer, Royal Officers of the Treasury of this city and the Provinces by the King our Lord, having seen the preceding acts sent to this Tribunal by Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Castillian Captain and Commander of the Garrison of Guayana, and Don Lorenzo Coronado, Lieutenant of their Honors in the Treasury of that place, about the auction sale, to the amount of two hundred and sixty-four dollars and five reals received as proceeds of three launches, with their appurtenances, four barrels of salt, six hatchets, ten Indian drawers, eight knives, six bundles of beads, and two curiaras, answering for small boats to said launches; all seized by the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Dios Flores, in the Barima Creek of the Orinoco river, and their Honors said: That in compliance with the law eleventh of the eighth book, title seventeenth, of the laws of Indias, having in mind the Royal cedula, dated at Aranjuez, on the eleventh of July, seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, and the model form accompanying the same, they made the account and division and liquidation of said confiscation in the following form :

Principal proceeds of said confiscation, according to the auction sale and statement of the Lieutenant Royal Officers of Guayana, two hundred and sixty-four dollars and five reals. Deducting the Royal dues to His Majesty in the shape of custom-house duties at fifteen per cent.—thirty-nine dollars five reals and eighteen and three-quarters maravedis—making seventeen reals and eighteen and a half maravedis, making in all seventeen hundred ninety-six and a half maravedis.

To the windward squadron, at two per cent., five dollars two reals eleven maravedis, making in all two reals one and a half maravedis, and a total value of one thousand four hundred and nine and a half maravedis.

To the old and modern excise (alcabala), at four per cent., ten dollars four reals twenty-three and a

quarter maravedis, making in all eighty-four reals and twenty-three maravedis, say two thousand eight hundred sixty-nine and a quarter maravedis. That all three charges (or dues) amount to fifty-five dollars four reals and nineteen and a quarter maravedis.

After that deduction it remains a total sum of two hundred and nine dollars fourteen and a half maravedis.

Deducted likewise forty-seven dollars four reals of costs incurred in Guayana, according to the statement made by said Lieutenant of the Royal Officers, and thirty-eight dollars five reals and eleven maravedis of the cost of the legal proceedings according to the preceding valuation, both amounts making a total of eighty-six dollars one real and eleven maravedis.

The remaining net sum amounts to one hundred and twenty-two dollars seven reals three and a half maravedis.

From said sum a sixth part belongs to the Judges who passed sentence of confiscation, in all twenty dollars three reals and twenty-eight and three-quarters and a half maravedis.

From this remainder reduced to one hundred and two dollars three reals eight and three-quarters maravedis—

Deduct the third part, corresponding to the person who denounced the act, and if there is no such person it will be added to the portion belonging to the Royal Treasury, amounting to thirty-four dollars one real two and three-quarter maravedis.

And from this remainder reduced to sixty-eight dollars two reals and six maravedis—

Must be deducted a fourth part bonus, belonging to those who effected the seizure of the articles confiscated, amounting to seventeen dollars seventeen and a quarter and a half maravedis.

VOL. II, VEN.—5

From where it remains yet the sum of fifty-one dollars one real twenty-two and a half maravedis.

To which it is added, in favor of the Royal Treasury, the third part deducted for the person who denounced the default, thirty-four dollars one real two and three-quarters maravedis. So that it remains in favor of His Majesty, out of the present confiscation, eighty-five dollars two reals and twenty-five and a quarter maravedis, making six hundred and eighty-two reals twenty-five and a quarter and a half maravedis, or twenty-three thousand two hundred and thirteen and a quarter and a half maravedis.

And to carry out this liquidation the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers will proceed to make the charges shown in his books and those of the Stations, where they belong, in favor of the Royal Treasury, so as to pay the expenses incurred in this expedition and the costs of the legal proceedings belonging to that Tribunal. He will deliver to the Commander of that place a fourth part, belonging to those who effected the seizure, so as to distribute the same among them, and send to the Royal Treasurer's Office the sixth part, belonging to the Justices, and costs of the proceedings, belonging to that city. Rogatory letters will be sent to the said Commander and Lieutenant, in order to have them both to carry out, with the present insertion of the statement and valuation of said costs and expenses, the tenor of this rule of His Honor. It was so ordered and signed.

DON JOSE DIGUJA.

PEDRÓ LUIS MARTINEZ DE GORDON Y LUGO.

DON ANTONIO DE ALCALA.

Before me—

FRANCISCO RAMIREZ,

*Royal Notary Public and Lieutenant of the Treasury.*

---

Therefore, in order to carry out the contents of the above rule, we order to the Commander and Lieutenant of the Fortress of

Guayana to take notice of the above rule, and carry it into effect faithfully and punctually, in regard to every thing therein expressed, according to the present despatch, given and signed in the city of Cumana on the twenty-second day of July, seventeen hundred and sixty-one.

JOSE DIGUJA.

PEDRO LUIS MARTINEZ DE GORDON Y LUGO.

ANTONIO DE ALCALA.

By command of His Honor—

FRANCISCO RAMIREZ,

*Notary Public and Lieutenant of the Treasury.*

---

In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the third day of September, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, in compliance with the rule of His Honor contained in the preceding act, the Commander Don Juan Valdes and the Lieutenant of Royal Officers said: that they were to give and gave a full compliance to the same, and that in regard to the allowance granted the Officers who made the seizure, the Commander said that he would receive and did receive the seventeen dollars and seventeen maravedis, to be distributed among the said creditors. As to the rest of the contents of said despatch, the Lieutenant-Commander of Royal Officers took charge of the distribution of the proceeds of the confiscation in the several corresponding stations. It was so agreed and ruled, signing herewith.

JUAN VALDES.

• LORENZO CORONADO.

LUIS CENTENO DE BRITO.

JOSE FRANCISCO DE VENTANCOURT.

This copy agrees with the original document existing in the General Archives of Indias, in stand 131, case 7, docket 17. Seville; the 25th day of December, 1890. The Director of Archives. Carlos Jimenez Placer—[here is a flourish]. Seal. General Archive of Indias.

The undersigned, Consul-General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Senor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of Indias.

Madrid, 9th of January 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Senor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul-General of Venezuela in Spain on the above date.

Caracas, March the sixth, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

Ministry of Foreign Affairs.



## No. 7.

[Translation.]

Stand 131.—Case 2.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF INDIA — (SEVILLE.)

---

**1770.—Letter No. 41 from Don Pedro J. de Urrutia to Don Julian de Arriaga, informing him of the complaint of the Minister from Holland, on account of the proceedings of the Spaniards established in the Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo.**

(Dated in Cumana, May 10, 1770.)

---

*Original No. 41.—The Governor of Cumana, in compliance with a Royal order quoted, reports, with the justifying documents he refers to, what is offered and seems to him to be the facts as contained in said papers, about the complaint made by the Minister of Holland against the conduct of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo, so that His Majesty, in view of everything, may decide what his pleasure may be on the subject.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: On the thirtieth of March of the present year, as shown by the triplicate herewith, I made your Excellency acquainted with receipt of the Royal order of the twenty-third of September ultimo, accompanied with the paper in which the Minister of Holland complained of the conduct of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo, stating the facts, and I promised to address the report received, with the corresponding grounds justifying the same, for your knowledge and instruction.

In compliance, I inform your Excellency that the only facts that I have found to have occurred before the separation of the Province of Guayana from this Government, were due to

the same Hollanders of the neighboring Colony of Esquivo, close to the Missions of the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers of said Province; as in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, during the Government *ad interim* of Don Nicolas de Castro, when the Prefect of the same Mission sent a dispatch minutely informing the then Commander of that Fortress of the serious injuries and death which occurred when the Caribs of the desert, influenced by the Esquivo Hollanders, had killed many of the Guaica Indians in his new Mission, in the District of Hauchica; that fearing yet greater evils around the other settlements, he applied for an immediate remedy, as the chief cause of these evils was the constant suggestions and persuasions of the same Hollanders to the Caribs, in order to avoid their being reduced to any settlement with the Spaniards and foster enmity against the holy purpose of restraining the abominable commerce, kept through the Caribs, giving them goods and iron utensils in exchange for Poyto Indians (which means slaves); said Caribs are in the habit of waging war, and apprehend the Poytos, so as to sell them to said Colony of Esquivo; the consequence was to prevent the progress and extension of the Gospel, as well as the reduction of the gentiles, especially as the Hollanders, trespassing the boundary of their Colony, came to extend their territory, in order to continue this kind of commerce within the dominions of His Majesty and in the neighborhood and frontiers of the last Missions; this fact is proved by the establishment, with permission of the Governor Lorenzo Storens Gravesende, of a Guard house in the island called Caramucura, in the Cuyuni river, within the territory of the Missions (which undoubtedly is the same as the Hollanders call in their said paper the Cayoeniy river), because this place never has been considered as belonging to the Colony of Esquivo, as stated in the said dispatch of the Prefect; the Commander of the Guayana, after having been notified of all these facts, sent an expedition of troops to the Cuyuni River with the necessary instructions to dislodge the Hollanders from that Post, and to seize the Indian slaves, or Poytos, and any others to be found there, as it was carried out, notwithstanding the resist-

ance of the Hollander in command of the Post, and the death of one of the soldiers and the wounding of another pending the conflict, at the end of that expedition; that on this affair the Commander instituted an investigation of the facts showing what had happened, and sent the same, with the Hollanders arrested in the act of resistance, to the said Governor *ad interim*, Don Nicolas de Castro, who took the opinion of a learned assessor, who extended the same in writing, advising to have the proceedings forwarded to His Majesty and the Royal Supreme Council of Indias; but there is no evidence showing whether he did so or not, or what became of the arrested Hollanders.

The Governor of Esquivo, having been informed of the facts and of the imprisonment of the two Hollanders at the Cuyuni river, sent a despatch to the same Commander of Guayana, claiming the same, who forwarded it without returning any answer to the already mentioned Governor *ad interim*, Don Nicolas de Castro, who answered the same to that of Esquivo. The testimony herewith shows everything herein stated, as your Excellency will find it.

After the answer given by Don Nicolas de Castro, the Governor of Esquivo sent a case addressed to the Commander of Guayana, who finding out that it contained one map and a despatch, without any further act closed it and returned it to the Governor by the same bearers, as everything appears stated in the testimony herewith accompanied. No other documents are found at this Government office, nor in the Public Archives, besides the contents of these two testimonies and a Royal order, a copy of which was sent bearing date March the thirtieth, seventeen hundred and fifty-three, by the Government of Madrid, and notified to the Marquis of la Ensenada as a remedy to the injury and death occasioned by the Caribs in the said Missions of Guayana under the influence of the Esquivo Hollanders, and the other reasons stated in the same. His Majesty will show his pleasure about this subject.

May our Lord keep the person of your Excellency in His Holy guard, as it is my desire. Cumana, May the tenth, seventeen hundred and seventy.

Most Excellent Sir, kissing the hand of your Excellency, his most obedient servant,

PEDRO JOSEPH DE URRUTIA.

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailey Fray Don Julian de Arriaga.

The foregoing is a true copy of the original document kept in the General Archives of the Indias, in the Stand 131, Case 2, Docket 17. Seville, January 12th, 1891. The Chief of the Archives, Carlos Jimenez Placer—[here is a flourish]. Seal. General Archives of Indias.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Senor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of Indias.

Madrid, January 27th, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the above date.

Caracas, March the 6th, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

## No. VIII.

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF INDIES.—(SEVILLE. )

---

 1768.
 

---

**Abstract of the proceedings instituted about the pretensions of the Minister of Holland, in trying to assume any rights of domain on the borders of the Esquivo Colony, also stating that the subjects of Spain established on the Orinoco disturb and prevent the Hollanders from fishing.**

39 folded sheets.

---

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

Abstract of the proceedings instituted about the pretensions of the Minister of Holland in trying to assume any rights of domain in the Esquivo Colony and of fishing in that part of the Rio Negro, and stating that the subjects of His Majesty, the King of Spain, established on the Orinoco, disturb and prevent the Hollanders from fishing there. To said proceedings the antecedents of another investigation is added in reference to the remittance to the Council, as a reserved matter, of an order of January the fifteenth, in the year 1768, with a despatch from the Ambassador of England, in which he proposed to make restitution of the negroes, coming to our islands in America from theirs, and to fix public notices for the purpose, so as to be maturely examined by the Council, consulting His Majesty, in

order to hear his pleasure on the subject taking in consideration the report of the Treasurer and the answer of the Attorneys of the Revenue ; the consultation to His Majesty was addressed on the 9th of May, 1768, by the Council, in the way they thought proper, bearing in mind the convention concluded and ratified by His Majesty with the King of Denmark upon the same subject of deserters, between the island of Porto Rico and those of Saint Cross, Saint Thomas, and Saint John ; said consultation is still pending and awaiting the resolution of His Majesty.

### Statement.

Case of the day.  Letter H.  No. 1.       Letter H.  At mar- gin.   Docket of antecedents pending; do. Docket of the day.  Letter do.  No. 3.  No. 4.	Paragraph 1. Having sent to the Council, as a reserved matter, together with the Royal order of September 10, 1769, a despatch from the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco, against the Dutch colony of Esquivio, in order to examine the same and consult His Majesty about the extension of those boundaries and the alleged right by the Republic to fish at the entrance of the Orinoco river ; the Council ordered by decree of the 12th of said month and year to deliver the same to the translator, urging an immediate translation to be forwarded to the Attorney, with all the antecedents to be found on the subject. The translation was made, and the despatch, with the antecedents, delivered to the Attorney ; and the Council, in conformity with this report, consulted His Majesty, on the 27th of September, 1769. That in order to act with sufficient knowledge of the case, of such an absorbing importance, it was necessary to examine the several documents quoted in the consultation, so that in case that there was no difficulty, and if it was the pleasure of His Majesty to request the Secretary of State to send to those Kingdoms the
---	---

information desired, and by the same to send notice to the Council, with all the documents concerned.

No. 2. And in compliance with the royal orders of the 22d of September, 1770, the Bailiff sent the documents contained in an index, accompanying the same and explained by a letter from Don Jose Iturriaga dated on the 12th of June, 1757, where a description is given of the Apure river and the Province of Barinas, accompanied in six folios, without date or signature. Another letter from the same, dated on the 16th of June of the same year, in which he dwells upon the subject of keeping or demolishing the Castle of Araya. Another letter from the same Iturriaga, under the date of the 15th of December, 1757, about the instructions that he gave after receiving the report that the Hollanders were erecting a fortress on the Maruca (Moroco) river, with the copy of a letter of the 2d of the same month of December to Don Juan Valdes. Another from the same Iturriaga, dated on the 19th of April, 1758, in which he reports that the Hollanders pretended to extend their dominions on Esquivo to the large mouth of the Orinoco, with another copy of that of the 3d of March of the same Don Juan Valdes. A report of Don Josef Solano on the subjects contained in the four preceding letters from Iturriaga, with a map attached to it.

A letter from the Commander of Guayana, dated on the 5th of April, 1770, in which he reports, with accompanying proofs, the subjects of the complaints made by the Minister of Holland of the conduct of the Spaniards of the Orinoco against the Esquivo Colony, together with a general plan of the Province of Guayana and nine separate copies authenticated of original proceedings accompanied. Another letter from the Governor of Cumana, dated on the 10th of May in the same year, in which he reports, with justifying documents, the contents of the same matter,

Docket  
do.

Letter M.

No. 2.

Docket  
do.

Letter P.

No. 1.

No. 2.

No. 3.

No. 4.

No. 5.

No. 6.

No. 7.

- the complaints of the Minister of Holland embraced in a letter from the same Governor on the 30th of the previous month of March. One copy of the Royal order of the 30th of March, 1753, and a testimony in 52 folios. A petition from the Prefect of the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins of the Province of Guayana, dated on the 6th of July, 1769, in which he reports what had happened in regard to the three Indians that had been purchased with their daughters and enslaved by the Hollanders, having been taken away through the mouth of the Orinoco; with another letter from the same Prefect, of the same date, with two documents marked with the letters A B each, one a copy of instructions, another one of debts to be collected from the Caribs by the Master of the Post, and a tabulated statement of the Missions. Noticing that, in the Royal order with which the documents were forwarded to the Council it was said that they had been sent to the Department of State in order to find out whether the missing documents were found there, and if such were the case to have them forwarded; that another Royal order exists, dated the 6th of September, 1770, in which the Council reports the fact that they were not found in the Department, and had been asked for the action of the Council to be taken in regard to the case; therefore, in pursuance of the decree of the Council of the 12th of September, 1769, an index was made at the Department of the several papers, in reference to this subject, and although they are many, we will only consider those in connection with the present subject at the time. Another index of several consultations made at different times upon the same subject, and having been submitted to the Attorney, as it had been directed, his answer, dated August the 6th, 1774, advised the Council to comply with their decree of the 1st of September of the same year, and sent the matter to
- No. 8.
- Letter M.  
Fol. 1.
- No. 1.
- Letter N.
- No. 1.
- Letter O.  
Letter O.  
No. 1, folios 1-6.



the Relator with all notes, abstracts, and all the antecedents, so that he might report the result to his Majesty, and it was so carried out.

### Supplement I.

STAND 3. And, in order to fully understand this subject, it must be supposed that, in the letter sent to the Council by the Governor of Cumana, Don Gregorio Espinosa, dated the 1st of February, 1742, he accompanied the acts showing the demarcations and boundaries of the jurisdiction of that Government and that of Venezuela; and that by such boundaries the extreme limits had been fixed dividing the Province of Caracas and sea coast along the Codera Cape and thence running a line eastward across the mountains of Santa Lucia to the headwaters of the Orituco river and following its waters down to the plains to the entrance of the Guarico river and going down the stream to where it disembogues in the Orinoco river, and following its current down to the mouth of the same, where it empties into the sea. And following the geographical description and notes inserted for the explanation of the general map of the Government of Cumana forwarded by the Governor, Don Josef Diguja, in the year 1761, it is said that the boundaries of the Province of Cumana are; on the east, the mouths of the Orinoco river, the Guarapichie river, and the point of Paria; on the north, the same point of Paria, a three-pointed cape, following along the coast of Araya and the Gulf of Cariaco down to the point at the town of Pozuelos, which is already in the Province of Barcelona; on the west, from the said town to the table land of Guanipa, from where another line is retraced towards the east, following it until it reaches the Orinoco, opposite Guayana.

Docket 3.

Letter by  
Governor  
of Cumana,  
fol. 3.

Descrip-  
tion and  
map by Di-  
guja.

That the Castle of Araya is one of the best strongholds, and that it was erected to defend from the

Folio 29.

Folio 66.

Dutch a large salt-pit that had been watered. Other salt-pits have been since discovered, leading to the idea of demolishing said fort, as it seems that it was done. That the Province of Guayana has for boundaries: On the east, all the coast in which are situated the Dutch Colonies of Esquivo, Bervis, Demerari, Corentin, and Surinama, and more to the windward the Cayana, belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco dividing the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe, and Popayan, which forms half a circle returning to the east, towards the source of the Parima Lake, as may be seen in the general map of said Provinces and river; on the south, with the dominions of the most Faithful King in Brazil, the boundaries of which and said Province of Guayana not being known, nor its contents in the center.

Folio 68.

And in regard to the rivers Orinoco, Caroni, Aruy, and Caura, it is said that at forty leagues from the Aruy the Caura empties its waters as the largest river running through large rocks, preventing the navigation of vessels larger than canoes or small launches; that the sources of this river are sixty leagues far from where it empties its waters and takes its origin from high mountains inhabited by many Indians disturbed by the Caribs who sieze children and women to sell them to the Hollanders, and exterminate the older Indians by every possible means; that east of the coast of Guayana are situated the Dutch Colonies of Esquivo, Demerari, Bervis, Corentin, and Surinam, according to the information received by Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Commander of Guayana. That of Esquivo consists of cane plantations, which at the distance of thirty leagues were held by the Hollanders, who planted the same by the margins of the Esquivo river; that said Dutch Provinces are most injurious to Guayana, especially that of Esquivo as the nearest to the

Folio 69.

Orinoco. That they enter through the same river and those of Mazaroni and Cuyuni protected by the Carib Indians of that Province, whom they enslave and sell just as they do with the negroes employed on their plantations and farms.

That in order to seize the poor Indians they resort to every means their cupidity and tyranny suggests, trying to secure their friendship with the Caribbean tribes, warlike and ferocious, who overrun all that extensive Province, as well as those of Barcelona, Caracas, and Santa Fe, in quest of other Indians, on whom they always secure predominance, on account of their peaceful and good nature; that they were continually assaulted in their ranches and lands; that those of age were killed and their children and women captured to be sold as slaves; that these incursions very frequently disturbed the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, not so firmly established yet, as their Indians were taken away, or in fear of the Caribs took to the woods; that there was no means to stop them, on account of their cowardly and timid nature; that sometimes, if there was a Spanish Guard in the vicinity, they used to put themselves under its protection; that the native Hollanders of the Colony used to accompany the Caribs and give them instruction in the management of arms, and were still more inhuman than the Caribs, making necessary a great vigilance to stop them and defend said Missions which they procured to destroy so as to remove their opposition to the plans of their Colonies; that they took the silver and goods from Cumana in exchange for iron utensils, machetes, knives, cotton, and linen goods coming from the Dutchmen and Indians of the Island of Curaçoa; that this commerce is very obnoxious, because they resell the goods to the poor people, and this trade can not be made without the consent and the interest of those who command, and if that

Folio 104.

Folio 105.

were not the case it would be very easy to remedy the evil, as it was done by the Governor at that time.

### **Antecedents without a Solution.**

Docket of  
unsolved  
antecedents.

Letter A.

Nos. 1 & 2.

Nos. 3 & 4,  
Translation.

No. 5.

24. With due anticipation the complaint made by the Minister of Holland on the subjects heretofore mentioned was submitted to the Council by order of the King, and under date of the 11th of May, 1768, another despatch from the Ambassador of England intending to prove that the runaway negroes from their island, coming to ours in America, ought to be returned home, and that cartels or public advices of the case fixed; that in view of said documents and after the examination of the case the Council would report; that in furtherance of the decrees of the 14th of March and the 18th of January to the Treasurer and his Attorneys, preceded by a translation of the contents of said Ambassador's, a despatch was addressed to the Marquis of Grimaldi, under date of the 7th of January, 1768, that the Governors of Jamaica and of the Virgin Islands having made frequent complaints to the Court of the harm done to the inhabitants of said islands on account of the admission and detention of the fugitive negroes from their settlements, and which the Spanish Governors of Cuba and Puerto Rico tolerated, and it seems likewise that they authorized the evil; that they had the strictest orders from the King to make the strongest representation against such an unjust practice, so contrary to the law of nature, to the private property and to the good understanding that ought to subsist between the two friendly nations, asking that orders be given to said Spanish Governors, so as to make prompt restitution of said slaves to their corresponding masters to put an efficient end to such an unjust conduct. That by a statement presented (Stand No. 5) to the Count of Shelburne on the 9th of March, 1767, it seemed that the

inhabitants of Cuba had lately taken by force many negroes from the northern part of the island of Jamaica, and that many more had run away to Cuba, where not only they had been well received but likewise well concealed, and refusing to deliver them back. That after Governor Cletson had informed Count Shelburne of a new desertion of a number of slaves, and having made his necessary representations to Don Antonio Bucareli and the Marquis of Casa Carigal, Governor of Santiago de Cuba, but all in vain, as the latter gave as his reply that having taken legal steps in the matter, he had sent a statement to his sovereign, and had no power left to do anything in the matter until he should hear the pleasure of his King and Lord.

That the chief inhabitants of the Virgin Islands had already sent their complaints of the large losses sustained on account of the admission and detention of their fugitive negroes in Puerto Rico.

7. That in consequence of these repeated complaints he had received orders from the King his Lord to urge the case in his name before His Catholic Majesty, in order to obtain, from his known sense of justice, the necessary orders to his American Governors to make a prompt restitution of these fugitives to their corresponding masters, forbidding them to continue such an irregular and unjust conduct.

8. That it was useless to show that the trade in negroes was authorized with the concurrence of all the European nations, and particularly that these slaves were looked upon as private property, and therefore the allowance of asylum to said fugitive slaves and the refusal to return them back home to their owners, was a conduct directly in opposition to every sense of justice; and that it was absolutely necessary to provide a remedy for an evil so injurious to private property and to the good understanding subsisting between the two nations.

9. That to this end he took the liberty to propose, as the only proper remedy, the establishment of a cartel for the mutual restitution of fugitive negroes from the English to the Spanish Colonies in America, as it is reasonable, and a measure well meditated; and that he had no doubt the Marquis de Grimaldi would render his good offices near his Catholic Majesty, in order to secure the measure proposed by him.

10. After due consideration the General-Treasurer, in his report of the 10th of March, 1768, in reference to the text of the above despatch, continued, saying that by the antecedents obtained and added to the present case it was shown that on the 29th of January, 1757, the Council consulted His Majesty, giving an account of what was represented by the Governor of Porto Rico, concerning the arrival at those coasts of ten negro slaves from the French Colony, who had been claimed by the General of Martinique, and whose delivery was suspended in order to obtain the Royal determination on the subject; that it was decided to instruct the said Governor of Porto Rico to deliver and make restitution of the said ten slaves to the aforementioned Governor of Martinique, or to whomsoever would claim them, under condition that they were not to sustain any corporal nor afflictive punishment, and that the reciprocity should be assured, as decided by His Majesty, at the consultations of the Council on various occasions, and particularly since the year 1703 up to that of 1749, when restitution was accorded to the Frenchman of all the fugitive negro slaves of their Colonies, as well as soldier deserters apprehended in that island, within its jurisdiction; the Council directed that in future the same conduct was to be observed in similar cases of fugitive slaves or French deserters.

11. That His Majesty's Royal resolution accepts

the advice of the Council only in regard to negro slaves.

12. In another consultation of the 25th of February following, in the same year, the Council showed His Majesty the result of a letter from the Governor of Cuba and the testimony accompanying the same, about the decision in regard to an Englishman called Peter George who left Jamaica on account of religion, with six of his negro slaves; that it was of the opinion, following other instances, that he would be admitted under the Royal protection, meaning said Peter George, and that he should be granted lands fixing his domicile for his subsistence, and deciding that in regard to the payment of dues on slaves, it was only to be applied to those that he might sell, but not on account of their entrance, as such was a free act, in consideration of the religious purposes accomplished, and recommending most particularly to the Governor of Cuba that if he believed that the Englishmen sincerely sought refuge in our dominion on account of religion, he should grant them lands and designate their domicile as far as possible from the coast; that this condition ought to be observed with the greatest care in this case, as the said Peter George's case was open to doubts as to the good faith in which he carried out his passage; that His Majesty accepted the opinion of the Council as final in this case.

13. That on the 10th of September, 1764, the Council brought to the notice of His Majesty a copy of what was represented by the Governor and Royal Officers of Havana in regard to the three French negroes found in the neighborhood of the Morro Castle, and the final decision issued by those Ministers on the 29th of July, 1760, when the said three slaves were confiscated, and three negroes, as well as three wild negro boys, who were, according to evidence, at the house of the Ensign, Don Francisco

Hernandez, who was enjoined to present them on the second day, and in default to pay their price as fixed by the regulations, according to the price allowed to the Royal Company for the same, so as to have the proceeds of all distributed in the customary way observed in similar cases, according to the laws and regulations; and having been represented on the part of the negro called Balthasar that he is free, it was decided to suspend the sale of his person until the final decision of his case be reached.

14. That His Majesty was requested by the Council to confirm the sentence and return the proceedings, so that they be placed in the condition in which they were when the request of time for the delivery of the six negroes was made, and empowering the Governor and Royal Officers to proceed and try the case according to law, with directions that the other negro called Balthasar be thoroughly investigated, so as to find out whether he really was free as he pretends. His Majesty adopted this advice as final as the result of the consultation submitted.

15. That in regard to the other case of the 23d of December, 1765, the Council showed to His Majesty what was represented by the Intendente of Havana, Don Miguel de Altaniva, requesting a suitable decision as to whether certain negroes acquired beforehand were to be considered as duly acquired, as at the time of the restitution of that place there was no proper evidence of their apprehension and ownership, and what charges or dues were to be collected. On this particular point, it was the opinion of the Council that said Intendente ought to be requested to forward the full copy of the proceedings carried out on the subject, and a correct report of the persons who purchased the negroes from the Englishmen during the war, and of those who, through violence, persuasion, or robbery introduced them; as the disposition of one and the other case must be different, His Majesty approved the opinion of the



Council and the corresponding cedulae were issued, but it was not ascertained whether they had been carried into effect or not.

16. That by another consultation of the 30th of September, 1766, the Council showed to His Majesty that the representation from the Governor of Santiago de Cuba, with a copy of the proceedings, about the landing of ten negroes introduced at the port of Baracoa by Alexander Johnson, a native of England; that it was discovered that those negroes were slaves of several residents of Guarico who had run away under the influence and persuasion or robbery of said Alexander Johnson; that the Council understood that there was no reason whatever to consider them as a lawful prize, by confiscation or reprisal, nor to act in any way detrimental to the right of the owners, on account of their landing within the coasts of His Majesty's dominions; and that it was advisable to direct the Governor of Cuba to send notice to Guarico, so that the owners might recover them lawfully, paying the expenses incurred, or if sold, to recover the price after deducting the Royal dues; that it was proper to serve notice of the case with the corresponding copies and the final decision to the Ambassador of France; and that His Majesty accepted the report of the Council in response to the above consultation.

17. That the Council, in consideration of what was represented by Don Miguel de Altaniva, and of the documents accompanied by the same, in reference to the case of a negro obtained by Don Francisco de Chaves, while the English were in possession of the City of Havana, decided by an act of the 6th of March, 1768, to include said negro as protected by the amnesty of His Majesty and in the enjoyment of his freedom as he claimed, and approving the decision of the Intendente, reserving Chaves his rights on the subject against any other party.

18. That this decision of the Council had been

dictated after finding a sufficient evidence that the negro was within the meaning of the Royal order of the 17th of April, 1764, declaring free all the negroes imprisoned by the English during the siege of Havana, and, after the surrender of said city, had deserted, in order to embrace the Catholic religion, considering them all free, notwithstanding their doubtful intention.

19. That in view of everything heretofore stated in connection with the contents of the despatch from the Ambassador of England, and the antecedents gathered on the subject, the General Accomptant found them all applied to particular cases differing from each other, and decided, according to the circumstances of the time, they were not sufficient to justify assent to a request so general as the one intended by the Ambassador of England.

20. That since the establishment of the English, French, Dutch, and Danes in the Colonies they possess in America, fugitive negroes had kept coming to the islands and dominions of His Majesty, some of them to escape ill treatment and others to embrace our Catholic religion; that on every occasion they had been well received by the inhabitants and Spanish Governors, convinced as they were, that by showing kindness to these people their own people derived the benefit of their cultivation of the land, besides finding the protection of a good and Catholic sovereign.

21. That the foreigners had always set their claims against this practice, and that the interference of the Ambassadors and Ministers of foreign countries, in order to abolish it, had been repeatedly tried in order to obtain the restitution of their slaves and prevent their concealment, within the possessions of His Majesty; that although now and then orders had been issued in several instances according to circumstances, publicly directing the Gover-

nor to comply with such requests, the actual delivery or compliance with them had never been consented, nor an asylum refused, and much less the assent to assent to any treaty or convention allowing any absolute restitution.

22. That this conduct of the wise Ministers of His Majesty had been founded on sound political principles of necessary preservation of their dominions, and that the acquiescence and tolerance of the foreign powers had strengthened and qualified their policy as opportune and legitimate, and deriving still more force from the fact of never having been derogated by any of the several general or special treaties of peace heretofore concluded since the conquest of the Indies.

23. That the laws of the Kingdom, Royal orders, and fundamental constitutions of the Government forbid the commerce and trade of the subjects of Her Majesty with foreigners under severe penalties, as well as the admittance of their vessels in any of the ports, rivers or roadsteads.

24. That the powers who had colonies in those parts, were aware of these rules and had respected them; so that by the article eight of the treaty of Utrecht, with their concurrence, it was stipulated that no change was to be made in the form and manner established for the commerce of the Spanish Indies. That this treaty had been ratified by those which followed it, and that every one of the contracting nations were interested in avoiding any alteration or contravention of their tenor, and that if the request of the Ambassador of England were allowed, the other powers might complain, as nothing could be granted to said powers without being allowed likewise to France.

25. That the cartel proposed for the reciprocal restitution of the negro slaves, would be equivalent to the granting of a general commerce between the

islands and dominion of His Majesty, and the Colonies of the King of England, under the assumed pretext of claiming the return of the slaves, coming to all our ports, and the Spaniards going to their places with silver, gold, goods, and produce, and establishing an illicit commerce, enriching the Englishmen and ruining infallibly the Royal Treasury and the subjects of His Majesty, besides other evils and difficulties which can be very easily ascertained.

26. That taking all these considerations into account, and those that may occur to the well-known zeal, accuracy, and wisdom of the Council, the Accomptant General conceived that the present subject deserves every consideration, and the closest examination in view of the many antecedents held, and the more recent one pending now before this Tribunal, upon the convention entered into with the Court of Denmark, just submitted to the Council, and that it could likewise be examined at the same time, and His Majesty consulted upon his pleasure on both subjects.

Letter D.

Letter E.

No. 1.

Folio 3.

27. And noticing that in the meantime the Attorneys answered to the case of a claim introduced by France about the restitution of negroes, they were of the opinion in their report of the 21st of April, 1768, that nothing ought to be mentioned of the matter of the Ambassador of England, nor the convention entered into with Denmark, as it might prove unwise to dwell on a question that could be of no advantage under the circumstances.

Letter F.

No. 2.

28. It was submitted, likewise, to the attorneys on their request and in obedience to the Council's directions a copy of the convention of his Majesty and the King of Denmark, about the reciprocal restitution of deserters and slaves between the Island of Porto Rico, Saint Cross, Saint Thomas, and Saint John, which was sent to the Council by the bailiff,

at the request of his Majesty, with a letter dated on the 26th of February, 1768, and in their answer, after due notice of the convention and of the despatch from the Ambassador of England they showed

Folio 5.

that they considered strange the phrases somewhat indecorous, not proper or respectful, of the Ambassador of England in addressing his Majesty, showing a spirit easily to be understood in appearance, rather than his propositions, which were not admissible, on account of the difficulties and injury which might follow the cartels or public edicts that the English wanted for the recovery of their fugitive slaves, as

Folio 22.

such a practice was opposed to the policy and fundamental rules of the government in America and detrimental to its subjects and to the Royal Treasury; that it ought to be limited to the restitution of those fugitives taken away by the Spaniards from their Island or Colonies by means of violence, persuasion, or seduction in time of peace, as it had been the case in Jamaica, that such a fair claim had nothing to do with the claim of fugitive slaves in general. Upon this particular his Majesty might answer to the Ambassador that nothing had been heard of the answers given on this subject by the Governor of Cuba, who said he had forwarded the same to his Majesty, and that if it was true as represented, his Majesty should grant a fair trial and an indemnification to the interested parties, punishing the delinquents; that the convention which His Majesty had kindly entered into with the Danes, for motives which were not to be investigated, had caused, beyond any question, an irreparable injury to every one of the islands and to the subjects of his Majesty in America, opening doors to strangers and to all those established in those countries, out of tolerance or condescension imposed on the Crown or for any other reason far from fairly claiming the restitution of their fugitive slaves, making every

Folio 42.

Folio 5.

day more and more impossible the acquisition of those operatives, so necessary for the cultivation and improvement of the crops, the chief incentive of the negotiation and subsistence, and that said convention ought not to be enforced.

Letter E.

Folio 1.

29. And having reported everything to the Council, a decree was issued on the 18th of April, 1768, consulting His Majesty, and stating that the despatch of the Ambassador of England was to be forwarded to the Treasurer, and that with his report the two Attorneys were to be consulted; that before they took any action they applied for the convention, with the King of Denmark, and that having been submitted to said Attorney, and in consequence they had represented to the Council that it would be expressed, in answer to the consultation, that the Council had assented to their opinion for the reasons explained in the same; and in consequence, under the date of May the 9th, 1768, his Majesty was consulted, and all the reasons extensively given by the Council to refuse the request of the British Ambassador and not to carry out the convention with Denmark upon which there was a consultation pending before His Majesty.

### Proceedings of the Day.

Letter H.

30. All the above cases referred to and their antecedents still pending, about the proceedings in regard to the claim of the Minister of Holland, now before his Majesty, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco river against the Esquivo Dutch Colony, were forwarded and submitted to the Council by Royal Order of the 10th of September, 1769, in order to be examined and to consult His Majesty in regard to the extension of those boundaries and the alleged rights of the Republic to fish at the entrance of the Orinoco river.

31. Said claim by act of the Council, dated on the 12th instant, was sent to the translator, so as to be forwarded with his translation to the Attorney, with all the antecedents of the subject. At margin.

The translation shows that the claim is taken from the book of Resolutions of the High Powers of the States-General of the United Provinces bearing the date of August 2d, 1769, the literal version of which is as follows :

*(Translation.)*

32. It has been read before the Assembly the representation of the Deputies of His Most Serene Highness the Lord Prince of Orange and Nassau and Directors of the allowed Company of the West Indies of the Presidial Chamber of Zeland that this general Company, having the particular direction of the Esquivo Colony and the rivers dependent from the same, that in this case the petitioners had always considered, for a quasi immemorial time, in possession not only of the Esquivo river but of many other rivers and rivulets disemboguing into the sea along that part, as well as all the branches of rivers and rivulets emptying into the Esquivo, particularly the northern branch called Cayoeny; that for an immemorial time the bank of the Cayoeny river has been considered as dominion of the State, and that the wooden barrack or post with a guard had been kept there, besides many others of this Colony, on behalf of the company, furnished with a vessel and a few slaves and Indians.

33. That the petitioners, under such an understanding, and after what had taken place in the year 1759, where astonished at the receipt of the news conveyed by a letter from Lorenzo Horender Granvesand, General Director of Esquivo, written under date of the 9th of last February, stating that a Spanish detachment from the Orinoco had ad-

vanced to that Post and seized several Indians, threatening with their return, on the next tide, to visit another ranch of the Esquivo river, called Maseroeny, situated between this one and the river Cayoeny, which, without any dispute, is a part of the territory of the republic, and to visit likewise and seize a party of Caribs, an Indian tribe allied to the Hollanders, and in some sort belonging to them, and then to go down the Maseroeny river, returning and going up the Cayoeny and visiting there the said Barrack of the Company; that the plenipotentiaries could see by a letter, marked letter A, what has been stated, a copy of which is annexed to this petition; that the same contains likewise a statement of the steps taken by the Director General, so as to prevent it; that the petitioners had considered these threats as unmeaning, as many others made before, and notwithstanding said Director General had informed them by his letter of the 21st of February, 1769, a copy of which goes herewith, marked with the letter B; that the Spaniards had built two houses guarded by many troops, one of which was very near the Company's Barrack on the Cayoeny river, but apparently within their own territory, and the other farther and high up on the margin of a rivulet disemboguing in this same river; that in case of an attack from that quarter by the Spaniards, in time of peace, it was very likely to come from that quarter; that the Director General had sent a letter on the 3d of last March, a copy of which is accompanied and marked with the letter C, about said representation; that the petitioner had been with astonishment made acquainted with the contents of a letter which the Director General had addressed to his son-in-law, the Commander of Demerari, the original of which was forwarded and a copy of which, marked letter D, reported the Spaniards having seized the Indians of Maroco and the port of



the Company situated near a rivulet, at the east of the Weyne river, between this one and the Possaron (Pumaron?), where the Company had likewise held for time immemorial a commercial place, said place under the dependency, without contradiction, of the territory of the Republic.

34. That the petitioners had received the confirmation of that news by the arrival of a triplicate of a letter from the Director General, under date of the 15th of March last, the original of which had been forwarded by way of the Island of Barbado, and the duplicate by the way of Surinam, and had not yet arrived; a triplicate in copy is produced, marked letter C, in which the plenipotentiaries might find the particulars of the proceedings of the Spaniards and the conduct of the guard around of the measures taken by the Director General provisionally, and that every statement had been confirmed, as shown more particularly by the annexed copy, marked letters F and G, one of which was a copy of the testimony of the statement of the Governor of the Guard who kept the Maroco's Barrack sent to the Director General on the 7th of last March, and the other was a copy of a paper in writing given by the Capuchin Fathers who came along with this expedition to the Guard of the Barrack, in the Spanish language, and had not been translated for want of an opportunity; said document His Most Serene Highness, the Lord Prince of Orange and Nassau, had kindly communicated to the petitioners, who, having seen that they had apparently been forwarded along with the original and duplicate of the same, found no reason why they had not received the latter.

35. That the petitioners had ascertained likewise, through this same triplicate, that the Spaniards of the Orinoco river had killed or caused the death of one who was their subject, the man on duty at the Arinda Barrack belonging to the Company and sit-

uated at the east of the Esquivo River, and all the Caribs that were found near it, and that the Chief of the Caribs, on that account, had appeared before the Director General and obtained his permission to take revenge for the deaths of his compatriots and to attack their murderers, as may be seen by the annexed copy, marked letter H, a second copy of the same letter on the same subject from the Director, dated on the 15th of last March. That although the petitioners had received at the same time the above-mentioned triplicate of the letter of said month of March, on the 15th, a letter from the Director General of the 4th of April last made no mention of any subsequent enterprise on the part of the Spaniards, and contained only a statement of all the steps taken in order to oppose similar enterprises; the petitioners, however, thought it was their duty not to silence this particular detail, and rather bring it to the notice of the plenipotentiaries with every possible specification, entertaining no doubt that those high-handed attempts should be resented and the most efficient representation made, on account of the manifest violations of the territory of the State.

36. That the petitioners can not avoid stating to the plenipotentiaries on this occasion that the Orinoco parties had not only commenced to dispute, for some time past, the right of those from Esquivo to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, but had, besides, effectually stopped it, notwithstanding that the Esquivo parties had been for a long time in pacific possession of the right of fishing, from which they derived a great benefit, on account of the abundance of fish found there; said Orinoco parties had commenced to stop by force the fishing on the territory of the same state, a territory extending from the river Maresigue up to the other side of the Weyne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco, as may be seen by the geographical chart of those countries, and particularly by that of Anville, one of the most

esteemed on account of its accuracy, and that the plenipotentiaries will find the proofs of these injuries in the document marked letter Y ; the articles one, two, and three are copies of letters from said Director General, dated September the 15th, 1768, and February the 21st and April the 4th, 1769 ; that the petitioners could not fail to bring to the knowledge of the plenipotentiaries the conduct, not only contrary to all the treaties, but to the law of nations likewise, on the part of those parties from the Orinoco by retaining and inducing the slaves deserted from the Colony to run away towards the Spaniards, to the great injury of the planters and of the whole Colony ; that notwithstanding the formal demand of the owners, and the most efficient steps taken and deputations sent, everything had proved useless ; that considering the present desertion, in case of not being stopped, it may bring about the total ruin of Esquivo, and that the Spaniards had favored and facilitated this state of things, respecting the two houses mentioned before so very near the territory of the Republic, attacking the barracks of the company and killing the men on guard, as the plenipotentiaries will find out by the two annexed copies, marked with the letters Y C, in articles first and second, and the other with the letters P D, which are the copies of the above-mentioned letters of the Director General, dated on the 9th and 21st of February and the 3d of March ultimo. The petitioners crave that in consideration of the injury necessarily involved in this conduct and its progress, the plenipotentiaries send, on the ground of the one made before on the 31st of July, 1759, a copy of this representation and annexes to the Envoy Extraordinary, Mr. Doublet de Groenevelt, representing the plenipotentiaries before His Catholic Majesty, instructing said Minister to make the necessary representations before the Spanish court.

37. And after mature deliberation on the subject,

it was found fit, and it was decided, that a copy of the above representations, with the document annexed from Mr. Doublet de Groenevelt, Envoy Extraordinary of the Plenipotentiary of the Court of Spain be forwarded, and an account of the particulars and offences complained of be given by those implicated in the same, so as to provide for a prompt remedy against the hostilities committed and the reinstatement of those persons who were removed from the said Barracks, and extending likewise to the subject of the fisheries in those places, and recommending to take every precaution necessary to prevent further cause for similar complaints in the future, and that the Court of Spain issue the necessary orders for the return at the first request, avoiding injury and expenses on account of all fugitive slaves found yet in the hands of the Spaniards or that may desert in future, in which case the plenipotentiaries will issue the like orders to their Esquivo Colony.

38. A copy of this resolution of the plenipotentiaries will be addressed to the Marquis of Puente-Fuerte, Envoy Extraordinary of His Catholic Majesty, praying his support, as far as possible, by his good offices on behalf of these claims of the plenipotentiaries.

No. 5. 39. And the Attorney, in view of the answer of the 17th of September of said year 1769, suggested that in order to forward these proceedings, on account of the despatch from the Ambassador from Holland, alleging the right of fishing in the Orinoco river (upon which His Majesty had directed to be consulted), he missed the following documents: a memorial and statement to which Captain Don Isidro Andrade referred in another printed paper, which with the Royal order of the 3d of September, 1740, was sent by the Council and had been exhibited, advising of his having stopped the Caribs in their insults committed and induced by foreign help.

No. 4.  
Fol. I.

The four letters that had been received in the years 1757 and 1758, written at the town of Cabruta by the Chief of Squadrons, Don Joseph Iturriaga, sent with the expedition of boundaries to the Orinoco river, one, in which a description was made of the rivers entering said Orinoco river, and in reference to the state of those Missions and their neighborhood, towns, inhabitants, etc. ; another, in which in virtue of one of the chapters of reserved instructions given to the same by Don Josef Carvajal, he deals with the subsistence or demolition of the Castle of Araya ; another letter in which he reports to have been informed that the Hollanders were building a fortress on the Maruca (Moroco) river, at a short distance from the mouth of Navios of the Orinoco, and that he had decided to send a launch to ascertain the conditions of the structure, its capacity, its artillery, etc., concluding with an exposition of the very serious inconvenience that might originate from their being allowed to build the same, in the already mentioned site of Maruca ; and another letter in which the said Iturriaga continued the subject of his previous letter on the affair of the pretensions of the Esquivo Hollanders to the Orinoco river publishing that their dominions extended as far as the mouth of Navios or large mouth of the said Orinoco river where they entered to fish. The report made in the year 1762 by the Captain of the Navy, Don Josef Solano (to whom said letters were sent for the purpose), and who, on the subject of the context of the third and fourth letters, in regard to the pretensions of the Hollanders on the Esquivo, stated that they had no other foundation than the omission and neglect of the Commanders of Guayana, who had let them fish at the mouth of Navios, and the rivers Barima and Aguirre ; and he refers to the answers that the Most Christian King gave and the steps taken by that Court, on account of having submitted to the Royal consideration of the

King, Philip the 5th, by way of consultation at the Council of the 6th of September, 1705, the news received from the Governor of Cumana, Don Josef Ramirez de Arellano, upon the commerce of the Guarapiche river by the French from Martinique, not only in timber, hammocks, and birds, but also in Indian slaves from the same river and coasts from the mainland, considering those lands as barren and out of the dominion of anybody, not being populated by Spaniards, and considering the Indians as savages. The Council was of opinion that despatches should be sent to that sovereign, in order to strictly forbid the introduction of his vassals into Guarapiche, and His Majesty resolved that the Ambassador from his grandfather, the King, was charged with bringing him an account of those reports, and transmit to His Majesty the orders issued in France on this subject. He was of opinion that the Council should consult His Majesty and through the Department of State, where those documents ought to be found, containing the above results, to have them forwarded to those Kingdoms and to the Council with all the facts, concerning this subject, in consequence of the resolutions of His Majesty in regard to the above consultation dated on the 6th of September, 1705, so that the Council taking every thing into consideration may be enabled to report with a full knowledge of the case upon this serious matter, and this Tribunal to submit said report to the Royal consideration.

No. 5 on  
the back. 40. By his decree of the 15th of the same month of September, 1769, in accordance with the opinion of the attorney, it was decided to consult His Majesty (as it was done on the 27th of said month and year), about the address of all the above mentioned documents.

Letter M. 41. In consequence of the Royal order of September 22, 1770, the Secretary sent to the Council the

documents found in his Department and called for by the index accompanying the same, and announced his having applied by letter to the Department of State for those missing and not found with the rest. He likewise furnished the news received (and requested from him), to the Commander of Guayana and the Governor of Cumana, with a representation of the Prefect of the Catalan Capuchins of the Missions, so that in consideration of the whole subject the Council might consult His Majesty and hear his pleasure, returning meantime the documents contained in the said index from Nos. 1 to 5, as well as the plan of the Province of Guayana contained in No. 6.

42. And noticing that the same Bailiff, with the Royal order of September 6, 1770, advised the Council that he had not found in the Department of State the documents which, among others, had been asked by the Council in consultation of the 27th of September, 1769, so that with this notice the examination of the proceedings might continue, said Royal order was ordered to be annexed, and the documents received from the Secretary of the Indies followed in the same order in which they are indexed. The contents of the No 1 of said index is a letter by Don Josef Iturriaga, dated on the 12th of June, 1757, from Cabruta on the Orinoco, about the description he accompanies of the Apure river and the Missions of Barinas. From the same it is found that said river has four principal mouths; the first, going up the Orinoco river, comes out at Cabruta and is called "El Guarico;" the second and principal one is called Apure at three leagues' distance from Cabruta; the third, called Orochuna, at a distance of three leagues and a half from the main one; and the fourth, called Horqueta, is opposite the Mission of Urbana—explaining how and in what kind of vessels said river is navigable around these mouths, and of

Letter M.  
No. 1.

No. 2.

Letter P.  
No. 1.

the rivers composing the Apure; amongst them the Sarare, Uribante, Aliles and Capuro. It is said that twenty-four leagues from the separation of the Orochuna, at six leagues above that of the Guarico, and at a distance of sixty-three leagues, that of Horqueta is located, and from thence to the Sarare there is a distance of fifty leagues. He continues, then, making a description of the Missions on said river and its settlements, eight in all, according to his inspection, during the month of April, 1757.

Letter P.  
No. 2.

43. The second document contained in index under the No. 2 is a letter from the same Iturriaga, dated on the 16th of June, 1757, sent from the same Cabruta, stating that the Castle of Araya was built to prevent the Hollanders from taking the salt from the salt-pits contiguous to the place, as they did several times, and on that account said Hollanders had discovered various other salt-pits which he enumerates in said letter, and that said salt-pits of Araya had been lost, and he proposed the convenience of demolishing the said Castle of Araya on account of being too expensive to the Crown and of no further use.

Letter P.  
No. 3.

44. The third document comprised, as No. 3 of the index, is another letter written by the same Iturriaga, dated on the 15th of December of the same year, 1757, in which he reports his having received word that the Hollanders were building another fort on the Maruca river, at a short distance from the mouth of Navios of the Orinoco river, stating that he had sent, on that account, a launch to go up the river sounding it, so as to make a survey of the structure of the fortress, its materials, size, garrison, and he was answered what was to be found in a copy accompanying the letter.

45. Said letter is dated on the 21 of the same month, addressed to Iturriaga by Don Juan Valdes, in which the latter informs him that he had prac-



ticed the required examination and found no such a fort, but only the news that the Hollanders of the Esquivo Colony intended to change the Guard, that under the name of Post, they kept at the Maruca creek, carrying down the same towards the mouth, fronting the sea, about six leagues away, and that they had made a considerable progress felling the trees around and tilling the ground for farming purposes, and building houses; that he did not know the reason of this change, but heard that they proposed to prevent the fugitive slaves of the Company and residents of the Colony from coming over to our dominions; that from the Guard, kept at the mouth of the Maruca, they could recognize any vessels passing along the coast towards the large mouth without entering there, and he explained the kind of vessels that could navigate around there.

46. And continuing his letter Iturriaga said, that from this report he understood that they wanted to establish sugar plantations, adding to their masters and slaves a number of Aruaca Indians, who were those who enjoyed their confidence in the highest degree, so as to prevent the transit of soldier deserters and Indian and negro slaves through that place, and that it might be that to this end, and in order to protect their plantations from any rising of the slaves of one or the other kind, they might build a small fort with two or three small guns served by four or six men.

47. That the Governor of Esquivo called himself in his letters patent to be such likewise of the Orinoco; that if the Hollanders were allowed to hold Maruca they would come over to Barima, which emptied its waters through the same mouth, and from thence they should proceed to the Aguirre river, the mouth of which was at the same Orinoco; that it was not very proper that he should style himself Governor of Esquivo and also of the Ori-

Iturriaga's  
letter.

Folio 1.

noco, but that it was to their interest to do so in order to be allowed to go up the river to the Aruaca Indians to catch turtles; that the Commander of Guayana assented, and allowed them permits for their different boats to go up the river with that view; that on these occasions Aruaca Indians and Caribs used to go with the Hollanders, avoiding to be discovered, and they used to land at the Caura river and other places to purchase Indian slaves from the Caribs, while the rest of the party were fishing turtles, and some times these very fishermen purchased other Indian slaves from the Caribs, bringing on their return a great number of them.

Letter do.  
No. 4.

48. The fourth document, marked at the index with the number four, is another letter written by the same Iturriaga on the 19th of April, 1758, in which he states, in regard to his report about the affairs of the Maruca river, that he had received a letter from the Commander of Guayana answering the nine questions that he had proposed, and a copy of which he forwards enclosed.

49. From the letter of the 30th of March of that year sent to Iturriaga by Don Juan Valdes, it appears that the change of the Guard with the name of Post, held by the Hollanders of the Esquivo Colony, at a distance of about twenty leagues from it, situated at the river Moruca, had not been carried out; that they had erected only a house fifteen yards in length at the mouth on the sea shore, with mud walls and doors, intended, as they said, for passengers trading with said Colony, so as to remain there during the intermissions of the river navigation on account of the low and high tide; that the Guard or Post was kept in the same place without any increase of troops or artillery; this latter consisted of three cannons of three pound caliber dismounted, one corporal, and two soldiers, so that the Aruaca Indians who resided in that place, for the purpose of

trade, were found in three divisions of people, each one composed of ten or twelve small houses, each corresponding to an Indian family, at a distance of one league or more, each division from the other following the banks of the Moruca river, and that this place was about seven leagues far from the sea, and the rest being thirteen up to the Colony along the sea coast.

50. Iturriaga's letter continued, stating that the Esquivo Hollanders made public and held that the extension of the domain of the States-General reached the mouth of Navios, or the large mouth of the Orinoco river, and even went far inland to continue to enjoy the right of fishing, so valuable to them on account of the total want of meat on shore and the great scarcity of fish in their river.

51. The fifth document, marked number five by the index, is a report of Don Josef Solano, in view of the letters written by Don Josef Iturriaga, agreeing with him in regard to the demolition of the Castle of Araya, as the only object of said fortress was the defence of the salt-pit contiguous to it, and the English had been allowed, by article third of the treaty of Munster, the right of availing themselves of the salt produced at the island of Tortuga, and that fortress did not prevent the access to Cumana or the coast of the Province by foreign vessels, and did not answer any essential purpose; that in case of an attack by any enemy it could not receive any help from the land. As to the description of the Apure river, he found it entirely in accordance with the reports he had received, as he observes, that the Barina parties, in view of the falling price of tobacco, on account of the increased production of the Provinces of Caracas and Maracaibo, near the coast, with more facilities for the transportation, and that the expense of conveyance of their own product being hardly equal to its original value,

Folio 1.

Folio 2.

had decided to open the navigation of the Apure river, which empties into the Orinoco, in order to make even the difference in price ; that the introduction of tobacco in that Province brought about losses to the planters and their adherents, and the abandonment of their plantations ; that that part of the country would have been left without any population, if they had not been replaced by arrivals from the new Kingdom of Grenada ; that the Indian settlements failed to receive this kind of new visitors, and their decadence continued, and the instruction of the infidels embarrassed by the suggestions of those wanting them in the woods, for the continuance of their illicit trade. And in reference to the other two letters from Iturriaga, dealing with the pretensions of the Governor of the Dutch Colony of the Esquivo river, and what they said about the Orinoco, founded upon the titles which they had from the States-General, giving them as under that jurisdiction, Solano explained that notwithstanding he did not know that they had claimed the prizes that had been made by the Trinitarians and Guayana parties, in the waters of that river, nor against their dislodgment from the Post, that they had built on the Cuyuni river, for the purpose of protecting their parties, entering in Guayana to purchase Indian slaves from the Carib tribe, he could not find, on what ground they could base their pretensions ; that although article fifth of the treaty of Munster granted them the domain of the countries, forts, factories, etc., possessed by them, at that time in America, they had none on the Orinoco, nor anybody else than the Spaniards had ever had any there up to that time ; that they did not hold nor had ever held any place, stronghold, castle, fisheries, hunting establishments, nor land enjoyments ; that they could not derive any rights from the tacit or even express consent of the Commanders of Guayana

and Orinoco granted several times, allowing them to fish around the mouth of Navios, and the rivers Barima and Aguirre, emptying into the same, nor in the Barracks for salting and drying fish, nor in the navigation which they had furtively covered under permits, go up to Guayana or farther on; nor could they legalize the Post or Guard which they held at the Moruca river, as reported by the same Iturriaga, said treaty forbidding them from erecting new fortifications under any pretext whatever; that they could only allege the patience of the Commanders of Guayana in regard to that usurpation.

52. That in the meantime the Hollanders were drawing their domain towards the large mouth of the Orinoco, and with an easy navigation introduced themselves through the same, and the rivers Apure, Meta, and others into the Provinces of Barcelona, Caracas, and Barinas, in detriment to the Royal Treasury, and the progress of the Spanish population, which augmented superabundantly in the immediate neighborhood of the City Capital near the sea, the people went in farther and farther inland and extended to the Orinoco, guided and several times united to the Missioners; that with the safeguard of that great river and the help ministered by Dutch interest to the barbarian Caribs, they refused to hear words of peace and denied to the Spaniards their navigation and the pass of the Missioners, causing the death of many holy men and many faithful Indians, and that most of their new settlements should be suspended and the progress and diffusion of our holy faith stopped, and that the Rev. Fathers could not have remained without the assistance and countenance of His Majesty in keeping, as has been done by his glorious predecessors, the troops and escort necessary to protect them within the Garrison and Castle of Guayana. And said Solano continuing his report, pointed out the

Folio 3.

places where the fortresses ought to be erected for the defence of the Orinoco and the Province of Cumana and the others, and the sites where they ought to be located with their garrisons, concluding with an expression of his opinion, recommending the creation by the government of the office of military commander for the Orinoco, as it was important to withdraw the city to the site of Angostura (a narrow place up the river), removing the neighboring Indian settlements to a better climate; that the residents of Guayana should withdraw their cattle, so as to deprive the enemy from that kind of food, helping our forces and making impossible or difficult to obtain fresh beef or mules for the sugar mills of the Dutch Colony of Esquivo, and forbidding the cattle owners of the Capuchin Mission from discovering the country between them and the Colony, and that with the forts already established as recommended, and the garrisons, the city removed, and the neighboring settlements as well, and the troops united from the Orinoco, Apure and Meta rivers, together with the creation of the office of Governor for the Province of Guayana, the obnoxious introduction of strangers could be made impossible and the pious ends of His Majesty facilitated.

Letter P. 53. The document marked by the index under  
 No. 6. number 6 is a letter written on the 5th of April,  
 Testimony. 1770, by the commander of Guayana, Don Manuel  
 No. 1. Centurion, in which, according to the order dated  
 Fol. 7. September 23, 1769, sent to him with a copy of a  
 Fol. 1. despatch from the Minister of Holland, as a reserved  
 matter, his attention is called to its contents for his  
 report, as soon as possible, on the facts represented  
 by the same, stating, for the knowledge of His Majesty, what has happened; he stated what will be found below, accompanied with his letter of the 8th, and a statement of the evidence in regard to the matter, sending likewise a plan of the Province of Guayana.

54. And proceeding, in regard to the requirements of the above contents, I have to say that the judicial proceedings copied herewith show that the Director of the Colony of Esquivo, Lorenzo Hormoan (*sic*) Grave-sand, had intended to alarm the States General with impositions, and that the Republic of Holland had heard the complaints sent by means of its Minister to our court, in reference to the conduct of the Spaniards of the Orinoco against that Colony; that it appears from the first part of the proceedings, number 1, that the Hollanders were not, and never had been, in possession of the rivers nor rivulets emptying their waters into the sea on the coast extending from the Esquivo to the Orinoco rivers, nor had had around there any other establishment than a guard kept within a straw-roofed barrack, on the eastern side of the Moruca or Maroco river, that had been tolerated, during the last forty years, to prevent the desertion of their slaves; that under this pretext they have carried the iniquitous trade with the barbarous Indians and cruel Caribs, buying from them Indians as slaves taken by surprise after killing other tribes that were peacefully and freely residing within the dominions of the King our Lord.

Letter of  
the Com-  
mander of  
Guayana.

55. It was also shown by the above-mentioned part number 1 that the Hollanders were not in possession of the Maserony (Mazaroni) nor of the other rivers emptying into the Esquivo, on the western side, and that it was necessary to undeceive them, removing that error, from whence were derived their unfounded complaints. That the Esquivo river runs parallel approximately to the coast of the ocean from the neighborhood of the Corentin until it reaches the sea, forty-five leagues east of the mouth of the Orinoco; all the rivers proceeding from the interior of the Province of Guayana and in the direction of the coast, between the mouth of the Corentin and the Esquivo, meet precisely at this last one, that runs across and receives their waters. If, as the Hol-

Folio 2.

landers supposed, their land was to embrace the rivers and rivulets of the Esquivo, comprising Cayuni, Maserony, Mao, Apanoni, Putara, and other smaller rivers, with their branches and sources, as within the territory of the Republic, the strangers should hold a larger portion of lands than our King in the Province of Guayana, as is shown by the accompanying plan that he had drawn as part of his report, marking in yellow color what in his judgment could be pretended by the Hollanders by right of possession acquired in any way until to-day.

Guayana  
plan.

56. From that plan it appears that the Dutch could lay claim only to the possession of the rivers Surinam, Cupernam, Corentin, Bervis, Demerari, Esquivo and Povaron (*sic*).

Letter  
from the  
Guayana  
Commander  
Folio 2.

57. Continuing his representation, the Centurion avers that the Spanish detachment that Gravesand said to have advanced in the year 1769, from the Orinoco up to the port of Cuyuni, and taken many Indians, threatening to return, in order to go to the Maserony river and take a party of Caribs and go down the river to visit the Company's Barrack, was undoubtedly a story of the Poytos' agent; that the Hollanders had, and have there still, said Bar-raek, regretting to see that several savage Indians, Caribs as well as Guaieas, of those who resided in that neighborhood, had come over to settle within our Missions, as it was not true that any detachment of troops had been sent from Guayana in the direction of those rivers, and that the exponent knew that during the last few years the Catalan Capuehin Fathers had received in their settlements several Indians from the mountains between Cuyuni and Maserony, under solicitation of the same Caribs; that there are about five thousand of them in their settlements, and that for over twenty years back our Missionaries had never heard until now that this powerful tribe was belonging to the Dutch, as stated



by Gravesand, and much less that those mountains were within the territory of the republic, as they had always been a proper field set apart for the work of the Missions under the Catalan Capuchin Fathers.

58. That the two houses under the garrison of many troops, as seen by part number 1, were two Indian settlements founded by the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, on the banks of the Yuruario river, joined to the other Missions, and without any more garrison than one soldier to each one, for the escort of the Missioners; that it was likewise false the supposed proximity of the Barrack of the Company, distant over seventy leagues of bad roads.

59. That the seizure of the Moruca Indians by the Spaniards consisted in the visit of two Catalan Capuchin Fathers, escorted as customary, who went up to the headwaters of the Barima river, in quest of Indian deserters from the Missions in their charge, and having found them dispersed, around those creeks between the Guayne and Moruca (a territory contiguous to the Orinoco, never occupied by Hollanders); that while gathering the Indians at the Post or Barrack of Moruca, where the Hollanders kept a guard, it was discovered that three Indian women with their children were enslaved after having been taken through the mouth of the Orinoco, and, as was reported by the Reverend Fathers, they were taken back to "the Missions without doing any other harm to the Hollanders;" on the contrary, they gave to the guard on duty, and at his request, as a favor, a certificate of the case, rather moved to compassion and exceeding themselves in saying that they had a permit of the deponent for entering that port, which was not true, as the passport given to the pilot of the launch was not extended to go any farther than the mouth of the Orinoco, as shown by part number I.

60. That the deaths of the guard of the Arinda.

Barrack and the Caribs of the neighborhood, attributed to the Spaniards by the Director of Esquivó, was a groundless imposition, as that port was beyond our reach, or even our notice, as shown by said part number I.

Testimony.

No. 1.

Fol. 8.

61. From this document, and in view of the Royal Order conveying it, for the guidance of the Governor of Guayana, with the despatch from the Minister of Holland, in order to report about the particulars it contained, it appears that a rule was issued under the 24th of March, 1760, by which having it placed as heading of the proceedings, together with the Royal orders and documents accompanying the same, an investigation before the judicial tribunal was commenced, about the facts and details contained in the document from the States-General, and calling as witnesses those that might be in position to explain the circumstances, in order to state under oath what they knew.

Folio 9.

62. Therefore in compliance with the same rule the following witnesses were examined: Fray Benito de la Garriga, ex-Prefect of the Catalan Capuchin Mission of Guayana, fifty-eight years old; Fray Tomas de San Pedro, Capuchin of the Guayana Missions, fifty-three years old; Fray Josef Antonio de Cerbera, Capuchin of the Guayana Missions, forty-nine years old; Fr. Felix de Tarraga, Capuchin Missioner of Guayana, thirty-four years old; Don \*Feliz Ferreras, Lieutenant of Infantry of the Guayana Fortress, fifty-seven years old; Don Santiago Bonalde, a resident of Guayana, forty-six years old.

63. All agreed in their corresponding affidavits, stating, without discrepancy, that the Hollanders were not and had never been in possession of the rivers nor rivulets, emptying their waters into the the sea along the coast from the Esquivó exclusively to the mouth of the river Orinoco; that they had only been tolerated on that side, for the purpose of

keeping a guard consisting of two Europeans and several Indians at a Barrack called the Post, on the eastern margin of the Moruca river, (called by the Hollanders Maroco,) and that this establishment has not been there for any quasi immemorial time, as the Colony itself, as it is well known, was only established in the year 1639.

That it was untrue that they have had or had any possession of the Cuyuni river (called by them Cao-yeny), as having established there a guard and barrack similar to that of Moruca, in the year of 1747, to facilitate the inhuman trade and conveyance of Indians whom they enslaved surreptitiously from the dominions of the King our Lord, for the cultivation of their plantations and improvement of the Colony, as soon as notice of the case was received in the year 1757, they were dislodged from there, so that neither on the Cuyuni, Maserony, Apponi, nor in any of the other rivers emptying into the Esquivo have the Hollanders any possessions nor could be tolerated that they should, because said rivers embrace nearly all the territory of the Province of Guayana, running from their occidental end, where their headwaters are found, down to the oriental limit, emptying into the Esquivo river, it should result from the supposed possession that the Hollanders would be the masters of all the extensive Province of Guayana, and that the Spaniards had no more than the said banks of the Orinoco, an evident absurdity; that the only place where they were tolerated was on the margins of the Esquivo river, running southeast and northwest, almost parallel with the ocean coast, the eastern term of the Province of Guayana, and leaving free all the interior of this Province to the Spaniards, their lawful holders; that they did not know nor had ever heard that the Spaniards had built any stronghold on the Cuyuni nor in its surroundings with many or few troops, but they rather thought that Mon-

sieur de Gravesand had imagined to be so, the two settlements of Indian Missions established under the Catalan Capuchin Fathers' rule, founded in the year 1757 and 1761 on the western margin of the Yuruari river, a tributary of the Cuyuni, at a distance of seventy leagues from the Dutch barrack destroyed ; that the reason they had to believe it is that they had no other establishment in that direction, and that although there were no more than one soldier in any of these settlements for the escort of the Missionaries, the Caribs, whose statements seem to be believed by Monsieur de Gravesand, as he says in his statement, may have deceived him with this story, as it appeared by a few others contained in its erroneous statement.

Fol. 9 to 11.

That the witnesses 1, 2, 3, and 4, said that in February of 1769, the Prefect of the Missions of the Capuchins (who is the witness 1) gave a permit to Father Josef Cerbera and Father Felix Taraga (who are witnesses 3 and 4) to go down to the mouth of the Orinoco and Barima rivers, to gather the Aruacas, the Guaraunos, deserters from the Missions under their charge, and that said Fathers, with the launch and escort leading them, found two dispersed Indians among the Guayne and Moruca, and after gathering them they reached a port, where there was a Hollander who had three Indian women with their children enslaved, brought out from the mouth of the Orinoco, according to their statements to the Fathers, that they brought them back to the Missions, but without using any violence, doing any harm to the Hollanders. Witnesses 3 and 4 added that they were the Commissioners, and with the view of favoring the Hollanders, at the request of a corporal, in charge of the Post, who asked on his knees and crying, for something to show the nature of the case, they gave him a certificate to satisfy the Governor of Esquivo; and that without knowing

the malice of his pretensions, and in pity for the man, amplified the certificate, saying that they had a permit of the Commander-General of Orinoco at Guayana, to enter as far as that place, when it was not so, as the passport given to the pilot of the launch, carrying them, was definitely limited to the mouth of the Orinoco ; and that for the rest they had no permit for more nor any further order from their Superior. Witness 5, in reference to this particular subject of what happened on last February, said that he did not know anything, as he was in Rio Negro at the time. And the sixth witness said that he knew only that the Capuchin Fathers had made that trip and had taken away the fugitive Indians from their settlement found there ; that on their return, through the creeks and plains between the Guayne and Moruca, they had reached a Barrack Post of the Hollanders and found two or three Indians, natives of our dominions, whom they had enslaved and brought them back to their Missions, without having done any harm or hostility to said Hollanders. Continuing, all the six witnesses united stated that in regard to the Post and commercial house that Gravesand supposed to have been kept by the Dutch Company, between Guayne and Poveron (Pumaron), they did not know nor had heard anything of such an establishment ; that they did not know anything about the death of the corporal of the Arinda Barrack, at the headwaters of the Esquivo, nor of the existence of said Barrack ; that it was incredible for the witnesses that the Orinoco Spaniards or the Indians of our persuasion should have perpetrated the said homicide, as the distance is long and unknown to us, and they had never heard, around the Orinoco, of such a death and that it was the first time they heard of the Arinda Barrack.

Fol. 17.

Fol. 19.

That being located, as Gravesand said, towards

VOL. II, VEN.—8

the source of Esquivo River, it was inaccessible to ourselves and to our Indians, as the Esquivo Colony is found between said source and our settlements, preventing a pass; that they had never seen or heard that the Hollanders kept on fishing at the mouth of the Orinoco, nor that the Spaniards had had to stop it; that they did not understand that there was any necessity for the Hollanders to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, as they could provide themselves with fish much nearer to the Esquivo, and thought that under pretext of fishing they wanted to have the free access of their vessels to the mouth of the Orinoco, in order to facilitate and re-establish the furtive shipment of mules from the Guarapiche and Guarapo rivers, as well as Barinas tobacco, hides, and other products of the Spanish Provinces, in order to materially benefit their colonies at the time when the Orinoco and its creeks were not as well guarded as now; that this circumstance and want of commerce was the true cause of the decadence of Esquivo and of the resentment of Gravesand, the first merchant, and always the most interested in the illicit trade of the Colony. Witnesses 5 and 6 adding that only in the year 1760 the Lieutenant, Don Juan de Flores, seized a schooner and two launches from Esquivo at the Orinoco river and the Barima, its confluent, while under the employment of a few Hollanders, who were around those creeks buying Poytos from the Caribs; that said vessels were confiscated by the Government of Cumana, from where Guayana was at that time a dependence. Following in their affidavits, the six witnesses assured that the proposition was likewise false, that they had been prevented by the Spaniards of the territory from fishing, observing that Gravesand claims as belonging to the State the territory extending from the Mareguine river down to this side of the Guayne very near the mouth of the Orinoco; that said statement is an intolerable error.

Fols. 17 & 19.

That in regard to the fugitive slaves from Esquivo, the witnesses asserted that they were of two kinds, one consisting of negroes bought in Africa, and the other of Indians that the Hollanders draw themselves unduly and cruelly, by means of the Caribs, their allies, from our dominions, by way of the Moruca and Guayne rivers, emptying their waters into the sea and in communication with the Orinoco, or else through the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apamongny and others, bringing their waters from the interior of the Province of Guayana and emptying them into the Esquivo ; that if the reason for our retention of said Indians is wanted, nothing could be plainer than our motives for such conduct, being subjects of the King criminally enslaved by the Hollanders, who carry on this inhuman traffic with the Caribs against every right, we can not and ought not to have them return to slavery after they had succeeded happily in eluding it under the protection of the ministers of our lawful Lord and Sovereign. That in regard to the negroes, Gravesand was wrong, because notwithstanding that the witnesses knew that two fugitives, negroes from the Guayana to the Esquivo Colony, were sold there by said Gravesand, and that their masters, Don Tomas de Franquis and Catherine de Arocha, residents of Guayana, had claimed them, no satisfaction whatever was given them, and notwithstanding that case, they knew that several claims by Gravesand of fugitives from Esquivo to Guayana had been paid to the owners, who were satisfied to receive the price of the proceeds of their slaves ; that the only exception was in favor of those fugitive slaves who, after embracing the Catholic religion, had been made free, according to the instructions from the King.

64. And having summoned the persons of Franquis and Augustina Arroyo, they said it was true that at the end of last year, 1766, two slaves, one of whom was called Ambrosio, belonging to Franquis,

Fol. 20 and  
following.

and the other Francisco, belonging to Augustina, had run away, and they ascertained through deserters arrived from Esquivo to Guayana, that said two negroes had been sold in Esquivo to a Lutheran Minister by the Governor of that Colony, after he had kept them working at his own plantation, from where they escaped to be rearrested afterwards at the mouth of the Orinoco.

Fols. 17 & 19.

65. Witnesses 5 and 6 added on the subject of the Indians cruelly enslaved by the Hollanders, after being taken from our dominions, that they had never been claimed, as they well knew that their acquisition was criminal and that this inhuman traffic was made by means of killing a great many innocent Indians to enslave the others, contrary to the law of nations. All six witnesses testified that neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquibo, as far as they knew, had been induced by the Spaniards to run away, and it was not likely to be so, as any one found guilty of such an offence might have been hung at Esquivo; that it was true that said Colony of Esquivo was undergoing visible ruin, after the doors had been shut up against their illicit commerce with the Orinoco, and the Poytos knew the way to keep free, when they could escape from it; that, finally, it was not true that the Spaniards had killed any guard or Dutch guard or had attacked any other Post, than the one at Cuyuni in the year of 1758, at the time when one Spanish soldier was killed during the attack, and that was the only death on that occasion. And finally, all the witnesses added that they knew by experience, the Missioners after twenty-three years' residence, others nine and five, and others as residents of Guayana, twenty-three to thirty-three years, that the suggestions of the Esquivo Hollanders and their detestable commerce in Poytos was the cause of the delay of the population of the Caribs and their set-



tlement in our Missions, as well as many other savage tribes, as the Hollanders were continually making them work in the way of destroying the other settlements by different means, such as burning them, as it was done in the year 1750, or attacking them by force or making them rebel through their artful and diabolical policy; that during the time the deponents had been established in Guayana, the Hollanders, in company with the Caribs (as can be seen by the corresponding proceedings), had destroyed seven settlements by fire, without counting those which they destroyed belonging to the Jesuit Ministers, and killing likewise many of the Reverend Fathers; that in all these attacks, witnesses 5 and 6 added, Hollanders were found naked and dyed red like the Caribs.

Fols. 18 &amp; 20.

Letter P.

66. And having nothing else in reference to testimony No. 1, the exposition of the Governor of Guayana, in his representations continues, showing that at the Cuyuni river, called by the Hollanders Cayoeny, they had no other possession than a farm at the mouth of the Esquivo; that they had intended in 1747 to establish, at a distance of fifteen or twenty leagues above, a Barrack and Guard to enslave Indians from our territory, through the Caribs, but as soon as our Missioners ascertained the fact they notified the Commander of Guayana, who had them dislodged in the following year of 1757 by a detachment, who set fire to the Barrack and brought as prisoners the Hollanders, one negro, and the Caribs found in the place, together with the original instructions and papers showing the infamous commerce carried by said Guard, as well as the other advanced Barrack of the Colony by order of the Director of Esquivo and in his interest, thus bleeding to the heart the center of our Province of Guayana. Part No. 2 justifies the details of this march, and shows that there was no other blood shed than

Letter of the Guayana Commander.

Fol. 1.

that of two of our soldiers, one who was killed and the other wounded.

Letter of  
the Guay-  
ana Com.

Test. 2.

Folio 1-9.

67. This part 2 shows that on receipt of the report by the Prefect of the Catalan Capuchin Missions of Guayana, Fr. Benito de la Garriga, to the Commander *ad interim*, stating that the Hollanders were keeping an establishment in the Island of Caramucuro, in the Cuyuni river, where they had a corporal with people making the inhuman commerce in Indians, whom they enslaved and purchased from the Caribs in exchange for drygoods, hatchets, knives, munitions of war and other articles, to the great detriment of our Missions and settlements for the advancement of our holy faith, it was ordered by said Commander *ad interim*, who was at the time Don Felix Ferreras, an Ensign of Infantry, on the date of the 27th of July, 1758, that under the written instructions of what was to be done in order to ascertain the facts, an expedition should go, under the command of Don Santiago Bonalde and Don Luis Lopez de la Puente, furnishing them with the necessary vessels, stores, ammunitions, and men.

Fol. 9.

Fol. 11.

68. And after having acted as directed by said instructions, a formal investigation was instituted before the Commander of Guayana, Don Juan Valdes, during the months of September and October of the said year, 1758, and the affidavits received then show, that the heads and soldiers who served in the expedition reached said island of Caramucuro and found there only one hut with one Hollander and a negro, whom they apprehended, and another Hollander whom they took on the road; that at the time when they advanced on the hut they heard four or five shots, without knowing who fired them, that a soldier was killed and another was wounded; that there was no other establishment in that place; that the Hollander said that he was there placed by the Governor of Esquivo, but did not say for what

purpose; that some papers were taken from him; that they found one musket, two pistols unloaded, and no more arms; that said Hollander denied firing, saying that perhaps it was the negro; that the other articles found were twelve dozen knives, seven hatchets, three short broad swords, five muskets, three pistols, several remnants of dry goods, all of which were distributed among the Caribs who had accompanied and guided them.

69. And from the corresponding confessions taken from the two Hollanders imprisoned, it appears that after giving their names and professions, they stated that said hut was a Guard established there, during the last few years by the Governor of Esquivo, so as to prevent the desertion of the Esquivo colony slaves and avoid any assault from the Caribs against the Esquivos or neighboring Spanish friends, that they had no other purpose, as it was shown by chapter five of the instructions they had; that the knives and other articles found with them were intended for the purchase of victuals; that the Spaniards killed and wounded might have been shot by the Spaniards themselves, as they could not shoot; that the Guard where they were found is called Cuiba, near the banks of the Cuyuni river; that they had made no purchase of Poytos for merchandise; that the distance from that Guard to Esquivo is short; that he did not know whether that place was within the jurisdiction of Esquivo, but that said Post had been kept there for a few years; that the land was not fit for farms, as it was marshy. Fol. 31-40.

70. That the papers were added to the proceedings and were the same found with the Hollander, containing a list of the articles and ammunitions found at the hut or Post, the instructions given to the Corporal by the Governor of Esquivo, in which he was directed to consider the same as an ordinance for the Post of Cuyuni, under the States-General, Fols. 43-45.  
Fols. 40-43.

and render help to the Indians when they were attacked by wild tribes, and that no harm would be done to the Spaniards as friends, but not to allow them to cross the Cuyuni river, nor permit any one of them any commerce beyond their place on the river, but to allow the Indians to carry through their Chinese slaves or any other merchandise, so as to enable their purchase by the Esquivo residents; great care was enjoined in securing all fugitive slaves and helping their masters to recover them, paying ten florins for each one, collected as due, according to the accounts of the previous Master of the Post; that every year a statement was to be forwarded twice to the Governor of Esquivo. With a testimony of these proceedings the Commander of Guayana sent the two imprisoned Hollanders to the Governor and Captain General of that Province.

Fol. 44.

Letter of  
the Commander  
of  
Guayana.

Fol. 4.

71. And finding nothing else in the above mentioned testimony No. 2, said Commander of Guayana continued his statement as follows: That the Post that Gravesand said to have been seized by the Spaniards near a rivulet towards the south of the Guayne river, between this and Povaron, where it was supposed that the Company had had from time immemorial a place of commerce and a Post depending without contradiction from the territory of the republic, the exponent supposes that it may be the one that the intruded Hollanders abandoned at the Barima river in the year 1768, when they ascertained through the Caribs, their friends, that our launches as corsairs were ready to go around and search those rivers emptying into the Orinoco as well as the Barima, the importance of which they tried to diminish, calling it a rivulet; that he did not dare to call by name the Director of Esquivo and style him a usurper, who made himself so poor of memory as to call immemorial an establishment hardly two years old, as it is shown by the part No. 3.

72. From this part it appears that the Commander of Guayana was informed that several Dutch families had settled at the Barima creek within our jurisdiction near the large mouth of the Orinoco; that he sent a Captain with a launch and the corresponding crew, with directions to notify said families once, twice, and three times to remove their settlements from there, as that place did not belong to nor was within the territory of the States General, but was under Spain; that the Captain, in compliance with his commission, went and came back from that place, bringing several articles from the houses left by the families; that said articles were enumerated in a regular list and appraised and sold at auction after being proclaimed, and the proceeds distributed according to the Royal regulations; that said Captain and three of the persons of the crew made their affidavits, showing that after the receipt by the Commander General of Guayana of a report that at the aforesaid creek of Barima close to the large mouth of the Orinoco river, where it empties, some Dutch families had settled, they had been sent, said Captain and crew, with instructions to notify them one, two, and three times to leave that territory that was annexed to the Province of Guayana; that the exponents left for their destination, at the creek, and having reached its mouth saw there several Indians of the Carib tribe, and that these spread the news of their approach before reaching the establishments and farms of said strangers, who ran away, allowing no time for any notification; that the houses were found abandoned, and the effects, iron implements, and utensils found in them were taken under an inventory and shipped on board of their two vessels; that they afterwards set fire to the houses so as to prevent their re-establishment, and destroyed as far as possible the farms around.

Letter P.

No. 6.

Test. 3.

Fol. 18.

Letter  
from the  
Commander  
of Guayana.

Fol. 4.

73. Continuing his representations, said Commander of Guayana showed that the Spaniards had never disputed then or at any time with the Dutch about fishing at the mouths of the Orinoco, because they (the Dutch) had never claimed the right to fish there; that during the three years elapsed since the time when he commenced to employ armed launches as corsairs in this river twenty-three foreign vessels had been seized, but none of them were employed in fishing; that they had not seen or even heard any report of the possession by the Hollanders of the fishing rights as it appeared by the part No. 1, as already mentioned; that he had found only an instance of a seizure by Spaniards in the year 1760 of a small schooner and two Dutch fishing launches at the mouth of the Orinoco and Barima river, as it appears by the part No. 4; that he was of the opinion that they ought to be prevented from fishing there, as said fishing might degenerate into an illicit trade, difficult to stop and too injurious to the Spanish Provinces.

No. 6.

Test 4.

Fol. 1—4.

74. It appears by said part No. 4 that the Commander of Guayana, after having received intelligence that a few Hollanders near Barima were carrying on the inhuman and illicit commerce of purchasing Indians in trade for merchandisc from the Caribs, issued his order of the 7th of September, 1760, instructing the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Juan de Dios y Flores, to prevent said traffic; that said lieutenant left, but did not reach the place of his destination, on account of having seized, on his way, a schooner and two Dutch launches that came to Orinoco for the purpose of fishing; that he brought said vessels to the port of Santo Thome of Guayana, where they were visited as prizes and an inventory made; that a local investigation was instituted, by which it appears that said lieutenant and his crew seized the above-mentioned vessels, on

account of their being employed in fishing at the Orinoco; that three men of their crew fled with the exception of a mustee and a few Arauca Indians; that the reason for not having reached the place of destination was on account of being short of hands, and that it was natural to suppose that the Hollanders, whom they were after, had received news of their approach and left; that it was shown by the confessions of the persons arrested in the vessels seized; that the vessels were Dutch, on their way to fish in the Orinoco; that there were several Hollanders at Barima purchasing Poytos; that the Commander ordered the arrest of the mustee, and the other Indians to be sent to the Missions; that, by direction of the Commander General of Cumana, the other parties were apprized with their appurtenances and sold at public auction, distributing all the proceeds, according to the Royal regulations.

Fol. 18—21.

Folio 21.

Fols. 24—28.

Fol. 28—34.

Fol. 34—41.

75. The Commander continued his exposition, stating that in Orinoco only were retained, out of the Esquivo slave deserters, those who were Indians, and of the negroes, only those who came to enjoy the benefit of becoming Catholics, as it appears by the part No. 5, as that was the rule of His Majesty.

Letter  
from the  
Commander  
of Guayana.

Fol. 5.

76. This testimony shows that the Commander of Guayana had referred to the Captain General of the Province of Cumana with the corresponding testimony, the case of a negro who came over to our dominions from the Dutch, in order to become a Christian, asking for instructions for the guidance of said Commander, who received an answer, dated September 12, 1761, directing him, according to the orders from His Majesty found in his office, to institute an investigation as to the proof of the escape, and whether it was really effected with the purpose of becoming a Christian, and if so, to take him under the Royal protection and deliver him to the Pastor, so as to be instructed in the mysteries of our

No. 6.

Test. 5.

Fol. 5.

faith, baptized, and let free, advising him to lead a quiet and Christian life; that the same method was to be observed with every other fugitive slave from the foreign Colony, reaching Guayana in quest of baptism and a Christian life under the protection of His Majesty in His Catholic dominions.

Fols. 8-16.

77. The same part 5 shows that said Commander acted accordingly in regard to six Indians who escaped from Esquivo in order to become Christians.

Letter of  
the Guay-  
ana Com-  
mander.

Fol. 5.

78. Said Commander following his statement continued in reference to other negro slaves, who, on account of ill treatment or other reasons, had deserted and arrived from Esquivo, and who had been returned to their masters whenever claimed, or their value paid in silver to them, when they had agreed to have them sold, as it was shown by part No. 6 and other acts of the kind existing in the Royal Archives.

Letter P.

No. 6.

Test. 6.

Fols. 1-18,

79. From the above part (or proceedings) it appears that in September, 1759, Captain Andres Schut, a neighbor of Esquivo, came to Guayana and presented his passport from the Governor of the Colony to claim certain negroes who had run away; the same were sold and the price paid to him, as shown by his receipt, signed at Guayana. It ap-

Fols. 14  
and 19 to 26.

pears, likewise, that in the year 1750, with the same kind of passport, the Militia Captain Salomon Perico, of Esquivo, came to Guayana, claiming two negroes; that the same had been sold, and the price deposited in the Royal Treasury, was paid to said Perico, who gave his receipt. It appears, likewise, that in the year 1754, Juan Pedro Thoman, an Attorney of the Esquivo Company, came to Guayana to claim four negroes owned by the Company, who had escaped, and as they had been sold before and their price deposited in the Royal Treasury, he received it and acknowledged receipt in due form. It appears, likewise, that in the year 1766, Nicolas

Fol. 25.

Fols. 28 to  
36.

Fol. 36.

Fol. 37-41.



Roujelet de Lasarie, police counsellor of justice and Secretary of the Esquivo Colony, came to Guayana to claim thirteen young negroes; he sold them, received their price, and gave his receipt to the purchaser, who appeared to have been Don Juan Claudio Romero, a resident of the Province of Cumana.

80. It appears likewise that after due observance of the regulations four slaves from Esquivo, who had run away and arrived at Guayana, had been sold and the proceeds of the sale deposited in the Royal Treasury, after the deduction of dues and expenses, so as to be kept subject to the claim of their lawful masters.

Testimony.  
Nos. 6 and 7.  
Fol. 10.

81. Said Governor of Guayana continued, stating that it was to be observed that since the Governor of Esquivo had appropriated to himself the two negroes called Ambrosio and Francisco, slaves of Don Tomas Franquis and Augustina de Arocha, residents of Guayana, who ran away from that city to the Colony, where they were sold on his account and profit of said Lorenzo van Gravesand, as it appears in part No. 1 (already mentioned), and it seemed as if he had been satisfied with this reprisal, as he had not claimed formally the slaves who had run away from Esquivo to Guayana since that time, nor even tried to recover seven hundred and sixty-two dollars, proceeds of the sale of five fugitive slaves from Esquivo, placed and kept as a deposit in the Royal Treasury, subject to the claim of the interested party, as directed by Don Matheo Gual and Don Josef Diguja, Governors of Cumana, as it appears in part No. 7. That, indeed, Don Nicolas de la Lasarie, Secretary of the Colony of Esquivo, came, and on the 8th of September, 1766, gave his power of Attorney to Don Vivente Franco, a resident of Guayana, to claim the proceeds and consent to the sale of thirty-eight negro slaves who in those years had deserted from the Colony to the said Pro-

Letter of  
the Com-  
mander of  
Guayana.  
Fol. 5.

vince, the proceedings were still pending, on account of the death of Lasarie and the expiration of his power of Attorney to Franco; the successors of Lasarie having put no appearance, supposing that we might take the price of their negroes, as the Director of Esquivo did with the price of those of Franquis and Arocha, runaways from Guayana; that the proceeds of the 29 slaves, as well as the \$762 before, were used in the payment of the soldiers of the troop organized by the predecessor of the exponent, Don Joaquin Moreno, who had not been paid yet for his dues from the year 1764 to 1768, and that it was necessary now that his Majesty would see how to satisfy the interested parties in regard to the claim now undertaken by the Minister of Holland.

Test. No. 6.

Fol. 37.

Test. No. 7.

Fol. 1.

82. From part No. 6 it appears that Nicolas Lasarie not only sold the thirteen young negroes already mentioned, but he intended to claim besides about thirty-odd runaway negroes from the Esquivo Colony. It appears likewise by a certificate signed by Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Officer Accomptant, of the City of Guayana, dated the 4th of April, 1770, that in the branch of foreign deposits an item of 6,096 reals, 14 and  $\frac{1}{2}$  maravedis was entered, as the price of a negro woman with her children and four more negro runaways from the Dutch Colony sold at auction by the Government for the benefit of their owners. And likewise he certified that in regard to the thirty-eight male and female slaves, arrived at Guayana from said Colony since 1766 up to the middle of 1767, similar steps had been taken at the request of Don Vicente Franco, as Attorney of Don Nicolas Rosolet de Lasarie, Police Secretary of said Colony, the proceeds to be deposited in the Royal Treasury (deducting Royal dues and costs in favor of their Honors, as shown by the proceedings still pending), the same

to be done in regard to the apprizement and sale of twenty-nine of said negroes for 3,480 *pesos*, the remaining nine slaves not having been sold for want of purchasers, and were applied to the works of His Majesty in that fortress. And finally he stated, in regard to said amount of one and the other deposit, with others existing at the Royal Treasury at that time, that they were used to support the troops of the New Company of the Orinoco up to the last year of 1767, when nothing had been received from the corresponding central offices of payment until 1768.

83. And in this same testimony the proceedings are found in regard to the sale of the negroes above mentioned.

Fols. 3-6.

84. The Commander of Guayana further stated, that in regard to any Spaniards having induced the Esquivo slaves to run away, there was no probability of its being so, as it was not credible there should be any person to take such a perilous risk without any other inducement than that of doing good to the negroes; that Gravesand did not give any persons, name, or instance, spoke only in general terms that did not prove anything against what appeared evident by the proceedings on this matter contained in part No. 1, and the erection of strongholds, near the territory of the republic, the attacks on the Barracks of the Company, and the killing of the guard, as claimed by the Deputies in their representation.

Letter of  
the Guay-  
ana Com-  
mander.

Fol. 6.

85. That in the Royal order his report was wanted on the matter, for the notice of his Majesty, and he had to observe that in all countries the sea coasts were most precious, as without them the productions inland were useless for the countries beyond the sea; that in the vast Province of Guayana, so fertile and advantageously situated, all the coasts were occupied by strangers, remaining only to the Spaniards, on one extremity, the mouth of the Orinoco as

a sea port; that the Hollanders possessed those parts of the coast of most importance to that vast country, having many navigable rivers running from the innermost and most profitable part of Guayana; that it was therefore advisable to destroy the Dutch Colony, beginning at Esquivo and following to Demerari, Berbis, Corentin up to Surinam; that the exponent thought of two proper ways, the first to receive, protect, and set free all the fugitive slaves from said Colonies, as it was the practice at Caracas with those from Curacao, who did not want so much protection for the free use of the Catholic religion as those of the colonies did, where no importance was given to the subject, and their slaves were left to live as gentiles; that the second way to accomplish such an end was to keep in said Province a standing battalion of Infantry to watch and verify the frontiers and rivers emptying into the Esquivo, the building of strongholds that even when projected had frightened the Hollanders, thus preventing and embarrassing the usurpation of more territory than what they are holding and their considerable trade in Indian Poytos or slaves, through which our lands are deserted and theirs populated and prodigiously cultivated; that facilities should be given the Indians they have enslaved to escape, and they would not be encouraged to pay much higher prices for negroes for fear of losing them; that the loss of both kinds of slaves will cripple the Dutch colonies and their operatives will come to us, considering that we are strong and formidable.

That this increase of troops could not be excessively expensive, considering the necessity of population and the defence of that country; that both requirements called for large disbursements, but nothing could be more beneficial than those coming from the soldier, whose money attracted laborers and every kind of mechanics to the country, that the latter as well as the former would take Indian

wives, and this kind of alliance with the Indians would facilitate their civilization and a prompt and less expensive population of those wild countries. A soldier, young and single, is more easily mustered and conveyed to those Provinces than a whole family; that his experience in the matter showed that it was of more advantage and preferable, as it had been done at the island of Santo Domingo and other Provinces of America, carrying whole families of Canarians, and from other parts, under condition of paying for their transportation and providing them with the necessary utensils, and their maintenance for one year at least; that among the fortresses above mentioned, one ought to be at the point of Barima, at the windward of the mouth of Navios, in a northerly direction, with a high wooden house of the same kind of the balize at the entrance of the Mississippi, as the land is swampy and low; that from said establishment we would be enabled to keep a close watch on the Hollanders and stop them in their illicit trade, keeping a constant lookout at the Barima river, the chief avenue of communication between the Esequivo Colony and the Orinoco; that this kind of balize is necessary for our vessels to ascertain the position of the large mouth of the Orinoco river, concealed from the sea for want of proper marks, and apt to mislead in the way of reaching it, on account of the strong currents of those waters to the leeward; that the navigators can not well avoid the dangers of the low ground on that coast, outside of the channel of the river, without ascertaining the position of the mouth; by holding a Post at Barima Point, that of the Hollanders at Moruca would become useless, for the purpose of preventing the escape of their Indian Poytos or other slaves, arresting their pursuers, who sometimes were bound to come as far as the Orinoco, when they knew that the Spaniards were at 49 leagues from the mouth.

86. That the methods he had proposed or any

VOL. II, VEN.—9.

others employed for the purpose of increasing the population, opulence and strength of the Province, could not be useless if correctly carried out, as might be observed by the part No. 8, where the opportunity of the present time was shown to attain that object, within a few years after the failure of over two centuries.

Letter P.

No. 6.

Test. 8.

Fols. 1-7.

87. This part, No. 8, is confined to a certificate given at the city of San Thomé, of Guayana, on the 20th of September, 1769, by Don Juan Josef Canales, an Ecclesiastical Rector, Vicar, and Judge of that city; Don Andres Oleaga, Royal Accomptant of the same; Don Josef Bosse, Captain of Infantry and Sergeant Major of the Orinoco troops; Don Juan Antonio Bonalde, Captain of Infantry of the same troop; Don Nicolas Martinez, Lieutenant Commander of Artillery; Don Antonio Barreto, Lieutenant of Infantry and Chief Adjutant of the same; and the resident officers and civilians, Captain Don Vicente Franco, Captain Don Diego Ignacio Mariño, Lieutenant Don Juan de Jesus Miers, Don Joaquin de Mieres, Don Cayetano Filgueyra y Barcia, and Captain Calixto de Lesama. It appears by the certificates of all the above persons that Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Royal Captain of the Artillery Corps, and General Commander of Guayana and all the settlements of the upper and lower Orinoco and Rio Negro, had endeavored and was endeavoring, with the utmost diligence and constance, to secure the advancement and welfare of that Province and their neighbors, and that he fortified and put in a state of defence the mountain of Padrastré, of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, the bulwark and safety of that Province; that for the same purpose he had transferred the four settlements called Piacoa, Tipuma, Viacoa, and Unata, and removed them from the proximity of the fortress to other places, where an enemy (intending an attack to the

Province) could not make use of them; that he armed and built two launches as corsairs, to prevent the entrance of foreigners and traders carrying on any illicit commerce with the Orinoco, and persecuting and seizing their vessels on the sea coasts of Paria, Trinidad, and Gulfo Triste; that he dislodged, likewise, from the Barima river the usurping Hollanders, who had settled on its margins, in alliance with over eight thousand Carib Indians, natives of that territory; that he built in Guayana a powder magazine, provisional quarters for the troops, and a good hospital for the sick, as well as lodgings for the laborers of the fortress.

That he had erected a small fort furnished with artillery, served by eight soldiers, for the defence of a new Indian settlement at the Caura river, the theatre of the inhuman war kept up by the Caribs in order to carry out their infamous traffic in Poyto Indian slaves, whom they sold to the Esquivo Hollanders; that he had likewise explored the large cocoa fields of the upper Orinoco, and that in order to improve the culture and commerce of said products he had undertaken the civilization and settlement of the savage Indians of those territories, supporting and keeping there a Captain settler and some Andalusian Capuchin Missionaries, with an officer and military escort, taking them to Rio Negro, where they had settled new towns and the Missions of La Esmeralda, San Philipe, San Francisco Solano, and Santa Barbara, and supported those of San Carlos and Maypures, founded by the boundary expedition; that he had likewise trained, disciplined, and dressed in uniforms all the troops of that Province, which had been found in a wretched conditon of neglect and nudity for want of economy on the part of the Directors; that he had gathered and brought to the settlement of Pan de Azucar, the dispersed Indians, fugitives from the Mission of Cabruta, and those of

the Province of Barcelona in the new settlements of Tajaquire, and Cerro del Mono ; that he had founded the three new Missions of Panapana, and Mamanta, and Orocopiche, in the neighborhood of Guayana, at a distance of two or three leagues from its commerce and support ; that he had commenced and was carrying on with the greatest activity the erection of a magnificent church in Guayana, on a model architecture such as few could be found in America.

That he had founded a town, under the name of Bourbon, with Spanish families, from the Province of New Barcelona, without taxing the King for rations for their maintenance during the first year, nor any other expenses, as it has been the case with other populations in former times ; that he erected in the interior of that Province, at the Paragua river, a small fort furnished with artillery and troops for the defence of the place, and to prevent the Hollanders from taking away the Poytos they used to seize on the margin of the Orinoco, for the service of their Colonies on the Atlantic coast of that continent ; that he had increased and improved that city with over sixty houses with tiled roofs and common walls, and the corresponding families brought from the neighboring Provinces to inhabit them, and enjoying conveniences which they did not possess at home or found among the inhabitants of Guayana ; that the settlement of cattle ranches and towns settled by Spaniards on the upper Orinoco by order of His Majesty, and in all the new establishments and communities of Missionaries supported by the Commander General, the true zeal of the same was manifested, as well as the economical conduct of his government, and the generous disinterestedness he showed in his endeavors for the advancement of that Province, as well as the benefits to be derived by the Spanish Crown from the population, advancement, and safety of that extensive Province, so advantage-



ously situated, as being the nearest from America to Spain, the constant trade that could be kept with those countries even in time of war, without any fear of the interception of their vessels by cruisers or corsairs of the enemy, as there was no obstacle or any fixed place to wait for them from the large mouth of the Orinoco to the Spanish shores; that the parties signing this certificate consider it their duty to impassionately confess that the Orinoco was the only near and sure place the King had in America in time of war, as he was enabled to communicate the necessary orders to those dominions within twenty or twenty-five days; that they ought to state the fact that if said Commander were furnished with the necessary means according to his diligence, activity, intelligence and the favorable disposition of many persons desiring to settle in the neighboring Provinces, attracted by the conveniences and fertility of that most beautiful and extensive Province, on account of its commerce and amenity, it should become within a short time a New Spain for the State, with all the above advantages, that will make it the most distinguished, and therefore deserve the first attention of His Majesty; that in order to appreciate the force and truth of the foregoing statement, it was enough to see the benefits derived by strangers from the French Colony of Cayena, and the Hollanders from those of Surinam, Bervis, and Esquivo on the eastern coast of that Province; that it should be observed that in the first and second one, within thirty leagues inland (navigation on the river of their names), they kept in continual trade over 200 vessels each one, and a few less vessels correspondingly kept by the third and last of less population and on the sea coast side; that if those Colonies yielded such valuable commercial advantages to their inhabitants in products, within such a short distance inland, the Orinoco trade

could certainly prove of considerable more benefit with all the advantages of a more extensive field in constant circulation, population, and general establishments.

Letter P.

No. 7.

Letter of the  
Governor  
from Cu-  
mana.

88. Another of the documents forwarded as reserved matter, marked in the index as No. 7, is a letter by Don Pedro Josef de Urrutia, Governor of Cumana, of the 10th of May, 1770, accompanied with supporting documents, and stating that on the 30th of March of that year he had acknowledged the receipt of the Royal order of the 23d of September, 1769, accompanied with a paper in which the Minister of Holland complains of the conduct of the Spaniards established at the Orinoco against the Esquivo Colony, and the facts of its contents, and he promised to address the required report with justifying documents of what should be found out in regard to the case.

89. That, in compliance, he reported that the only facts that he had ascertained to exist took place before the separation from the Province of Guayana from the Government of Cumana, and were brought about by the same Hollanders of the Esquivo Colony, close to the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins in said Province; that in the year 1758, the Governor *ad interim*, Don Nicolas de Castro, received a letter from the Prefect of said Missions informing the Commander of that fortress of the serious injury and the loss of lives at the hands of the Caribs of the desert, influenced by the Esquivo Hollanders, who had invaded the region of Hauchica, where the Guaica Indian Mission was established; that fearing greater evils to the surrounding settlements, he applied for a prompt remedy, giving as the chief cause of these troubles the constant suggestions of the Hollanders in persuading the Caribs not to belong or make part of the Spanish settlements, thus fostering their dislike and opposition to their holy work, so as to continue the abominable trade they kept with the

Caribs, giving them dry goods and iron implements in exchange for Indian Poytos (which means slaves among them), the same Poytos were taken by the Carbis as prisoners in their wars, so as to sell them at the above-mentioned Esquivo Colony, thus retarding the progress of the Gospel and the religious instruction of the gentiles.

That said Hollanders trespassing the limits of their Colony were taking more lands for the purpose of their commerce in the dominions of His Majesty and the neighborhood of the nearest Missions, as it was shown by the fact of the establishment at that place, with a permit from Governor Lorenzo Storem Gravesand, of a house and Guard in the island called Caramacuru in the Cuyuni river, of the territory of the Missions, (that the Hollanders call in said papers Cayoeny river); because this place had never been considered a part of the Esquivo Colony, as it is shown by the despatch of the above mentioned Prefect; that aware of all these circumstances, the Commander of Guayana sent an expedition of troops to said Cuyuni river, with the necessary instructions, so as to dislodge the Hollanders from that place and seize the Indian slaves or Poytos and everything else they kept; that it was so carried out, notwithstanding the resistance of the Hollander who commanded in that Post and the death of one of the Spaniards and serious wound of another of that expedition; that on this subject a suitable investigation was instituted by the Commander of all the facts and circumstances of the occasion, and were forwarded, with the two Dutch prisoners arrested in the act of resistance, to the Governor *ad interim*, Don Nicolas de Castro, who took the advice of a learned assessor and reported the case accordingly, referring the proceedings to His Majesty, but there is no evidence of what became of the said Hollanders and the said proceedings.

90. That the Governor of Esquivo, having at this

time been informed of the imprisonment of two Hollanders in the Cuyuni river, sent a despatch to the Commander of Guayana, claiming them, and said Commander, without returning any answer, submitted said despatch to the Governor *ad interim*, Don Nicolas de Castro, who answered the Governor of Esquivo what will be found in the testimony accompanied to his representations.

91. From this testimony appears what has been mentioned before in testimony No 2 and No. 6, and an abstract of paragraphs 67, 68, 69 and 70. It is only noticed, in addition to the testimony heretofore mentioned, that after the Commander of Guayana sent to the Governor of Cumana the proceedings on the subject, and the two Dutch prisoners, said Governor, by act of September 28, 1758, appointed for his assessor the Licenciado Don Julian Padilla Moron, one of the legal advisers of the Royal Audience, in order to report on the merits and importance of the case.

92. In his report of the 28th of December of the same year, he advised the Governor to send the original proceedings to His Majesty, leaving a testimony of the same in that city.

93. An act was likewise issued by the Commander of Guayana on the 30th of September, 1758, submitting to the Governor of Cumana several papers received from the Governor of Esquivo, which had been translated: one being a passport brought by the bearer of despatches, signed by the Governor of Esquivo, and the other a paper signed by Lorenzo Storem de Gravesand, dated the 30th of September, 1758, which reads as follows:

“SIR: It was by accident that I was told by Indians that our Post, his second, and a slave of the Company with a woman and her children, had been carried away as prisoners, and the house set on fire; I could not give credit to this news; it seems to me

fabulous ; the case is impossible ; I did not wish to take the least step ; but afterwards I sent people to find out ocularly the facts. The people return and confirm not only the truth of the fact, but that the said persons are actually imprisoned in Guayana. What must I imagine, Sir, about this high-handed conduct in direct opposition to the law of nations, to the treaties of peace, and to the alliance existing so happily and for such a long time between His Catholic Majesty and the High Powers of the States-General of the United Provinces ? How is it possible that such high-handed and violent conduct has taken place without any provocation or even complaint ? I am firmly persuaded that His Catholic Majesty, far from approving such an offence, will do full justice to my sovereign and administer an exemplary punishment to those who have abused their authority.

“The great King has given signal proofs of his affection to our Republic and I should have been content to send a representation of the case to my Sovereigns, leaving to their prudence the claim of a suitable satisfaction ; but the place which I have the honor to fill, binds me to ask in their names, and request in writing from you, Sir, not only the freedom of the prisoners, but a suitable satisfaction for such violent and manifest violation of the treaties and the law of nations. I have long had the honor to be at the head of this Colony, and I have been solicitous to retain the friendship of the Spanish nation, our near neighbor, using always all in my power to prevent the Carib Indians from doing them any harm. If those implicated in this affair have taken care to secure the papers kept at the Post, it will be found that one of the principal chapters of instructions contains a positive order not to give the least cause of complaint to our Spanish neighbors. It should not be difficult for

me to take reprisals, having the same in my own hands; but I find no reason to do so as opposed to the duties of an honorable man, when as a Christian, I ought not to do so until the last extremity, when every other remedy fails. By a vessel which will depart for Europe this week, I give my Masters an account of the case. I entertain no doubt that they will be as much surprised as I am in regard to this high-handed offence, and will not delay their claim before the Court of His Catholic Majesty. Thus, Sir, in the name of the High Powers of my Sovereign Directors of the Company, my Masters, I ask the release of the prisoners, to be forwarded to me, with a full satisfaction equivalent to the losses and damages they have sustained, protesting expressly, in case of refusal, against all the persons concerned; that there is not a single person who does not feel offended, and that I always feel inclined to keep friendly relations with our neighbors, so long as I am not compelled to do otherwise.

"Awaiting with impatience your answer, I have the honor to be, with every possible esteem and consideration, Sir,

"Your humble and most obedient servant,

"LORENZO STOREM DE GRAVESAND.

"Esquivo River, on the last day of September, 1758."

Folio 22.

94. It is found, besides, in this testimony, a copy of a letter of the Governor *ad interim* of Cumana to Gravesand, in response to the foregoing, as follows:

"DEAR SIR: The Commander of Guayana has forwarded to me, among other documents, a letter of your Honor addressed to him, claiming the two Dutch prisoners, a negro slave and a woman with her children, found by the guard sent from that fortress to an island of the Cuyuni river, in a house where the unjust trade of Indian Poytos from the dominions of the King

my Master is kept. The same Cuyuni river, and all that district, being within said dominion, it is not creditable that the plenipotentiaries of the States-General could have authorized your Honor to introduce your people there, and much less for the purpose of trading in Indians with the Spaniards and their settlements. Upon that point I fully justify the conduct of this step. I am not at liberty to release the prisoners and send them to you until the final decision of my Sovereign, to whom I have sent an account of the proceedings, justifying the facts. Your Honor will find me ready to accede to any just demands. May the Lord keep your Honor in his Holy guard.

"I kiss the hands of your Honor. Your servant,  
"DON NICOLAS DE CASTRO.

"Cumana, September 9, 1758.

"To Monsieur DE GRAVESAND."

96. The Governor of Cumana further stated that after the answer given by Don Nicolas de Castro to the Governor of Esquivo, said Governor addressed a case to the Commander of Guayana, who, after finding out that it contained a map and a paper, without taking any further steps, closed and returned the same to said Governor, by the same bearers, as everything is found extensively explained by the other testimony accompanied.

Letter  
from the  
Governor  
of Cumana.

Fol. 3

96. From this testimony it appears that after the report received by the Commander of Guayana, in regard to the arrival of a vessel in charge of a few Arauca Indians, bringing from the Governor of Esquivo a closed dispatch addressed to that of Guayana, double sealed, and a case three-quarters of a yard in length, nailed, containing a map, he decided on the 20th of March, 1759, to call the Notary Public to attest to everything in connection with the case, and it was done as directed.

Test 2.

Fol. 2.

97. By another act it was ascertained, after opening the above-mentioned case, that it contained a map, and it was closed again and sent back to the Governor of Esquivo with the paper accompanying the same, both without being opened, and another with the official letter stating what was sent back through the same Indians. The Notary Public made the corresponding delivery of everything after taking an authenticated copy of the contents of said official letter.

Fol. 4.

98. And having made the delivery, as directed, the Notary certifies that the official letter of remittance is worded as follows :

“DEAR SIR: The habit of opening this port to peaceful Indians, trading on the Orinoco, allowed the entrance of the Araucas (who not having been known as envoys of your Honor) sent to this city with the purpose of delivering to me a double sealed single despatch, and a small pine case, both addressed to me. It is not in my power to open the paper, on account of the general prohibition to allow foreign vessels entering the Spanish ports of America or hold correspondence with these Colonies, and because I understand that your Honor intends to insist upon a demarcation of limits, in which the Colony under your command is situated, making inadmissible said despatch and case. For that reason I return both to your Honor, the despatch closed and the case nailed, through the same bearers, so that you may take whatever steps you may think proper, before the competent parties. And as your Honor in the letter of the last of September of last year, informs me of having reported to your Sovereign (on a subject almost of the same nature) may address your claim through your Ambassador before the court of His Majesty.

“ I am not at liberty to act in this matter, nor on similar subjects, as I have no power to do so.



"May our Lord keep your Honor for many years in His holy guard.

"Kiss the hands of your Honor.

"Your obedient servant,

"JUAN VALDES.

"To Señor Don Lorenzo Thomas de Gravesand."

"GUAYANA, *March the 20th, 1759.*

99. On the same day, the 29th of March, said Commander of Guayana ordered the original proceedings to be sent to the Governor of Cumana, after having taken a testimony of the same as it was done.

Fol. 4.

100. Following this report, the Governor of Cumana stated that neither at the Government public archives nor at his office were found any other documents on the subject than the two foregoing testimonies and a Royal Order, a copy of which he accompanies, issued by the Government at Madrid on the 30th of March, 1753, communicated to the Marquis of La Ensenada for the remedy of the injuries and loss of life occasioned by the Caribs to the Missions of Guayana, under the influence of the Esquivo Hollanders, and the other reason therein contained. His Majesty, after taking due notice of the same, will decide what is to be done.

Letter  
from the  
Governor of  
Cumana.

Fol. 3.

101. From said copy of the Royal Order of the above date there is nothing else than an order to furnish a stronger military escort to the Missions of Guayana, so as to protect them against the evils and attacks, harm and loss of life by the Caribs under the influence of the Hollanders, as was represented by the Missionaries to His Majesty.

Royal Order

102. The last document sent, as reserved matter, and indexed No. 8, is a representation addressed to His Majesty, by the Missions of Guayana, on the 6th of July, 1760, signed by Fr. Benito de la Garriga, Prefect of the Catalan Capuchin Missions of Guayana, in which the case of the Hollanders is referred to, in regard to the three Indian women, with their

Letter P.  
No. 8 Rep-  
resentation  
of the Pre-  
fect of the  
Missions.

children, enslaved and taken from the mouth of the Orinoco by the Hollanders and recovered from their Post at the Moruca river (as mentioned in paragraphs 59 and 63 of this abstract), and stating that the Governor of Esquivo had complained against the fact, having no right to do so.

He continued explaining the reasons he had, as well as his predecessor, for keeping a sharp vigilance against the Hollanders to prevent the injury they do to the Missions. He stated that the practice of those strangers was now, as before, to go to the interior of that Province to enslave the Indians, vassals of His Majesty, and carry them away to their Colony; that this practice was currently authorized by the Governor of Esquivo, as stated in the letters patent and passports from the same Governor, and in his own handwriting, delivered to the persons leaving the Colony for the purpose of enslaving the Indians, and without any respect penetrating in our own settlements, as had been done several times before; that the predecessors of the exponent had informed His Majesty in the year of 1751 of the case; that the Commissioners of the Royal Expedition had given the same report, and brought it to the knowledge of Don Josef Iturriaga by a letter addressed to him by the deponent in 1756, requesting the means of practically stopping this abuse, and by a letter of Don Ricardo Oval in 1757; that the representation of the exponent seemed to have reached the notice of the Minister of His Majesty, but without any practical benefit.

103. In the year 1748, our Mission of Miamo was visited by two white men from Esquivo with a passport from the Governor to buy Indians, and as the Father Missionaries had only recently arrived from Spain, he could not understand the gravity of the case, and he sent them back only, without giving them time to collect old debts from the Caribs, and

that in the same year, at the plains of Corumo, a colored woman from Esquivo was buying Poytos from the Caribs, and that in 1749, a soldier from the escort of the Missions arrested one of these traders, while very near the Mission of Miamo, who had a patent from the Governor of Esquivo to come and purchase slaves ; and in said letters patent the Governor called himself Governor of Esquivo and the mouth of the Orinoco ; that this and other letters from the same Governor were sent by his predecessor with the above-mentioned report of said year 1751.

104. That one of the Hollanders was domiciled with the Caribs, during eight years, at the Aquire river, making purchases of Poytos, and that numerous other men were carrying on the same trade in Puruey, Caura and Parava, from where they used to send to Esquivo and Surinam remittances of twenty to fifty Poytos, and they had decamped for fear of the arrival of the Royal Expedition in Orinoco.

105. There was a revolt in the year of 1750, when all the Caribs of our five Missions of Miamo, Cunure, Tupuquen, Curumo, and Mastanambo rose and killed four soldiers of the escort and eight Spaniards, showing many other kinds of hostilities. At the end of one year many of them were brought back, and they discovered what had been supposed before with sufficient reason, that they (the Caribs) had done what they did at the instance of the Hollanders, who taught them the way of doing it, selecting ten Caribs beforehand to each Father, and ten more to each soldier, and the rest to plunder all at the same time, at the hour of the mass and at the time of leaving the church, when they were to kill the Fathers and soldiers ; that it was so carried out ; that the exponent knew of the circumstances, having been present and an ocular witness to the

same, as he was the President at the Tupuquen (Mission); that he was likewise a prisoner of the Caribs and his liberation was a miracle; that he saw the way in which the Caribs killed two militiamen and two soldiers left as dead, after smashing their heads with Macana sticks; that they carried away to their feast the hand of one of those who was killed, and stole the sacred vessels and ornaments for the Divine Service; that he saw likewise and recognized a colored Hollander, who came to teach the Carib Indians and stimulate them; that his name was well known in those Missions.

106. It was in 1762, when the Father President of the Mission Supama, reported to him that a Guaica Captain of that Mission had stolen several young Indians from the same settlement and sold them to Dutch traders, and that in order to deprive him of another opportunity he had placed him and his party in another Mission, and that his settlement was bound to perdition under the persecution of the Caribs.

107. It was at our Mission of Cavallaju that, on the 20th of June, 1766, a negro and an Indian, both purchasers of Poytos, came each one with a passport from the Governor of Esquivo, who, as they represented, was their Master, and that they were slaves, although in the passport it was stated that they were to go to the Aponony river, as the interpreter said, to collect old debts, being understood that they were to collect and purchase Indians, and the Father, at the head of that Mission, ordered the retention of the two Curiaras (small Indian boats) at the port of the Mission, and by land sent them to the Mission at Guasipati, of which the exponent was the President, and took away the passports from them, written in the Dutch language, and the same as are annexed to his representation, marked with the letters A and B; that the soldiers arrested

the two men and presented them to the Reverend Father Prefect, who was at the time Fr. Josef de Guardia, and the negro was sent to Don Joaquin Moreno, the Commander General of Guayana, who let the Indian stay at the Caroni Mission.

108. That this same negro, at the end of the year 1765, had come before to the Mission of Cavallaju and Guasipati with a passport saying that he was a negro creole, on his way to Carapo in quest of a few fugitive Indian slaves from Esquivo, four in number, from different tribes and families, who six years before had been in said Mission; that the exponent prevented them from going any farther, and allowed two of the said Indians to inform them that they did not wish to go, persuaded as they were that it was infinitely better to remain in the Mission than to be slaves of the Governor; that he sent back said negro, and that he promised to return with his family and become Christians, informing the exponent that for three years he had been at Parava, buying Poytos from the Caribs, who deceived him, and as he could not give a good account to his Master he was kept imprisoned for a long time, and that there is not a Carib who does not know of his case.

109. That the debts mentioned in the negro's passport were shown by the fact of his coming from Esquivo to Cuyuni, Yumari and the port of the Cavallaju Mission with two Curiaras, or small boats, one of which, loaded with firearms, iron implements, hatchets, knives, drygoods and gewgaws, and that everything had been distributed among the Indians of said settlement and those of Guamo and Guasipati, being understood that the payment for the same goods was to be made by the Caribs in little young Indians; that the Father Missionary of Cavallaju, Fr. Josef Antonio de Cervera, and that of Guasipati, by an order of the Reverend Father Prefect, took away from the Caribs the goods that had

been distributed, consisting of four guns with powder and balls, twenty-two yards of blue muslin, a few iron implements, mirrors and other trifles, with the purpose of preventing their sale to the Indians and to rebuke this kind of trade. As soon as the Cavallaju parties heard of the arrest of the negro many of them took down the river the boat loaded with goods, and nothing is known of what became of the same; that the Missionary found in a house of the settlement a pair of fetters, and the Indians when asked where did they find them, said they had been taken from the negro's boat, where he had many others, as well as manacles.

¶10. That the exponent thought it was a heavenly inspiration, the arrest of this negro, which prevented the accomplishment of the evils intended to be done to the Cucuycoto Indians found on the southern side of those Missions, to the north of the Aponony river. Fifteen days before the arrival of the negro at Cavallaju, the Indians of that settlement and Miamo, Carapo, and Guasipati were busy in making the usual short, flat oars, curiaras, arrows, sharp-edged wooden weapons which they said were intended in order to go after said Indians and bring them to the Mission settlement; that they had believed it was so, not paying much attention to the novelty of so many arrows, as they knew the Cucuyotos were a brave tribe; but afterwards they found their mistake, for as soon as the Caribs heard of the arrest of the negro in the castle, and that notwithstanding that the Spaniards were reproached for the imprisonment of a slave belonging to the Governor, who would consider himself offended by the Caribs, and all this talk to no purpose, they soon stopped the building of curiaras and the rest of the work, keeping quiet and saddened; that this turn of affairs was considered strange, as well as the bad phazes of the Caribs, until it was discovered that they

had given up the projected visit to the Cucuyotos for which they had been invited by the negro, in order to go and kill them, carrying away their young ones to Esquivo; that the negro was to go as captain of this party; that at that time it was feared that another revolt was in contemplation like the former one, on account of the arrogance and other signs noticed among the Caribs in their dyes and bearing, especially when they met the lowest of the foreign Hollanders, supposing that, as they were so very near Esquivo, they could escape at any time from our Missions. Finally, it was discovered that they had contemplated to quit the Missions of the exponent and the other Reverend Fathers and take refuge at Parava, under the protection of the Hollanders.

111. That naturally the Esquivo Colonists increased their wealth by the service of so many Indian slaves, and in proportion to the ingress of many Englishmen their plantations were multiplied to the point of wanting yet more farming lands. On pretence of keeping advanced Post Guards they extended their plantations and territories; that the Indians reported that they had already extended their plantations, occupying all the banks of the Esquivo river from its mouth up to the Cuyuni, a distance of about 20 leagues of navigation; that at the mouth of the Cuyuni, up the Esquivo river at eight days of navigation, they had a guard of six soldiers, and along that distance of eight days there were no plantations, on account of the soil being sandy.

112. That in the year of 1758 the exponent reported to the Commander of Guayana that at the Cuyuni river, under the cover of a Post, there was a settlement of two Dutch families with their house and farms; that an order was given to seize them, and a patent of the Governor was taken from them containing the orders that they had to observe,

and which the exponent forwarded, marked with the letter C.

Letter P.

No. 8, copy  
of instructions of the  
Master of  
the Post at  
Cuyuni.

113. This patent by the Governor of E-quivo, dated on the 29th of September, 1757, directs the Master of the Post at the Cuyuni river to keep on friendly terms with the Indian neighbors, and not to do them any harm, nor deprive them of their property, nor allow others to do so; to be careful not to offend the Spaniards nor give them any grounds of complaint; that he was bound to observe and watch where said Spaniards were building their houses; to follow their movements on the Cuyuni so that they would not bring any trouble and, if they received any harm from them to send notice to the Governor of Esquivo, and do the same if any parties should go there for the purpose of collecting debts; not to permit any negotiation in said river, unless the parties concerned had powers to do so by their passport; that the Indians who were owing slaves, should not be allowed any advance of goods in trade until the payment and delivery of the slaves due; not to forbid the Indians to travel nor be detained on their way to make payments; to carefully watch and find out the fugitives, and that when he knew of any to seek them until arrested, and after being apprehended to deliver them to the Governor and collect ten florins per head, and the charge on the slaves of any other party; that the masters of slaves going after them, when running away, ought to pass freely even when they have had no time to be provided with passports, and to render them assistance and help; that the Company allowed him power to conduct freely his business on his private account, on condition that everything should be purchased from the Company in preference, as he would be charged the same price for the same kind of goods; that he was bound to collect all debts due to his immediate predecessor at the Post, collecting



ten florins per head likewise and one florin for each hammock ; that it was his duty to report to the Governor all his purchases and debts collected and also to send to the Governor twice a year a statement of everything done, and that he was bound to reside always at the Post, as a good officer of Esquivo.

114. The representation of the Father Prefect of the Missions accompanies, likewise, a list of the names of those Caribs from whom (said Master of the Post) had to collect 27 Poytos (Indian slaves) and 37 hammocks, marked with the letter D, adding that the Commander sent two Hollanders to the Governor of Cumana, Don Nicolas de Castro, and that the above mentioned were papers written in Dutch.

No. 8.

Letter  
from the  
Prefect of  
the Mission,  
fol. 8.

115. This list contains the same items mentioned, adding only that the Caribs, through whom he ought to make the purchase of Poytos were ten, and those for the purchase of hammocks were three, and that in said list were found the names of the above-mentioned Caribs.

No. 8.

Letter D.

List of  
debts.

116. Following his representation, the Prefect stated that the other Hollanders who had been domiciled at the nearest point, above the Cuyuni, near the mouth of the Curumo (river), not far from Cavallaju, had withdrawn ; that was the inference when they tried to acquire new sites, in order to allege possession and, in time, make a noise if they had no boundaries fixed, as already imagined, that the whole Cuyuni river is theirs, when, indeed, their guards did not go before any farther than its mouth ; that it was shown by said written orders, regulating the conduct of the Corporal of the Cuyuni, that he considered the same place as his own, as well as the Moruca and Barima rivers, as mentioned now in his complaint against said Commander General, using the words "insults and high-handed ways," on account of their expulsion from the advanced place of

No. 8.

Letter  
from the  
Prefect of  
the Mis-  
sion, fol. 6.

Barima, as it has been noticed ; that in their (Dutch) lands there was a large multitude of Indian allies which they had from three tribes, that is to say, Caribs, Araucas, and Guaraunos, without mentioning the Indian slaves, as they never restrained their bad habits nor spoke of Christian doctrine ; they enjoyed their life, and others came to increase their number ; that the principal Caribs they had with them were fugitives from our settlements and of the Reverend Father Observants ; that they always tried to attract others, and, as they were familiar with the Province and of a roving disposition, they kept procuring Indian slaves for the benefit of the foreigners.

117. That the territory of the Missions of the exponent for the reduction of Indians was marked by cedula of His Majesty of the year 1736, as follows: From the Angostura of the Orinoco (river), down to its large mouth, and a straight line from both ends to the Amazonas and Marañon rivers. That this (cedula) and the above complaint of the Governor of Esquivo, made doubtful to the exponent whether he was to be allowed to go inland in future in the work of reducing Indians from the said places of Barima, Moruca, Cuyuni, and even on the coast, and as it was necessary for his practice in the reduction of Indians, he thought proper to lay the subject of his doubt before His Majesty.

No. 8, letter  
C.

Letter of  
the same  
Prefect.

118. There is also in this No. 8 a letter from the same Reverend Fr. Benito Garriga, dated July 6, 1767, addressed to the Paymaster General of his order, in which he states that if it was possible for the Hollanders of Esquivo to complain before the King, on account of the foregoing subjects mentioned in his report, he thought that it was proper to inform His Majesty, so as to have him posted in regard to the conduct of those strangers ; that they were endeavoring to extend their territory, not only towards Barima and Cuyuni, but far above the Esquivo

river inland with their Guard Posts; that on that account it was to be feared that some trouble and difference might happen in the future between them and ourselves, on account of the Indians on the present occasion, and in order to avoid difficulties to the Missionaries it was proper to propose his doubts in the form already stated.

119. That on one occasion the exponent complained to a Dutch Hollander, (arrived from Esquivo to reside in Guayana), about the cause of the revolt of the Caribs of our Missions in 1750, and he answered that it was because the Fathers made the sites of their Missions within their own territory; that that of Curumo overstepped the line they drew from the mouth of the Acquiri river to the south, and that this territory had been in their possession since the year 1740, in which their term had expired, and the King of Spain had not contradicted them; that the Mission of Miamo was distant from Curumo about ten leagues, according to the opinion of the Dutchmen, and that either they themselves or we were in error about the jurisdiction of the territory; that that same Hollander was well aware of the pretensions of those of Esquivo; that he likewise sent to His Majesty a statement of the condition of our Missions, that, according to the above cedula, ought to be forwarded to the King every year; that he had not done so before, because he was busy with the occupation and novelty of the transfer of the four Missions, ordered by His Majesty; that besides the twelve Reverend Fathers lately arrived from Spain, in the year 1764, he wanted eleven more Priests, and one more to act as nurse, with the approval that he sent from the Commander General of that Province in the middle of the previous year; that they ought to go as soon as possible as there were two Carib settlements without a Missionary on that account, and they had to organize

other settlements at Parava and Caroni on the upper south bank, in order to draw near the Rio Negro, so as to stop there the ingress of the strangers and Caribs, who destroyed the tribes of those territories.

No. 8.  
Letter F.

120. From this statement of the condition of the Missions it appears that there are twenty-one Missions, that fourteen tribes of Indians were still wanting suitable settlements, and that he appointed for every one of them the necessary Missionaries, specifying the name of the Fathers in each one, giving the total number of baptized Indians from the time of the corresponding foundation, the marriages, the burials, baptisms, and those already existing in each.

Docket do.  
Letter N.  
No 1. Fol.  
1.  
Consultation I.  
Sep. 6, 1705.

121. And finding nothing else in the above document, by way of reserved matter, than an Index of twenty-two consultations brought to His Majesty on several occasions by the Council upon the following particulars, the first of them dated September 6, 1705, about the reports from the Governor of Cumana on the subject of the commerce carried on by the Martinique Island Frenchmen at the Guarapiche river, and the slavery in which they kept the Indians, so that His Majesty might apply to His Most Christian Sovereign for strict orders forbidding this commerce for its consequences. His Majesty, in response to the above consultation, said: "The Ambassador of the King, my Grandfather, has taken charge of sending a report of these facts and of making me acquainted with the orders that may be dictated by France, upon the subject." Said resolution was published by the Council on the 29th of the same month.

Resolution  
of His Majesty.

122. The second consultation was on the 7th of June, 1723, in which the Council, in compliance with the directions of His Majesty, represented what was thought proper for the proposed fortification of the Orinoco river, so as to protect the Missions and prevent the commerce and arrival of strangers.

His Majesty issued the following resolution: "The Council will find my resolution on the subject contained in my accompanying decree herewith."

123. The third consultation was made on the 28th of February, 1725, about the petition of Don Juan Alonso Espinosa de los Monteros, asking permission to build a fort and establish a city on the coast of the Province of Cumana, and to bring to the same fifty families from the Canary Islands, in a vessel of a 150 tons register. The council was of the opinion that His Majesty might acquiesce to said petition under the condition therein contained. The King's resolution was as follows: "I return to the Council the consultation, with the petition and report of Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman on the same subject, so as to be consulted of what will be done." Said resolution was published in the Council of the 2d of April, 1725, and forwarded to the Solicitor with the antecedents of the case.

Third consultation of  
Feb. 28, 1725.

124. The fourth consultation was on the 12th of June, 1725, in which the Council, following the decision of His Majesty on the consultation, sent it back to him on the 26th of February of the same year, and sends the petition of Don Cristobal de Guzman, requesting his permission to settle and populate different places in the Province of Cumana. His Majesty decided as follows: "The resolution contained in the accompanying decree will show the Council my decision in regard to these consultations."

Fourth consultation  
June 12, 1725.

125. The fifth consultation was on the 5th of April, 1728, in which the Council responded to the Royal Order of His Majesty accompanying a petition from Don Carlos Sucre, requesting the appointment of Governor of Cumana and other measures in connection with the erection of a Castle on the Orinoco river, with his reasons. The resolution was as follows: "Let the Council issue the necessary orders

Fifth consultation.  
April 5, 1728.

in compliance, preceding his report to me of the cost and kind of support that the Council expects, and whether an engineer ought to go to this construction, and where to call for the necessary funds." It was published in Council on the 4th of July, and forwarded to the Attorney of the Treasury in regard to the supplies to be furnished to the engineer for his journey and designating the office where to call for said payment.

Sixth consultation,  
Nov. 10, 1728.

126. The sixth consultation was made on the 10th of November, 1728, in which the Council, in virtue of the Royal Order of His Majesty sending a letter from Don Juan de la Tórnera Soto, Governor of the Province of Guayana, asked to be kept in the possession of the franchise to found a city in that Province, as applied for before, stating his reasons, His Majesty's resolution was: "Compare the same." It was published in Council on the 11th of September, 1733.

Resolution  
of His Majesty.

Seventh consultation and  
resolution,  
March 31,  
1729.

127. The seventh consultation was on the 31st of March, 1729, in which the Council, in compliance with His Majesty's Royal order, forwarding a memorial (petition) from Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman, repeating his former proposition for building and founding a settlement in the neighborhood of Cumana, and erecting a fortress on the Orinoco river, the Government granting him the Command of the Province, stating his reasons. The King resolved: I accept the opinion of the Council, and according to the consultation quoted of the 5th of April, 1728, will extend the resolution I have taken on the points therein contained." It was published in Council on the 4th of July, 1729.

Eighth consultation,  
July 18,  
1729.

128. The eighth consultation was on the 19th of July, 1729, in compliance with His Majesty's resolution of the consultation quoted in regard to the help necessary for the engineer sent to build a Castle on the Orinoco river, and select the office for the pay-

ment, with the necessary remarks. His Majesty resolved: "As requested, allowed in regard to the traveling expenses, but not as regards the increase of salary or daily allowance above what is allowed to all the other engineers in America." Published in Council on the 29th of August of the said year 1729.

Resolution  
of His Ma-  
jesty.

129. The ninth consultation was on the 15th of September, 1729, in regard to His Majesty's decree sending a vessel and revenue cutters to the mouth of the Orinoco river, to be kept there during the time of the construction of the fortress, and to be under Don Carlos Sucre, with the other remarks. The resolution was as follows: "I have decided to send the necessary orders addressed to the Commander of the windward squadron. It was published in Council on the 27th of September of the same year of 1729."

Ninth con-  
sultation,  
September  
15, 1729.

130. The tenth consultation was on the 21st of February, 1731, in compliance with the Royal order of His Majesty sending a memorial from Colonel Don Carlos Sucre, asking that the Government of Guayana fortress be added to that of the one allowed him by His Majesty, and to be erected on the Orinoco river, giving particulars. The resolution was as follows: "Granted; orders will be given accordingly." Published in Council on the 18th of June of the same year, and the orders were likewise issued.

Resolu-  
tion of the  
King.

Tenth con-  
sultation of  
February 21,  
1731.

131. The eleventh consultation was on the 30th of April, 1731, in which the Council, in compliance with the Royal order of His Majesty, sent a letter from Don Carlos Sucre, advising of his not having received the despatches, concerning the construction of a fort that His Majesty had decided to build at the Island of Fajardo in the Orinoco river, and the steps that he suggested for its accomplishment, with other remarks. His Majesty resolved: "I am

Resolu-  
tion of His  
Majesty.

Eleventh  
consultation,  
April  
30, 1731.

Resolution  
of His  
Majesty.

duly informed, and agree in opinion with the Council." Published on the 18th of June of the same year, and the corresponding orders.

Twelfth  
consultation,  
September 17,  
1732.

132. The twelfth consultation was on the 17th of September, 1732, in compliance with the Royal order sending the representation and project proposed by Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman for the change to Angostura, on the Orinoco river, of the construction accorded by his Majesty, in charge of Don Carlos Sucre, of the fort in the Island of Fajardo with other remarks, being of opinion adverse to the petition, his Majesty resolved as follows: "This proposition and petition is refused to Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman, and for the rest I have in consideration the consultation of the 2d of September, 1737." Published in Council on the 10th of December, 1738.

Resolution  
of his Ma-  
jesty.

Thirteenth  
consultation,  
September 26,  
1734.

133. The thirteenth consultation was on the 26th of September, 1734, in which the Council, in compliance with the Royal order by his Majesty, accompanied by a letter from Don Carlos de Sucre, Governor of the Province of Cumana, and a list of his propositions binding himself to build at his own expense the fort that was to be under his charge in the Island of Fajardo, with fitting remarks to his Majesty; the resolution of his Majesty was as follows: "I have given my resolution on the subject, about the consultation of September 2, 1737." It was published in the Council on the 10th of December, 1738.

Resolution  
of his Ma-  
jesty.

Fourteenth  
consultation,  
December  
29, 1734.

134. The fourteenth consultation was on the 29th of December, 1734, in compliance with the Royal order of His Majesty, sending a letter from Don Carlos de Sucre, Governor of the Province of Cumana, about the submission of the Paria Indian tribe that he had accomplished, bringing them under His Majesty's obedience, with other remarks. The resolution was as follows: "I am duly informed."

Resolution  
of His  
Majesty.



It was published at the Council on the 10th of December, 1738.

135. The fifteenth consultation was on the 2d of September, 1737, in which the Council, in obedience to the Royal orders of His Majesty, sent two letters to the Governor of Cumana, finding impracticable the construction of the fortress required by His Majesty at the island of Fajardo; a memorial from the Marquis of San Felipe y Santiago, and another from the Governor of the island of Trinidad, soliciting the aforesaid Governorship of Cumana under several qualifications made with other remarks to His Majesty, and it was resolved: "Granted. The chamber will propose the persons possessing the necessary qualifications for the discharge of the duties devolved upon the one that I may select, and will advise the Council about all the particulars stated, bearing in mind for this purpose and for the corresponding orders, the contents of the accompanying letters lately received from Don Carlos Sucre, who is already according to my orders an engineer in Cumana." All was published at the Council on the 10th of December, 1738.

Fifteenth  
consultation,  
September  
2, 1737.

Resolution  
of His  
Majesty.

136. The sixteenth consultation was on February 10, 1740, and in compliance with the Royal Order of His Majesty sending a memorial from the Governor-elect of Cumana requesting power to appoint a person to take charge of the Governorship *ad interim*, while busy with the construction of the fortress that His Majesty had directed to be built at the Angostura of the Orinoco river, with the other franchises granted to Don Carlos de Sucre, and other fitting remarks. His Majesty resolved granting the petition, and it was published in Council on the 6th of April, 1740.

Sixteenth  
consultation,  
February 10,  
1740.

Resolution  
of His Ma-  
jesty.

137. The seventeenth consultation was on September 17, 1740, in view of a memorial by Don Isidro de Andrade, sent by order of His Majesty, promis-

Seventeenth  
consultation,  
September  
17, 1740.

ing to build at his own expense the fort required by His Majesty on the Orinoco river, and another presented to the Council desisting from his pretensions, and promising to furnish at any designated place the lime and timber needed for the work, on condition that His Majesty would appoint him Governor of the Island of Trinidad, making him a Lieutenant Colonel, with the other remarks of the Council, The resolution was as follows: "I will appoint a well-known officer of the army, and not Don Isidro de Andrade." Published in Council on the 7th of September, 1741.

Resolution  
of His Ma-  
jesty.

Eighteenth  
consultation,  
April  
15, 1749.

138. The eighteenth consultation was on the 15th of April, 1749, in which the Council placed in the hands of His Majesty several representations, testimonies, and other documents received from the present Governors and sent from Cumana, with an index of the same, concerning other papers which in the year 1747 went as a reserved matter, so that in consideration of everything His Majesty should decide according to his pleasure about the same. And he resolved: "I have directed that the Treasury office at Caracas meet the necessary payments for the construction of the proposed fortress. Coming back to the Council, all the documents contained in the above indexes have to be examined, on various points as to their connection with matters of justice, and will consult me what must be resolved." All of which was published at the Council on the 20th of August, 1749.

Resolu-  
tion of His  
Majesty.

Nineteenth  
consultation,  
April  
29, 1752.

139. The nineteenth consultation was on the 29th of April, 1752, in which the Council presented to His Majesty the request made again by the Reverend Fr. Francisco Nistal Yanez, of the Order of San Francisco, for 25 soldiers to serve as escort of the Missionaries of his order in the Orinoco river, besides the 15 already allowed for that service, and in case that His Majesty did not agree to transfer the affair

to the Governor of Cumana. His Majesty resolved as follows: "I have issued the corresponding resolution, and the Missionaries may apply to the Governor." All that was published in Council on the 11th of July, 1752.

Resolution  
of His  
Majesty.

140. The twentieth consultation was on the 10th of April, 1752, in which the Council, in compliance with the Royal orders, accompanying a letter and a testimony of the proceedings of the Governor of Cumana and other documents mentioned by His Majesty, in regard to a Dutch prize made by the Garrison of Guayana on the Orinoco river, the Council was of the opinion that the persons apprehended were to be sent to work at the fortress of La Carraca, and that orders should be issued to that effect. "Granted, and the order has been issued for the construction of the fort and the shipment of the artillery." Published in Council on the 15th of July, 1752.

Twentieth  
consultation,  
April 10, 1752.

Resolution  
of His Ma-  
jesty.

141. The twenty-first consultation was on the 22d of September, 1752, in which the Council, taking in consideration the exposition of the Prior General of the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers in Guayana, asking for a suitable military escort, on account of the revolt of the four Carib settlements, and for the powers requested by the Prefect of said Missions for the removal of the soldiers, asking an amnesty for insurgents; the Council was of the opinion that His Majesty accede to the petition. The resolution was as follows: "I have decided what was published in Council on the 22d of December of the same year."

Twenty-  
first consul-  
tation, Sep-  
tember 22,  
1752.

Resolution  
of His Ma-  
jesty.

142. The twenty-second consultation, the last of the index, which was added, bears date of September 11, 1759, in which the Council, in view of what was represented by the Governor of Cumana and the Prior of the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers from Aragon, asking for fourteen more members of

Twenty-  
second con-  
sultation,  
September  
11, 1759.

Resolution  
of His Ma-  
jesty.

their order for the Missions they maintained in that Province. The original answer of the Attorney General was placed in the hands of His Majesty, and accepting his opinion, he acquiesced and allowed the request, with directions for the payment of their transportation at the Treasury office of San Sabastian, as suggested by the report of the Accomptant accompanying this consultation, and His Majesty resolved as follows: "Granted; and in regard to the supplies and transportation of this Mission, I have issued the necessary orders." Published in Council on the 26th of September, 1759.

Docket do.  
Proceed-  
ings of the  
day.  
Letter O.  
No. 1.

143. And having placed these proceedings and annexes in the hands of the Attorney General as directed by the Minister, in his answer of the 6th of August, 1774, he said: That, in the proceedings instituted, in consequence of the pretensions of the Minister of Holland assuming his right or dominion on his part to fish in that portion of Orinoco river, and that he was disturbed and unjustly ejected by the subjects of His Majesty, he recalls the fact that, in order to carry out the Royal order of September 10, 1769, he requested from the Secretary of the Universal Department of Indies, as well as from the Council, all the documents and antecedents to be found in connection with the subject.

144. That it was done and that he received a large amount of papers, letters and documents, and that having taken them all into mature consideration, he found that it was a protracted matter, wanting close attention and considerable time, that he needed for the discharge of his duties, and in order to avoid this inconvenience, he suggested that the whole affair should be submitted to a Relator of the pleasure of the Council, so as to take special notes and an abstract of all the antecedents and facts up to the present time, and when that had been done, to send it back to him (the

Attorney General) so as to submit his further views and report to His Majesty.

145. And the Council having accepted this suggestion by decree of the 1st of September, 1774, all the proceedings were delivered to me for the purpose already explained by the answer of the Attorney General. That was the result.

---

The foregoing copy agrees with the original documents kept in the General Archives of the Indies in the Bookshelf 131—Case 7—Docket 17. Seville, December 26th, 1890.

The Keeper of the Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].  
[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Keeper of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, January 10th, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS,  
[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

VOL. II, VEN.—11

**No. IX.**

[Translation.]

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**Document No. 8.**

---

**1769.**—Certified copy given at the City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the 20th of November, 1769, signed by several civil and ecclesiastical authorities, in regard to the good services rendered by the General Commander of this Province of Guayana and the new settlements of the upper and lower Orinoco and Rio Negro in preventing the ingress of foreigners and illicit traders on the Orinoco, dislodging the Hollanders from the Barima river, which they had usurped with parts of the lands on their banks, etc.

(It came with letter No. 3 from the Governor, Don Manuel Centurion, dated on the 5th of April, 1770.)

---

It forms a part of the proceedings instituted on account of the report of the Minister from Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards against the Esquivo Colony.

---

We, Don Juan Josef Canales, an Ecclesiastical Judge, Rector and Vicar of this City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana; Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Accomptant of the same; Don Jose Bosse, Captain of Infantry and Sergeant Major of the Orinoco troops; Don Juan Antonio Bonalde, Captain of Infantry of the same; Don Nicolas Martinez, Lieutenant Commander of Artillery; Don Antonio Barreto, Lieutenant of Infantry and Chief Adjutant of the same; and the resident officers and civilians, Captain Don Diego Ignacio Marino, the

Militia Captain; Don Vicente Franco; Lieutenant Don Juan de Jesus Mier; Don Joaquin de Mieres; Don Cayetano Filgueyra y Barcia, and the Militia Captain Calixto de Lesema, etc., certify before all those to whom the present may be shown that Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Royal Captain of the Artillery Corps, General Commander of this City and Province of Guayana and the new settlements of the lower and upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, has endeavored and continues to endeavor in securing, from the time of his arrival, with indefatigable diligence and constance, the greatest improvement of this Province and its dependencies, having fortified provisionally and placed in a state of defence the mountain of Padrastro of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, the bulwark and safety of this Province; that for the same purpose he had removed the four settlements called Piacoa, Tipurua, Vijacoa and Unata, from the proximity of the fortress to other places (where an enemy intending attack upon the Province) could not make any use of them; that he armed and built two launch corsairs to prevent the entrance of foreigners and illicit traders in the Orinoco, persecuting and seizing them on the seacoast of Paria, Trinidad, and Gulf Triste.

He likewise dislodged from the Barima river the usurping Hollanders who had settled on its margins, in alliance with over eight thousand Carib Indians, natives of that territory. He built a powder magazine in this capital, provisional headquarters for the troop, a commodious hospital for the sick, and well-secured lodgings for the laborers of the fortress.

He had erected a small fort furnished with artillery, guarded by eight soldiers, and a new Indian settlement in the Caura river, theater of the inhuman war waged by the Caribs for their infamous commerce of Indian Poytos or slaves to be sold to the Esquivo Hollanders; he had, likewise, explored the immense cocoa fields of the upper Orinoco, and, in order to improve the commerce in these staples, he continues the population of the Indian settlements in these territories, supporting and keeping there a captain settler and some Andalusian Capuchin Missioners, with an officer and troop, escorting them up to Rio Negro, where they have established new settle-

ments, and the Missions of La Esmeralda, Saint Phillip, Saint Francisco Solano and Santa Barbara, keeping those of San Carlos and Maypures, founded by the boundary expedition. He has likewise trained and dressed in uniform all the troops of this Province, which he found in a most deplorable condition of abandonment and nudity for want of economy on the part of the Director. He has brought together and populated at *Pan de Azucar* the dispersed Indians from the Mission of Cabruta and the fugitive tribes from the Province of Barcelona in the new settlements of Tajaquire and *Cerro del Mono*, and has founded the three new Missions of Panapana, Marua-note, and Orocopiche, in the proximity of this capital, at a distance of two or three leagues, for their commerce and maintenance. He has commenced and is carrying on with the greatest activity the erection of a magnificent church in this capital, of a model and architecture seldom seen in America. He has founded a town called Borbon, inhabited by Spanish families from the Province of New Barcelona, without taxing the King with rations for their maintenance on the first year, nor any other expenses, as it was the customary case with other new townships in former times.

He has likewise erected a small fort in the interior of this Province at the Paragua river, guarded with artillery and soldiers to prevent the Hollanders from taking away the Poytos they used to draw from the headwaters of the Orinoco river for the service of their Colony on the Atlantic coast of this continent. He has improved and increased the city with over sixty tile-roofed houses with common walls, bringing as many families from the Provinces to inhabit them, and enjoy conveniences which they did not possess in their own country or that they have found at present among the inhabitants of Guayana.

And, finally, in the disposition of cattle ranches, and Spanish settlements to be established at the upper Orinoco by His Majesty's directions. And in all these new and important enterprises and those accomplished by the communities of Missioners supported by said General Commander, his true zeal, wise government, and generous conduct are manifest, as well



as his endeavors to promote the welfare of this Province and the benefits to be derived by the Crown of Spain from fostering the safety and advancement of this extensive Province, so advantageously situated, being the nearest to Spain from America, a constant trade can be secured with those kingdoms, even in time of war, without fear of their vessels being intercepted or seized by the enemy's corsairs or crusiers, as there is no obstacle or any fixed place to wait for them, from the large mouth of the Orinoco to the shores of Spain.

And, finally, we do our duty (free from bias), in advocating for the Orinoco as the only safe and handy place, held by the King in America, in time of war—he may communicate his necessary orders to all of these dominions within twenty and twenty-five days. We have to state, likewise, that if the General Commader would be provided with the necessary means, according to his diligence, activity, intelligence, and the favorable disposition of many persons desiring to settle in the neighboring Provinces, attracted by the conveniences and fertilities of this most beautiful and extensive Province, on account of its commerce and amenity, it would become, within a short time, a New Spain for the State, with all the above advantages, making it the most distinguished, and therefore deserving the first attention of His Majesty.

In order to appreciate the force and truth of the foregoing statement, it is enough to observe the benefit derived by strangers from the French Colony of Cayena, and the Hollanders from those of Surinam, Berbis (Berbice) and Esquivo, on the eastern shore of their Province, and it will be found that in the first and second one within less than thirty leagues inland (navigation on the rivers of their names), they keep a steady commerce, employing over two hundred vessels each one, and a few less vessels respectively the third and last, of less population and close to the sea coast. If those colonies yield to their inhabitants such an abundance of commercial products, within so short a distance inland, how much more could be expected from the magnitude and extension (as plainly and well known) of the Orinoco trade, in consideration of its population, advantages, and general establishment.

We certify the truth of the present statement (free from any interested motives) so as to make it known, and for the best interest of both Majesties (giving us due credit). All the foregoing facts are true, and as such we state them, as it is our duty to present them (undeceiving those whom it may concern), at the verbal request of said Commander General, and sign herewith on common paper, as there is none stamped in this city of San Thomé de la Guayana, on the 20th day of November of 1769.

JUAN JOSEPH CANALES.

JOSEPH BOSSE.

ANDRES DE OLEAGA.

JUAN BONALDE.

NICOLAS MARTINEZ.

ANTONIO BARRETO.

VIVENTE FRANCO.

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO.

JUAN DE JESUS DE ARRIEROS.

CAYETANO FILGUEYRA Y BARZIA.

JOAQUIN ARRIERES.

CALIXTO LEZAMA.

It agrees with its original paper made at the request of Don Manuel Centurion, General Commander of this Province, and we attest to the truth of said order, as acting witnesses, for the want of a Notary Public, and take this copy faithfully written and corrected, in three folios of common paper, for want of stamps in this Province, and signed in the city of Guayana on the 4th of April, 1760.

DIEGO IGNACIO MARINO—[there is a flourish].

ESTEVAN MIR—[there is a flourish.]

We, Don Juan Joseph Canales, Rector of the Parish and city of Guayana, and Vicar of the same and of the Province, and Ecclesiastical Judge, and Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant

Officer of the Royal Treasury, certify: that the two signatures authorizing the foregoing testimony, are those of Don Diego Ignacio Marino and Estevan Mir, residents of this city, and the witnesses with whom, for want of Notary Public, extends his official acts, his Honor the Commander General in his tribunal, combining the qualities and circumstances prescribed by the laws of this Kingdom, and therefore entitled to full faith and credit, both in judicial or extra-judicial acts.

In testimony whereof we give the present in this City of Guayana, on the 4th of April, 1770.

JUAN JOSEPH CANALES,  
ANDRES DE OLEAGA.  
(With their flourishes.)

---

This copy agrees with its corresponding original, existing in the General Archives of the Indies, in Stand 131—Case 7—Docket 17—Seville, December the 29th, 1890.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].  
[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela, in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, January 14th, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO—[here is a flourish].

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Foutoult Hurtado, Consul General of Vevezuela in Spain at the time of the above date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

**No. X.**

[Translation.]

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GÉNÉRAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

1769.

---

**Consultation by the Council of the Indies to His Majesty about the despatch and report of the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo—Madrid, the 27th of October, 1769.**

---

It forms part of the proceedings instituted in regard to the claim by the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo.

---

Marquis of St. Juan de Piedras Albas, Don Estevan Jose de Abarca, Don Philipe de Arco, Marquis of Valdelirios, Don Manuel Pablo de Salcedo, Don Jose Banfi, Don Marcos Ximeno, Don Domingo de Trespaacios, Marquis de Aranda, Don Manuel Bernardo de Quiros, Don Pedro Calderon.

SIR: In obedience to His Majesty's order, the Bailiff, Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga, sent with a paper dated on the 10th of September last, a despatch that the Minister of Holland had addressed, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards established in the Orinoco against the Dutch Colony of Esquivo, as stated in detail, by his accompanying report, with a view to have it briefly examined by the Council and consult His Majesty's pleasure, with the necessary and proper remarks.

The Council, in consideration of what has been submitted by the Attorney General whose original general answer is

placed in the hands of His Majesty, after agreeing with his opinion for the reasons he states, and omitting to repeat the same so as not to overtax the Royal attention of His Majesty, considers necessary, before extending a report, to have on hand and examine (among other documents, added to the corresponding proceedings on the subject), an extensive memorial and statement, referred to in another printed document, by Captain Isidro de Andrade, sent with the Royal order of the 3d of September, 1740, addressed to this Tribunal and exhibited before the same, informing of his having stopped the Caribs in their ravages perpetrated, while allured by foreign help; also the four letters noticed to have been received in the years 1757 or 1758, written at the settlement of Cabruta, by the chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga, sent on the boundary expedition to the Orinoco; one in which he describes the rivers flowing into it, and explains the condition of those Missions and their neighboring settlements, inhabitants, etc.; another letter in which, according to his private instructions from Don Jose de Carbajal, he refers to the question of the subsistence or demolition of the Castle of Araya.

Another letter, in which he advises his having received intelligence of the construction of a fort by the Hollanders, on the Maruca (Moroco) river, at a short distance from the mouth of Navios of the Orinoco, and that he had decided to send a launch to examine the state of the construction, its size, artillery, etc., expressing in conclusion the most serious inconvenience that might be originated from permitting them said construction on the site of Maruca; and other letter in which said Iturriaga, resuming the subject of his previous letter, alludes to the pretensions of the Hollanders from Esquivo to the Orinoco river, making public that their dominions extended to the mouth of Navios or grand mouth of the above-mentioned Orinoco, where they come in for the purpose of fishing.

The report made in the year 1762 by Captain Don Jose Solano of the Navy (to whom those letters were forwarded) in reference to the third and fourth of the Esquivo Hollanders'

pretensions, stated that they had no other foundation than the omission and neglect of the Commanders of Guayana in letting them fish at the mouth of the Navios, and the Barima and Aquire rivers—and the answers from the most Christian King, and the measures adopted by that Court, on account of having submitted to the Royal consideration of your August Father (of blessed memory), this Tribunal in the consultation of the 6th of October, 1705, the advices received from the Governor of Cumana, Don Joseph Ramirez de Arellano, about the commerce made with the Guarapiche river by the Frenchmen from Martinique, not only in wood, hammocks and birds, but likewise in Indian slaves, from the same river and sea coasts of the mainland, under the allegation of considering said land as vacant and outside of any dominion, not having been settled by the Spaniards, and considering the Indians as savages—being of the opinion that despatches should be addressed to that sovereign with the purpose of forbidding strictly the introduction of his subjects in Guarapiche, and His Majesty was kind enough to resolve: “The Ambassador of the King, my Grandfather, has been charged with giving an account of these reports and give me notice of the orders that may be issued in France on the subject.” And in consequence it is placed before your Majesty and the Council, so that if there is no inconvenience your Majesty call on the Secretary of State, where the corresponding papers must exist, so as to communicate their contents to that of those Kingdoms, and by this one to the Council, with all documents and reports in connection with the present matter and the resolution of His Majesty about the said consultations of the 6th of October, 1705, so that in presence of all that has been shown to your Majesty, the Council may act with a full knowledge of the whole important case of this absorbing question.

Your Majesty will decide what may be your pleasure in the premises.

Madrid, the 27th of October, 1769.

(At the back of this document it reads): Council of the Indies, October 27th, 1769.—Approved on the 25th.—Reviewed—[there is a flourish].

The foregoing copy agrees with its original existing at the General Archives of the Indies at Stand 131—Case 7—Docket 17. Seville, December 16th, 1890.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies. Madrid, December 31st, 1890.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Minister of Foreign Affairs.

**No. XI.**

[ Translation. ]

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**Document No. 6.**

---

**1770.—Letter No. 13 from the Commander of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, reporting on the facts complained of by the Minister of Holland about the conduct of the Spaniards of the Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo.—Guayana, April 5th, 1770.**

---

This document forms a part of the proceedings instituted on account of the claim of the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo.

---

1770—Number 13—Most Excellent Sir—

DEAR SIR: The two judicial documents accompanied will show Your Excellency, duly proved, that the Director of the Esquivo Colony, Lorenzo Horm van Gravesand, has intended to alarm the States-General with the impostures on which the Republic of Holland has founded its complaints through its Minister in Madrid, on account of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against that Colony.

As it appears in part No. 1 of the proceedings, the Hollanders are not, nor ever have been, in possession of the rivers nor rivulets emptying their waters into the sea from the Esquivo to the Orinoco, nor have they any other establishment than a Guard and a straw-roofed Barrack on the eastern bank of the Moruca (Maroco) river that has been tolerated for the last twenty years, so as to enable them to prevent the desertion of



their slaves; this pretext has degenerated immediately afterwards into the most iniquitous commerce carried on by the barbarous and cruel Caribs, from whom they buy the Indians enslaved, by means of surprising and killing the other tribes living freely and peacefully within the King's our Lord's dominions.

At the Cuyuni river, called by the Hollanders Cayoeny, they have no other possessions than a plantation at its mouth in the Esquivo, as they were stopped when they intended an establishment fifteen or twenty leagues farther up said river in the year 1747, erecting a Barrack and Guard Post to enslave the Indians of our territory by means of the Caribs. As soon as our Missionaries were satisfied of the fact they submitted the case to the Commander of Guayana, and this officer had them dislodged from there on the following year of 1757, by means of a detachment, who set fire to the Barrack and brought as prisoners the two Hollanders, the negro, and the Caribs that he found there, with the instructions and original report showing the infamous commerce that by orders of the Directors of Esquivo, and for a vile consideration, was carried out by that Guard, such as it is done by all the other advanced Barracks from the Colony, bleeding to the heart the center of the Province of Guayana. Part No. 2 shows the details of this journey, by which it is plain that there was no more blood shed than that of two of our soldiers, one of whom was killed and the other wounded.

Part No. 1 shows, likewise, that the Hollanders are not in possession of the Maserony nor of the other rivers emptying into the Esquivo on the southwestern bank; and it is important to remove this error, forming the basis of their unfounded complaint, for as the Esquivo runs in a direction about parallel with the coast of the ocean from the neighborhood of the Corentin until it reaches the seashore forty-five leagues to the east of the Orinoco, all the rivers having their sources in the interior of our Province of Guayana, and following their direction to the coast, between the mouth of the Corentin and Esquivo, meet precisely this last one, which runs across and takes their waters. So that if, as the Hollanders suppose, that

territory embraced by the rivers emptying into the Esquivo, such as Cuyuni, Maserony, Mao, Apanony, Putara, and other minor rivers with their branches and rivulets, were territory of the Republic, the strangers would have a larger portion than the King our Lord in the Province of Guayana, as shown by the accompanying sketch that I have drawn with every possible accuracy, to go with this report, pointing out in yellow what part in my judgment may the Hollanders pretend by right of possession of any kind acquired until to-day.

The Spanish detachment that Gravesand claims having advanced last year from the Orinoco to the Post of Cuyuni and taken many Indians, threatening to return and go to the Maserony river, to arrest a party of Caribs, go down the river and there visit the Barrack of the Company, is undoubtedly a story of the agents in Poytos kept around there by the Hollanders, deeply regretting to see that some savage Indians, both Caribs and Guaicas, living in that neighborhood, come and settle in our Missions; as from here no detachment whatever has left for those rivers, and I know that the Catalan Capuchin Fathers have received in their settlements, during the last few years, several Indians from the mountains between Cuyuni and Maserony, at the solicitation of the same Caribs, of whom we have about five thousand in our settlements, not knowing for the last twenty years of our Missions until now that this numerous tribe belonged to the Dutch, as Gravesand says, nor that those mountains form a part of the territory of the Republic, because they have always been the site for the settlements under the Catalan Capuchin Father Missioners at Guayana.

The two houses guarded by many troops, Your Excellency will see by part No. 1, that consist of two Indian settlements founded by the Catalan Capuchin Fathers by the side of the Yuruari, united to the other Missions and without any other Garrison than one soldier to each one, for the escort of the Missioner; being likewise false, the supposed proximity to the Barrack of the Company, distant over seventy leagues of a bad road.

The seizure of the Indians from Moruca by the Spaniards, consists in the fact that two Catalan Capuchins, escorted as customary, entered with their launch from the Orinoco to the

Barima river, its confluent, in quest of Indian deserters from the Mission in their charge, and having found them dispersed through those creeks, between the Guayne and Moruca (a contiguous territory to the Orinoco never occupied by the Hollanders) gathering Indians, they reached the Post or Barrack of Moruca, where they found a Dutch Guard who had enslaved three Indian women with their children, who had been taken away through the mouths of the Orinoco; that they so represented the case to the Reverend Fathers, who brought them back to the Missions without the least harm to the Hollanders. On the contrary, thinking that it was a favor to the man on duty at the Guard, who asked for a paper to satisfy the Director of Esquivo of the case, they gave him a certificate, being moved by pity, exceeding, indeed, the terms of my permission to enter that port, which was not true, as the passport I gave to the pilot of the launch was not extended any farther than the mouth of the Orinoco, as shown by Part No. 1.

The Post claimed by Gravesand to have been seized by the Spaniards near a rivulet to the south of the Guayne river, between the latter and the Povaron river, where he supposes that the company had been for an immemorial time in possession of a place of commerce and Post, depending likewise without any contradiction from the territory of the Republic, I think is the one abandoned by the intruding Dutchmen at the Barima river, in the year 1768, when they ascertained, through their friends, the Caribs, that our corsair launches were inspecting that river, as one of the most important flowing into the Orinoco, although in order to diminish its importance they call it a rivulet, and the Director of Esquivo does not dare to name it, so as not to declare himself a usurper; for that same reason he makes himself so poor in memory that he calls immemorial this establishment only two years old. See the evidence of this fact in Part No. 3.

The deaths of the Guard on duty at the Barrack Arinda and those of the Caribs, attributed by the Director of Esquivo to the Spaniards, are impostures without any foundation in fact, as that port is out of our reach, and even our notice, as it is shown in part No. 1 and the accompanying draft.

The Spaniards never have disputed the Hollanders' right to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, because they never have attempted it before. During the past three years, in which I have built three corsair launches for this river, twenty-three foreign vessels have been seized, but none of them while fishing, certainly not to our knowledge. I have not heard that the Hollanders have had possession of such a right of fishing, as it is shown in part No. 1. I have found only one instance of a small schooner and two Dutch launches, fishing at the mouth of the Orinoco and the Barima rivers, which were seized by the Spaniards in the year 1760, as shown in Part No. 4.

I am of the opinion that the Hollanders must be refused and prevented from fishing, on account of the abuse liable to follow by turning the franchise into an illicit traffic, difficult to stop and most injurious to the Spanish Provinces.

Of the fugitive slaves coming from Esquivo to the Orinoco, only the Indians are retained, and the negroes who come with the purpose to become Catholics, as it appears in part No. 5, according to the orders of His Majesty. The other negro slaves who desert from Esquivo, on account of ill treatment or any other reason, are returned to their masters when claimed, or their value paid to them in cash, when they appear satisfied with the same, as shown in part No. 6 and other acts existing in the Royal offices.

It is, however, remarked that from the time that the Director of Esquivo appropriated to himself the two negroes, Ambrosio and Francisco, slaves respectively of Don Thomas Franquiz and Augustina de Arocha, residents of Guayana, who deserted from this city and were sold at the Colony on account and for the personal benefit of Lorenzo Van Gravesand, as it is shown by part No. 1, he has not formally claimed those slaves, who have since that time deserted from Esquivo for this Province, nor has he tried to collect seven hundred and sixty-two dollars, proceeds of the sale of five fugitive slaves formerly escaped from Esquivo, retained as a deposit to be paid by the Royal Treasury to the interested parties, by order of Don Mateo Gual and Don Joseph Diguja, Governors of Cumana, as shown

in part No. 1. However, it is true that Nicolas de Lassarie, Police Secretary of the Esquivo Colony, came and gave a power of attorney, on the 8th of September, 1766, to Don Vicente Franco, domiciled in Guayana, to prosecute the claim and consent to the sale of thirty-eight negro slaves, who at that time deserted from the Colony and came to this Province. The proceedings of this case are still pending on account of the death of Lassarie and the expiration of the power of attorney given by him to Franco. The successors have not put in an appearance, most likely fearing that we should appropriate to ourselves their negroes, just as the Director of the Esquivo did with those of Franquiz and Arocha, runaways from Guayana. The proceeds of the twenty-nine slaves and seven hundred and sixty-two dollars, before mentioned, have been expended in meeting the payment of the troops organized by my predecessor, Don Joaquin Moreno, who up to this time had not been paid at Santa Fe of what is due him from the year 1764 to 1768. Now, we want, on this particular, to hear from His Majesty about how to pay the interested parties, after the claim by the Minister of Holland.

As to the charge that the Spaniards have induced the Esquivo slaves to run away, there is no proof whatever, nor is it likely that any person would be willing to take the risk of such a perilous attempt without any other inducement than doing good to the negroes. Gravesand does not give a single instance, nor name any person, and he speaks in general terms, showing no proof against what appears on this subject in part No. 1, nor *of the building of strong forts so near the territory of the Republic, the attacks of the barracks of the Company, and killing of guards*, as stated at the end of the Deputies' (to the States-General) representation.

As your Majesty calls for my opinion on the subject, I shall have to state that the most precious possessions of any country are the sea coasts, and more especially so in their dominions across the sea, that might be worthless without the means of disposing of their inland products. In the vast Province of Guayana, so fertile and advantageously situated, all the coasts are occupied by strangers, and there is only left for the Span-

iards, at one end of the same, the mouth of the Orinoco to reach the sea. The Hollanders are in possession of the handiest coasts of this extensive country, because they receive the waters of the navigable rivers reaching the innermost and most productive part of Guayana. Therefore our policy ought to aim at the destruction of the Dutch Colony, beginning by that of Esquivo and then following with Demerari, Berbis, Corentin, up to Surinam.

There are two efficient ways to attain that end. The first is to protect and free all the fugitive slaves from said Colony, as it is done at Caracas with those from Curaçao, who are not in need as much as the other Colonies of the free use of the Catholic religion, for which our neighbors take no pains, allowing their slaves to live as gentiles. The second is to organize a fixed battallion of infantry, so as to protect the frontiers and the strongholds at the head rivers of the Esquivo. The project only will deter the Hollanders and embarrass their usurpation of further territories than what they possess at present, besides stopping their traffic in Indians, Poytos or slaves, that if continued will leave our lands uninhabited, while theirs will be extensively cultivated. We ought to facilitate the escape of the Indians, whom they have enslaved, and of the negroes, who are more expensive to them, and whom they would not dare to purchase for the risk of losing them.

The want of both kinds of laborers will discourage our Dutch neighbors from taking our land, while we are strong and they can not help it. This increase of troops can not be excessive, considering that we are bound to settle and defend this country, and that it is very expensive to accomplish that purpose, and that soldiers will be the source of positive advantages; their money attracts laborers and mechanics of all trades to the country, who, as well as the soldiers, marry Indian wives, the only race to be had in the country, and this alliance with the Indians facilitates their reduction and the readiest and least expensive population of these deserts. A soldier, as a young man and single, is easily mustered in the service and carried to the neighboring Province, while a whole

family is not so, as it is shown by the experience I have on the subject, finding this method of population preferable, and more advantageous than the one practiced in the Island of Santo Domingo and other Provinces of America, carrying whole families from the Canary Islands and other places, and being bound to furnish them with the necessary means of support, at least for one year. Among the fortresses that must be built one must be erected at Barima, to the windward of the mouth of Navios, fronting the north with a wooden lodging-house, very high, of the kind of the Balize at the Mississippi, as the land is low and marshy. From this establishment in effective possession we will keep a closer lookout for the Hollanders. We will stop them by all means, and we shall have a good watch on the sea, and a sentinel on the Barima river, the chief avenue of the Esquivo Colony to Orinoco. A Balize is necessary to enable our vessels to ascertain the location of the large mouth of Orinoco, concealed by the sea for want of proper marks, and the occasion for painful and difficult tackings, on account of the strong current of those waters to the leeward that can not be ascertained by navigators unacquainted with said mouth always, for fear of the low ground and perils of that coast outside the channel of the river. Finally, such a Post will make useless the one held by the Hollanders at Moruca, for the purpose of preventing the escape of the Poytos or slaves, by arresting those coming after them in their escape, who sometimes reach as far as the Orinoco, under the impression that we are forty-nine leagues away from the mouth, as it is the case at present.

The means I have proposed, or other equivalent methods, to make opulent and formidable this Province shall not be useless, if well directed, as it is shown by part No. 8, noticing likewise the opportunity of the present time to accomplish now, within a few years, what has not been done in over two centuries.

May Our Lord keep in His Holy Guard the precious life of Your Excellency, for many happy years, as it is my desire and our want of a wise and prudent Ministry.

Guayana, April 5th of 1770.—Most Excellent Sir.—Kiss

the hands of your Excellency. Your humblest and obedient servant.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

Most Excellent Bailiff

Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga.

---

The foregoing copy agrees with the original document existing at the General Archives of the Indies, in Stand 131—Case 7—Docket 17—Seville, December 9th, 1890.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, December 24th, 1890.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.



**No. XII.**

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE )

---

**Document No. 1.**

---

**1770.—Report of the Commander of Guayana about the complaint of the Minister of Holland in regard to the conduct of the Spaniards of the Orinoco river against the Esquivo Colony.**

( This document is the part No. 1, accompanied by Don Manuel Centurion with his letter No. 13 of the 5th of April, 1770. )

---

This document is a part of the proceedings instituted on account of the claim of the Minister of Holland complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco, against the Esquivo Colony.

---

*Year 1770.—Proceedings instituted before the Tribunal of the Commander of Guayana, on the subjects of the complaint submitted to the King our Lord by the Minister of the Republic of Holland, in regard to the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco, against the Esquivo Colony.*

**Number 1.**

[Copy.]

Copy taken from the book of Resolutions of the plenipotentiaries (Deputies) of the States-General of the United Provinces.

Wednesday, August the second, seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.

It has been read before the Assembly, the representation of the Deputies of His Most Serene Highness, the Prince of Orange and Nassau and Directors of the patented Company of the West Indies and Presidial Chambers of Zeland, having in their charge, on account of this general Company, the particular direction of the Esquivo Colony and rivers dependent on the same, and in that capacity they represent, that they had been from time almost immemorial in possession not only of the Esquivo river, and many other rivers and rivulets, emptying into the sea on the length of that part of the country, but likewise of all the river branches and rivulets emptying into the Esquivo, and particularly the northern branch called Cayoeny, where from immemorial time, on the bank of the said river Cayoeny considered as part of the State, a wooden Barrack or Guard Post has been kept, like many others of this Colony, on the part of the Company, protected by a small vessel served by several slaves and Indians.

That while things were in this condition the exponents, after all that took place in 1759, had received with astonishment, through a letter from Lorenzo Horm de S. Gravesand, Director General of Esquivo, dated on the 9th of February last, the report that a Spanish detachment, coming from the Orinoco, had advanced to that Post and taken many Indians, threatening with their return at the first high tide to visit another branch of the Esquivo river called Maseroeny, situated between this and the Cayoeny river, that is also a part, without contradiction, of the territory of the Republic, to take likewise a party of the Carib tribe, allied to the Hollanders and belonging to them in some way, and thence to come down the Maserony river and visit there the Barrack of the Company, as the plenipotentiaries might see in a copy of said letter, marked with the letter A, and accompanying this representation. Said letter contains, at the same time, a report of the provisional measures of the Director General to prevent it. That the exponents had not taken the whole thing but as idle threats, similar to former expressions, without effect. Notwithstanding, said Director General had reported to them by a letter of February the 21st, 1769, copy of which is pro-

duced herewith and marked with the letter B, that the Spaniards had built two houses, guarded by many troops, one of which was in close proximity to the said Barrack of the Company, on the Cayoeny river, but apparently in their own territory, the other higher up, on the margin of the rivulet emptying into the same river; that if there was any possibility of an attack, on the part of the Spaniards in time of peace, it ought to be expected from that side and use due precautions, taking into account what the Director General had written before in his letter of the 3d of March last, a copy of which is marked with the letter C, accompanying the representation; but the exponents had been informed, to their great surprise, by a letter of the Director General addressed to his son-in-law, the Commander of Demerari, and forwarded originally by the same, a copy of which is presented, marked with the letter D, that the Spaniards had commenced to seize the Maroco Indians and take possession of the port of the Company, situated near a rivulet to the south of the Weyne river, between this one and that of Pomaron, where the Company had had likewise, from time immemorial, a place of commerce and a Post, depending without contradiction from the Republic.

That the exponents had received the confirmation of this news by the triplicate of a letter from the Director General, dated March the 15th ultimo, the original of which had been forwarded by way of the Island of Barbadoes, and the duplicate by that of Surinam, but had not reached them yet. From the triplicate, a copy of which is produced likewise, marked with the letter C, condensed details will be found of the conduct of the Spaniards and how the Guard of the place had acted, as well as the measures taken by the Director General provisionally, and everything done after the full confirmation of the facts, as shown by the annexes marked with the letters F and G, that one was a copy of the report sent by the Guard on duty at the Moroco Barrack to the Director General, dated on the 7th of last March, and another copy of a statement in writing from the two Capuchin Fathers, who had attended this expedition, and given the same to the officer on

duty, in the Spanish language, and had not been translated for want of an opportunity. Said documents, His Most Serene Highness, the Prince of Orange and Nassau, had kindly communicated to the exponents, who observe that they were duly forwarded with the originals, and duplicate copies of which had not yet been received.

That the exponents had been informed, through this triplicate, that the Spaniards of the Orinoco river had killed or caused to be killed by a tribe under them, the Guard on duty at the Arinda Barrack, belonging to this company and situated towards the sources of the Esquivo river, as well as all the Caribs in that neighborhood. After that incident the Chief of the Caribs had appeared before the Director General and obtained permission to take revenge for the death of his companions and attack their murderers, as the plenipotentiaries might see in the accompanying letter, marked letter H, a second copy of the same letter from the above mentioned director, dated on the 15th of last March. That although the exponents might have received at the same time the triplicate alluded to by said letter of March the 15th, another letter of the same Director General, dated on the 4th of last April, made no mention whatever of any subsequent occurrence, on the part of the Spaniards, and only contained a report of all the measures taken in order to oppose their plans, the exponents had thought notwithstanding that they ought not to be silent with respect to this particular feature, but specify the same and submit it to the consideration of the plenipotentiaries, entertaining no doubts that said highhanded offences should be resented and that the most efficient representations should be made against such a manifest violation of the national territory.

That the exponents can not refrain from laying before the plenipotentiaries, on this occasion, the fact that the Orinoco parties had not only commenced, some time since, to dispute to those of Esquivo the fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, but had effectually stopped it, notwithstanding that the Esquivo parties had been for a long time in a quiet and peaceful possession of said fisheries, of which they derived great benefit, on account of the abundance of fish found there ; that they had

likewise commenced to stop, by force, the fisheries of the Orinoco, within the same territory of the State, a territory that extends from the Marenigue River (?) to the other side of the Wayne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco, as may be seen in the geographical charts of these places, and particularly by that of Anville, one of the most esteemed, on account of its accuracy, and that the plenipotentiaries will find the evidence of all these damages in document marked letter Y, articles 1, 2, 3, that are copies of the letter of the Director General, dated September 15, 1768, February the 21st, and April the 4th, 1769.

That the exponents can not refrain from bringing to the notice of the plenipotentiaries this conduct, not only contrary to all the treaties, but likewise to the law of nations; that the Orinoco parties have retained the fugitive slaves from the Colony, inducing them to escape, and doing great injury to the planters of all the Colony, and that notwithstanding the formal claim of the owners and the deputations sent, every effort has proved ineffectual

If this desertion continues and is not stopped in time, it will bring about the total ruin of Esquivo, through the agency of the Spaniards and the facilities afforded by the two houses already mentioned, so near the territory of the Republic, having attacked the Barracks of the Company, killed the Guardsmen, as the plenipotentiaries may see in the two accompanying copies, one marked with the letters Y C, in articles first and second, and the other with the letters P D, being copies of the letters before mentioned by the Director General, under dates of 9th and 21st of February and the 3d of last March.

The exponents crave, that on account of all these injuries necessarily following, as the natural results of the above conduct and its progress, the plenipotentiaries kindly address what has been represented on the 31st of July, 1779, a copy of this representation, and annexes to Mr. Doublet de Groenevelt, Envoy Extraordinary of the Plenipotentiaries near His Catholic Majesty, directing him to make the necessary representation, laying the facts before the Court of Spain.

After paying due consideration to the subject it was resolved to send a copy of this representation and the accompanying

documents to Mr. Doublet de Groenevelt, Envoy Extraordinary from the plenipotentiaries before the Court of Spain, writing to him at the same time and asking him to report the facts and the high-handed offences to whomsoever he thinks fit, showing the misconduct and asking for a prompt remedy against the hostilities already perpetrated and the re-establishment of the parties concerned to the peaceful possession of said Barracks and likewise the fisheries in the places already mentioned, and finally to urge the necessary measures to prevent the repetition of the conduct complained of, and to see that the Court of Spain issue the necessary orders to restore the fugitive slaves from Esquivo, without delay, at the first claim, and avoid injury and expenses to the owners, delivering those still kept by the Spaniards or who may desert in future, in which case the plenipotentiaries will send similar orders to the Colony of Esquivo.

[A copy from the original.]

The Minister of Holland has addressed a despatch complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards established in Oriuoco against the Esquivo Colony, giving a detailed account of the subject of his complaint in the accompanying papers. I am directed by the King to send you said document, so that in view of his complaints, you will make your report, as soon as possible, stating all the facts referred to, and what has occurred concerning this matter, so that His Majesty be fully posted.

May the Lord keep your life for many years.

San Idefonso, the 23d day of September, 1769.

The Bailiff Fr.

JULIAN DE ARRIAGA—[here is a flourish].

To the Commander of Guayana.

In the city of Guayana, on the 24th day of March, of the year of 1770, I, Don Manuel Centurion, Lieutenant Colonel of Infantry, and Commander General of the Orinoco and of the Province of Guayana, etc., in company with the acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, say that in order to comply

with the Royal Order of the 23d of September last, forwarded to me by His Excellency the Baliff, Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga, accompanying a copy of another document, taken from the book of Resolutions of the plenipotentiaries of the States-General of the United Provinces, presented by the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Esquivo Colony, with instructions from the King to report, as early as possible, upon the facts complained of, stating what has taken place and everything concerning that subject, for the notice of His Majesty.

Therefore I ought to command, and do command, that inserting the said Royal Order and accompanying document at the head of the proceedings, an investigation be instituted by this Tribunal in a judicial form, to find out the facts and details in connection with the accompanying paper from the States-General, summoning the best informed witnesses (residing in this city and its suburbs) to state under oath and in due form what they know on this subject.

It was so ruled and signed with the acting witnesses, who certify as to the fact.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish.]

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish.]

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO—[here is a flourish.]

On the same day, month, and year, in order to carry out the investigation to be instituted, in compliance with the above rule the Tribunal had before it the Reverend Father ex-Prefect of the Catalan Capuchin Mission of Guayana, Fr. Benito de la Garriga, to whom the Commander General administered the oath in legal form, *tacto pectore in verbo sacerdotis*, and promised to tell the truth of everything that he knew and were interrogated, and having been examined by the tenor of the above paper, presented by the Minister of Holland and inserted in folios 1 to 6 of this proceeding, which was read to him literally, he said:

That the Hollanders are not, nor have ever been in possession of the rivers or rivulets emptying into the sea, from Es-

quivo exclusive down to the mouth of Orinoco; that they had been only tolerated, on that side, to have a small Guard of two Europeans and a few Indians at a Barrack called the Post, on the eastern margin of the Moruca river, called by the Hollanders Maroco; that this establishment is not of "an almost immemorial time," because none of the Colony is so, for we know that said Colony commenced to exist towards the year sixteen hundred and fifty-nine. That it is not true that the Hollanders had had, nor have now possession of the Cuyuni river (called by them Cayoeny), because when they established a Guard and Barrack, like that of Maruca, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven (1747), to facilitate the inhuman traffic and capture of Indians, whom they surreptitiously enslaved, within the dominions of the King our Lord, for the culture of the plantations and improvement of their Colony, as soon as it came to our knowledge, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-seven (1757), they were dislodged from there, so that neither in the Cuyuni, Maserony, Apapony nor any other rivers emptying into the Esquivo, have the Hollanders any possession; nor it could be tolerated that they should have it, because those rivers embrace almost all the territory of the Province of Guayana in their course from their western termini, where their headwaters originate, down to the eastern limit emptying into the Esquivo river. From that fancied possession it should result that the Hollanders would be the owners of the extensive Province of Guayana and that we, the Spaniards, had no more part of it than the said margin of Orinoco, which is an absurdity.

That they are merely tolerated on the banks of the Esquivo river, running from southeast to northwest, almost parallel with the ocean coast, the eastern terminus of this Province of Guayana, the interior of which is left free to the Spaniards, their lawful possessors.

That he does not know, nor ever heard that the Spaniards have built any stronghold on the Cuyuni river nor in its vicinity, with a few nor many troops, but he suspects that Mr. de Gravesand may have imagined to be so the two Missions or Indian settlements founded by the Catalan Capuchin



Fathers in the years seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and seventeen hundred and sixty, one of them on the northern margin of the Yuruari river, a tributary of the Cuyuni, seventy leagues distant from the Dutch Barrack, which was destroyed.

That the reason he has to think so is because there is no other establishment in that vicinity and in that direction.

That although there is no more troops than one soldier in each one of said settlements as an escort to the Missionaries, the Caribs, whom Mr. Gravesand seems to believe, as he states in his report, may have deceived him with this story as well as several others which abound in his nonsensical report.

That it is true that in February of last year the witness, as Prefect and Superior of the Missions, allowed permission to the Reverend Fathers Fr. Josef Antonio Cervera and Fr. Felix de Tarraga to go down to the mouth of Orinoco and the Barina rivers to gather the fugitive Aruaca and Guarauno Indian deserters from the Missions, under their charge; that these Reverend Fathers, with the launch and escort which carried them, found their dispersed Indians between Guayne and Moruca, and while gatheringt hem they reached a Post where there was a Hollander who had three Indian women with their children whom he had enslaved and taken from the mouth of Orinoco, as said women reported to the Fathers, who delivered them to the Missions, without offering any violence nor harm whatever to the Hollanders.

That in regard to the Post and commercial house that Gravesand supposes to have been possessed by the Dutch Company, between Guayne and Povaron, the deponent does not know anything, nor has he heard of such an establishment.

That he has not heard of the death of the Corporal of the Arinda barrack towards the source of the Esquivo, nor even of the existence of the same.

That he finds it incredible that the Spaniards of Orinoco, or the Indians of our side and acquaintance may have perpetrated this homicide, because the distance is excessive, and the fact has never been known in Orinoco, and this is the first time he hears of the Arinda Barrack; that being situated as Gravesand states, towards the source of the Esquivo river, it is inac-

cessible to us and our Indians, the Colony of Esquivo being interposed between said source and our settlements, preventing a pass.

That the deponent has never seen nor heard that the Hollanders had any fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, nor that the Spaniards had to stop them; that he does not understand that the Hollanders want any such fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, because they have plenty of fish much nearer to Esquivo; that the Most Reverend Father is persuaded that now, under pretext of fisheries, they want to establish themselves freely with their vessels on the mouth of the Orinoco, to re-establish and facilitate the furtive shipments of mules from Guarapiche and Guarapo, and Barinas tobacco, hides, and other products of the Spanish Provinces, which improved considerably their Colony when the Orinoco and its creeks were not guarded as they are now.

This novelty and the want of commerce is the true cause of the decadence of Esquivo and the resentment of Mr. de Gravesand, the first merchant, and always the most interested in the illicit commerce of the colony.

That the statement is equally false that said fisheries had been stopped likewise by the Spaniards on the territory of what Gravesand calls of his State, extending the same to the river Mareguine, down to this side of the Guayne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco; said supposition the deponent calls an intolerable error.

That in regard to the slaves, deserters from Esquivo, the deponent says that there are two kinds, one of negroes purchased in Africa, and the other of Indians taken by the Hollanders cruelly and unduly, by means of the Caribs their allies, from our dominions, through the rivers Moruca and Guayne, emptying their waters into the sea, and in communication with Orinoco, or else through the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, and others running through the innermost territories of this Province and emptying into the Esquivo; that in regard to the retention of the latter, the reason is plain, because being the vassals of the King and criminally enslaved by the Hollanders, who keep this inhuman

commerce with the Caribs, against every law, we could not and we ought not to return them to slavery, whenever they are happy enough to elude it, and return to enjoy the protection of the ministers of their lawful Lord and Sovereign.

In regard to the negroes, the deponent says that Mr. de Gravesand's assertion is untrue, that notwithstanding that we know that two negro fugitive slaves from this city to the Colony of Esquivo were sold there by said Gravesand, and although their owners, Don Tomas Franquiz and Catalina de Arocha, domiciled in Guayana, have claimed them, they have not been properly attended, that oftentimes Gravesand has claimed from here several deserters from Esquivo, and their owners having been satisfied with their sale for cash in Guayana, they have received the price and returned to Esquivo, except only when the slaves come for the benefit of becoming Catholics and are considered free, in compliance with orders from His Majesty.

That neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquivo have ever been induced by the Spaniards to run away, as far as he knows, nor is it likely that they should attempt to do so.

That it is true that the Colony of Esquivo is being apparently ruined, from the time when the doors have been closed to it for the illicit trade they used to carry on with Orinoco, and the Poytos or Indian slaves have found the way to become free, when they escape from said Colony.

He finally deposes that it is absolutely false that the Spaniards may have killed the Dutch Guardman or Guardmen, nor attacked any other Post than that of the Cuyuni, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, when only one man was killed, and that was a Spanish soldier; and he adds, that in twenty-three years, during which he has been an Apostolic Missionary in this Province, having been Prefect three times, his long experience has shown him that it is on account of the suggestions of the Esquivo Hollanders, and their detestable commerce in Poytos, that the whole of the Caribs have not been already settled in our Missions, as well as many other savage tribes, and that said Caribs, under the advice

of the Hollanders, work continually in the destruction of the new settlements, through various means, burning them as they did in seventeen hundred and fifty, attacking them by open force, or making them revolt by using diabolical arts, so that during the time deponent has been kept working on these Missions, the Hollanders united with the Caribs have destroyed seven settlements already organized, as may be seen by the legal investigation instituted on the subject, without counting those settlements under the Jesuit Missionaries, which they burned and destroyed, when they killed many Reverend Fathers.

That the above statements are the truth under the oath that he has taken ; and that he ratifies and affirms the same, and will do it again if necessary, and that he is fifty-eight years old.

Having read his deposition, he said that it is the same that he had stated, and that it is well and faithfully written, and has nothing to add or withdraw from the same, and signs it with the Commander General, and ourselves the witnesses of the act, certifying to the same.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

FR. BENITO DE LA GARRIGA,

ex-Prefect—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARINO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEVAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

2. On the same day, month, and year, in continuation of the proceedings instituted, in compliance with the foregoing rule, this Tribunal had before it the Reverend Father Fr. Tomas de San Pedro, of the Capuchin Missions of this Province of Guayana, who was duly sworn by the Commander General according to law, "*tacto pectore in verbo sacerdotis*," and who promised to tell the truth of all that he knew and were interrogated, and being examined, according to the tenor of the paper presented by the Minister of Holland, inserted in folios 1 to 6 of this proceeding, after it was read literally, word by word, he said:

That the Hollanders were not nor ever had been in pos-

session of the rivers or rivulets emptying into the sea, from Esquivo exclusive, to the mouth of Orinoco; that they had been allowed to keep a small guard of two Europeans and several Indians at a barrack they called Post, at the eastern margin of the Moruca river, called by the Hollanders Maroco; that this establishment is not "from time almost immemorial," because all the Colony is not so, as we know that it had its origin in the year sixteen hundred and sixty-nine.

That it is not true that the Hollanders had had nor have possession of the Cuyuni river (called by them Cayoeny), having established there a guard and barrack like that of Moruca, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven, to facilitate the inhuman commerce and trade in Indians whom they enslaved surreptitiously in the dominions of the King our Lord, for the cultivation and improvement of the plantations of the Colony.

That as soon as the case came to our notice, in the year seven hundred and fifty-seven, they were dislodged from there, so that neither in Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, nor other rivers of those emptying into Esquivo, have the Hollanders any possession, nor is it tolerable that they should have, because said rivers embrace nearly all the territory of the Province of Guayana from their headwaters, their western terminus, where they originate, down to their eastern limit, emptying into the Esquivo river—it should result from such a supposed possession that the Hollanders should turn to be the owners of the extensive Province of Guayana, and that the Spaniards would not have any more than the said margins of Orinoco, an absurdity; that they have been tolerated only on the banks of the Esquivo river, running from the southeast to the northwest in a quasi parallel direction to the ocean coast, the eastern terminus of this Province of Guayana, keeping the interior freely for the Spaniards, their lawful possessors.

That he has not heard that the Spaniards had built any strongholds on the Cuyuni, nor its surroundings, with either few or many troops; but he thinks that Mr. de Gravesand may have imagined to be such, the two Missions or Indian settlements founded by the Catalan Capuchin Fathers in the

years of seven hundred and fifty-seven and seven hundred and sixty-one, on the northern margin of the Yuruari river, emptying into the Esquivo, and distant seventy leagues from the destroyed Dutch barrack ; that the reason he has to think so is that we have no other establishment in that quarter, and although in these settlements there is no more troop than one soldier in each one, for the escort of the Missionaries, the Caribs, whom Mr. Gravesand believes, as he explains things in his statement, may have deceived him with this story, as it appears he has filled with many others his fanciful report.

That it is true that last February permission was given by the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions, to " the Reverend Fathers Fr. Joseph Antonio de Zervera and Fr. Felix de Taraga to go down to " the mouth of the Orinoco and the Barima rivers in quest of the Aruacas and Guaraunos (Indians), deserters from the Missions in our charge, and that these Reverend Fathers with the launch and escort carrying them, found their dispersed Indians, between Guayne and Moruca ; while gathering them they reached a Post where a Hollander had three Indian women with their children, whom he had enslaved and taken out, through the mouth of the Orinoco, as said women stated to the Fathers ; that they were brought back to the Missions, but without any violence or harm done to the Hollanders.

That in regard to the Post and commercial house that Gravesand supposes to have been held by the Dutch Company, between Guayne and Povaron, the deponent does not know, nor has he ever heard anything about said establishment.

That he has never before heard of the death of the Corporal of the Arinda Barrack, towards the source of the Esquivo, nor even of its existence ; that it is incredible to the deponent that the Spaniards of the Orinoco or the Indians of our devotion and acquaintance may have committed this homicide, because, being so very distant and unknown to us, the vast space of territory between Orinoco and that place, we have never heard of such a death, this being the first time that we hear the name of the Arinda Barrack ; that, situated as Gravesand says it is, towards the heart of the Esquivo river,

it is inaccessible to us and our Indians, having the Colony of Esquivo, between said river's sources, preventing the pass from our settlements.

That the deponent has never heard that the Hollanders had fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, nor that the Spaniards had had to stop them; that he does not understand that the Hollanders may have any necessity of such fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, because they have means to get all the fish they want nearer the Esquivo; and that the Reverend Father is persuaded that now, under the pretext of fisheries, what they want is to pass freely with their vessels to the mouth of the Orinoco, to re-establish and facilitate the furtive shipments of mules from the Guarapiche and Guarapo rivers, besides Barinas tobacco, hides, and other products from the Spanish Provinces, for the improvement of their Colony when the Orinoco was not guarded, as it is now, with its creeks. This novelty and the want of commerce is the true cause of Esquivo's decadence, and of the resentment of Mr. de Gravesand, the first merchant, and always the most interested in the illicit trade of the Colony.

That it is equally untrue what is said about the fisheries having been prevented by the Spaniards, in the territories that Gravesand claims to belong to his own State, stating that it extends from the river Mareguine up to this side of the Guayne River, very near the mouth of the Orinoco—this supposition the deponent considers an intolerable error.

In regard to the slaves escaped from Esquivo, the deponent says that there are two kinds of them; that they are either negroes purchased in Africa, or Indians taken away unduly and cruelly by the Hollanders or the Caribs, their allies, from our dominions, by way of the Moruca and Guayne rivers emptying into the sea and in communication with the Orinoco, or else through the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, and other rivers bringing their waters from the innermost parts of this Province and emptying into the Esquivo river; that in regard to the resistance we oppose to the latter, the reason is plain, because as they are vassals of the King, criminally enslaved by the Hollanders, who maintain this inhuman com-

merce with the Caribs against every law, we can not and ought not to return them to slavery, when they are happy enough to escape from it, taking the protection of the Ministers of their lawful Lord and sovereign.

That in regard to the negroes, the deponent says that it is not true what Mr. Gravesand says, because notwithstanding that we are aware that the two fugitive negro slaves of this city were sold at the Colony of Esquivo by Gravesand, and that although their masters, Don Tomas Franquiz and Catalina de Arocha, domiciled in Guayana, claimed them, they had no satisfaction of any kind; several times Gravesand claimed from here some deserters from Esquivo, and their masters agreed with the terms of their sale, effected in Guayana, and took with them the proceeds to Esquivo, except only those slaves that come in quest of the benefit of becoming Catholics, and who have been made free by orders from the King; that neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquivo, as far as the deponent knows, had been induced by the Spaniards to run away, nor does it seem to him likely that anybody should have dared to undertake such a step.

That it is true that the Colony of Esquivo goes visibly to ruin, since the doors have been shut up to the illicit commerce they carried on before, in Orinoco, and since the Poytos or Indian slaves have found open the way to recover their freedom, whenever they can escape from them.

And finally the deponent says that it is absolutely false that the Spaniards had killed anybody of the Dutch Guard or Guards, or had attacked any other Post of theirs, than that of the Cuyuni, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight; that the only man killed on that occasion was a Spanish soldier; and he adds that he has been for the last twenty-three years an Apostolic Missionary in this Province, and with that experience he is enabled to say that the suggestions of the Hollanders from Esquivo, and their detestable commerce in Poytos, is the reason why all the Caribs have not been settled in our Missions, as well as many other savage tribes, and that said Hollanders influenced them all continually to undertake the destruction of our settlement in different ways, burning



them, as they did in seventeen hundred and fifty, attacking them by open force, or trying to make them revolt by artful and diabolical contrivances; that during the time that the deponent has been working in this Mission the Hollanders united to the Caribs have destroyed, as may be seen by the respective proceedings, seven settlements already organized, without counting those of the Jesuits, which they destroyed by fire, killing many of the Reverend Fathers.

That all his statements are true under the oath he has taken, and that he will ratify and affirm again and again, if necessary; that he is fifty-three years old.

His deposition having been read to him, he said it is the same that he has given, and that it is well and faithfully written, having nothing to add nor to take out from the same, and he signs with the Commander General and the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

FR. THOMAS DE SAN PEDRO,

Apostolic Missionary—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARINO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

3. On the 26th day of the same month and year, in continuation of the proceedings instituted in compliance with the preceding rule, the Tribunal had in its presence the Reverend Father Fr. Jose Antonio de Zervera, Capuchin and Missionary of this Province of Guayana, who was duly sworn by the Commander General, according to the law and usage, "*tacto pectore in verbo sacerdotis*," who promised to tell the truth of all that he knew and might be interrogated, as it was, according to the tenor of the paper presented by the Minister of Holland, inserted at folios 1 to 6 of this proceeding. For his better intelligence it was read to him, word by word, and he said:

That the Hollanders are not, nor have ever been in possession of the rivers nor rivulets emptying into the sea from the Esquivo exclusive, down to the mouth of Orinoco; that it has been only tolerated on that side, their small Guard of two

Europeans and several Indians, at a Barrack which they called Post, on the eastern margin of the Moruca river, called by the Hollanders, Maroco; and that this establishment is not of quasi immemorial time, because the whole of the Colony is not, as we know that it was commenced towards the year sixteen hundred and fifty-nine.

That it is untrue that the Hollanders have had, or have possessions on the Cuyuni river (called by them Cayoeny), as when they established on it a Guard and Barrack, similar to that of Moruca, in the year 1747, to facilitate the inhuman commerce and the trade in Indians, whom they enslaved surreptitiously in the dominions of the King our Lord, for the culture and improvement of their Colony, as soon as the case came to the notice of the Spaniards, in the year 1757, they were dislodged from it, so that neither on the Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, nor the other rivers emptying into the Esquivo, have the Hollanders any possessions, nor should it be tolerated that they should have it, because said rivers embrace all the territory of the Province of Guayana, running from its western terminus, where they have their sources, down to the eastern limit, emptying into the Esquivo river—it should come out from the supposed possession that the Hollanders were masters of nearly all the extensive territory of Guayana, and that the Spaniards had nothing else than the said margins of the Orinoco, which is an absurdity.

That the only places where the Hollanders are tolerated is on the margins of the Esquivo river, running from the southeast to the northwest, almost parallel to the ocean coast, the eastern terminus of this Province of Guayana, and leaves free all the interior of the same for the Spaniards, their legitimate possessors.

That he does not know, nor ever heard, that the Spaniards had any stronghold on the Cuyuni, nor in its surroundings, with many or few troops, but he is persuaded that Mr. de Gravesand may have imagined to be such the two settlements or stations that the Catalan Capuchin Fathers founded in the years 1757 and 1761, at the northern margin of the Yuruari river, emptying into the Cuyuni river, and distant 70 leagues

from the site of the destroyed Dutch Barrack, and that the reason he has for this supposition is that we have not any other establishments on that part of the country, and that although there are no more troops in those settlements than one soldier in each for the escort of the Missioners, the Caribs whom Mr. de Gravesand gives credit, according to his explanation in his report, may have deceived him with this story, as it appears they have with others, with which his nonsensical report abounds.

That it is true that in February of last year, having permitted the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions, the Reverend Father Fr. Felix de Tarraga, and to the deponent to go down to the mouth of the Orinoco and Barima rivers in quest of the Aruacas and Guaraunos (Indians), deserters from the Missions in their charge, and that with the launch and escort that carried them, finding said dispersed Indians between Guayne and Moruca; while gathering the same, they reached a Post where there was a Hollander, who had three Indian women, with their children, that he had enslaved and brought there from the mouth of Orinoco, as they stated; they were brought back to the Missions without any violence or harm to any of the Hollanders; on the contrary, in order to favor the Corporal of the Post, who asked, on his knees, and crying, that the deponent, and the Reverend Father in his company, would allow him, for the love of God, a certificate for his exculpation to satisfy the Governor of Esquivo, and that the deponent and his companion, without suspecting any malice on his pretensions, and moved to pity, gave him a certificate so broad as to exceed its contents, saying that they had a permit from the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana to enter as far as that place, when such was not the case, as the passports held by the pilot of the launch carrying them was definitely for the mouth of Orinoco, and as to the rest they had no more permission nor any other orders than those from their Prelate.

That in regard to the Post and commercial house supposed by Gravesand to have been possessed by the Dutch Company between Guayne and Povaron, the deponent does not know, nor has he ever heard of such an establishment.

That he has not heard of the death of the Corporal of the Arinda Barrack towards the sources of the Esquivo, nor of its existence there, and that it is incredible to the deponent that the Spaniards of the Orinoco or the Indians of our acquaintance and dependence may have perpetrated this homicide, because, besides the long and unknown distance and extensive territory separating the Orinoco from that place he has never heard of such a death, nor of the name of the Arinda Barrack, that being situated, as Gravesand represents it, towards the sources of the Esquivo river, it is inaccessible to us and to our Indians, as the Colony of Esquivo is situated between said sources and our establishments, preventing our access to it.

That he has never seen nor even heard that the Hollanders had kept any fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, or that the Spaniards had stopped them; that he can not understand what necessity the Hollanders may claim for such a fishery at the mouth of the Orinoco, when they can provide themselves with fish much nearer to the Esquivo, and that he is persuaded that now, under pretext of fishing, they want to establish freely with their embarkations at the mouth of the Orinoco in order to resume and facilitate their furtive shipments of mules from Guarapiche and Guarupo, and Barinas tobacco, hides and other products of the Spanish Provinces, with which they improved considerably their Colony, when the Orinoco and its creeks were not guarded as they are now. This novelty and the want of commerce is the true cause of the decadence of Esquivo and of the resentment of Mr. de Gravesand, the first merchant, and always the most interested in the illicit commerce of the Colony.

That it is equally false that said fisheries have been prevented by the Spaniards in the territory that Gravesand calls territory of the State, which, he says, extends from the Mareguine river to this side of the Guayne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco; said supposition, the deponent says, is an egregious error.

In regard to the slaves deserted from Esquivo, the deponent says there are two classes; the negroes purchased from Africa and the Indians that the Hollanders cruelly and wrongfully

take away, or cause to be taken away, by the Caribs, their allies, from our dominions, by way of the Moruca and Guayne rivers, flowing into the sea and in communication with the Orinoco, or through the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony and others, running from the innermost part of the Province and emptying into the Esquivo.

That in regard to the retention of the Indians, the reason is very plain, because, as they are vassals of the King and criminally enslaved by the Hollanders, who deal in this inhuman commerce with the Caribs, against every law, we can not and ought not to send them back to slavery, when they have been happy enough to shake it and take refuge under the protection of the Ministers of their legitimate Lord and Sovereign.

In regard to the negroes, the deponent says that Mr. de Gravesand is not correct, because although we know that two fugitive negro slaves of this city were sold at the Colony of Esquivo by said de Gravesand, and that their owners, Don Thomas Franquiz and Catalina de Arocha, residents of Guayana, had claimed them and received no satisfaction whatever. Several times Gravesand has claimed some deserters from Esquivo, and their masters have been satisfied with their sale made in Guayana, and received and carried the proceeds to Esquivo, except only in the cases of those slaves who in order to enjoy the benefits of the Catholic religion, made their escape, as they have been made free by the King's directions.

That neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquivo, as far as the deponent knows, have ever been induced by the Spaniards to run away, nor is it likely that anybody should have dared to attempt the step.

That it is true that the Colony of Esquivo is visibly going to ruin from the time when the doors for the illicit commerce they were carrying on before on the Orinoco have been shut up, and the Poytos or Indian slaves find open the way to their freedom whenever they can escape.

And, finally, he says that it is absolutely false that the Spaniards had killed any Dutch Guard or attacked any other Post held by them than that of Cuyuni in the year seventeen

hundred and fifty-eight, in which attack only a man was killed, who was a Spanish soldier. He says that he has been for the past nine years an Apostolic Minister in this Province, and his experience enables him to say that the suggestions of the Esquivo Hollanders, and their detestable commerce in Poytos, is the cause for not having all the Caribs settled in our Mission, as well as many other savage tribes, who are continually working the destruction of our settlements, under the advice of the Hollanders, through various ways—setting them on fire, as they did in seventeen hundred and fifty, or by open force and revolts, by means of an artful and diabolical policy; that during the time that he and his Reverend brothers have been serving in these Missions, the Caribs, joined by the Hollanders, have destroyed, as may be seen by the corresponding judicial proceedings, seven formal settlements, without taking into account those that they have set on fire or destroyed under the Jesuits, killing at the same time many Reverend Fathers. That what he says he knows to be true, and it is well known of the other Reverend Father Missionaries, as stated by them, after their long experience, and by other persons of the highest veracity, that the deponent under his oath ratifies and affirms, and will repeat, if necessary, what he has stated; that he is forty-nine years old.

And having heard his deposition read to him, he says it is the same he has given, and that it is faithfully and well written, having nothing to add or withdraw from the same, and he signed with the Commander General and ourselves, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

FR. JOSEF ANTONIO DE CERVERA—[here is a flourish].

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

DON DIEGO IGNACIO MARINO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

---

4. On the same day, month, and year, in continuation of the investigation instituted according to the above rule, this Tribunal had before it the Reverend Father Fr. Felix de Tar-

raga, a Capuchin Missionary of this Province of Guyana, who, having been sworn by the Commander General according to law, *tacto pectore in verbo sacerdotis*, he promised to tell the whole truth of what he knew and would be interrogated. And being examined by the tenor of the already-mentioned paper presented by the Minister of Holland and inserted in folios 1 to 6 of these acts, and for his best information read to him word by word, he said :

That the Hollanders are not, nor have ever been, in possession of the rivers and rivulets emptying into the sea, from Esquivo exclusive, down to the mouth of the Orinoco ; that on that side only they had been tolerated to keep a small guard of two Europeans and a few Indians in a barrack called the Post on the eastern margin of the Moruca river, called by the Hollanders Maroco ; and that this establishment is not of almost immemorial time, because, the whole of the Colony is not so, for we know that it commenced in the year sixteen hundred and fifty-nine.

That it is untrue that the Hollanders had, or have had, possession of the Cuyuni river (which they call Cayoeny) ; that having established a guard and barrack, similar to that of Moruca, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven to facilitate the inhuman commerce and trade in Indians, whom they have enslaved surreptitiously in the dominions of the King our Lord, for the cultivation of the plantations and improvement of their Colony, as soon as it came to the notice of the Spaniards, in seventeen hundred and fifty-seven, they were dislodged from there, and so they have not any possessions at the Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, or the other rivers emptying into the Esquivo river ; nor is it tolerable that they should, because those rivers embrace all the territory of the Province of Guayana, running from their sources or western terminus down to their eastern limit, emptying into the Esquivo—it should result from the supposed possession that the Hollanders were the masters of nearly the whole of the extensive Province of Guayana, and that the Spaniards would not hold any more than the said margins of the Orinoco, which is an absurdity.

That they are only tolerated on the margins of the Esquivo river, running from southeast to northwest, almost parallel with the ocean coast, the eastern end of the Province of Guayana, leaving free to the Spaniards, their legitimate possessors, the whole of the interior of the same.

That he does not know, nor has he ever heard, that the Spaniards had built any strongholds at Cuyuni nor at its surroundings, with few nor many troops, but he is persuaded that Mr. de Gravesand has imagined to be such the two Missions or Indian settlements founded by the Catalan Capuchin Fathers in seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and seventeen hundred and sixty-one, on the northern margin of the Yuruari river, emptying into the Cuyuni, at a distance of seventy leagues from the destroyed Dutch barrack.

That the reason he has to think so, is because he has no other establishment on that side, and although there is no more troop than one soldier in each of these settlements, for the escort of the Missioners, the Caribs, whom Mr. de Gravesand believes, as he explains himself in his report, may have deceived him with this story and many others in which his nonsensical report abounds.

That it is true that in February of last year the Reverend Father Prefect having given permission to the Reverend Father Fr. Josef de Cervera and to the deponent to go down to the mouths of the Orinoco and Barima rivers to look after the Aruacas and Guaraunos, Indian deserters from the Missions under their charge, they proceeded with their launch and escort, and found the dispersed Indians between Guayne and Moruca, and while gathering them they reached a post where the Hollander had three Indian women and their children, whom he had enslaved and removed from the mouth of the Orinoco, as they stated. They were brought back to the Missions without any violence or harm to the Dutch. On the contrary, in order to favor the Corporal of said post, who asked on his knees, and crying, that the deponent and his companions, for the love of God, would give him an exculpation in the shape of a certificate to satisfy the Governor of Esquivo, the deponent and his companion, without suspecting



the malice of his pretensions, and moved to pity, gave him a certificate so ample that they exceeded their bounds, stating that they had a permit from the Governor and Commander-General of Orinoco and Guayana to go as far as that place, when, in fact, the passport held by the pilot of the launch was definitely limited to the mouth of the Orinoco, having no permit to go to any other place, nor any other orders than those from our Prelate.

That in regard to the Post and commercial house supposed by de Gravesand to have been held by the Dutch Company between Guayne and Povaron, the deponent does not know, nor has he ever heard anything about such an establishment.

That he has not heard of the death of the Corporal of the Arinda Barrack, towards the source of the Esquivo, nor even of its existence, and that he finds incredible that the Spaniards of Orinoco and the Indians of our acquaintance and dependence may have committed this homicide, because there is such a long and unknown distance from the Orinoco to that place; that we have never heard of such a death, and this is the first time that we hear the name of the Arinda Barrack, that, being situated as de Gravesand says, towards the source of the Esquivo, it is inaccessible for us and the Indians, because the Esquivo Colony is found between said sources and our settlements, preventing the pass.

That the deponent has not heard, nor has he seen, that the Hollanders had any fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, nor that the Spaniards had to stop them; that he can not understand that they have any necessity of such a fishery at the mouth of the Orinoco, when they can provide themselves with plenty of fish much nearer to the Esquivo; that he is persuaded that now, under the pretext of fishing, they want to establish freely with their vessels at the mouth of the Orinoco, so as to resume and facilitate their furtive shipments of mules from the Guarapiche and Guarupo districts, Barinas tobacco, hides, and other products of the Spanish Provinces, with which they benefited considerably their Colony, when the Orinoco and its creeks were not so well guarded as they are now. That this novelty and the want of commerce is the true cause-

of the decadence of Esquivo, and the resentment of Mr. de Gravesand, first merchant, and always the most interested in the illicit trade of the Colony.

That it is false that the Spaniards had stopped the above mentioned fisheries in the territory that de Gravesand considers part of the State, extending from the Mareguíñe river to this side of the Guayne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco; that supposition, the deponent says, is an intolerable error.

In regard to the slave deserters from Esquivo, the deponent says that there are two kinds of them; the negroes purchased from Africa and the Indians taken by the Hollanders (unduly and cruelly, by means of the Caribs), their allies, from our dominions, by way of the rivers Moruca and Guayne emptying into the sea and communicating with the Orinoco, or else by way of the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony and others that bring their course from the innermost part of this Province and fall into the Esquivo. That in regard to the retention made of said slaves, the reason is plain for our conduct, because, being the vassals of the King and cruelly enslaved by the Hollanders, who carry on this inhuman commerce with the Caribs against every law, we could not and we ought not to restore them to slavery when they are happy enough to escape and find protection under the Ministers of their lawful Lord and Sovereign.

In regard to the negroes, the deponent says that it is not true what Gravesand asserts, because notwithstanding that we know that two negro fugitive slaves from this city were sold at the Colony of Esquivo by said Gravesand, and their masters, Don Thomas Franquiz and Catalina de Arocha, claimed them, they did not receive any satisfaction; sometimes Gravesand has claimed several deserters from Esquivo, and their masters have been satisfied to sell them, as it had been done in Guayana, and the price in silver taken as proceeds to Esquivo, except only those slaves that come to enjoy the benefit of the Catholic religion, who are set free by the King's command; that neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquivo, so far as the deponent knows, have ever been induced

by the Spaniards to run away, nor is it likely that such was the case.

That it is true that the Colony of Esquivo is running to ruin visibly, since the time when the doors have been shut up to their illicit commerce which they used to carry on with Orinoco, and the Poytos have found open the way to their freedom, whenever they can escape; and, finally, the deponent says that it is false that the Spaniards may have killed any Dutch Guard, nor had attacked any other Post than that of the Cuyuni, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, at the time when one man was killed, and found out to be a Spanish soldier. .

And he adds that he had been for five years an Apostolic Missionary of this Province, and his experience enables him to say that the suggestions of the Esquivo Hollanders and their detestable commerce in Poytos, is the reason why all the Caribs and other savage tribes have not been settled in our Missions, as they are continually working under the direction of the Hollanders, in destroying our settlements through various means, such as setting them on fire, as they did in seventeen hundred and fifty, attacking them openly by force, or through diabolical and artful means making them revolt, so that within the time that the Reverend Fathers of the Order of the deponent have been working, the Hollanders, in company with the Caribs, have destroyed, as may be seen by the judicial proceedings on the subject, seven formal settlements, without counting those of the Jesuits and Observant Fathers, set on fire or destroyed, killing at the same time many Reverend Fathers.

All the contents of this statement he knows personally and have been reported by the oldest Reverend Father Missioners and other persons of the greatest veracity, and he affirms and ratifies the same under his oath and will repeat it if necessary. That he is thirty-four years old.

This deposition was read to him, and he says that it is the same he has made, and is well and faithfully written, and that he has nothing to add nor withdraw from the same, and signs

with the Commanding General and ourselves, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

FR. FELIX DE TARRAGA,

Apostolic Missionary—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

5. In the said city of Guayana, on the twenty-seventh of said month of the same year, continuing this proceeding, in compliance with the above rule, the Tribunal had before it Don Felix Ferreras, Lieutenant of Infantry of the Guard of this Province of Guayana, who was duly sworn by the Commander General, and promised, on his word of honor, to tell the truth of all that he knew and might be interrogated, and being examined by the tenor of the already-mentioned paper, presented by the Minister of Holland, and inserted in folios 1 to 6 of this proceeding, and having been read to him for his better intelligence, he said :

That the Hollanders had not, nor ever had been in possession of the rivers nor rivulets emptying into the sea from the Esquivo exclusive, down to the mouth of the Orinoco ; that it had only been tolerated on that side, their small guard of two Europeans and several Indians in a barrack which they call the Post, on the eastern side of the Moruca river, called by the Hollanders Maroco, and that this establishment is not of time quasi immemorial, because the said Colony is not so, and we know that it commenced about the middle of the last century.

That it is untrue that the Hollanders have had or now have possession of the Cuyuni river there (called by them Cayoeny), because when they established there a guard and barrack like that of Moruca, in the year of seventeen hundred and forty-seven, to facilitate the inhuman commerce and trade in Indians, whom they enslaved surreptitiously in the dominions of the King our Lord, for the cultivation of the plantations and improvement of the Colony, as soon as the Spaniards

heard of the case, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven, when the deponent was in command *ad interim* of the old Guayana, they were dislodged from there, and so it is that neither in the Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, nor other rivers emptying into the Esquivo, have the Hollanders any possessions, nor is it tolerable that they should, because those rivers cover nearly the whole territory of the Province of Guayana, running from their western source, where they begin, down to the eastern limit, emptying into the Esquivo river; it should result from the supposed possession that the Hollanders were the masters of nearly the whole extensive Province of Guayana, and that Spaniards had no more of it than the said banks of the Orinoco, which is an absurdity.

That the Hollanders are only tolerated on the margius of the Esquivo river, from its mouth to the Cuyuni, where they have a Post called by them Old Castle. That the Esquivo runs from S. E. to N. W., almost parallel with the ocean coast, the oriental terminus of this Province, leaving free the interior of it to the Spaniards, their lawful possessors.

That he does not know or has ever heard that the Spaniards had built any Fort on the Cuyuni, nor its surroundings with many or few troops, because in that part we have no more establishments than the two Missions or Indian settlements, Guaceypati and Cavallaju, founded by the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, in the years seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and seventeen hundred and sixty-one, at the northern margin of the Yuruari river, emptying into the Cuyuni, distant seventy leagues from the destroyed Dutch Barrack, that in said Missions there is but one soldier in each one for the escort of the Missionaries. That what happened about February of last year, at the Post of Maruca, the deponent does not know anything, as he was at that time serving on a detachment at Rio Negro.

That in regard to the Post and commercial house, supposed by Gravesand to have been kept by the Dutch Company, between Guayne and Pomaron, he has not heard anything about such an establishment. Neither has he any news of the death of the Corporal of the Arinda Barrack, towards the source of

the Esquivo, nor even of the existence of the same; that he finds incredible that the Spaniards of Orinoco or the Indians of our acquaintance and dependence had effected this homicide, because, besides the long and unknown distance and the intermediate territory from the Orinoco to that place, he has never heard of such a case, and this is the first time that he hears the name of the Arinda Barracks.

That the deponent has never seen or heard that the Hollanders had made any fisheries at the mouth of Orinoco, nor that the Spaniards had had to stop them; that only last year of seventeen hundred and sixty Lieutenant Don Juan de Flores seized a schooner and two launches from Esquivo, on the Orinoco and Barima rivers, while cruising in quest of some Hollanders that were purchasing Poytos around those creeks, from the Caribs; that said vessels were condemned and confiscated by the Government of Cumana, from which Guayana was dependent at the time.

That it is rather suspicious, in the opinion of the deponent, the pretension of these fisheries by the Hollanders on the mouth of Orinoco, as they can be provided with plenty of fish from places much nearer to the Esquivo, and that he is persuaded that under the pretext of fisheries the Hollanders desire to establish freely with their vessels at the mouth of the Orinoco, in order to resume and facilitate the furtive shipment of mules from the Guarapiche and Guarupo, and Barinas tobacco, hides, and other products from the Spanish Provinces with which they used to improve considerably their Colony, when the Orinoco and its creeks were not so well guarded as they are now. That this novelty and want of commerce is the true cause of the resentment of Mr. de Gravesand, Director of Esquivo, and the most interested in the illicit commerce of the Colony.

That it is not true that said fisheries have been prevented by the Spaniards in the territory which Gravesand calls territory of the same State extending, as he says, from the Mareguíne river to this side of the Guayne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco; said supposition the deponent says is a very serious error.

In regard to the slaves, deserters from Esquivo, the deponent

says that there are two kinds, negroes purchased from Africa and Indians, whom the Hollanders bring unduly and cruelly, or cause the Caribs, their allies, to be brought to them from our dominions, by way of the Moruca and Guayne rivers, emptying into the sea and communicating with the Orinoco, or else by way of the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony, and others, bringing their course from the innermost part of this Province and emptying into the Esquivo, and that the latter have never been claimed by the Hollanders, who are conscious of the crime of their acquisition, because in this inhuman commerce they cause the slaughter of a great many innocent Indians, so as to enslave others against the law of nations.

In regard to the negroes, the deponent says that it is untrue what Mr. de Gravesand states, because notwithstanding that it is known that two fugitive negro slaves of this city to the Colony of Esquivo were sold there by said Gravesand, and although their owners, Don Thomas Franquiz and Augustina Catalina de Arocha, residents of Guayana, had claimed them, they have had no satisfaction; several times Mr. de Gravesand has claimed from here some negro slaves, deserters from Esquivo, whose masters have been satisfied with their sale effected here in Guayana, and taken back to Esquivo the proceeds in silver, except only those slaves that in order to enjoy the benefit of the Catholic religion escape and are made free by command of the King; that neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquivo, as far as the deponent knows, have ever been induced by the Spaniards to run away, nor is it likely that anybody should venture to take such a step at the risk of being hung at Esquivo. That it is true that the Colony goes to ruin since the doors have been shut up for the illicit commerce that they carried on before with the Orinoco, and the Poytos or slaves have found open the way to recover their freedom, by escaping.

Finally, he says, that it is absolutely false that the Spaniards had killed any Dutch Guard or Guards, nor attacked any other Post than that of Cuyuni, in the year of seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, when only one man died, and that was one of the Spanish soldiers.

And he adds that he has been established in this Province

for the last thirty-three years, and with that experience, he must say that the suggestions of the Hollanders of Esquivo, and their detestable commerce in Poytos, is the cause why all the Caribs have not been settled in our Missions, as well as many other savage tribes, working continually under the spur of the Hollanders in destroying our settlements through various ways—setting them on fire, as done in seventeen hundred and fifty, attacking them by open force, or revolting them through a diabolical and artful policy ; that only during the time that he knows of the Missions of the Reverend Catalan Capuchins of this Province, the Hollanders united with the Caribs have destroyed nine formal settlements, without counting those of the Jesuit Missionaries and Observant Fathers, set on fire and destroyed, killing likewise many Fathers as well as some soldiers, and that nearly in all these occasions they found naked Hollanders dyed like the Caribs.

That all that he has stated is true under his oath, and that he affirms and ratifies the same and will repeat it if necessary, and that he is fifty-seven years old.

Having read to him his deposition, he said that it is the same that he has made, and that it is well and faithfully written, and he has nothing to add nor withdraw from it, and signed, with said Commander General and ourselves, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

FELIX FERRERAS—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARINÑO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

6. On the twenty-eighth of the same month and year, in order to continue this investigation in compliance with the above rule, this Tribunal had before it Don Santiago Bonalde, a resident of this city, whom the Commander-General had duly sworn in legal form, and who promised to tell the truth of what he knew and might be interrogated, as it was done by the tenor of the paper presented by the Minister of Holland,



inserted in folios one to six of these acts, which was read to him, word for word, for his guidance, and he said :

That the Hollanders had not, or ever had, been in possession of the rivers or rivulets emptying into the sea from the Esquivo exclusive down to the mouth of the Orinoco ; that it has been only tolerated, on that part, their small Guard of two Europeans and several Indians, in a Barrack which they call the Post, on the eastern margin of the Moruca river, which the Hollanders call Maroco ; that this establishment is not of time quasi-immemorial, because the Colony itself is not, for we know that it was only commenced about the middle of the last century.

That it is not true that the Hollanders have ever had possession of the river Cuyuni (called by them Cayoeny) ; that when they established a Guard and Barrack, like that of Moruca, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven, to facilitate the inhuman commerce and trade in Indians, whom they enslaved surreptitiously in the dominions of the King our Lord, for the cultivation of the plantations and improvement of the Colony, as soon as the fact came to the notice of the Spaniards, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-seven, they were dislodged from there by the deponent, who with some troop was detached to perform this duty by the Commander *ad interim* of the old Guayana, and so it is that neither the Cuyuni, Maserony, Apamongny, nor the other rivers entering into the Esquivo, have been in possession of the Hollanders, nor is it tolerable that they should have been, because said river embraces nearly the whole territory of the Province of Guayana, running from their western terminus, where they begin, down to the eastern limit, emptying into the Esquivo river, as it should result from the supposed possession that the Hollanders would be the masters of nearly the whole extensive Province of Guayana, and that the Spaniards had no more than the said margins of the Orinoco, which is an absurdity ; that they are only tolerated and established at the margins of the Esquivo river from its mouth up to that of Cuyuni, where they have a Post which they call Old Castle ; that the Esquivo runs from the S. E. to the N.W., nearly parallel with the ocean coast, the eastern terminus of

this Province of Guayana, and leaves free the interior of the same to the Spaniards, their lawful possessors.

That he does not know nor has he ever heard that the Spaniards had any stronghold at the Cuyuni nor its surroundings with many nor a few troops; that on that side there is no more establishment than the two Missions or Indian settlements of Guaceypati and Cavallaju, founded by the Catalan Capuchin Fathers in the years seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and seventeen hundred and sixty-one, on the northern margin of the Yuruari River, emptying into the Cuyuni, and at a distance of seventy leagues from the destroyed Dutch Barrack; that in said Missions there is no more troop than one soldier in each one for the escort of the Missioners.

That about the occurrence in February of last year at the Post of Moruca, he only knows that the Capuchin Fathers that went to that place brought back the fugitive Indian deserters from their settlements, who had gone to those creeks and prairies between Guayne and Moruca, and that having reached said Barrack, the Post of the Hollanders, and found that the Dutch Corporal kept there as slaves two or three Indian natives of our dominions, he brought them back to the Missions, without doing any harm or hostilities to the Hollanders.

That in regard to the Post and commercial house that Gravesand supposes to have been kept by the Company between Guayne and Povaron, he does not know nor has ever heard anything about such an establishment.

That he has not heard of the Corporal of the Arinda Barrack, towards the source of the Esquivo, nor even of the existence of the same; and that he finds impossible that the Spaniards of the Orinoco, or the Indians of our acquaintance and dependence, have perpetrated this homicide, on account of the long distance, unknown to us, and the intermediate territory between the Orinoco and that place; that he never heard of such a death, and that this is the first time that he hears the name of the Arinda Barrack.

That the deponent has not seen or heard that the Hollanders have kept fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco, nor that

the Spaniards had to stop them ; that only on the last year of seventeen hundred and sixty, Lieutenant Don Juan de Flores seized a schooner and two launches from Esquivo, on the Orinoco and Barima rivers, while going on a cruise after some Hollanders purchasing Poytos in those creeks, from the Caribs ; that said vessels were made good prizes and confiscated by the Government of Cuamana, from where Guayana was a dependence at that time ; that the deponent suspects that the pretensions of these fisheries by the Hollanders, at the mouth of the Orinoco, when they have plenty of fish much nearer to Esquivo, is only a pretext, so as to establish themselves freely with their vessels at the mouth of the Orinoco, and resume and facilitate the furtive shipments of mules from Guarapiche and Guaruaipo, and Barinas tobacco, hides, and other products from the Spanish Provinces, with which they improved their Colony when the Orinoco and the creeks were not as well guarded as they are now. This novelty and the want of commerce is the true cause of the resentment of Mr. de Gravesand, Director of Esquivo, and most interested in the illicit commerce of the Colony.

That it is not true that said fisheries had been stopped by the Spaniards, in the territory called by Gravesand territory of the same State, and that he says that it extends from the river Mareguine to this side of the Guayne, very near the mouth of the Orinoco, a supposition that the deponent calls a serious error.

In regard to the slave deserters from Esquivo, the deponent says that there are two classes of them : the negroes purchased from Africa and the Indians taken unduly and cruelly by the Hollanders or by their allies, the Caribs, under their spur, from our dominions, by way of the rivers Moruca and Guayne, emptying into the sea and in communication with the Orinoco, or else by way of the rivers Cuyuni, Maserony, Apanony and others, running from the innermost part of this Province and emptying into the Esquivo ; that said Indians had never been claimed by the Hollanders, who are conscious of the crime of their acquisition, on account of the many innocent parties whose lives are sacrificed for the choice of those whom

they enslave, in carrying out this inhuman commerce against the law of nations.

That in regard to the negroes, the deponent says that Mr. de Gravesand is not correct, because, notwithstanding that two fugitive negro slaves from this city went to the Esquivo Colony and were sold there by said Gravesand, and their masters, Don Thomas Franquiz and Augustina Catalina de Arocha, residents of Guayana, had claimed them and had not obtained any satisfaction; several times Gravesand has claimed some negro slave deserters from Esquivo, and the masters having been satisfied with their sale effected in Guayana, have received the proceeds in silver and taken the same to Esquivo; except only the case of those slaves who, in order to enjoy the benefit of our Catholic religion, run away and secure here their liberty in pursuance of the King's commands. That neither the Indians nor the fugitive negroes from Esquivo, as far as the deponent knows, have ever been induced by the Spaniards to escape, nor is it likely that anybody should have tried to do so at the risk of being hung at Esquivo.

That it is true that the Colony runs to ruin, from the time when the doors have been shut to the illicit commerce carried on at Orinoco before, and the Poytos or slaves find open the way to their freedom, when they can escape from there.

And, finally, it is absolutely false that the Spaniards had killed any Dutch Guard or Guards, or attacked any other Post held by them than that of Cuyuni, in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, when only one man died, and that was a Spanish soldier.

He adds that he had been for the last twenty-seven years established in this Province, and can safely say, as he ought to, that the suggestions of the Esquivo Hollanders and their detestable commerce in Poytos are the cause that has prevented the settlement of all the Caribs in our Missions, and many other savage tribes, working continually under the Hollanders' directions, in destroying our settlements through various ways, such as setting fire to them, as it was done in the year seventeen hundred and fifty, or attacking them by open force, or revolting them, through a diabolical and artful

policy, so that only during the time that the deponent has been acquainted with the Missions, under the Catalan Capuchin Fathers of this Province, the Hollanders joined with the Caribs have destroyed nine formal settlements, without counting those of the Jesuit Missionaries and Observant Fathers of the Orinoco, killing also many Reverend Fathers, besides some soldiers; and that in almost all these occasions some Hollanders have been found painted like Caribs.

That what he has deposed is the truth under his oath, and that he ratifies and affirms the same and will repeat it again if necessary; that he is fifty-six years old; and having heard his deposition read, he says it is the same that he has stated, and that he finds it well and faithfully written, and has nothing to add nor to withdraw from it, and, being blind, he directed his elder son, Santiago, to sign in his name, as it was done, with the Commander General and ourselves, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

FRANCISCO SANTIAGO BONALDE—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

*Rule.*—The acting witnesses will call Cipriano Mayorga to render his statement in the part of the depositions in reference to him, of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers Fr. Joseph Antonio de Cervera and Fr. Felix de Tarraga, Missionaries of this Province.

It was so ruled at the city of Guayana, on the twenty-ninth day of March, seventeen hundred and seventy, by Don Manuel Centurion, Commander General of this Province, and signed before us, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

We, the acting witnesses, immediately afterwards called on Cipriano Mayorga, the pilot of the launch that carried, in

February of last year, the Reverend Capuchin Missioners, Fr. Joseph Antonio de Cervera and Fr. Felix de Tarraga, to bring some Indians from the mouth of the Orinoco, and not having found him in any part of the city, we have been told that he is absent on board the cruising launch of his command. And we certify to the fact.

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

*Witness summoned.*—In this city, on the thirtieth day of said month and year, in order to verify the reference made in the foregoing depositions in regard to Don Tomas Franquiz, he appeared before us, the acting witnesses of the Government's Tribunal, and after having been duly sworn, according to the law and usage, he promised to tell the truth of what he knew and would be interrogated, and having been examined by the Commander General in regard to the escape of a slave of the witness, reported to be at the Colony of Esquivó, he deposed: That it is true that about the end of the year seventeen hundred and sixty-six, a negro slave of the deponent ran away from this city to the Colony of Esquivó, the name of said negro is Ambrosio, and went along with another negro owned by Augustina de Arocha, whose name is Francisco; that through several deserters, arrived since from Esquivó to this city, the deponent has been informed that his negro, as well as that of Augustina Arocha, had been sold in Esquivó to a Lutheran Parson by the Governor of that Colony, after having held them at work in his own plantation, from where they escaped, and that he had to come to recover them from the mouth of the Orinoco; that that is all he knows and can attest on this subject, under the oath he has taken, and that he ratifies and affirms his deposition, and will repeat it if necessary.

Having read to him his statement, he said, that it is the same he has made, and it is well and faithfully written; that he has nothing to add nor withdraw from the same, and signs it with

the Commander General and ourselves, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

THOMAS FRANQUIZ—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARINÓ—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

*Another witness.*—In the same city, on the second day of April, seventeen hundred and seventy, the Tribunal had before it and the acting witnesses, Augustina de Arocha, a resident of Guayana, quoted in the foregoing deposition; and the said Commander General had her duly sworn according to law, and she promised to tell the truth of what she knew and might be interrogated, and she was asked what she knew in regard to the slave owned by the deponent and said to have escaped from this city and reached the colony of Esquivo, where it is said that he is, and she deposed: That it is true that about the end of the year seventeen hundred and sixty-six a negro slave belonging to the deponent deserted from this city for the Colony of Esquivo with another negro slave belonging to Don Thomas Franquiz, the first called Francisco and the second Ambrosio; that through several deserters, arrived since that time from Esquivo to this city, she had been informed that both her negro and the one belonging to Franquiz have been sold in Esquivo to a Lutheran Parson by the Governor of that Colony, after having had them kept working in his own plantation, from where they escaped, and were recovered at the mouth of the Orinoco. That that is all she knows and may depose on the subject under the oath that she has taken, and that she affirms and ratifies, and will repeat again, if necessary, her deposition; that she is forty-three years old; and having heard her statement, she says that it is the same made by her, and is well and faithfully written; that she has nothing to add nor to withdraw from the same, and does not sign it, on account of not knowing how to do so, and it was done at her request by Don Francisco de Amantegui,

with the said Commander General and ourselves, the acting witnesses, certifying to the act.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINES—[here is a flourish].

---

*Rule.*—In the city of Guayana, on the fourth day of April, seventeen hundred and seventy, being in his Tribunal, Don Manuel Centurion, Commander General of this Province, with ourselves, the acting witnesses, he said: That after examining the deposition and acts of the present proceeding he approved them all and found them sufficient for the justification that, by order of the King, had been instituted in regard to the complaints laid before his Majesty by the Minister of Holland in reference to the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo, and in consequence I rule that the acting witnesses draw a testimony of this investigation in full, and that the original be forwarded to the King our Lord, through his Excellency, the Bailiff, Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga; and it was so ruled and signed by said Commander General, with ourselves, the acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, and on common paper, as no stamped is found in this Province.

We certify to the fact.

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO—[here is a flourish].

ESTEBAN MARTINEZ—[here is a flourish].

---

The foregoing copy agrees with the original document existing at the General Archives of the Indies in Stand 131—Case 7—Docket 17. Seville, December the 9th, 1890.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of the United States in Spain, Venezuela certifies to the authenticity of the signature



of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, December 24th, 1890.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March the 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

**No. XIII.**

Stand 131.—Case 2.—Docket 18.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**1771.**

---

**Letter No. 29 from the Commander of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, to the Bailiff, Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga, giving an account of the expedition that he had sent to occupy the Parime Lake and to explore El Dorado and to reduce the Indians inhabiting that region.**

---

GUAYANA, *December 28th, 1771.*

1771.—No. 29.—Most Excellent Sir.

DEAR SIR: Having constantly followed, from the time of my assumption of this command, the sound ideas and laudable spirit of my chief, Don Josef Solano, to penetrate into this unknown country and reduce the innumerable gentiles who inhabit its forests, as is shown by the accompanying testimony, I rendered an account on the third of November of last year, to his Excellency, the Viceroy of the State of this Province, of the progress obtained in the reduction of Indians and advancement in the country; the necessity to advance, with a respectable detachment, to stop the foreigners who from the Amazonas and Ocean coast are penetrating inland towards the Parime Lake, the center of this most extensive Province, and domicile of a multitude of Indians, that flying from the Europeans, reach its surroundings, and from the beginning withdrew to those mountains, where they consider themselves free from intruders.

To accomplish this object I requested the help of Your Excellency, but in the letter of the seventh of last March of the present year, while urging that I should omit no reasonable means to accomplish this difficult and expensive enterprise, Your Excellency denies me every kind of help, as it is shown by the accompanying copy, and even on the thirtieth of last November, I told Your Excellency that in the absence of support, it was not possible to advance my steps in this affair.

Since that time, a Captain from Parime with a large retinue has reached this city, attracted by the gifts which I have presented him, and the kind treatment given to the Indians newly reduced from the Erevato river and the sources of the Caura, and he has promised to leave his women and children as hostages, and lead the Spaniards that I will send to the Parime lake and place them in possession of the renowned mountain of El Dorado, and to reduce peacefully to our devotion most of the chief barbarous tribes who keep and inhabit its surroundings. And in order not to miss this opportunity, facilitating now what was before thought impossible and imaginary, I have endeavored to furnish the necessary supplies to the strongest expedition that in the middle of my greatest indigencies I have managed to send, on the twenty-third instant, according to the terms expressed in my instructions herewith.

I can not flatter myself with the promises of this Indian. He says that El Dorado is a high mountain, without any other plants than straw, and that everywhere on the surface it shows cones or pyramids of gold, one-third of a yard high and half of a yard in diameter, and others of smaller sizes; that when the sun shines their glow is so vivid that it dazzles the sight, and can not be seen without offending the eyes; and that the neighboring Indians guard the secret inviolably, to conceal it from the Caribs and other Indians trading with the Hollanders and Portuguese. But there is no doubt that those frontiers are uncovered, and that there are very many gentile Indians to be reduced to our holy religion, and that in order to secure the greatest and most precious territory of this extensive Province, it is imperative to reach it in time, in order to occupy the precious avenues of that great lake and rivers flow-

ing from it in the direction of the Dutch, French, and Portuguese Colonies on the ocean coast and the Amazon river. It is true that this journey (until the country becomes well known and possessed of a good land road) is long and laborious, on account of the turns and windings of the rivers and their many rapids, and the grounding places, through which the boats have to be dragged, changing from one river to another, require no less than three months of very expensive travel, and almost all through deserts and unknown lands from this city to Parime; but if it meets the approval of your Excellency, and the King feels satisfied, we shall have this glory and the best satisfaction for our fatigues. Meantime, with the same affectionate attachment to your Excellency, and subject to your orders, I pray the Lord to keep your life under His holy guard for many happy years, as it is my desire.

Guayana, December the twenty-eighth, seventeen hundred and seventy-one.

Most Excellent Sir.—Kiss the hand of your Excellency, his humblest and most obedient servant,

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

Most Excellent Bailiff,

Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga.

---

[*Copy.*]

Most Excellent Sir.

DEAR SIR: In continuation of the valuable project that His Majesty has entrusted to me, in order to penetrate into and settle the extensive and unknown deserts of this new Province, and in order to facilitate the road by land to the Esmeralda, a town situated on the upper Orinoco, at the mouth of the Casiquiari, as important as I have informed your Excellency, on the twenty-fifth of last May, I have since that time occupied with a detachment and stronghold the mouth of the Crevato river, emptying into the upper Caura. And in order to continue the reduction to civilized and Christian society of the multitude of savage Indians found in those margins, (disposed likewise to receive the light of the Gospel, that having commenced to settle under Spanish soldiers, they ask

for Reverend Fathers to instruct and baptize them,) I selected from the Community of Reverend Franciscan Observant Missioners of Orinoco two Priests, whom, with the necessary supplies, provisions, and ecclesiastical ornaments, I have sent to those new establishments. And in order to secure their subsistence I will open a direct communication by the way of Carolina to this capital, as the Caura navigation is difficult, and the windings of the Iniquiari (by way of which they have gone this time), make difficult to obtain the necessary supplies and commerce with those places. At the same time I have decided to open a straight road from the mouth of the Erevato river to the Esmeralda. The explorers, who in compliance with my directions have come by land to this city, confirm the reports given before by faithful Caribs, that the shortest way from here to the mouth of the Casiquiari must follow the bank of the Erevato.

For the discovery of the famous Parime Lake I have sent at once, by the way of the Paragua and the Caura, Spanish explorers of courage, led by several Indians acquainted with those of our party, and I hope to receive the reports of these undertakings to make your Excellency individually acquainted with any thing that may be discovered. I understand that in those islands, and on the margins of that immense lake, there are innumerable Indians who, flying from the Spaniards, Portuguese, French, and Hollanders, are found around that country after they retired from the center, leaving almost desert all its circumference.

I think that, once occupied by the Spaniards, one of the islands of the renowned lake, with a reasonable detachment, we will secure at the same time the advantages of depriving the Hollanders and their allied Caribs from continuing in their trade in Poytos which they carry on in this Province by way of the Apanony, Sipo, Maserony, and many other rivers emptying into the Esquivo, and facilitating the navigation of foreigners to Parime and the sources of the Orinoco, Caura, Paragua, and other rivers.

We shall open the country through the progress of our Missions, before any foreigners take hold of this region or lay

it waste, through the constant removal of the Indians enslaved, for the improvement of the agriculture of their Colonies, by means of the cruel and infamous commerce in Poytos with the Caribs. We will stop within their bounds the Esquivo Hollanders, those of Bervis and Surinam, the Frenchmen from Cayena, and the Portuguese from the Amazon, keeping a constant lookout to embarrass the usurpation which they are always contriving to extend on our dominions, until now difficult to avoid; and assuring the King in the possession of this precious and extensive country, we will give, within a short time a valuable Province with many vassals to the Crown and faithful to our Catholic religion.

We are well disposed, most Excellent Sir, as may be seen by the accompanying copies of letters from the Father Superiors of these Missions, and we are only wanting the necessary supplies, which I hope your Excellency will deign to accord us, as well as the withdrawal of the useless escorts of the Meta and Casanare rivers, to employ these eighteen detachments on the Parime and its surroundings, as there are so many places in which I have distributed unavoidably the rest of the troop under my command.

If there are not soldiers enough in each Post I have no means to relieve any of the most overtaxed detachments.

Wishing to give your Excellency, as I am in duty bound to do, an idea of the geography of all that I have been able to find out in connection with this unknown Province, according to what I have seen and heard in the various reports that I have examined with the greatest attention to discover the truth, I have arranged the accompanying map, which, although susceptible of future corrections when the country will be fully open and explored by the Spaniards, I believe that at present it is the chart most accurate that we have of Guayana, and I hope your Excellency will kindly receive it and excuse any defects that may be noticed, as I expect from the great indulgence of your Excellency.

Praying the Lord to keep in His holy guard the precious life of your Excellency for many happy years, as it is my desire.

Guayana, on the third of November of seventeen seventy—

Most Excellent Sir—Kiss the hand of your Excellency—your most obedient, humble servant,

MANUEL CENTURION.

Most Excellent Bailiff,

Fr. Don Pedro Mesia de la Zerda.

POSTSCRIPT.—I just learn from a few Hollanders who with their launch were seized by our cruisers on the Orinoco, and brought lately to this capital, that the Portuguese from the Marañon river have introduced themselves through the Parime river, up to the southeastern shores of the famous lake of that name, and that within four days' journey from the same, and at the same river, they have fortified a place and built houses and stores for the cacao, in which those lands abound, to be transported by small boats to Para. This news has caused me to make inquiries over and over again, and it is confirmed by several persons who report the same thing. I make your Excellency acquainted with said report, so that, as I think the urgency of the case of our expedition to the Parime Lake may be well understood and your Excellency will kindly furnish me with the necessary means.

CENTURION.

---

### Another Letter from the Bailiff.

The draft and copies sent by your Honor accompanying the letter of last November third, show very clearly the state of the Province of Guayana and the progress of the Missions, as well as the situation of the Hollanders, French, and Portuguese possessions surrounding the same and the news lately received of their penetration up to the Parime Lake, far in the interior of our dominions; this boldness must be stopped, and your Honor will see as to the means to be employed, without excluding force, under the understanding that I can not dispose of any money and am in need of funds, as the principal thing that your Honor will bear in mind in dealing with the subject. In another letter of this date I have shown the same thing.

Santa Fe, March the seventh, seventeen hundred and seventy-one.

The Bailiff Fr. DON PEDRO MESIA DE LA ZERDA.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

---

The foregoing are copies from the original letters kept at the Archives of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, at the Secretary's Office under my charge, and I certify to the fact.

Guayana, December the 20th of 1771.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,  
*Secretary of War.*

---

**Instructions to be observed by the Lieutenant of Artillery,  
Don Nicolas Martinez, Commander of the detachment  
sent to occupy El Dorado and the Parime Lake.**

1. This officer will leave this capital, taking under his orders a detachment of troops consisting of one sergeant, one corporal, twelve soldiers, one cosmographer, and two interpreters. He will transport them in the vessels that he may find more suitable and expedient, carrying the necessary ammunition, arms, and provisions for the transfer and subsistence through the rivers Orinoco, Caura, Cuato, Parime, Abararuru, Aman, and Amoine, entering into the Parime lake and consecutively, he will establish himself at El Dorado, that is reported to be a brilliant mountain of gold color, called Acucuamo and by other names Curucuripati, contiguous to said lake, at the mouth of the Guaricuru creek, settled or guarded by the tribes Macussi, Arecuna, and many others of savage Indians in the interior of this Province.

2. On this march the Commander will carefully keep his whole troop on hand united, without permitting any of the vessels to go astray, and stopping always at good hours, in advantageous places, where the vessels and people are kept under



his eyes and orders, mounting the guards and necessary sentries, so as not to be surprised on any event, taking all due precautions dictated by prudence and military discipline. He will carry a written daily account of every circumstance connected with this journey in detail.

3. He will be especially careful not to allow any vessel of gentile Indians to get ahead of his party, and prevent their communication with the Parime and El Dorado Indians, for fear that they make them give up that place and run away before our expedition reaches there to pacify and reduce them.

4. As soon as said Commander reaches the point of his destination he will endeavor by every politic means, with sagacity and kindness to befriend all those tribes, especially the Macusi and Arecuna, presenting the chiefs of the Indians with those trifles which they esteem, and singularly those who show themselves the friendliest to the Spaniards, so as to stimulate their voluntary submission to the domain of the King our Lord, in whose name he will take official possession of all that country with those solemn formalities that the situation may permit; and administering to the Indians the corresponding oath of allegiance in the most adequate form, offering them in the name of the King, the protection and support of His Majesty to keep them as loyal vassals, his servants, and all their property, and defend them from their enemies, so that they can live in safety for their persons and property, enjoying the other felicities of those submitted to the just rule of the King our Lord, and consequently he will gradually instruct them, using every possible mildness, in the mysteries of our holy Catholic faith, so as to have them embrace it with love and adjure the errors of the gentiles. To this end he will be accompanied with a Reverend Father of the Franciscan Mission of this Province, if the Prelate is willing to detach one to join him to this expedition.

5. At the Parime river, near the Cachivo river, before reaching the mouth of the Abarauru, he will endeavor to establish a fort on a narrow place or point of land advantageously situated, so as to close the pass within gunshot from that place to our enemies, through said river. It will be of the greatest

importance to found in the neighborhood of said fort a few faithful Indian settlements, for the better subsistence and defence of the troop guarding that Post.

6. At the same place of El Dorado, or the most advantageous place to be found in the neighborhood, and in order to prevent the access of the Caribs and corsair Hollanders and Portuguese to the Parime lake, a stronghold will be erected, with lodgings for the Commander and all the troop, with the artillery, armament, and ammunition. Around the neighborhood he will endeavor to establish settlements of faithful Indians, who may help the laborers with the necessary victuals and what may be wanted for the establishment and defence of the Spaniards on that frontier, and on no account whatever will he wage war, or allow any hostilities against the Indians, in order to reduce them, employing the mildest and most attractive means. Only in case of natural defence, shall he ever have to repel them, as far as necessary to refrain others, but always trying our policy of subduing them by love.

7. As soon as he has taken possession of that territory, he will explore it with the greatest care and attention so as to see everything that is useful, especially the famous mountain *El Dorado*, and other mineral and special products found in that neighborhood. Of all that he should discover he will give prompt, circumstantial, and special reports, in reference to everything, and his diary of the journey, to the Commander General, so as to render an account of the same to His Majesty, as well as the geographical description of the places, with maps that they will make in that territory, containing the rivers, lakes, mountains, original inhabitants, and other notes leading to a perfect knowledge of the situation of that country, so vast and unknown.

8. And if he finds any European strangers established in those surroundings, outside of the Colonies permitted to them—to the Portuguese on the Amazon river, the Frenchmen on the Cayena coast and the Hollanders on the Surinam coast, Bervis and Esquivo on the Atlantic Ocean coast—he will intimate to them, in the name of the King our Lord, the order to quit immediately and leave those places of his Royal domain:

and if, after the first polite remonstrances, they do not withdraw to their old and tolerated establishments, leaving free from usurpation what they hold, they will be compelled by force of arms and vigor, as far as circumstances will allow the Commander of this expedition.

9. On the stranding place of the Mairabapure, between Caura and Cuato, an Indian settlement must be established, (even though a small one), to facilitate the pass of the vessels of one to the other river, and even to avoid this work and delay, bringing the boats from one to another part, so as to expedite the transfer of the boats and stores from one to another side and secure the speediest communication of the new establishment of Parime with those of Caura and Orinoco. With this view he will endeavor to settle the Guanavis or another immediate tribe at the place where the house of the Caumaiva Indian is situated on the banks of the Caura, above the mouth of the Erevato. Another settlement on the stranding place of the Mairabapure.

10. If the adventurers or parties, willing to follow this expedition as outsiders, should undertake to make discoveries at their own expense, and explore mines or other useful enterprises in those surroundings, the Commander will allow them to do so, according to the laws of these Kingdoms, after having verified the two chief establishments of the Parime river and the lake of that name, under condition of securing from the profits the part belonging to the King, as lawful dues, and entering into a regular register what they bring to this capital under a true permit and the necessary certificates from the Commander.

11. After having ascertained the substance of the promises made to me by the Indian Captain, Paranacari, of the Purucota tribe, native of the Parime river, to lead this expedition faithfully until the Spaniards are placed in possession of the great Lake of this name, the famous El Dorado and its surroundings, and to reduce and attract to our side the chiefs and numerous tribes of Indians in that neighborhood, the Commander of the expedition will deliver to him the title that I have granted him, as Lieutenant Governor General and Indian Chief of all

the Indian settlements to be found through his assistance on the Parime river and its sources. With due solemnity he will make him known and recognized as such, so as to make this demonstration of the reward to his merit help to stimulate the other Indians in procuring every body to do the same for the benefit and service of the King our Lord.

12. If by an unforeseen accident the misfortune of the failure of this expedition should happen or suspend its course, the Commander will be careful not to separate from him said Indian, Paranacari, as it is very important not to allow such a practical man of his circumstances to get out of our hands. And that until his promises have been redeemed and our establishments on the Parima lake secured, his wives and children will be maintained at Saint Louis of the Erevato, where they are kept to-day with the rest of this tribe, recommended to the Commander of that Post.

13. And, finally, in everything not foreseen in this instruction the Commander will act, according to its spirit, with the prudence, amiability, and good conduct in keeping with his honor, love, and zeal for the Royal service, in order to see the important possessions of the Parime and El Dorado duly secured and the speediest reduction of all those Indians. To that end I grant him and delegate my powers, so that at that great distance and slow recourse to our capital he may act and deliberate in every circumstance of this expedition, according to the Royal law of this Kingdom, and precise subordination and dependence from this General Command.

To that end I grant him the present powers at Guayana on the 20th of September, 1771.

DON MANUEL CENTURION [here is a flourish].

---

I received a copy of this instruction to be carried out as directed.

Dated as above.

NICOLAS MARTINEZ [here is a flourish].

The foregoing is a copy of the original text existing in the General Archives of the Indies in Stand 131—Case 2—Docket 18. Seville, March the 27th, 1891.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER.

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies.

Madrid, April 11th, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

**No. XIV.**

Stand 131.—Case 2.—Docket 18.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES —(SEVILLE.)

---

**1773.**

---

**Letter No. 46 from the Commander of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, to the Bailiff Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga, amplifying the report of Dec. 31st, 1770, about the population of that Province, as directed by the Royal Cedula of the 24th of July, of 1772, accompanying various documents.**

---

GUAYANA, November 11th, 1773.

---

1773.—No. 46—Most Excellent Sir—

MY DEAR SIR : By the Royal cedula of the 24th of July, 1772, just arrived, I am directed that “ without delay, and extensively, clearly, and distinctly, as the importance of the subject demands, to make a detailed report of all the particulars that the Council has missed on the map and explanation of the state and progress of the population of this Province. sent by me, under date of the 31st of December, 1770, through Don Joseph Solano, former Governor of Caracas, and to state the names of the Reverend Fathers to whom the settlements under the Jesuits were delivered, and in what form ; the distribution of land, cattle, and utensils, that have been made and applied in favor of the neighbors ; under what rules, by whom, and how have been founded the seven Spanish and mixed Spanish settlements contained, as well as those intended to be settled by Don Francisco Villasana at the Carolina vil-

lage, on the banks of the Aroy river; and finally the situation and distance between the settlements and Missions, with every other particular that he may find worthy of the Royal notice, sending directly to the Council, in the way of reserve, the above-mentioned report, as well as any other to be followed, on the State and progress of this new Province. And at the same time to render an account to the Viceroy of everything worth the attention of his Excellency, asking him for the necessary assistance in money and men and everything else conducive to the advancement and prosperity of this Province, without allowing these communications and subordinations to the Viceroy to impede or delay the reports that, as I have insinuated, must be forwarded directly to the Court."

And in compliance with the directions of the above Royal cedula I send your Excellency a copy of the report that I have sent to the Council, with the corresponding justification upon every particular. In doing so I have the pleasure to show to your Excellency, not only that I have succeeded in giving this Province the consistence and considerable increase of population of forty-three Spanish and Indian settlements, containing over two hundred families of the former, brought from the neighboring Provinces, and about eight thousand of the latter, brought from the forests and rescued from idolatry to civilized and Christian society, besides the construction of over seven hundred houses, about three thousand farms, and the breeding of over one hundred thousand head of cattle and horses, but likewise I have contributed, for that purpose, with the amount of over seven thousand dollars, out of fees and established dues, on account of my office, that I might have retained since my assumption of this general command, and that I have waived voluntarily in the service of the King and the population of this Province, as is shown by authenticated documents accompanying said report, and particularly the two certificates, Nos. 3 and 8, from the Collector of Revenues and the Royal Officer of this city.

This pecuniary service I have rendered, out of my own free will, to overcome difficulties and miseries which made my wishes impossible, depriving me of the glory of populating

these deserts, so as to present to the King a Province which, on account of its situation and circumstances, may become most useful to the State. I did not intend to mention to the King or your Excellency the fact, until my recall from this Government, because up to that time I wished to continue bearing this light sacrifice of my private interest, as an evidence of my love and zeal for the Royal service; but as I am now directed by His Majesty to state under what rule, by whom, and how have so many settlements been founded, I am compelled to make it known and mention to your Excellency that I have several children, and among them two boys, Rafael and Louis, serving as Cadets in the regular troop, for the guard of this Province and who, as a reward for these merits, hope from the kindness of the King to be honored and favored with their commissions as Captains of Infantry of the Army, craving for the help and protection of your Excellency, and likewise to be kept in the service, and for their instruction at my side, until His Majesty may think fit to recall me and continue the Royal service in Spain, a favor that I expect from your kindness.

Praying the Lord to keep the precious life of your Excellency in His holy guard for many happy years, as it is my desire and want.

Guayana, November 11th, 1773.—Most Excellent Sir.—Kiss the hand of your Excellency, his most obedient humble servant,

DON MANUEL CENTURION—[here is a flourish].

Most Excellent Bailiff,

Fr. Don Julian de Arriaga.

---

[Copy.]

Most Powerful Sir—

SIR: By the Royal cedula of the 24th of July of last year, just arrived, your Highness directs me that without loss of time to report all the particulars missed by the Council in the last map, and explain the condition of the population of this Province, which I sent under date of the 31st of December,



1770, through Don Josef Solano, Governor of Caracas, and to be particularly careful to inform the Viceroy of Santa Fe of whatever I may consider worthy of his notice and attention, asking from him the assistance in money and people, and everything else conducive to the advancement and prosperity of this new Province, without allowing this communication and subordination to the Viceroy to impede nor retard the report that I must send directly, as Commander, by way of reserve to the Council.

And in compliance with the orders of His Highness I say that this Province of Guayana is the most eastern part of the dominions of the King in meridional America, on the northern coast, and that the boundaries are, on the north, the lower Orinoco river, the meridional boundary of the Provinces of Cumana and Caracas; on the east, the Atlantic Ocean; on the south, the great Amazon river; and on the west the Rio Negro and the Casiquiari creek and upper Orinoco; the boundary of the eastern and unknown part of the Kingdom of Santa Fe.

In the circumference and precinct of the vast continent of this Province, the Frenchmen and Hollanders occupy all the seacoast with their colonies; the former in Cayena, near the mouth of the Amazon river, and the latter in Surinam, Bervis, and Esquivo, fifty-five or seventy leagues from the large mouth of Orinoco.

On the margin of the Amazon river and on those of Rio Negro up to San Joseph of the Marivitana (thirty-six leagues below the mouth of Casiquiari and thirty-two from our settlements and strongholds of San Carlos and San Felipe), the Portuguese are established, and our effective possessions are reduced to one part of Rio Negro, all the Casiquiari, the upper and lower Orinoco, and the new establishments that we are founding in the interior of the country by the rivers Caroni, Paragua, Aroy, Caura, Erevato, Padamo, Ventuari, and others, going from the unknown centers of Guayana to Orinoco. This river is divided in branches, forty-one leagues before reaching the sea, and receives its water through numberless mouths, in the space of seventy leagues of clusters of mangroves, all flooded from the point of Barima to Guarapiche.

The chief and most eastern of all is the one called large mouth or mouth of Navios. This one is eighteen miles broad and has a channel of two leagues, in the middle of the Barrack, with four fathoms of water down to the sea at high water; the bottom is muddy, the coast low, and the cluster of mangroves are all flooded; the sea is very quiet, especially in the months of February up to October; the tides are lively, of about one fathom deep of salt water, that stop and salt the waters of the Orinoco as far above as seventeen leagues from the mouth. The other mouths only permit the entrance of launches and piraguas, forming a labyrinth of inundated islands and creeks, emptying into the Triste Gulf, opposite the island of Trinidad; and among them, those better known and practicable are the Manamo, Macaredo, and Pedernales.

Through the large mouth, or the mouth of Navios, vessels can enter and navigate with fair weather in the Orinoco river and upwards, without any hinderance, and at all times frigates of forty-four guns can go up to the mouth of Caroni or the Fajardo Island in the months from May to October, when the river is full; and they can go farther up, but slowly, on account of the strong current and light winds of the season, to Angostura, where the capital city of the Province is situated at present, eighty-three leagues distance from the sea.

From Caroni to the mouth of the Orinoco there is a distance of fifty-eight leagues without any population on either side of the river (indeed it is a pity to have it abandoned as it is the best soil in the world for agriculture and commerce; though there is now and then a sickly place, being amongst them the old city of Guayana, nine leagues below the mouth of the Caroni, and eight above the place where the Orinoco is divided into several branches, as it has been stated.)

On that sickly place, on the northerly part of this Province, and on the south side of this river, there is a rock upon which the Castle of San Francisco de Asis and a battery in trapezoid shape without fosse or palisade are built. It is forty yards in length, twenty in breadth, with ten iron guns and their corresponding ammunition. In the middle, on the western side, the mountain Padraastro rises in a commanding position at a

gunshot from said Castle of San Francisco, having on its top a small fort with a palisade in the shape of a star, without fosse; it is thirty-seven yards in length, twenty-six in breadth, with nine iron guns, mounted and supplied with ammunition.

For both Posts there is a garrison of one captain commander, one subaltern officer, and twenty-five men of infantry, with a corporal and six artillerymen; one armed launch at the foot of the Castle, with one cannon and twelve small pieces served by sixteen pioneers.

As the general breadth of the Orinoco, at this part of the river, is about eighteen hundred yards, beyond the reach of a cannon, point blank from these two batteries, the old Spaniards found necessary the erection of batteries on the opposite side, so as to prevent the passage of vessels by means of cross fires. For that purpose they built, near the mouth of the Limones creek, an oval tower of twenty-three yards in diameter, with good materials; but unfortunately it fell before it was finished, on account of the weight and the weakness of the soil in which it was built, without the precaution of strengthening the foundations so as to consolidate the muddy and sandy soil. This work has been entirely abandoned for the above reason, and therefore the pass is open on that side to the vessels of the smugglers and enemies of the Crown, that can navigate with ten fathoms of water and fair winds, without any risk from the artillery of the batteries of San Francisco and the Padrastró on the opposite side, out of their reach, save a casual shot by elevation.

In order to avoid these difficulties and the sickly condition of the place, and to have all the forts united in an advantageous place, a true key to close the Orinoco, the well-known navigation of which easily discovers to an enemy the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas and Barinas, and opens the doors to the kingdom of Santa Fe, His Majesty desires, as shown by the Royal order of the 3d of December, 1770, to establish the same (fortress) formally on the hill of the Island of Fajardo, being eight leagues above Padrastró, and half a league below the mouth of the Caroni river, dividing the Orinoco into two channels almost equal, the broadest seven hundred yards in.

flood times. Its summit is fit to hold a fort equal to the one projected for the Padrastro mountain, and the situation more adequate for closing the river and covering the Province, because from that controlling position muskets will reach, where cannons will not in the other place, and having no population whatever below the Caroni near the Orinoco, everything is kept under the protection of this fortification, for although there are a few settlements towards the east inland, they are far from the river and protected by the ridge of mountains between them and the Orinoco; said obstacle, favored by the desert above-mentioned, opposes any evil intent from the enemy against them, and gives sufficient time to prevent it in every case.

The Fajardo fortification may be supplied with more facility than that of Padrastro; and the people convoked at Angostura by the Commander General for that purpose, find the full protection of the Caroni river against an enemy, trying from land to prevent a junction. It is likewise of the greatest convenience to this city.

As this country, from the last century, has been receiving population and requires the reduction of the Indians, the three Missions, one under the Catalan Capuchin Fathers from the Island of Trinidad, another under the Franciscan Fathers from Piritu, and the third under the Jesuits of Santa Fe, with the exception of the first were inactive, until the year 1732, when the distribution amongst them of this vast territory, even before it was known or explored, except the banks of the lower Orinoco, was made in the following form:

The Catalan Capuchins, situated until then around the city of Guayana, took charge of the eighty-three leagues of territory between the mouth of the Orinoco and Angostura, and thence drawing a line up to the Marañon or Amazon rivers. The Franciscan Observant Fathers took the one hundred leagues from the Angostura to the mouth of the Cuchivero river, with their corresponding land between them and the Amazon river; and the rest, to the sources of the Orinoco (then unknown), was taken in charge by the Jesuits, but as it was discovered afterwards that the upper Orinoco, Rio Negro,

and Casiquiari are in reciprocal communication, that territory was found to be too extensive for only one Mission, and leaving to the Jesuits the one hundred leagues which they had assigned as far as the rapids of the Ature and Maipure, and dividing this river into upper and lower Orinoco, His Majesty sent the Andalusian Capuchins to attend to the reduction and conversion of the Indians of the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, and afterwards they took, likewise, provisional charge of catechising the settlements left by the Jesuits of Orinoco, and everything was afterwards abandoned, as I stated to your Highness on the 17th of September, 1771, by means of your Secretary, Don Pedro Garcia Mayoral.

Out of that community only two Reverend Fathers are left, Fr. Josef Antonio Xeres and Fr. Miguel de Nerja, who, after the general stampede of their brothers in Christ and the death of the Prefect, Fr. Andres de Cadiz, were taken ill and left for this city, where they are serving as pastors of the Maruanta and Borbon Parishes. For that reason I keep a Reverend Father of the Franciscan Mission constantly navigating on the Orinoco, Casiquiari, and Rio Negro attending, as far as possible, to the spiritual wants of the settlements abandoned by the Andalusian Capuchins in both territories, while your Highness fills, as I have requested, the Mission for the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro.

The principal board of applications for the houses, colleges, and missions of the Company established at Caracas sent the Franciscan Conventual Fathers from that Province asked by me on the 27th of August, 1771. Those are the best Missioners that we have had in the settlements of the Jesuits after the latter's expulsion, and who may replace the Fathers who die or who are taken sick in that unhealthy territory.

I have requested several times the Diocesan Prelate in charge of that church, after the delivery which I made of it to him, in compliance with the orders and instructions of his Excellency the Count of Aranda, to make the appointments of pastors, and he has constantly replied that he has not anybody.

Abandoned, as I have said that this Province was, from the last century, to the discretion of the Father Missioners, sick-

ness, want of commerce and of government were destroying the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, the only Spanish settlement found in all this vast continent, and the Orinoco almost deserted, or more properly controlled by the barbarous Caribs, when in the year 1755 the Royal expedition of boundaries arrived, commanded by the Chief of Squadrons, Don Josef de Iturriaga, who subjected the proud Indians, reduced and delivered many of them to the Missioners, founded at his expense and of the Royal Treasury the two Spanish settlements called Ciudad Real (Royal City) and Real Corona (Royal Crown) at the lower Orinoco, and penetrated to the upper Orinoco and Casiquiari, three hundred leagues, all a desert as far as Rio Negro, which he occupied with a detachment of troops and erected a stronghold on the Portuguese frontier, in order to better stop the progress of the conquests of that nation.

He reduced to the control of the King and brought to our holy religion the Indian tribes controlling that country and who had not only resisted with extraordinary bravery and persistence the entry of the Spaniards in the upper Orinoco, but had destroyed likewise, through a constant and cruel war, the other natives. He founded there three settlements, San Josef de Maipures, at the entry of the upper Orinoco, and San Carlos and San Felipe in Rio Negro; and for their improvement and the establishment of other settlements and cities that he thought necessary for the security and preservation of these dominions, the King made him Commander General of all the new settlements of the Orinoco, when by order of His Majesty the Commissioners of the boundary expedition were recalled to Spain in the year 1761.

At the representation of Don Josef de Iturriaga, or rather on account of the report of Don Josef Solano, the third Commissioner, who had been sent with that expedition, the King decided to set up under another footing the Governor of this Province (until then subject to the Governor of Cumana) and to transfer the city of Guayana to the Angostura of Orinoco.

To attain that end, His Majesty appointed, as Commander *pro tempore* of this Province, Colonel Don Joachin Moreno de Mendoza, and commissioned him by the Royal order of in-

structions of the 5th of June of 1762, independently from Iturriaga and subordinated to the Viceroy of Santa Fe, as shown by the accompanying copy No. 1. In the year 1764 Moreno took possession of this command, and in 1766 I came to relieve him, and to serve on the same terms that he did, with the only difference of being then under the orders and direction of Don Josef Solano, Governor of Caracas.

At the beginning of the following year of 1767, Don Josef de Iturriaga withdrew on account of sickness to the Island of Marguerita, leaving me in charge of the General command of the settlement of the Orinoco, with the same power granted to him by the King, as it is shown by the appointment or title of my commission, signed by him on the 28th of January, 1767, confirmed by the Royal cedula of the 5th of May of 1768 (Annex No. 2). Consequently, I tried to be posted in regard to the state and circumstances appertaining to my jurisdiction, for the discharge of my duties and to satisfy the Royal trust of my superiors.

I visited all the settlements of each Province, except three of the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, beginning with the territory of the Catalan Capuchin Mission, the oldest, and established in the last century, and I found that all the population and consistence of the same was reduced to eighteen Indian settlements, with five thousand two hundred and seventy-three souls, the Spanish village at San Antonio de Upata, with one hundred and thirty-seven persons of all sexes and ages; a cattle estate of over thirty thousand head of cattle, besides the breeding of horses and mares administered and possessed by the founders, the Catalan Capuchin Fathers in their territory, from the banks of the Orinoco thirty leagues inland to the east of the Caroni river. The Indians were mild, the climate healthy, and the soil fit for farming and breeding purposes, advantageously situated for population and commerce, but, unfortunately, all this property was in dead hands (*manos muertas*), forbidden to both natives and Spaniards, both miserable on that account.

Twenty-five leagues above the mouth of the Caroni river I found this new city of Guayana or la Angostura (the narrow-

est part of the river) of Orinoco, inhabited by five hundred and fifty-five poor persons, just arrived, dwelling in straw-roofed huts, without possessing yet any products, farms, cattle, boats, or any other means of subsistence, and under the disadvantage of having no other settlements around or any help within twenty leagues' distance. But the site is healthy and adequate for both land and water commerce.

In the territory to be occupied by the Franciscan Mission from Pirutu there were only two Reverend Fathers, who had founded two settlements with Caribs, Platanar and Guazciparo, with two hundred and seventy-eight souls, near the city of Real Corona, distant from Guayana thirty-five leagues, and composed of a hundred and five Spanish persons very poor. Ciudad Real, which is likewise in said territory, sixty leagues farther up on the creek of Uyapi, near the Orinoco, with four hundred and fifty-eight Spaniards, not so poorly situated; and at a distance of twelve leagues, on the eastern margin of the Cuchivero, there is a village with a hundred and twenty-seven fugitive Indian Cafres from the Jesuit Mission, aggregated to that city by Royal order. This territory is all healthy but not so fertile and profitable, nor having as many Indians as that of the Catalan Capuchins.

From Cuchivero to the rapids of Atures and Maipures the Jesuit Missioners had on the southern bank of the lower Orinoco five Indian settlements and one on the opposite margin, under the jurisdiction of Caracas, founded from the time of their establishment in the year 1732, at various distances, with twelve hundred and seventy-two persons, the most civilized and useful of all the Provinces, six thousand head of large cattle belonging to the Mission and over one thousand possessed by the Indians, and several Spanish families established among them and contributing not a little to the happiness of the Indians and to the subsistence of those settlements, in spite of the insalubrious climate and poverty of the soil, that seems to be full of deleterious exhalations, injurious to man and to the plants; but the Jesuits preferred it, on account of fronting the Meta river, for the sake of the navigation and commerce of the Kingdom of Santa Fe, where they had their Superior and their colleges.



For the visit of the three small Indian settlements on the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, consisting of five hundred and forty souls, as well as the exploration of the cocoa plants in those wild forests, I sent as Commissioners the Prefect of the Andalusian Capuchin Mission, Fr. Josef Antonio de Xeres, the Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Francisco Bovadilla, Commander of the detachment and frontier of Rio Negro, and who was to be the Captain settler of the Esmeralda, and is now Governor of Los Quijos, and Don Apolinar Diez de la Fuente, and they certified, without discrepancy, on the 28th of November, 1767, that the groves (cocoa trees) were so extensive and prolific that they could supply this Province with the produce and ship it to Spain with a profit to the purchaser.

Nothing was then known of the extensive inland territory of this Province, beyond the thirty leagues held by the Catalan Capuchin Missioners. The geographical charts showed that even after leaving between the foreign colonies and our establishments a desert of eighty or a hundred leagues so as to avoid their commerce and communication, we had yet left many hundreds of square leagues to settle and occupy with great profit to the State and to religion, but it is our misfortune that everything was not only unknown to the Spaniards, but abandoned to foreign Colonies, introducing their men with the Caribs, trading in slaves from the barbarous tribes inhabiting the center of this extensive country, improving their establishments considerably on the sea coast and the Amazon river, leaving our land deserted and unfit to be occupied in the future for want of the natives gone, if we do not take prompt and efficient measures on our side, advancing to the frontiers to stop the strangers in their incursions and usurpations of the dominions of His Majesty.

With this knowledge, and sure that there has not been, nor are there in this Province, any Indians to be reduced or converted by the word or preaching only, and that it was necessary force or gifts to bring them out from the forests and keep them in civil and Christian society, and observing that the more diligent Missioners avail themselves for that purpose of the escort of soldiers granted to them by the Governor, I came

to the conclusion, after mature reflection, that it should be better, for the reduction and pacification of the same, to do so directly through the soldiers under their own officers and Commanders, rather than place them under the Missioners, from whom they do not expect any inducement of reward or punishment. At the same time this city has no public revenues, and, as I have said, its inhabitants just transferred are very poor, and in want of all the necessities of human life, surrounded everywhere by a horrible desert, making impossible for them their subsistence, if no Indian settlement were founded in the neighborhood for the necessary products, and hands for the establishment and comfort of the Spaniards; but I am in want of the necessary means to meet these requirements, as there was no money in the Treasury, but only liabilities, and from Santa Fe there was very faint hope of support, on account of similiar indigence.

This miserable condition of this Province, in spite of my desire to correspond to the Royal confidence reposed in me, trying to secure the welfare of the country as far as it was in my power, influenced my determination to reduce several Indians from the forest and bring at my expense several Spanish families from the neighboring Provinces and organize there a settlement. In order to accomplish this important project I appointed an Administrator to collect all the taxes and fees due me as Governor and Chief Justice, from the excises, pilotages and anchorage dues, fines, etc., the receipts of which at the time amounted to seven thousand five hundred and twenty-one dollars; that as shown by the certificate of the collector, Don Diego Mariño (whose testimony is the voucher No. 3), has been used in bringing two hundred Spanish families from the neighboring Provinces of Caracas, Cumana, Barinas, and Marguerita, and eighteen settlements, as follows: Marisanti and Pana-pana, at two and a quarter leagues from this city, within the territory of the Catalan Capuchin Mission, from where other emigrants have been taken, from the settlements of Monte Calvario and Santa Anna, a reduction of Indians from the settlement of Piedad, and almost all the expenses for the foundation of Barceloneta in the Parana, as

shown likewise by the certificate of the Reverend Father Prefect, Fr. Bruno de Barcelona (whose certified copy is the voucher No. 4).

In the territory of the Franciscan Mission I have founded and improved (as shown by the certificate No. 5 from the Reverend Fathers) the settlements of Buena Vista and another called Copiche, at one and two leagues, respectively, from this city; and, penetrating farther into the interior of the country, I have founded the settlements of Guaypa, those of Saint Louis and San Vicente del Crevato, that of San Francisco del Yniquiari, those of Concepcion and San Carlos of Caura. I have rendered help to those of Tapaquire and Mono Mountain (Cerro del Mono), all Indian settlements, and likewise the Spanish villages Borbon and Carolina. I have increased the population of Real Corona and sustained that of Ciudad Real, to prevent their ruin on account of the constant sickness of the last few years.

In the territory to be occupied by the Mission of the Jesuits I have founded in a healthy and advantageous place the village of Caicara, with Indians and Spaniards dispersed from the settlement of Cabruta of the Province of Caracas; and I have likewise sustained the other settlements left by the Jesuits on this side of Orinoco, notwithstanding the horrible mortality and sickness prevailing in certain seasons of the year in all of them. And at the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, as shown by certificate No. 6 of the ex-Prefect and Justice of the Andalusian Capuchin Mission, Fr. Josef Antonio de Xeres and Fr. Miguel de Nerja, I have established six formal settlements, Soma, Santa Barbara, Tuamini, San Gabriel, San Francisco Solano, and Santa Gertrudis, all at the expense of my fees and out of alms.

I have founded in the same territory, at the expense of the Royal Treasury (in virtue of the Royal order of the 5th of October of 1768, No. 7), the village of La Esmeralda, a cattle farm for the subsistence of those inhabitants; and I have begun the foundation of twenty other Indian settlements on the straight road which I have opened happily, at the moderate cost of eleven thousand four hundred and eighty-three dollars,

as shown by certificate No. 8 of the Royal Treasury Officer Don Andres de Oleaga, for the speediest and easiest communication of all these new establishments with this capital, as well as on account of the knowledge and formal possession of this territory and the reduction of the natives.

And finally, in order to occupy the important frontier of Parime, in the remotest part of this Province, I have sent a detachment of sixty men, under the command of Lieutenant Don Vicente Diez de la Fuente, who is already within the sources of the Parana (river), at three hundred leagues from this capital, founding the city of Guirior with Spanish families that I have sent from here, and other Indian settlements founded on the same route to answer as scales (or stations) for our establishments and safety of the King's dominion in that region.

The Borbon and Carolina villages have been founded at my request, the former by Don Francisco Josef de Espinosa, and the latter by Don Francisco Villasana, residents of this Province, and each one has accomplished his work with due formalities, according to the prescribed rules and laws, without stipulating nor asking for any assistance, waiting for the approval of Your Highness, according to Royal cedula of November 14, 1779; but as the jurisdiction and the lands granted by law are of little or no value at present, and they have worked and expended a considerable portion of their own money, especially Villasana, who went farther into the interior to found his settlement, I consider him worthy of the Royal favor, and of a yearly pension of two hundred dollars, and besides one hundred dollars yearly to Espinosa, during both of their lifetime, as a reward well deserved and so as to stimulate others to the same work of population.

The distribution made of farming lands, building lots, and sites for breeding cattle is made by the laws of this kingdom, and I was instructed by Don Jose de Iturriaga of the conditions of his appointment and the requirements of the Royal order that he quotes of the 21st of September, 1762, that no title should be granted nor the property awarded before the improvement and cultivation of the same. To the Indian settl-

ments I allow, as commons, one league of farming land around every settlement and another league of reserved lands, continuous with the other settlements, so that they do not receive any injure from the others, nor the Spaniards and their cattle.

To every Spanish settlement two leagues are given in full all around, one square league for cattle being common pasture ground and watering places. The building lots are subject to the ability of the neighbors to cover as much space as they can actually occupy. To those of the Esmeralda village, in consideration of the long distance of that difficult desert and exhausted place, every family is allowed three thousand wild cocoa trees in those forests, in a land susceptible of multiplying them and bearing other products, a site for breeding cattle, and a building lot, all in perpetuity; on the first year they are allowed two laborers and rations of casave and jerked beef and, for once only, two hoes, two axes, two machetes, two *caporanos* (?), one sow, and one cow to each family; and for the commonwealth, commons are granted as well as pasture grounds for cows, all on account of the Royal Treasury, as there is no other recourse for the subsistence of those inhabitants and those of Rio Negro. The administration is in charge of the commander of all of them, Don Antonio Barreto, Captain of Infantry.

To the other Spanish and Indian settlements, as they have been made without any expense to the Royal Treasury, in less convenient places, they have been variously considered in regard to their wants and what has been found possible to allow them.

I have been and am very particular in reporting and giving an account of everything to my Superior, and I have the satisfaction to deserve their approval of my zeal and conduct (as shown by the accompanying letters No. 9, from the Governor of Caracas, Don Josef Solano, and the Most Excellent Sirs the Viceroy Don Pedro de la Zerda and Don Manuel de Guerior), and I expect likewise to deserve the superior approval of your Highness, and that the King be satisfied of my services, as well as the services of those who have helped me in particular to

place this Province in the present condition of welfare in which it is, and the merit of which I can not refrain from laying before your Highness, saying that the first and better auxillary that I have had in every respect has been the Controller of the Treasury, Don Andres Oleaga, and therefore I consider this zealous and faithful Minister worthy of His Majesty's favor and of the honor of the appointment of Paymaster of War, or head of the Tribunal of Accounts at Santa Fe, and that a Deputy Royal Treasurer be appointed to help him in the laborious work that he has and is necessary for the good administration of the Treasury Office, and its improvement.

The second is Don Antonio Barreto, acting captain of one of the companies on duty in this Province. His activity, talent, diligence, and disinterestedness, shown in the settlements and improvements of the upper Orinoco, entitle him to the Royal kindness and the honor of being made full captain of the company in which he is acting as such, and, if possible, to the appointment for one of the military orders. And the third is Don Francisco Amantegui, Secretary of the Commander General, who for seven years has been serving with honor, intelligence, diligence, and disinterestedness and is worthy of the Royal favor and to be allowed the appointment of Royal Treasurer of this Province, if that office is to be created, or else another equivalent distinction.

May God keep your Highness in his holy guard for many years, as wanted by his vassals.

Guayana November 11th, 1773.

---

This is a copy from the original sent by the Secretary of this General Command of Orinoco to the Royal and Supreme Council of the Indies, to which I refer.

City of Guayana, November 11th, 1773.

FRANCISCO AMANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].

**Copy of the Royal Order of Instructions.***Number 1.*

The King, considering the importance of setting upon another footing the Government of the Province of Guayana, for its best protection and conditions and facilities to reach the Kingdom of Santa Fe, through the well known and easy navigation of the Orinoco, and to remove the settlement of Guayana to Angostura on the same river, avoiding the unhealthiness of the place, as shown by the experience of its inhabitants, and preventing the increase of its population, he has concluded to erect a separate command of all its district and make it immediately subordinate to the Viceroy of Santa Fe, sending your Honor to fill, *pro tempore*, this office, trusting that your well-known zeal and experience will carry out this idea with the promptness required, on account of the importance of the end in view. And in consequence I inform your Honor, by command of his Majesty, that immediately after receipt of this notice and instruction, with the corresponding commission accompanying the same, Your Honor will depart for the aforesaid Province and act as directed, having an understanding with the Governor of Cumana, to whom the corresponding orders are communicated, about his action and the assistance he has to render.

His Majesty desires that you establish your headquarters at Angostura, distant from the present city about thirty-four leagues from the Castle, where the Orinoco river is reduced to eighty (80) yards in breadth, and you will remove there all the residents of Guayana to a climate much better calculated for the inhabitants and for the improvement of the place and facility to stop the progress of the enemies. From the new quarters it will be easy to bring more persons and forces to dislodge them and to render assistance to the garrison of the castles, preventing the entry of an enemy through the river or the ingress of traders who may have eluded the fortresses.

Your Honor, without any loss of time, will endeavor to fortify the two front planes of the eastern and western fort of Padraostro of Guayana with a strong palisade, parapet, and earthworks, defending the eastern plan with heavy guns

commanding the rear works of the Castle and the pass to the lagoons of Baratillo and Ceiva, so as to protect the northern front flank of the fortress and the eastern palisade, embarrassing from there with minor artillery the advance of an enemy by the way of Baratillo. Your Honor will raise the parapet of the western curtain and place in position there three six-pounders, so as to cover that front with a second palisade. The tower of the small fort must be taken down and all the interior square must be covered with tiles and pillars of heavy and hard wood, fixed on the terre-plein in contact with the interior face of the parapets of the curtains, where they do not embarrass the defence.

The small fort of Limones must be girded by a counter foundation nine feet apart, deepening four feet more than the foundation, and the terre-plein it has must be removed, leaving it only two and a half feet higher for the opening of the embrasures for the artillery. All the small forts shall have to be covered by a solid flat roof on the banquet of the parapet, leaving a skylight for the communication with the sentries. Four cannons must be mounted, two of them eight-pounders, for the defence of the water avenues, and two four-pounders for those from land, and four more on the roof. All the stones taken from the small fort must be left at its foot, and the eastern point of the Limones creek must be defended by sinking stones.

Your Honor will have to build two cruising launches, one for the service of the garrison of the fort and the other for that of Angostura. While the said works are in progress (the expenses must come out of the fund applied to the building of the fortress of Limones), you will separate the city on the southern bank from the Angostura and then you shall convey there all the cattle, allowing their pasture farther up.

Your Honor will not allow new farms for the cultivation of vegetables and cereals on the margins of the Orinoco below Angostura, and at the same time the Indian settlement of Suay, with all its cattle, must be removed, as soon as the works of the fortress are finished, they shall have to reside at Angostura, which has to be closed by a battery placed at the place called San Felipe and on the eastern point of a hill in the rear. Your Honor will see that a stronghold be built to au-



swer for headquarters and defend the rear of the population and the battery, paying from there due attention to the garrison of the fort and to prevent the pass of strangers and protect the Capuchin Missions of Guayana and of San Fernando de Atabapus, those of the Observant Franciscan Fathers on the eastern part of Orinoco, those of the Jesuits and of the Meta (river), as well as those of the dominions of Barinas, giving them the necessary escort.

Considering that the occupation and expenses for the transfer of the Guayana parties will deprive them for a long time of a church, His Majesty has granted four thousand dollars for such a building, and to that end the corresponding order has been issued to the Viceroy of Santa Fe.

To the actual troop of the assignment of the forts of Guayana, consisting of one hundred men, the seventy-three of the escort of the Jesuit Missions of the Orinoco and dominions of Barinas must be added the twenty-five men of the fort of Limones and fifty-two that must be furnished as directed by the Governor of Cumana, who has to send them immediately in company with those from the garrison of Araya (dis-mounted), the same Governor has orders to increase said number with any excess left, after meeting other wants. Your Honor will organize this troop into two companies with their corresponding officers.

The Governor of Cumana is directed likewise to send to Guayana all the artillery from Araya, to the extent that he may find necessary, helping your Honor, and facilitating in all your wants what you may urgently require within his power.

By order of the King I make you acquainted with the foregoing directions, so that you will at once depart for your destination and carry out the tenor of the present instructions. His Majesty has no doubt of your well known zeal and conduct, and hopes that you will do your best to meet his expectations, considering the importance of the present subject.

May the Lord keep your life for many years.

Aranjuez, June the 5th, 1762.

The Bailiff, FR. DON JULIAN DE ARRIAGA.

Señor Don Joaquin Moreno y Mendoza.

The above is a copy of the original Royal order of instructions kept in the Archives of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, to which I refer.

City of Guayana, November 11th, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].

*Number 2.*

Don Joseph de Iturriaga, Chevalier of the Order of Santiago, Chief of the Royal squadron, Commander General of the settlements and all the Orinoco.

Whereas, by Royal Order of the 24th of October, 1760, His Majesty has kindly granted me permission to remain in the Province of Venezuela, Cumana, and any other place that I may think fit for the accomplishment of my views in regard to the foundation of "Cuidad Real" and that of "Real Corona," the tenor of which is as follows:

"Notwithstanding that by a separate order of the third instant, inclosed herewith, your Honor is directed to return to these Kingdoms, with all the persons who left them to participate in the commission for the treaty of boundaries, His Majesty considers that if your Honor finds that your personal presence in the Province of Venezuela, Cumana, or any other place that your Honor thinks to be calculated to accomplish successfully the important views that your Honor has had in undertaking the foundation of settlements and cities, one at the site of Yape, on the southern margin of the Orinoco, and the other called 'Real Corona,' near the Aroy river, according to the advice of your Honor by letter of the 10th of March of this year, your Honor will instruct the other commissioners to return to Spain, as soon as they find the opportunity to do so, and your Honor may remain for the time necessary for the accomplishment of the settlement of the cities in course of erection, and the subsistence of places more adequate for the protection of the territories of His Majesty.

"May the Lord keep your life for many years.

"Madrid, 24th of October, 1760.

"The Bailiff, FR. DON JULIAN DE ARRIAGA.

"To Señor Don Joseph de Iturriaga."

And likewise by another Royal order of the twenty-second of September of seventeen hundred and sixty two, His Majesty agrees with my remaining in the commission for the improvement of settlements, and to be recognized as Commander General of the same and of all the river Orinoco; by another Royal order of the twenty-first of said month and year, trying by the most acceptable means to prevent the entrance of the Portuguese or their permanence in any places where they may prove injurious to our natives; and by another (Royal cedula) of April of seventeen hundred and sixty-five, I am directed, in regard to the reduction and preservation of the natives of the upper and lower Orinoco and Rio Negro, to concur for for that purpose with Don Joseph Solano, without any jealousy of his interfering with my jurisdiction, as Commander General of these establishments, and His Majesty wanting our mutual concurrence in everything appertaining to the Royal service.

For that reason and the unanimous advice of two Surgeons of my attendance, in my present complaint of incipient paralysis, advising my change of climate, leaving this Castle for a temperate and milder one, I have decided, in virtue of the first Royal order, already quoted, to go to the neighborhood of the city of Caracas, leaving the command of this province of Guayana in charge of Don Manuel Centurion, Captain of Artillery of the fort of Guayana.

Don Gaspar de Salaverria has written to him in my name, on the second of January, last, notwithstanding that said officer by the order of the King of October the eighth, of seventeen hundred and sixty-two, is under my orders to render his help in the foundation and subsistence of this city, that of the Real Corona, and others to be established on the upper Orinoco, Rio Negro, for the protection of the lands of his Majesty, and the other affairs under my charge, and for everything connected with the Royal service.

Therefore, considering all the circumstances and the qualities and merits, love, zeal, honor, and nobility concurring and shown by the Royal trust, in the person of said Don Manuel Centurion, and in virtue of the Royal powers vested in me, as Commander General, I appoint, name, and constitute said

Commander of the Province of Gu'ayana, Captain Don Manuel Centurion, to fill my place as Lieutenant Commander General of the settlement and of all the Orinoco river, and grant him all my powers without limitation, to do, pending my absence, the same as I would and ought to do in both of said new cities and the settlement of Cuchivero, whose Indians and those of the Cafre tribe and their aggregation are incorporated by royal order of the twentieth of September, of seventeen hundred and sixty-two, to the neighborhood of this Royal city. Likewise at the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro he will act as the requirements of the occasion may demand, reporting every case to me and to the Governor and Captain General of the Province of Venezuela, the Naval Captain, Don Joseph Solano, whose assent is required in his affairs.

And I order and command the Captains of the new settlements and those of Cuchivero, and to all the neighboring inhabitants and residents of the same, and every other person that in any manner be under my orders, to receive him as I do, and to consider well received said Don Manuel Centurion, in the use and exercise of my powers and in my place, as Lieutenant Commander General of the settlements of all the Orinoco river, to obey his orders by word of mouth or in writing, and observe and submit to his directions as my own, in virtue of the present letters by which I bestow on him all my powers, without any limitation, paying him all due respect, and the honors, graces, allowances, exemptions, immunities, and privileges due to the Lieutenant Commander General of the settlements of all the Orinoco, under penalty of being punished for disobedience, according to law.

And as His Majesty, by Royal order dated at San Ildefonso on the 21st of September, of seventeen hundred and sixty-two, granted me the power to offer and give lots for houses in the new settlements of my command, farming lands and sites for pasture ground for breeding cattle, lands for sugar cane, and other products of exportation, granting the corresponding titles of conveyance, subject to the Royal confirmation after my report of every case to His Majesty. For this purpose, and to avoid any delay in the service of His Majesty, the

new establishments in my charge, during my absence, I commissioned said Captain Don Manuel Centurion so to make grants to the neighbors of said two cities of the aforesaid lands in the name of His Majesty the King, whenever said neighbors have not received any before, using my own powers from the same source, and observing all judicial formalities for the possession of the same, and sending me copies of the same proceedings in due form, in order to obtain their final confirmation. And as I have empowered the Captain and ordinary Judge of this city to grant possessions of farming lands and pasturage grounds to the neighbors who have petitioned for the same, I recommend especially to the said Don Manuel Centurion the observance of said commission and powers, calling for all the proceedings already closed and sending me authenticated copies, while keeping the original papers in the corresponding Archives.

Therefore, in virtue of all that has been mentioned, I have ordered the present letters to be issued and sealed in my presence and countersigned by my undersigned secretary, before witnesses, owing to my inability to sign the same, on account of my present physical affliction, already mentioned, in this Royal City (Ciudad Real) of Orinoco, on the 28th of January, 1767.

By command of the Commander General—

IGNACIO DE CHORROCO—[here is a seal].

DON GASPAR DE SALAVERRIA,

Sergeant Major of the Garrison of Cumana,

and DON CARLOS MORAN DEL CASTILLO,

Resident of this city.

We certify, in due legal form, that we were witnesses at the time when the present commission was read to the Commander General, Don Josef de Iturriaga, by his secretary, Don Ignacio Chorroco, and said Chief issued and expedited the same with all its details and circumstances therein expressed, and did not sign, as he is unable to use his right hand, but his secretary did so.

VOL. II, VEN.—17

In testimony whereof we sign the present act and the above commission, in the same city, on the same day, month, and year.

GASPAR SALAVERRIA.

CARLOS JACINTO MORAN DEL CASTILLO.

---

It agrees with the original document from which we, the undersigned acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, in virtue of a verbal order of his Honor the Commander General of this Province of Guayana, drew this copy, well and faithfully written and corrected in five folios, with the first under stamp No. 4.

In testimony whereof we sign the present act in Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, of seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

MIGUEL MEXIA—[here is a flourish].

MIGUEL DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

We, Don Josef Ventura, Pastor of the Parish Church of this city of Guayana, and Don Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant of the Royal Treasury of the same city for His Majesty, do certify that the two signatures authorizing the above document are the same as used by Don Miguel Mexia and Don Miguel de Oleaga, the witnesses with whom, for want of a Notary Public, the Tribunal of this Commander General is acting, as they are faithful and loyal, trustworthy, and possessing all the other circumstances required by the law of these Kingdoms, and therefore to all the acts signed by them due credit and full faith is given judicially and extra-judicially.

In testimony whereof we sign the present act in Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, of seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

JOSE VENTURA—[here is a flourish].

ANDRES OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

**Copy of Royal Cedula of Boundaries.**

The King, my Viceroy, Governor and Captain General of the new Kingdom of Granada and President of my Royal Audience of the city of Santa Fe. Don Josef de Iturriaga, Chief of Squadron of my Royal Navy, directed that the General Command of the new settlements of the lower and higher Orinoco and Rio Negro, that he controlled, should remain as it is on account of his demise, in charge of the Governor and Commander of Guayana. I have agreed to accept this resolution, and finding convenient to my Royal service the invariable subsistence, subject to my further resolution, of the above expressed aggregation to the same Governor and Commander of Guayana as the nearest to the above places, and therefore until now in charge of the escort of the Missions of the same Province, to have it under the same Command, always subordinated to that Captain Generalship, the whole of said Province, the limits of which are: on the north, the lower Orinoco, the southern boundary of the Provinces of Cumana and Venezuela; on the west, the upper Orinoco, the Casiquiari and Rio Negro; on the south, the Amazon river, and on the east, the Atlantic Ocean. I have decided to make this declaration and to send you the present Royal Cedula, in virtue of which I command you to communicate the corresponding orders for its compliance to all the Tribunals, Governors, and Officers to whom it may concern, for its observance and notice, that such is my will and that this, my Royal Cedula, will be transferred to my Council of the Indies for the ends that may be found adequate, in a copy sent by the undersigned Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indies.

Given at Aranjuez on the fifth of May, seventeen hundred and sixty-eight.

I, the King—

DON JULIAN DE ARRIAGA.

It is a legal copy of the original one, existing in this Secretaryship of the Chamber of the Most Excellent Viceroy of this new Kingdom of Granada, to which I refer.

Santa Fe, January 10th, 1769.

FRANCISCO SILVESTRE.

This is a copy of the Royal Cedula, addressed by the Secretary of the Most Excellent Viceroy of this district, to the Commander General of the Orinoco and Guayana.

I certify to the fact.

City of Guayana, November 11th, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE ANANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].

### **Certificate by the Collector of Revenues.**

#### *Number 3.*

Don Diego Mariño, Collector of the Revenues and dues given over to the City of Santo Thome of the Guayana, by Don Manuel Centurion, Governor and Commander General of this Province.

I certify and swear in due form, according to law, that as this city was without any revenues for its subsistence or means to carry out the public works, and being in want of a Church, Royal Offices, and Court houses, and other public buildings necessary and convenient for the public service in every city, and still more necessary in the capital of a Province as this is, said Governor, Don Manuel Centurion, decided, as soon as he took possession of his command, that all dues and charges belonging to him as Chief Justice, the excises, fees for visits, countersigning weights and measures, and acts of justice, and what belongs to the Governor out of clearances and visits of vessels, and everything that in other Provinces is considered as due or fee of the Governor, except the salary allowed by His Majesty, and paid to me as Collector of Revenues and city taxes, as, indeed, it has been done since the year seventeen hundred and sixty-eight to the present time, during which I have received in my administration on account of said branches the sum of seven (the word thousand is missing) five hundred and twenty-one dollars from the monopoly of Guarapo (fermented molasses), cock-pit licenses, that by direction of the same Commander were applied for the benefit of the building



of the Church and other Royal public houses and general hospital, in the year seventeen hundred and seventy-one.

I have received likewise the amount of four thousand five hundred and thirty-six dollars, with an addition of four thousand two hundred and eighty-five dollars from private alms for other purposes, in all the amount of sixteen thousand three hundred and thirty-nine dollars, which have been applied to the reduction of the Indian tribes Guainavis, Maquiritares, Mariusas, Aleviriannos, Viras, Puraonnes, Pandacotos, Quiriquiripas, and other various gentile tribes who inhabited barbarously the forests of this Province, and from where they have been removed by direction of the Governor, Don Manuel Centurion, to live a Christian and civilized life under the rule of the King our Lord, in the settlements of the Maruanta, Pana-pana, Orocopiche, and Buena Vista, founded by said Governor in the neighborhood of this capital, as well as those of San Carlos of Caura, La Concepcion, and San Francisco del Iruquiari, those of Santa Rafael de Guipa, that of San Louis, and that of San Vicente de Crevato, that of Santa Barbara, in the high Orinoco, and likewise that of San Antonio de Fuiamini, those of Santa Clara de Sama, and Santa Gertrudes, besides the following at Rio Negro—the three settlements, Pimichimi, Cunuripi, and San Francisco Solano.

Part of these funds have been likewise used in the foundation of the village of Barceloneta and the reduction of its neighboring Indians in Paruara; in the expedition sent to occupy the Parime lake, and to explore the mountain El Dorado and some unknown southern lands in the interior of this Province at a distance of over four hundred leagues from this capital, for the discovery of which he is working and founding, in the same direction, several wild Indian settlements and the city of Guirior with Spaniards, to secure those important conquests and facilitate our establishment in the Parime.

And, finally, out of the same funds in my charge and other means obtained through the probity and zeal of said Governor, Don Manuel Centurion, the banks of the rivers, where this city is founded, have been filled up and the rocks encumbering the same have been removed, making besides good

streets and building lots easy to be improved ; the Church has been improved seven yards higher above its foundation, as far as was possible, out of the six thousand dollars allowed by the King for the same, and a great deal of brick and lime has been accumulated for arches and vaults. A decent Royal Office has been built of good materials, where the Governor is stopping at present, and finally six more houses of good materials have been built for public uses, at an expense of three thousand dollars, returning a rent of three hundred dollars a year, as it is shown in detail by the books and accounts in my charge, to which I refer.

And in order to show the same facts, whenever convenient, I sign the present at the request of the said Governor, Don Manuel Centurion, in this City of Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

DIEGO IGNACIO MARIÑO.

---

This copy agrees with the original document, from where it was taken by the undersigned, acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, in virtue of the verbal order of his Honor, the Commander General of this Province of Guayana, being well and faithfully written and corrected in three folios, with the first bearing a stamp of the fourth class.

In testimony whereof we sign the present in Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

MIGUEL MEXIA—[here is a flourish].

MIGUEL DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

We, Don Joseph Ventura, Pastor of the Parish Church of this city of Guayana, and Don Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant of the Royal Treasury of His Majesty, certify : That the two signatures, authorizing the above document, are the same as are used by Don Miguel Mexia and Don Miguel de Oleaga, acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, in the Tribunal of the Commander General, and that both are faithful and trustworthy, possessing all the qualifications required by the

laws of these kingdoms. And therefore to all the instruments which they attest full faith and credit are given, both judicially and extra-judicially.

In testimony whereof I sign the present in Guayana, on the eleventh of November, of seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

ANDRES DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

JOSEPH VENTURA—[here is a flourish].

### **State of the Settlements of the Catalan Capuchin Mission of Guayana.**

#### *Number 4.*

State of the Missions of the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Guayana, founded since the year seventeen hundred and twenty-four, with others of new foundation by the Commander General of this Province, Don Manuel Centurion, shown by the actual Reverend Father Prefect Fr. Bruno de Barcelona, in compliance with the Cedula from the Buen Retiro in the year of seventeen hundred and one. To this end a visit was made in the present year of seventeen hundred and seventy. This state agrees with the matricula sent by the Most Reverend Fathers of the Mission of the Immaculate Conception from Caroni to their President, Father Manuel de Preixana and the Most Reverend Father Prefect.

1. The Indians of this Mission are Guayanos; they were transferred from the Mission of Suay (by order of the King), in which they had been founded in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-four. Baptized, 1,151; married by the Church, 301; deaths, 777; existing, 388.

2. Mission of our Father San Francisco de Alta-gracia; President, the Reverend Father Felix de Villanueva.

The Indians of this Mission are Guayanos, and all baptized. They were founded in the year seventeen hundred and thirty-four. Baptized, 1,552; married by the Church, 306; deaths, 620; existing, 540.

3. Mission of Saint Joseph of Cupapuy ; its President, the Reverend Father Joachin Maria de Martortorel.

The Indians of this Mission are all baptized, and from the Guayanos tribes. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and thirty-three. Baptized, 1,470 ; married by the Church, 366 ; deaths, 664 ; existing, 403.

4. Mission of Santa Maria de los Angeles de Yucuari ; its President, Father Raymundo de Olot ; his companion, Fr. Carlos de Barcelona, who attends to the sick.

The Indians of this Mission are nearly all baptized ; a few are Guayanos, others Caribs, and others Panacayos. These Indians were transferred from the Missions of Amaruca, founded in the year seventeen hundred and thirty, on account of the bad climate. Baptized, 799 ; married by the Church, 363 ; deaths, 690 ; existing, 269.

5. Mission of the Divine Shepherdess of Yuruari ; its President, Father Antonio de Martorell.

The Indians of this Mission are all baptized, and of the Guayanos tribe. It was transferred from the site of the Yucuari, on account of better convenience for the cattle, in the year seventeen hundred and seventy. Baptized, 374 ; married by the Church, 92 ; deaths, 234 ; existing, 290.

6. Mission of Saint Joseph de Leonisa de Ayma ; its President, Reverend Bernardino de Berdu.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Guaicas tribe and from the Maragotos ; most of them are baptized. It was founded in seventeen hundred and fifty-three, but in the year of seventeen hundred and sixty-seven they all took to the woods on account of the earthquakes, but afterwards most of them came out, and, with other arrivals, there are already three hundred and eighty-eight. Baptized, 599 ; married by the Church, 44 ; deaths, 198 ; existing, 388.

7. Mission of our Lady of the Rosary of Guazipati ; its President, the Reverend Father Benito de la Garriga.

The Indians of this Mission are of the Carib tribe. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-seven ; nearly all are baptized. Baptized, 316 ; married by the Church, 16 ; deaths, 104 ; existing, 370.

8. Mission of San Miguel del Carapo ; its President, Father Thomas de Mataro.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Carib tribe ; most of them are baptized. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-two. Baptized, 606 ; married by the Church, 30 ; deaths, 204 ; existing, 410.

9. Mission of Our Lady of La Soledad del Cavallaju ; its President, Father Geronimo de Vallfogona.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Guaico tribe. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one. At the beginning of the year seventeen hundred and sixty-nine they took to the woods, on account of the measles ; about fifty-nine have been recovered since. Baptized, 208 ; married by the Church, 11 ; deaths, 70 ; existing, 120.

10. Mission of Our Lady of Monserrate del Miamo ; its President, Father Buenaventura de Santa Coloma.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Carib tribe. Most of them are baptized. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and forty-eight. Baptized, 733 ; married by the Church, 60 ; deaths, 312 ; existing, 501.

11. Mission of Saint Michael of Palmar ; its President, Father Francisco de San Julian.

The Indians of this Mission are Guayanos and Caribs. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and forty-six. Baptized, 520 ; married by the Church, 108 ; deaths, 264 ; existing, 380.

12. Mission of San Antonio ; its President, the Reverend Father Mariano de Savadell, accompanied by Father Domingo de Arbucies.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Guayanos tribe, all baptized ; they were founded in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-five. Baptized, 287 ; married by the Church, 64 ; deaths, 47 ; existing, 248.

13. Mission of Saint Raymond de Carauaci ; its President, Father Pedro de Fugarola.

The Indians of this Mission are Caribs and Cachigarotos. Founded in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-three. Baptized, 83 ; married by the Church 1 ; deaths, 20 ; existing, 130.

14. Mission of Santa Eulalia de Murueuri; its President, Father Thomas de San Pedro.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Carib tribe, and most of them are baptized. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-four. Baptized, 403; married by the Church, 40; deaths, 220; existing, 368.

15. Mission of the Calvary; its President, Father Joseph Antonio de Cervera.

The Indians of this Mission are from the tribes of Guaraunos and Salivas, most of them are baptized; they were founded in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one. At present they have already two Missions, and the latter, by order of the King, is placed in the Cardonal. The Commander, General Don Manuel Centurion, in order to facilitate their translation, and in consideration of their poverty, supplied them, at his own expense, with many iron utensils and other alms for the purpose of planting new grounds, in seventeen hundred and sixty-eight. Baptized, 387; married by the Church, 15; deaths, 125; existing, 206.

16. Mission of Santa Ana; its President, Father Felix de Tarraga.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Aruaca and Guarauno tribes, most of them are baptized and united from two Missions of San Joaquin and San Felix. They commenced their transfer by order of the King our Lord at the beginning of the present year, seventeen hundred and seventy. The Commander General, Don Manuel Centurion, in order to facilitate their transportation, made a present to both tribes of a large amount of iron utensils, axes, machetes, and other articles. Baptized, 639; married by the Church, 18; deaths, 250; existing, 446.

17. Mission of Our Lady of Los Dolores de Pusedpa; its President, Father Mariano de Zervera.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Aruacas and Chimas tribes; they were founded in the year seventeen hundred and forty-nine, most of them ran away the latter part of February of the present year of seventeen hundred and seventy, some have been recovered, and in a short time will be entered.

Before they ran away they numbered in all one hundred and seventy, brought from Moruca, where two Reverend Fathers went after them, well escorted and provided with vessels and the necessary stores, supplied by the Commander General, Don Manuel Centurion. Baptized, 56 ; married by the Church, 0 ; deaths, 3 ; existing, 52.

18. Mission of Santa Rosa de Maruanta ; its President, Father James de Puigcerda. . . .

The Indians of this Mission are from the Guaraunos tribe. It was founded by the above-mentioned Commander General, Don Manuel Centurion, with Guaraunos Indians, whom he personally went after, and brought along with him to the lower Orinoco, as may be seen in his letter asking the Reverend Father Prefect to send one of the Fathers to attend to the spiritual wants of said Indians, a fact well-known to all the inhabitants of this city ; a few of said Indians are baptized. It was founded in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, and is in our charge. Baptized, 30 ; married by the Church, 0 ; deaths, 9 ; existing, 286.

19. Mission of the Immaculate Conception of Pana-pana ; its President, the above-named Father Fr. James de Puigcerda.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Carib tribe, and it was founded likewise by the same Commander General, Don Manuel Centurion, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, as it appears by the letter addressed by his Honor to the Most Reverend Father Prefect, asking for a Missioner to attend the said Indians, and it is improving with new arrivals of Caribs with embarkations, troops, arms, and stores, and every other necessary thing at the expense of the Commander General and in company of the Reverend President. Baptized, 8 ; married by the Church, 0 ; deaths, 0 ; existing, 97.

20. Mission of Saint Felix de Topoquen, under Father Manuel de Preixana.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Carib tribe, a few are baptized, it commenced under Father Manuel de Preisana in the year seventeen sixty-seven. Baptized, 56 ; married by the Church, 0 ; deaths, 5 ; existing, 110.

21. Mission of the Cumana, under Father Buena Ventura de Santa Coloma.

The Indians of this Mission are from the Carib tribe, a few are baptized; it was founded in the year seventeen seventy-seven. Baptized, 47; married by the Church, 0; deaths, 5; existing, 106.

22. Village of Upata and San Antonio—all Spaniards; its President, Father Pedro Martin de Ribas.

This village was commenced to be founded at the expense of the Reverend Community, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-two, with ten Spanish families. Baptized, 69; married by the Church, 23; deaths, 20; existing, 152.

NOTE.—About the latter part of last year the fortress of Hipoqui was commenced with six officers and an officer Cadet of the troop, by allowance of the Commander General, Don Manuel Centurion, with six swivel-guns, balls, powder, and military armaments, said community paying for the provisions of beef and casave for the vessel. Two Reverend Fathers were sent to promote the success of said expedition, they planted the cross and began the Mission, at the mouth of La Parana. Said Castle of Hipoqui remains as a constituted Spanish village by the pleasure of His Majesty, and the approval of the Commander General, with some expenses to the Reverend community. Said village is called Barceloneta. Now it consists of twelve Spanish families (with a few Indians) freely supplied with transportation and other expenses by the same Commander, showing his earnest desire to give ample population to these lands, and conquer souls for the Lord and vassals for our King.

At the same time three other Missions have been commenced, under the names of Guri, Aripuana, on the banks of the Caroni river, and on the straight road to Nre Barceloneta; and the third, called Garumopati, on the bank of the Parana river.

The Reverend Missioners are no more nor less than twenty, besides the two above-mentioned in these places.

We are daily awaiting the arrival from our Province of the eleven Fathers and a nurse that we have requested for the



past few years, with the approval of the Commander General of this Province.

Total—Baptized, 10,360; married, 1,754; deaths, 4,842; existing, 6,246.

The Indians from the tribes, whose reduction we are still wanting, and that we discover every day, are as follows:

Maceronis Caribs, Guaicas, Guapisanas, Paravaxanas, Arivas, Machuacanes, Tarumas, Gumaripas, Paramyanas, Tuyanas, Hipuragotos, Aturayas, Cumixis, Papavenas, Camaragotos, Quiriquiripas, Hiñaus, Cucuipotos, Arianas.

In testimony whereof I give the present letters signed by me and sealed with the grand seal of our office, countersigned by our Secretary, in this Mission of the Immaculate Conception of Caroni, on the twelfth day of September, in the year of seventeen hundred and seventy.

FR. BRUNO DE BARCELONA, Prefect.

By order of the Most Reverend Father Prefect.

FR. MANUEL DE PREISANA.

Secretary to the Missions.

It agrees with the original from which we, the undersigned, acting witnesses, in the absence of a Notary Public, and by order of the Commander General of this Province, have taken the present copy, well and faithfully written and corrected, and consisting of six folios, the first on a stamped paper of the fourth class.

In testimony whereof we sign the present in Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

MIGUEL MEXIA—[here is a flourish].

MIGUEL DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

We, Don Joseph Ventura, Pastor of the Parish Church of this city of Guayana, and Don Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant of the Royal Treasury of the same by His Majesty, certify that

the two signatures authorizing the preceding document are the same used by Don Miguel Mexia and Don Miguel de Oleaga, acting witnesses for the Tribunal of the Commander General, in the absence of a Notary Public; that they are faithful, trustworthy, and possess the conditions required by the laws of this Kingdom, and to the instruments signed by them full and entire credit is given, judicially and extra-judicially.

In testimony whereof we sign the present in Guayana, on the eleventh of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

JOSEF VENTURAS—[here is a flourish].

ANDRES DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

#### *Number 5.*

Fr. Cristobal Lendines, the Apostolic Missioner, Attorney General and Paymaster of the holy doctrines and of the Missions of the Immaculate Conception of Piritu, and new conversions of the Incarnation of Orinoco, Erevato, etc., and discrete Fathers of the same, certify for those to whom it may concern that in time, and by direction and request of Don Manuel Centurion, Lieutenant Colonel of the Royal Army of His Majesty, Commander General of the upper and lower Orinoco and Superintendent of the branch of crusades in the Province of New Guayana, that the following settlements have been made and improved in the district of this territory lately described by the agreement entered into in the city of Santo Thomé of the old Guayana, as follows:

*Buena Vista.*—This settlement by said Don Manuel Centurion with two hundred souls, more or less, from the Guarauna tribe that he ordered to be brought from the Anegadizos (flooded places) and mouths of Orinoco.

*Santa Teresa de Orocopiche.*—This settlement was composed of fifty Indians, Cumanagotes and Palenques, from the neighborhood of Angostura of Orinoco, and has formally increased to over two hundred souls, Aláverianos and Guaraunos, that under directions and proper steps of said Centurion left the woods and were placed in this settlement where they are established.

*San Carlos and San Pedro de Alcantara of Caura.*—This settlement was founded by said Commander General with one hundred and forty souls from the Vivas and Pandacotos tribes, under the direction and solicitude of the same; they were brought from the forests of the high Caura (river) to live a Christian and social life at the mouth of said Caura river and the Orinoco.

*Nuestro Padre San Francisco del Iniquiri.*—This settlement was founded by said Don Manuel Centurion, with over two hundred souls of the Pandacotos tribe, who, under his direction and solicitude, were induced to inhabit that place, as a necessary scale (station) to the navigation of the Caura river.

*San Luis del Erevato.*—This settlement was founded by the same gentleman, with over two hundred souls of the Pandacota tribe, brought from the mountains to inhabit at the mouth of the Erevato, where a small fort was established with artillery and troops, for the protection of the Missioners and new reductions of Indians.

*San Vicente del Erevato.*—This settlement was founded likewise by the same Centurion, with over two hundred souls from the Inaos and Guayucomos tribes, who, at his solicitude and direction, left the woods and came to live on the banks of the Erevato, where there is a scale necessary for the navigation of said river, and for the land communication with the high Orinoco.

*The Immaculate Conception of Caura.*—This settlement was founded by said Commander General with over two hundred souls of the Paravenas tribe, that he induced to quit the woods and reside at the margin of Caura, opposite the mouths of the Erevato river, and is a necessary scale for the communication of all these settlements with the capital of Guayana.

*San Rafael de Guaipa.*—This settlement was likewise founded by the said Centurion, with one hundred and nine souls from the Quiriquiripas tribe, who, at his solicitation, left the forest to inhabit at the said place, a point of scale for the land travellers of the capital of Erevato, where a road has been opened and continues under the orders of the same Centurion until it reaches the Esmeralda on the high Orinoco.

We likewise certify that besides the above settlements in the district and territory mentioned, under the support, direction, and solicitude of said Don Manuel Centurion, the village of Borbon by Don Josef Francisco de Espinosa, with thirty creole Spanish families and a few Indians, have been improved and helped, that of the city of the Real Corona with Spaniards, the settlement of Tapaquiri and Mono mountain with Indians voluntarily established within the jurisdiction and government of said Centurion ; that he has besides rendered assistance to the Prelate with vessels and men whenever he has requested them for the ordinary visits, and to meet the wants of many Missionaries whose health and expenses were not possible on the part of the holy community, on account of the notorious poverty of the Reverend Fathers, who have accompanied the expedition, and the visits made and intended to the Erevato river and the Parime lake or El Dorado, soliciting at the same time the means of rendering the spiritual comforts to the vassals of His Majesty residing at the high Orinoco and Rio Negro, destitute and abandoned by the ministers of the Gospel. For this purpose and the comfort of the troop guarding the fort of our Father San Francisco in the old Guyana, he applied and prayed this holy community to assign, as indeed it was done, the necessary Missionaries to take care of their consciences and do their duty, in regard to the annual precepts of our Holy Mother Church, with everything conducive to their spiritual comfort.

In testimony whereof we give the present certificate, signed and sealed with the grand seal of this holy community, in the city of Real Corona, on the twentieth day of August, in the year seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

FR. CRISTOBAL LENDINES,  
Apostolic Commissioner.

FR. FRANCISCO SANZ, Discrete.

FR. MIGUEL GUTIEREZ, Discrete.

FR. GREGORIO MARZE, Discrete.

FR. JOSEF ARAUJO and

FEIJOO, Discrete—[here is a seal].

It agrees with its original, from which the undersigned acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, in virtue of a verbal order of his Honor, the Commander General of this Province, have drawn this copy, well and faithfully written and corrected, in three folios, the first of them on stamped paper of the fourth class; and we sign the present certificate in Guayana, on the eleventh of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

MIGUEL MEXIA—[here is a flourish].

MIGUEL DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

We, Don Josef Ventura, Pastor of the Parish Church of this city of Guayana, and Don Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant of the Royal Treasury of the same for His Majesty, certify that the two foregoing signatures, authenticating the preceding document, are the same used by Don Miguel Mexia and Don Miguel de Oleaga, acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public in the Tribunal of the Commander General; they are faithful, trustworthy, and qualified according to the laws of these Kingdoms, and that all the instruments executed before them are given full faith and credit, judicially and extra-judicially.

In testimony whereof we sign the present in Guayana, on the eleventh of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

JOSEF VENTURA—[here is a flourish].

ANDRES DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

*Number 6.*

Certificate which, at the request of the Lieutenant Colonel Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero y Torres, Governor of the Province of Guayana, and Commander General of Orinoco, Rio Negro, and annexes, is given by the Reverend Capuchin Father Missioners, Fr. Josef Antonio de Xerez de los Caballeros and Fr. Miguel de Nerja, the former Prefect of the new Missions of the high Orinoco and Rio Negro, and the latter accompanying Justice of the said Missions, both sons of the Capuchin Province of Andalusia.

SIR: In your previous (favor) your Excellency directs us to give the present certificate of your acts in these Provinces in your charge, during your Government time, commencing on the 25th of December, seventeen hundred and sixty-six, up to the present time. And understanding the motive stimulating your Honor, less glorious if you should not have any rivals, without which Themistocles said that there was no glorious deed. If our opinion, being from persons favored by and attached to your Honor were not to be underrated we should say, as our Lord and Divine Master told Saint Thomas, "*Quia vidisti credidisti*" (because you saw, you did believe).

We have seen and, therefore, we have to believe and demonstrate not with timidity, what your Honor has founded, re-edified, and augmented with the light of mid-day. We should ask—What comparison is possible between what the Orinoco is to-day, to whomsoever did not see the condition in which it was found by the Royal expedition of boundaries? What was founded, discovered, and worked by the Royal Commissioners? What was improved by Don Joaquin Moreno, the predecessor of your Honor? And, finally, what has been added to all of that by your Honor with your imponderable effort, work and excessive patience? Let us compare one and the other, and we will hear the opinion of the zealous ministers.

Our conviction is that your Honor has done and accomplished in Orinoco what you ought to do, and that we will relate, certifying the same sincerely, without comparing what has been done by the other persons with what your Honor has founded, re-edified, and augmented in the time of your government. That is not our purpose, nor what your Honor desires.

In the first place your Honor has improved the capital of New Guayana so well, that it is almost impossible to believe it, if we would not see it, on account of the general scarcity of materials in this territory and the want of mechanics, now more than ever felt, as your Honor having all the necessary materials to finish the fine Church, that is on the way of construction, has to wait in order to finish it, for those expected from Spain by the first arrival. A large number of houses

have been built, amongst them some for schools and the instruction of our youth, in one of the best places of the city, and I doubt whether the city of Caracas has any better. Your Honor has paved all the ground necessary for said building, at the expense of a great deal of labor, on account of its being nearly all solid rock. I do not doubt that a plan has been already made, showing all the houses covered with tiles existing to-day, when your Honor found only about eight small houses, and the rest being straw-roofed huts; this last kind of material has been already eliminated from the interior of the city.

Whoever did not see the Angostura or New Guayana as your Honor received it, can not form an idea of the impulse given by your Honor, in improving and beautifying the same. Your Honor has aggregated to this city and its suburbs four settlements, like villages, and as many Missions as your Honor has founded. One of them, the Maruanta settlement, with over six hundred souls from the Guarauna tribe and Spanish neighbors, at two leagues from the capital; another is called Orocopiche, increased with Indians of the same tribe and Cumanagotos, being besides under an Alderman; your Honor found this one when it was beginning with very few Cumana-gota families. This settlement is at a distance of one league and a half from the capital.

Besides the settlement of Buena Vista, which your Honor has founded, with over three hundred Guaraunas, at one league distance from Guayana, another settlement, Panapana, with one hundred and eighty Caribs and a few Spanish settlers, has been likewise founded by your Honor, distant four leagues from the city, being under my spiritual administration as well as that of Maruanta.

These four Missions are very serviceable to the capital of Guayana, affording it facilities for laborers and eatables, just the purpose your Honor had in contemplation, when founding the village of Borbon, already with over thirty Spanish families, with their Chaplain settler and a temporary Parson, who is my companion and brother, Reverend Father Fr. Miguel de Nerja.

Besides, your Honor has founded the village of Carolina, with a less number of families, administered by one of the Reverend Missioners of the (Franciscan Order) Regular Observants. Moreover, the village of Barceloneta and that of La Paragua, served by the Reverend Catalan Capuchin Fathers, where they have a fort with troop and the necessary ammunition furnished by your Honor for its defence. The village of Caicara, newly founded by Don Pedro Bolivar, opposite Cabruta, on the south side of the Orinoco, and aggregated to the Mission of Pan de Azucar, likewise founded by your Honor with Indians from the Maipure tribe. Said villages and Missions your Honor has entrusted to the care of the Reverend Father Observants, with those of Borbon, la Carolina, Calcara, that of Ciudad Real Corona, greatly increased in population, houses and cattle.

A Lieutenant has been placed in charge of the Missions of Buena Vista, Orocopiche, San Carlos de Caura, Tapaquiri and Cerro del Mono or Mono mountain, all founded by your Honor, and the five settlements of the Crevato and Iniquiari rivers, placed by your Honor under the Reverend Observant Fatheris, founded and populated with over two thousand souls, supplied by your Honor with troops, ammunitions and gifts for the conquest. I suppose that, better than ourselves, the Reverend Fathers will attest to the facts.

To the Reverend Catalan Fathers your Honor has entrusted the care of the village of Barceloneta, with its fortress, etc., the Mission of Maruanta and of Pana-pana, above mentioned. Said Reverend Fathers have placed in each of these settlements one Reverend Father, whom they have to withdraw on account of the scarcity of pastors, leaving one in Barceloneta, furnishing them help with cattle and utensils. Your Honor has augmented the village of Upata, already improved, and placed in position to supply the Province and Capital of Guayana with products, and inhabitants likewise. The other Missions have been increased with several inhabitants, marrying Indian women of said Missions, and the Fathers have attended to the Christian instruction of the natives.

Your Honor has furnished them with all necessary sup-



plies as well as the other tribes, if no better, as insinuated by the Reverend Father Prefect, Fr. Bruno de Barcelona, in his letter to the Reverend Father Paymaster General, dated in Caroni, on the seventeenth of September, seventeen hundred and seventy; and we refer to the said letter in support of our statement, where he has highly praised the conduct of your Honor for his favors and support. In confirmation of all the above facts we may refer to the state of the Missions presented to your Honor by the Reverend Prefect after his visit. We have referred to what has been founded on the lower Orinoco.

As to the improvements carried out by your Honor in Rio Negro, we will add the village of La Esmeralda, to which your Honor sent the Captain Settler, Don Apolinario Diez de la Fuente, with all the families who have already settled there, under the protection of the troop, and all the other necessities for that foundation, having cows and cattle sent by water with great difficulty and expense. A sugar-cane mill has been established and the necessary farms for the convenience and comforts of the inhabitants. To this village your Honor has aggregated and founded the following Missions on the Orinoco river: Santa Barbara, San Antonio, on the mouth of the Tuamini creek, and Santa Clara, at the mouth of the Sama creek.

Your Honor has settled Indians in the old sites already destroyed, of San Fernando on the Rio Negro, San Francisco Solano, San Miguel at the mouth of the Pimichini, San Gabriel de Guenia or Rio Negro, on the Padamo river, Santa Gertrudes, San Felix. Your Honor has added likewise (what in our opinion is as much work as the rest already told) twenty settlements of several tribes reduced by Captain-elect Don Antonio Barreto, at a middle distance between said village and the Crevato river, a work of extreme difficulty as well as of extreme glory to your Honor, having been the first, and perhaps the only one of our Spaniards, who has founded and opened similar laborious road, as difficult as I am sure it has been for others, wanting the pacification, friendship, and union of the different tribes spread around there.

Your Honor has succeeded in the settlement of peaceful Indians already reduced and under one soldier, each Post, fur-

nishing supplies and help to said natives and to the inhabitants by means of the new road opened to the extent of over three hundred leagues from the Esmeralda to the capital of Guayana, counting already over seven hundred Indians in some of the above-mentioned twenty settlements, confirming the truth of what I heard some time before from the Chief of squadron Don Joseph de Iturriaga (whom as well as the other Chiefs of the Royal expedition of boundaries I have the honor to accompany and serve, during their permanence in Orinoco, where I have served for sixteen years, and in the Province of Venezuela and in Caracas for ten, making in all twenty-six years that I have served in the ministration of the Holy Gospel as Missionary in these Provinces).

Señor Iturriaga said that only the Esmeralda and Guayana were to have land communication, as your Honor has made it true, and that he could not do, considering the immense work necessary.

Here is the end of what we can demonstrate, as we have seen what your Honor has accomplished and what your government has improved and reformed, but we can never sufficiently praise your Honor and applaud your zeal, efficiency, and good conduct—*quia magnorum non est, laus sed admiratio dixo docta*, as the prince of philosophers said.

In testimony whereof, and for whom it may concern, we sign the present at Maruanta on the fifteenth of December, seventeen hundred and seventy-two.

May your Honor prosper for many years and the Lord protect your valuable life are the vows of your obedient and loving servants and Chaplains.

FR. JOSEF ANTONIO DE XEREZ.

FR. MIGUEL DE NERJA.

It agrees with the original, from where the undersigned, acting witnesses, for want of a Notary Public, and in virtue of a verbal order of His Honor, the Commander General of this Province of Guayana, has been taken well and faithfully.

written and corrected, in six folios, the first of which is on stamped paper of the fourth class.

In testimony whereof we sign the present in Guayana, on the eleventh of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

MIGUEL MEXIA—[here is a flourish].

MIGUEL OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

We, Don Josef Ventura, Pastor of the Parish Church of this City of Guayana, and Don Andres de Oleaga, Accomptant of the Royal Treasury of His Majesty, certify that the two signatures authorizing the preceding document are the same used by Don Miguel Mexia and Don Miguel de Oleaga, witnesses with whom, for want of a Notary Public, the Tribunal of the Commander General is acting; that they are faithful, trustworthy, and qualified, according to the laws of these Kingdoms, and therefore to all the instruments signed by them full faith and credit is given judicially and extra-judicially.

In testimony whereof we sign the present certificate in Guayana, on the eleventh of November of seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

JOSEF VENTURA—[here is a flourish].

ANDRES DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

*Number 7—[Copy].*

By direction of the Governor and Captain General of Venezuela, Don Josef Solano, I have received the representation addressed by your Honor, on the thirtieth of last January, reporting the first results of the expedition sent, in the year of seventeen hundred and seventy-two, in charge of Don Apolinar Diez de la Fuente, and the supplies and the other measures taken by your Honor to facilitate the accomplishment of this project, I have brought the subject to the notice of His Majesty, informing him of the progress of the same officer, who

does not seem to fall short of his promises, and that it is desirable to encourage the accomplishment of his commission by all possible means.

The King has decided to instruct Don Josef Solano to do on his part, in accordance with your Honor, what may be found proper to carry out the settlement of La Esmeralda and the breeding of cattle that your Honor proposes as necessary for the subsistence of those inhabitants.

His Majesty finds praiseworthy the zeal and measures of your Honor on this subject, and expects that you will continue with the same activity and will encourage the above-mentioned Don Apolinar and the Lieutenant Don Francisco Fernandez Bobadilla and the Prefect of the Missions to proceed, in accord and in good spirits, to the realization of that important measure.

In order to render his assistance, especially to the foundation and establishment of the cattle farm, His Majesty has decided to furnish from the Treasury of Cumana six thousand dollars for once, in consideration of what your Honor proposes as necessary. On this same date the corresponding order has been addressed to the Governor and Royal officers of that city, placing said sum to the order of Don Josef Solano, so that he may collect it and send it to that Province.

His Majesty will be informed of the result of the cocoa samples already received, as an experiment, and the stones sent to your Honor by Don Apolinar, so as try the first essay.

May the Lord keep your life for many years.

San Ildefonso, October the fifth, seventeen hundred and sixty-eight.

The Bailiff, FR. DON JULIAN DE ARRIAGA.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

---

It is a copy of the original Royal order, existing at the Archives of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana.

I certify to the fact.

City of Guayana, November 11th, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUL,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].

**Certificate of the Royal Accountant of the Treasury.***Number 8.*

Don Andres de Oleaga, Accountant of the Royal Treasury of this City and Province of Guayana for His Majesty, certify in due form that Don Manuel Centurion Guerrero de Torres, Lieutenant-Colonel of the Royal Army of His Majesty, Governor and Commander General of this Province, has paid for the foundation of the village and cattle estate of Esmeralda, on the upper Orinoco, and has besides commenced twenty Indian settlements on the straight road from said village to this capital, to avoid the long turn of the river, and secure the possession of the land and the reduction of the wild Indians spread throughout that territory, at a cost of six thousand dollars, furnished by His Majesty's orders on the Cumana Treasury, for that purpose, and besides five thousand four hundred and eighty-three dollars, five reals and two and three-quarter maravedis, paid by the Treasury of my charge, out of the forty thousand dollars (rather more than less), that has been received by the Royal Treasury, since the time of my management to the present date. From that amount the cost of the expedition undertaken to reach the Parime has been paid.

And besides what has been mentioned in this certificate I have to add that said Governor and Commander General has founded, without any cost to the Royal Treasury in his time, eighteen settlements, of which six are called Sama, Santa Barbara, Tuamini, San Gabriel, San Francisco Solano, and Santa Gertrudes, and in the territory of the high Orinoco and Rio Negro; those named Barceloneta, Maruanta, and Panapana, within the Mission of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers; Buena Vista, Orocopiche, Guaipa, La Concepcion, San Luis, San Vicente, San Francisco and San Carlos, under the Franciscan Observant Father Missionaries of Orinoco, and the village of Caicara, which was before under the Jesuits.

These important establishments he has secured, out of the taxes and revenues belonging to his Honor as Governor, through his constant diligence and labor to secure the greatest improvement of this extensive Province.

At the verbal request of said Governor I gave the present, in this Royal Treasury of the City of Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

It agrees with the original from where we, the undersigned acting witnesses, in the absence of a Notary Public and by the verbal order of his Honor, the Commander General of this Province of Guayana, drew this copy, well and faithfully written and corrected, in two folios of stamped paper of the fourth class.

In testimony whereof we give and sign the present, in Guayana, on the twelfth of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

MIGUEL MEXIA—[here is a flourish].

MIGUEL DE OLEAGA—[here is a flourish].

---

We, Don Josef Ventura, Pastor of the Parish Church of this city of Guayana, and Don Josef Bassi, Captain of Infantry and Sergeant Major *ad interim* of this Garrison, certify that the two signatures authorizing the foregoing document are the same used by Don Miguel Mexia and Don Miguel de Oleaga, acting witnesses of the Tribunal of this Commander General, both faithful, trustworthy, and well qualified, according to the laws of this Kingdom, and therefore to all the instruments in which they act full faith and credit is given, judicially and extra-judicially.

In testimony whereof we sign the present, in Guayana, on the twelfth day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

JOSEF VENTURA—[here is a flourish].

JOSEF BASSI—[here is a flourish].

---

*Number 9—[Copy].*

The King has kindly appointed your Honor to succeed Don Joachin Moreno in the Command *pro tempore* of the Province of Guayana, as shown by the Royal despatch that will be de-

livered to you by the Governor of Caracas, Don Josef Solano, to whom it is addressed on this occasion. I inform your Honor, for your knowledge of the fact, so that after complying with the requisites mentioned in said despatch you will depart and take possession of the said command, under the understanding that the Viceroy of Santa Fe has been advised of this resolution in order to furnish you with the necessary assistance.

Don Joaquin Moreno has been instructed to deliver the command to you, on your presentation with the corresponding despatches, and he will hand you the orders and instructions given to him, in regard to the establishment of that Province, its fortifications, organization of the troops, and the other affairs concerning the same.

With the knowledge of the same, and under the directions of the Governor of Caracas, your Honor may take due steps for the continuation and accomplishment of the Royal intentions of His Majesty, which have been communicated to you expecting that you will give proof of your zeal and activity.

May the Lord keep your Honor for many years.

Aranjuez, May the 1st, 1766.

The Bailiff, Fr. DON JULIAN DE ARRIAGA.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

It is a copy of the original Royal order, existing in the Archives of the Secretary of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, of which I certify.

City of Guayana, November 11, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].

[*Copy.*]

It is very satisfactory to me to go to that Province and reduce the numberless gentile Indians spread throughout its forest, as I have advised your Honor, and I do so in my own handwriting, praising the indefatigable zeal of your Honor and good conduct in carrying out this enterprise.

May the Lord keep Your Honor's life for many years.

Caracas, December the third, seventeen hundred and seventy.

DON JOSEPH SOLANO.

To the Commander General of the Province of Guayana.

---

It is a copy of the original existing in the Archives of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, to which I refer.

City of Guayana, on the eleventh of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

FRANCISCO AMANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish.]

---

[*Copy.*]

With great pleasure I have received the statement of the population of that Province, with the expression of the increase of the same since the year seventeen hundred and sixty-four, in which the old Guayana was transferred to the present site of la Angostura, up to the seventy; because I fully discover your indefatigable zeal and good conduct, worthy of the recognition of the King, and of his Royal trust for other important charges of the Royal service.

May the Lord keep your Honor's life for many years.

Caracas, the thirty-first of January, of seventeen hundred and seventy-one.

DON JOSEF SOLANO.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

---

It is a copy of the original in the Archives of the Secretary of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, of which I certify.

City of Guayana, on the 11th of November, of 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].



[Copy.]

In Caracas, on the first of February of seventeen hundred and seventy-one—

MY ESTEEMED FRIEND AND SIR: I have received your Honor's two favors of the twenty-seventh of November, and of the thirty-first of December and thirteenth of January, with the official despatches, accompanying the same, the statement of the population of that Province, and that of the review of the troops, fortifications and stores, but I can not reply to any more than what comes at once. I will support not only that new Province, but likewise its active and zealous founder, and everywhere I will be an efficient agent of your Honor, as possessing the best and fundamental principles of humanity and Christian policy. I have supported your Honor with the experience I have, and to-day we have the satisfaction to see the progress effected in the population and reduction of the Indians to my great pleasure, although regretting to observe how much more would have been accomplished if this great and useful work had not met with so many obstacles and the contention of so many powerful rivals, besides the scarcity of means. I am glad of the good effect of my ideas, and still more so of the useful application you have given them for the benefit of the state and welfare of those vassals.

I repeat to your Honor my true and sincere friendship, with my desire to see you soon rewarded and well attended, and that you bear in mind that I am and will be fully yours.

SOLANO.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

---

It is a copy from its original existing in the hands of the Commander General and Governor of this Province, to which I refer.

City of Guayana, on the eleventh day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-three.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,

Secretary—[here is a flourish].

[*Copy.*]

I have examined the statement of the population of that Province, enclosed in your letter of the thirty-first of December of 1769, and I see and understand the improvements of that country up to that date, which I have no doubt your Honor will endeavor to continue in future, as becomes your zeal for the service of the King.

May the Lord keep your Honor's life for many years.

Santa Fe, February the 23d, 1771.

The Bailiff, Fr. DON PEDRO MESIA DE LA CERDA.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

It is a copy from the original in the Archives of the Secretary of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, to which I refer.

City of Guayana, November 11th, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI, Secretary.

[*Copy.*]

By the plan and copies that your Honor encloses in the letter of the third of November last, I have understood more clearly the state of that Province of Guayana and the progress of its Missions, the situation of the Hollanders, French, and Portuguese surrounding it, and the news that had lately been acquired of the entrance of these parties into the Parime lake, far in the interior of our dominions. This boldness it is indispensable to stop, and your Honor will keep on the lookout for this purpose, improving all the necessary means, without excluding force, that you will find available, under the understanding that I can not at present concur with any money, which will be the chief thing that your Honor may want to take his steps. In another letter of this date I have expressed the same thing to your Honor, whom may the Lord keep under his guard for many years.

Santa Fe, March the seventh, seventeen hundred and seventy-one.

The Bailiff, Fr. DON PEDRO MESIA DE LA CERDA.

Señor Don Manuel Centurion.

It is a copy from the original, written by the Most Excellent Viceroy of this Kingdom to the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, to which I refer.

City of Guayana, November 11th, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,  
Secretary—[here is a flourish].

[*Copy.*]

The Most Excellent Viceroy has been informed by the letter of your Honor of the thirtieth of last November and the copy of instructions accompanying the same, for the direction of the expedition under the command of the Lieutenant of Artillery, Don Nicolas Martinez, of the departure of the same with the purpose of taking possession of the El Dorado mountain, and that your Honor did everything possible, notwithstanding the want of supplies for this and other enterprises requiring them, so as not to miss the opportunity presented by the concurrence of the Indian Captain of the Parime lake to accompany and lead said expedition placing His Majesty in possession of said mountain.

Your measures have met with the superior approbation of His Excellency, and he commands me to inform your Honor of the circumstance, adding at the same time that while acknowledging the importance of similar acquisitions it is very painful to him to find himself unable to contribute, on his part, as he would willingly do, with his share for the success of such vast ideas for the love of the King, relying on your notorious zeal. This Kingdom has no funds, and it is in poor condition so as to be unable to meet the ordinary exigencies of the service, and may be weakened in taking up the Royal orders for extraordinary expenses, bringing about the actual pressure in which the Treasury is found at present to the extent of not meeting the payment of the salary of his Excellency, who has not received one single real since July of last year. Governors and Ministers have been instructed to reduce their salaries, besides other economical measures dictated as a remedy for so serious an evil.

Under these circumstances, and well aware of those surrounding your Honor, his Excellency expects you not to feel discouraged and contrive the best means to continue those conquests, until his Excellency may facilitate the means that he contemplates to raise funds for the same purpose. Your Honor aims at the same object with an ardent zeal truly worthy, in justice, of the acknowledgment and kindness of the King. His Excellency will contribute to the same, fully satisfied of the wisdom of the operations of your Honor, whose life may the Lord preserve for many years.

Santa Fe, June 11th, 1773.

PEDRO URETA.

Senor Don Manuel Centurion.

---

It is a copy from the original in the Archives of the Secretary of the Commander General of Orinoco and Guayana, of which I certify, in Guayana, on the 11th of November, 1773.

FRANCISCO DE AMANTEGUI,  
Secretary, [here is a flourish.]

---

The above copies agree with the original documents existing in the General Archives of the Indies in Stand 131—Case 2—Docket 18. Seville, February 20th, 1891.

The Chief of Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].  
[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies. Madrid, March 5th, 1891.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

VOL. II, VEN.—19

## No. XV.

Stand 131.—Case 7.—Docket 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIES.—(SEVILLE.)

---

 1774—1785. <sup>6</sup>


---

**Answers of the Attorney for the Council on the proceedings in regard to the claim of the Minister of Holland, about the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo, and resolutions of the Council.—Year 1774 and 1785.**

---

This document forms a part of the proceedings instituted, on account of the claim of the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Esquivo.

---

*New Spain—Letter O—Folio 7—Decided—Cumana—1st—For the Council—No. 22—Proceedings instituted by the Minister of Holland aspiring to have better rights and domain on the Colony of Esquivo, and fisheries in that part of the Rio Negro, and stating that he is disturbed and prevented unjustly by the vassals of His Majesty.*

The Attorney in his answer herein enclosed of the 6th of the present month of August, requests to submit the whole case to a Relator of the choice of the Council, so as to take notes of every particular and make an abstract of all the antecedents, up to the present day, and report the same for the proper future action.

NOTE.—Answer of the Attorney—the proceedings being very voluminous remain in the Secretary's Office.

Answer of the Attorney, dated on the 17th of October of the present year, in which he requests that, in order to close the proceedings instituted, on account of the despatch of the Ambassador of Holland, alleging the right of fishing on the Orinoco river (His Majesty having decided to be consulted on the subject), he misses several documents and suggests to try to find them in the Secretary's Office of New Spain, or else in that of the way of reserved matter.

NOTE.—Having tried to find in the above Secretary's Office of New Spain, the papers mentioned by the Attorney in his answer, it was found only what corresponds to the visit of the Province of Cumana by the Governor of the same, Don Joseph Diguja, in the year 1761, except the accompanying map, found at the office of the Council, in virtue of its resolution.

Council of the 25th of October, 1769. Let the Attorney be consulted—[here is a flourish]. Done.

---

The Attorney, in regard to the proceedings instituted at the request of the Minister of Holland, assuming to have a right and domain in the Colony of Esquivo and that of fishing in that part of the Orinoco river, and that he is disturbed unjustly by the vassals of His Majesty, recalls that, in order to carry out the directions on this matter by the Royal order of the 10th of September of 1769, asked that by means of the Secretary of the Universal Department of the Indies, as well as by that of the Council, all documents and antecedents that might serve, alluding to the matter, be aggregated and united.

It was so effected, with the transmission of a great many papers, letters, and documents, and the Attorney having undertaken to examine them all, finds that they are a very extensive matter that might consume uselessly a great deal of the time that he needs for the many important affairs of his office. And therefore he was of the opinion that, in order to avoid this inconvenience and to secure the greatest punctuality, the whole proceedings should be submitted to a Relator of the selection of the Council to take circumstantial notes and an

abstract of everything and all the antecedents of the case up to the present day, and that object being accomplished to refer the same back to the Attorney, in order to be enabled to report what may be proper for the Royal information of His Majesty. Madrid, August 6th, 1774—[here is a flourish].

Council of the 1st of October, 1774—First Chamber—As requested by the Attorney—[here is a flourish]—To the Relator Licentiate Canet—[here is a flourish].

### *Report of the Attorney.*

The attorney has examined the proceedings instituted by this superior authority, on account of a certain memorial presented to His Majesty by the Minister of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Spaniards established in Orinoco against the Dutch colony of Esquivo. It was forwarded, through the reserved way, with the Royal order of September 10, 1769, so as to be examined by the Council, as soon as possible, and consult His Majesty in regard to the extension of those boundaries, and the right alleged by the Republic for fishing at the entry of the Orinoco river; to this memorial it was added by way of antecedent, another proceedings instituted and already consulted with His Majesty on the 9th of May of the year of 1768, in consequence of a despatch of the Government of England, in relation to the restitution of the negroes, who from their islands come over to ours in America, and after the accumulation of several representations, justifying testimonies from the Governors of Cumana, Guayana, and others that were addressed through the reserved way, in virtue of a consultation made by the Council on the 27th of October of said year of 1769. In that state, and according to the advice of the attorney, it was decided, on the 6th of August, 1774, that everything should be submitted to a Relator in order to form a circumstantial abstract, as it has been done.

Under this understanding it is observed by the exponent that to-day no resolution is required or any further step taken after the long lapse of over fifteen years, without any further



mention of the subject by the Minister of Holland, leading to the belief that, after having been better informed, the Republic realizes the want of justice for the claim made and has already desisted.

---

It is true that the united papers with the above-mentioned memorial, and particularly the representation of the Governor of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, not only show the want of foundation for the complaint of the vassals of Holland, but likewise that it should be very desirable to increase, on our part, the precautions that he contemplated in those countries, as very important to the State; but as there is already such a long time past, circumstances must have changed, and we can not enter in the examination of the same, without more reason and new reports of the present situation of things in those countries.

*Messieurs Casafonda—Areche—Huerta.*

Taking all things into consideration, it seems that what we must do now is, to await the suggestive development of circumstances, showing the course to be adopted; in that case the Attorney should be consulted to report what he may find proper. The Council may agree and adopt this report.

Madrid, May the 27th, 1785—[here is a flourish]. Council of June the 4th, 1785—Chamber 1st.—As reported by the Attorney—[here is a flourish].

---

This copy agrees with the original document, existing in the General Archives of the Indies, in the Stand 131—Case 7—Docket 17—Seville, the 9th of December, 1890.

The Chief of the Archives.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER—[here is a flourish].

[SEAL.]—General Archives of the Indies.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Don Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indies. Madrid, December the 24th, 1890.

P. FORTOULT HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Affairs of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoult Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain at the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[SEAL.]—Ministry of Foreign Affairs.





# DOCUMENTS

RELATING TO THE QUESTION OF BOUNDARY

BETWEEN

VENEZUELA AND BRITISH GUAYANA.

---

SUBMITTED TO THE BOUNDARY COMMISSION  
BY THE COUNSEL OF THE GOVERN-  
MENT OF VENEZUELA.

---

VOL. III.

---

WASHINGTON, D. C.  
PRESS OF MCGILL & WALLACE  
1896.

VOL. III, VEN.—1



[Translation.]

**No. XVI.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF SIMANCAS.

DEPT. OF STATE.—BUNDLE No. 7412.—FOLIO 67.

---

**Copy of the original letter in cipher (as deciphered) from  
Count de Aranda to the Marquis de Grimaldi, dated in  
Marly, June 14, 1776.**

---

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: I must inform Y. E. that as I know many geographers, I have found one who is very careful and laborious in clearing up the boundaries between the Portuguese possessions and French Guayana in South America, and I have been able to deduce that he is doing it at the direction of an interested party.

He supposes that the two Crowns agreed in the Treaties of Peace that the boundary should be considered the Vincent Pinzon river, by which name it is not found on the maps; but the Portuguese have claimed that this river is the same as the Oyapoco, which empties into the sea at Cape Orange, and appears as a large river.

As there is another small stream bearing the name of Oyapoco on the Island of Juanes, which the Amazon river forms at its mouth, it appears that they here wished this Oyapoco to be the boundary.

I fancy that these ideas are of recent conception, and they might spring from the fact that as this Court has informed itself by reason of the part it is to take in the boundary dispute of the Portuguese with us, and it has seen that in those parts they have spread themselves enormously, it may think of profiting by taking advantage of the occasion and the experience gained that as regards boundaries it always comes out better with Spain than with the others. It may, perhaps, advance at this time the preparatory idea, saying that for the time being, as mediator, it purposes nothing; that hereafter it

expects from the friendship of Spain that it will clear up matters, and afterwards, should we be restored some of what has been taken by the Portuguese, go on taking it unto itself as it has done in Santo Domingo.

It is rumored that a company is being formed to settle and cultivate Guayana, and this news was also given me some twenty days ago by the same geographer who is looking up the boundaries. It may also very well be the case that the mystery of the superior authority for whom he works, is to do the work for the parties interested ; and if I were to express my opinion to Y. E., I should the more regret that the latter should be the cause for removing the boundary question, since the Government not urged would be more easy to persuade, and being urged by the activity of the settlers and their associates would never give ear, for should it do so they would heap injuries upon it.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Your Excellency's most humble servant.

Marly, June 14, 1776.

COUNT DE ARANDA—[a flourish.]

The Most Excellent the Marquis de Grimaldi.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the preceding copy.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the above date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.



[Translation.]

**No. XVII.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF SIMANCAS.

Dept. of State.—Bundle 7412.—Folios 2, 13.

**Copy of the Letter of Count de Aranda, dated in Paris,  
July 20, 1777.**

The portfolio is endorsed as follows:

Count de Aranda sets forth what that Court desires to arrange with that of Portugal with respect to the boundaries of Guayana, and he expatiates upon what is advisable for us in this particular, annexing some maps for a better understanding.

He incidentally refers to the late treaties made with regard to the Island of Santo Domingo, and states several objections therein.

Inside.—No. 1080.—I have taken herefrom the paper delivered by D'Vergennes referring to the injuries done to Spain by the boundary treaty with Portugal of 1750.

Most Excellent Sir—

MY DEAR SIR: On Saturday, June 28, having gone to Versailles for the sole purpose of paying my respects, I found Count D'Vergennes with more than the usual leisure, which unconsciously led us into some discussions.

Speaking of the deep regret the English would experience because of the news of the suspension of hostilities agreed upon with Portugal (since with the fortune and the superiority of the Spanish arms they would not believe that the Catholic King would so easily relax without being sure that Portugal would succumb to reason, and in consequence the latter would not be at liberty to be an ally of England, as before) M.

D'Vergennes said to me: "*I would like to rely upon H. M. and his Court for a negotiation also with Portugal, and that Count de Florida Blanca should take part therein.*" I replied that I could easily believe that my Court would interest itself in whatever might be satisfactory to France, as also that Count de Florida Blanca would treat the matter as his own, and that H. E. should explain himself whenever he should be pleased so to do.

He told me that he would at once explain himself, and immediately stated that as Guayana faced the Portuguese possessions on the Amazon river, and in the treaty of Utrecht of the year 1713 it had been arranged with Portugal what the boundary should be, nevertheless several differences had arisen, the Court of Lisbon claiming that the *Oyapoco* river was the same as the *Vincent Pinzon*, while the French understood that the *Vincent Pinzon* river differed from the *Oyapoco*, and emptied at Cape Norte. That as our Paraguay boundaries were being adjusted it would be well for Spain to settle matters also between France and Portugal.

Grasping this question with the lights I communicated to Y. E. in my dispatch of the 22d ultimo, No. 1056, and those I had previously indicated, I wished to fully discover the intentions of this Ministry, and I said to M. D'Vergennes that for a better personal understanding of the locality he should let me see the chart or plans upon which he relied, since at a glance I could easily comprehend.

He took out the special map of Guayana made by Bellin in 1763, and a memorial he had drawn up, in which the articles of the treaty of Utrecht are discussed under the supposition that agreeing with the Portuguese on the *Vincent Pinzon* river, the latter is not the *Oyapoco* which empties at Cape Orange, but another very different one which flows into the sea at Cape Norte; and he added that in anticipation he had lately ordered that a guard be placed and some establishment, though small, be located on the left bank of the river known as the *Vincent Pinzon* on that Bellin map.

I asked him if that was his contention, and the boundary which he deemed as belonging to him, and if he limited himself to stopping there without thinking of advancing farther

toward the Amazon river. He answered that they did not contend for more, nor could they, because in the very treaty of Utrecht it had been specified that from the *Vincent Pinzon* river towards the Amazon would belong to Portugal.

With these positive antecedents, I good humoredly asked him why he did not think of addressing himself to my Court for the purpose of treating therewith as a legitimate party and not as a mediating party; since those lands belonged to it and it was very proper that in the pending settlement they should be cleared up. He wondered at my statement, and I satisfied him by proposing that H. E. should take out his own map on which he had drawn the divisional meridians, and he would see from it how clearly he touched Spain and not Portugal.

He was confused, and appealed to the fact that the one France had treated with was Portugal, which country it had thought to be the legitimate owner of those lands. I replied that his idea of negotiating with Count de Florida Blanca was a good one under any form the question might assume; and that he might believe that in any event he would find in him the desire to agree to mediation, were it possible, or to lend himself, on his own part, to any amicable arrangement in case Portugal in good faith should desist from the usurpation she had essayed.

It appeared to me that holding M. D'Vergennes down to this idea would be much more advisable for our own case than for that of the other party, should it arise, and that it would be advisable to bring it at once to a settlement of boundaries with France, if the course of the Marañon or Amazon rivers should be declared ours in the pending settlement with Portugal.

Leaving Count D'Vergennes, I went immediately to my house in Versailles, where I dotted down the matters touched upon, so as to preserve them with accuracy.

Afterwards in Paris I examined the treaty of Utrecht, copying therefrom the pertinent articles which Y. E. will see annexed, and regarding which I shall make to Y. E. the following observations:

In Article VIII France relinquishes forever any claim of

ownership over the lands known as Cape Norte, situated between the *Amazon* and the *Tapoc*, or the *Vincent Pinzon* rivers; by which it therein acknowledges that the *Vincent Pinzon* is the same as the *Tapoc*. Further on it again names the said river as the boundary, in Article XII, and repeats it under the single name of *Vincent Pinzon*, prohibiting its vassals from crossing it to trade or purchase slaves in the lands of Cape Norte.

It is clearly deduced from this that the lands known as the Cape Norte lands must be on the other side of the river, which forms the barrier, and that this river must flow into the sea, leaving the said lands well to its right, as also *Cape Norte*. So that the river newly baptized as the *Vincent Pinzon* discharges its waters on a line with Cape Norte, from which it appears that it was not the one it was endeavored to specify; and more than this, it was acknowledged to be the same as the *Oyapoco* in the map itself. It is shown as a large river, and I do not mistake, discharging its waters next to Cape Orange, hence the artifice with which the said map of Bellin, of the year 1763, was made is shown. It was made expressly to arrogate to themselves what they again wished to claim with time, which is nothing less than as much more as there is from the *Oyapoco* river to the frontier of Dutch Guayana and the Surinam colonies, which is equivalent to doubling the coast front.

It occurred to me to compare the maritime chart of the same author, Bellin, made in 1764, and I find two very curious things therein; one is that he omits giving any name to the *Oyapoco* river, and also to that which should be the *Vincent Pinzon*, according to his map of 1763, in which he names both. The other is that he places the divisional line fifteen leagues further away and distant from Cape Norte, placing it at the *Carche-berry* river, which river, under the same name, and in the same position, he gives in both maps.

There is, moreover, another stronger proof in the map of the same author, made in 1762 for the Maritime Atlas, which consists of five volumes, in small folios; and in the second, of America, he gives a special map of French Guayana, in which he places the *Oyapoco* river, with very little land, on the right

thereof; so that he leaves no doubt that the Oyapoco is the boundary on that side; that the said map agrees with the treaty of Utrecht, and that there is no such river as the *Vincent Pinzon* which can differ from the Oyapoco, which the two sovereigns recognize to be one and the same under the two names.

For the full information of the King I transmit to Y. E., in duplicate, the maps of '63 and '64, assuring you that that of 1763 is identical with that which M. D'Vergennes showed me, and from the same plate, and that I noticed that he had no other in the bundle in this record.

Of the smaller map from the Maritime Atlas of '62 I have been unable to secure copies. Only those necessary for making up the volumes, and none for separate sale, having been printed, there are none procurable. But I have had my draughtsman copy from the complete work which I have the two copies I send; and it is very probable that the same work is to be found in our Department of the Navy, and in the possession of some knowledge seekers who own libraries.

The authority which Mr. D'Vergennes bases on the map of '63 has a savage enemy in that of '64, not so much because of the omission of the name of the said rivers, as because of the *Carcheberry* dividing line. Had they given this river the name of *Vincent Pinzon*, it would accord better with the treaty of Utrecht, since as far as *Cape Norte* there is a sufficient extent of country which might be called *Cape Norte lands*. If to this we add that in the map of '62 it is not extended save in so far as it shows, and therein it runs parallel with the treaty of Utrecht, we find that that of '63 is caught both going and coming.

I have talked with the geographer Buache who is getting up the new map, and without entering into any observations with him regarding the Bellin map, but only generally as to the *Vincent Pinzon* river being the same as the *Oyapoco* and its even being so recognized in the treaty of Utrecht, as though I were supporting the Portuguese, in order to discuss with him, I asked him what he relied upon; what reports or ancient maps guided him: and he replied that he had a small Latin

book relating to Guayana, in which, speaking of *Vincent Pinzon*, one of its discoverers, it says that when he reached a river, to which he gave his name, he was astonished that from its mouth he could discern the North Pole which for some time he had not seen, owing to the course which he had followed on the other side of the line. That if it had been the *Oyapoco*, which is more than four degrees above it to the north, he would have no cause for wondering; and that therefore to reconcile his surprise it was necessary to seek a river which, in that part called Guayana, should be nearer to the line, for then his astonishment would be admissible.

I called to his attention that this astonishment, even were the *Oyapoco* situated further than four degrees, was natural in those times in which navigators knew less of astronomy, the rules of navigation, and instruments for taking the elevations of the poles; that such a statement was too subtle on which to found, alone, such a decision; and several other answers which occurred to me. To all of which he replied that I was right; but that in the necessity of making a map such as it was desired to produce, *il falloit s'acrocher de la moindre chose*.

He added that in that country the name *Oyapoco* given to any small stream was generic, and that in this way the river thought to be the *Vincent Pinzon* would also be called *Oyapoco*, whereby it would have the same two names of the treaty of Utrecht.

The Portuguese will have material property with respect to these disputes, and should they relinquish pretensions as to the Amazon river, they might grant us those (*sic*) of amity and good faith.

I have consulted other French and English maps, and these generally place the dividing line of the French Guayana at Cape Norte; but as Bellin is the most authoritative, and as such it appears he has been preferred, we have in him all that is necessary for decision in the premises, since none of the others have treated that part specially, but generally, copying each other.

I take it for granted that the subject is that of boundaries on that side, as well as on the other side of the Paraguay, both

because the excess is equally visible, and because it is natural that the King our Master may wish to terminate these troubles at once, especially since the fortune of his arms has placed him in the position to demand it in order to avoid the necessity of again sending them forth at any time, and to avoid having reasons for new invasions.

The mouths of the Amazon river in the possession of Spain are of great import, and even indispensable, for the advantages which America can of itself produce are not to be judged by the few advantages gained up to this time, but by those which the improvement of time and the greater knowledge of its different districts may afford.

From the Province of Quito and the back of Peru the waters flow copiously to the Amazon river. The two Marañones, the old and the new, start from the said Provinces, and with other rivers which join them from several sides—a simple inspection demonstrates the evil consequences of Spain not remaining absolute owner of the confluent of all of them, and its mouth, incorporated in that of the Amazon.

To content France on the coast is very easy, since by giving her what she asks, even without reason, would gain the end, and she does not purpose reaching the course of the Amazon. The most difficult point would be to settle the boundaries inland, since the courses of the rivers which empty on the coast of the legitimate or pretended Guayana are almost all straight, and none crosswise which could be designated partly as one of the principal points of barrier.

Owing to this fact there would be no other way than to arrange the boundary by leagues, counting from the coast on both sides (let us suppose twenty, thirty, or forty, of depth), inland, running afterwards from one side to the other with a line, should the lands not afford some natural demarcation of mountains or valleys; for whatever extent that might be given it will be less prejudicial than uncertainty, the possessions of both Crowns being clearly distinguished and recognized, in order to avoid disputes.

I must bring this precaution to the notice of the King, as I see that the French are seriously thinking of founding a

flourishing colony in Guayana, and they believe that they have all the elements they could desire. I hear speeches, and the possibilities on which they are based, with the views of profits they promise themselves, and, examining the possibilities, I find their ideas attainable, and, above all, I observe that they are very much set on undertaking them.

They count on the great amount of existing and ready money now in this Kingdom and in private hands; on its difficult circulation in Europe for investment in lands, since they do not succeed in giving movement to locked-up capital, nor does the latter have a sufficient outlet in commerce, since the larger merchants do not seek capital with excessive interest, and the smaller merchants do not secure it, owing to the fear of their failure; so that the abundance of money and the natural inclination to invest it in something that will increase it, set the whole nation scheming how to invest its funds. Owing to the want of objects in which to invest, many take the course of placing their money in life estates; with the large profits accruing therefrom they live joyously and spend their fortune in the remainder of their days, the children of many remaining in the street, because with the life of their parents the fund for their maintenance expired.

The population is so excessive that it spreads all over Europe, and they find that it would be better for the stability of the Crown to attract people who would expatriate themselves to some locality that would form a dependency thereof. The national character is adapted to establishments, for at the very first indication of possible gain it throws itself into forming them, without very much consideration of the consequences.

They have imagined here that Cayenne may be an important colony, a place for the overflow of enterprising people with idle capital, and an establishment susceptible of many productions which will contribute to their own commerce, as they are now doing with that of their islands. As, owing to the national wealth and the energy of their character, the Government does not need to make any outlay of its own, but leaves each one to his own devices and protects him wherever he may establish himself, this sovereign and his ministry are inclined



to favor every similar enterprise in countries which it owns. Afterwards the human multiplication will go on increasing of itself; the Government will assist its advances, and should the line of advance not be restricted by the neighboring nations it would progress without any reasonable means of restraining it, as there does not exist any formal and indisputable boundary line acknowledged through the solemn authenticity of a treaty. Let Spain reflect, without resorting to history, what has lately transpired with the boundaries of Santo Domingo in America and those of the Alduides in Europe.

I do not pretend that my opinion will prevail—I express it solely as suggestive in a matter that merits attention at this time, as the purpose is to clear up those localities; and should they belong to Spain, she has the means now to combine in the operation, for I do not doubt that France will freely lend herself at the moment, and everything may depend on what is given her more or less, which will always be advantageous to Spain, so as to settle the results at once.

Should this happy event occur, I beg Y. E. to study well the treaty of Police concluded in Santo Domingo, for the reason that it takes Y. E. unprepared, not having had aught to do but to sign a matter agreed to long before your entry into the Ministry where you now are.

I leave aside the matter of the boundaries, regarding which the King, being master, was not disposed to claim the much larger share which would have been given him; as also the unheard-of circumstance of entrusting to his Ambassador the pursuit of a matter, establishing the extent to which he could yield, and not allowing him other advantages, and discovering to the opposing party the order and rules of his conduct, thereby discrediting him with his own sovereign and depriving him of power in the court of his residence, on the ground of stubbornness.

I was a good vassal in noticing everything that occurred and in reporting everything I could repeat. I did even more, for, in my own handwriting, in January, 1775, and in terms that could have been received without offence, I expressed myself regarding the unprotected condition in which my per-

son and the interests of the King were placed, receiving in reply evasions which implicated H. M. and another Minister as being the cause of such publication. I had to halt before such respectable barriers, and the taking from my hands of the negotiations followed, without my having again known of it through my court until Y. E. communicated to me its consummation. Whether this was more advantageous than that which was on foot, time will demonstrate, and it will also bring out the best servitors of the King.

Returning, then, to the treaty of Police, because of the connection that it may have with French Guayana in case matters are adjusted, I shall say to Y. E. that some of the provisions thereof so far from having settled the good harmony and safety of the Island of Santo Domingo, they will be reasons for its loss, or of a disgraceful vassalage to prevent it, and hence the aggrandizement and stability of the French part are what will laugh at us to their content.

With all its activity and efforts, the French Colony has been, up to the present, without any stable existence, wavering ever in the items of exposing the troops of its coast guard to desertions, and its navy to the same; of losing its fugitive negroes without indemnity, and to want of the daily supply of fresh food, for which reasons those establishments were very expensive; and if the treaty had limited itself to the matter of boundaries, even though the King should accord it greater latitude on some immaterial points, such as the return of offenders, the pursuit of runaway slaves, the transit of troops for their comfort, and possible aid in case of a war, it would not be objectionable; because the uncertainty of the other articles would have been an undying canker which would not have allowed that Colony to flourish, and would have had it always attenuated.

I, who daily hear the parties interested speak, know from them themselves that in the fear of losing their slaves they were always on the coals, and to prevent their flight they treated them better as well in the way of food, which cost them more, as in the way of giving them less work so as not to exasperate them, thereby deriving less benefit therefrom. All

that was left was to sell their plantations at reduced prices and become disgusted, doubting their ability to increase their wealth.

Their dependence in the way of meat and of other articles which the Spanish part produces was also a curb which made them think of providing themselves by sea, and at a greater cost, in order that they might not lack the things necessary to their maintenance.

Now, by the treaty of Police, they count on the retention of the troops, and of the sailors, who will say always that they are enlisted, for then there will be as many negroes as there really are, owing to the moderate expense charged for their return, and under this assurance they can force them to perform everything their human strength may permit, without sparing ill treatment, or showing compassion.

The Official residing respectively, in the Capitals of the two Nations, places the French Nation in the position of enjoying the fullest observance of the points favoring her, for since it has been so established expressly for such points and for a formal treaty, it is neither admissible to break away therefrom nor to fail to grant all the petitions for which the residence was instituted.

I well understand that any measure of good harmony, and above all, in distant countries, may be very advantageous, but I am also of the opinion that it will be so when the measure of reciprocity shall afford equal advantages, for it is necessary that there should be the same interest on both sides, for otherwise it is neither reasonable nor tolerable. Let us see if in this case the Spanish benefits correspond to the French.

The Frenchman treats his negroes badly, and of these an infinite number ran away, taking refuge in the Spanish dominion.

The Spaniard treats his slaves better, not one of which to ten of the French runs away, because they moreover know that among the latter they would be treated worse ; therefore, there is no proportion.

The French troops and enrolled sailors deserted from natural inclination and to seek their liberty. The Spanish do not,

as there were no troops except one battalion of men already settled, who counted on finishing their days in that career, and because the vessels of the King did not frequent that island ; so that for this reason, as well as because of less inclination to flight, there was no proportion in the matter of deserters. Therefore, neither is there discoverable in this particular a reciprocal interest in what was agreed upon.

The protection accorded to the Commissioners for the apprehension of fugitives, as though they were native authorities, is tantamount to having opened our own territory to the foreigner, and giving him community of interest in property. Think of the number of fugitives there would be, considering the character and qualities of the two nations, and the enormous difference, in which there is no mutual profit, will stand out.

The article regarding the exportation of beef, although it appears to be limited to the method most convenient to the *Spanish Government*, is weakened by the expression, "*and which may be less burdensome to the French*," and much more by the privilege granted to their contractors to go over themselves to make the purchases with no other condition except that of passports to take out the beef ; and in order to refuse the passports it is necessary that there shall be an evident scarcity of beef, which shall excuse the breaking of so solemn a Convention, and making it apparent that the domestic necessity is so urgent that its notoriety shall warrant the just refusal to allow the exportation.

If the refusal is not founded at the time on indispensable necessity, or should they not desire to understand it, although clearer than the sun, behold a motive for discussion, which can have no other settlement than to submissively give way before the will of one who makes demands with a treaty in hand.

They already interpret that the clause "*in the manner most convenient to the Spanish Government*," does not refer to the power to deny the provisions, but to the manner of paying for them in cash, or by the introduction of articles in exchange and trade.

Had this article been framed in less precise terms, and stated generally that the Spanish party would endeavor to afford the assistance it could in that way, being less bound than by the clause inserted, I not only say that it would not be strange, but that one of the cares of the Spanish Government should be the increase of cattle, and to facilitate their dispatch in the French part by Spanish owners or resellers, who should reap to their own benefit all the profit of that traffic, others from outside not coming to run all over the Island under the pretext of seeking an article, with the acquired right to so do.

If this subject had been left independent and its increase be watched over, being strict or tolerant with regard to its sale according to the merits of the colonist, the latter would be more moderate, and would never have so powerful a title to formulate a complaint or an unanswerable demand, founded on a refusal which might be used as a pretext to claim that as the treaty had not been observed in all its parts by Spain it had been violated, and the doors would again be opened to extension.

I repeat to Y. E. that with the articles relating to deserters from the land and enrolled sea forces, to fugitive slaves, to purchases of beef opened to Spanish residents, or French contractors, to the permanent official resident in Santo Domingo, as an overseer or Interventor in the Government with the title and standing which the treaty gives him, France, so far as the profit is concerned, becomes a joint owner of the Spanish part. I would be glad if we could have an equal right in the French part.

I return to my subject of French Guayana, on which I have expressed to Y. E. the considerations which occur to me with respect to the treaty of Police in Santo Domingo, in order that should the case arise of being confronted therewith, the prudence and talent of Y. E. shall reflect upon the opinion you shall give to the King upon such a subject; and whether it is advisable that what is agreed upon shall be limited to the matter of boundaries alone, without entering into the other particulars.

This matter not being one to be sent in the ordinary way, I have been forced to delay it until a safe occasion like this. I should have been glad to have had the occasion before, because all its thoughts, although there may be some vague ones, would reach Y. E. beforehand, especially should the Amazon river be determined to be ours, so as to be forewarned of the way of thinking and intentions of France with respect to her Guayana.

Although this Ministry endeavors to dissemble its idea of not intervening in our arrangement with Portugal, I know that it has it in its heart, for, as I treat all with sufficient frankness, nevertheless there escapes from some of the officials one or another expression which indicates it to me, and which finally proves it, hearing it from all, some more, some less dissembling.

Y. E. will permit me to congratulate the prudent resolution of the King and the wise influence of Y. E. in having applied all possible secrecy to the negotiation, for if these people had intervened Y. E. would have found himself much embarrassed in persuading the Portuguese to do what they will of themselves do without other influence. It does honor to the King and to his Ministry to act without depending on others, and it will make an impression on this Court to begin to see that we can act alone. Would to God that they could have understood it before, for it has made flesh and blood of our Union. This Union is advisable, it merits and deserves to be made the object of our greatest consideration; but with measured and reciprocal convenience, and with more caution in the future than that which we have had as a general rule, without noticing the infinite tricks they have played on us.

It is my duty to state with clearness whatever I observe, for the Ministers of H. M. at other Courts can not inform him regarding this one, and however poorly the Minister residing therein may do it, he can nevertheless say more than those who are absent.

Let me discharge my duty, and the King may or may not appreciate my information; at least the Royal generosity will take cognizance that it comes from an open heart and a true love for his Royal service and the advantages of the Monarchy.

Having everything up to this point ready for the extraordinary mail, I went to Versailles on the fifth instant, and Count D'Vergennes asked me if I knew the status of our negotiation with Portugal; I replied that I did not, but if H. E. knew anything of it and would be willing to inform me I should be grateful. He told me that he did not know anything more than that, according to advices from the Ambassador, there had been held a formal session between Y. E. and the Ambassador of Portugal; that the Marquis de Ossun having been able to acquire some light as to whether the settlement had been reached, and having entered into a discussion with Y. E., Y. E. had indicated to him that there were different points; that not all could be decided at once; that upon the principal points there was a good disposition; that some of them would have to be left for the future; and Monsieur D'Vergennes again sounded me as to what my judgment was of the status of the negotiation.

As I merited from the generosity of the King receiving through Y. E. some light as to his Royal intention regarding the manner and secrecy of conducting the negotiation, through the plausible considerations expressed in Y. E.'s number 2 of the 11th of June, with the extraordinary dispatch in which there was also communicated the declaration of the armistice to be transmitted to this Court; I grasped the opportunity to dazzle M. D'Vergennes, and I followed up the idea that the generosity of the King, previously moved by the clamors of the Most Faithful Queens, and made tender by the exclamations that they had made to him so soon as they were at liberty to do so, seeing himself at the same time with the happy result of the expedition against the Island of Santa Catalina, and the probable hope that in its prosecution the subsequent success of his arms would have continued being equally good, he would have loaned himself to the suspension of hostilities so soon as he was persuaded of the different disposition of the Court of Lisbon, and of the justice of his cause, especially if H. M. did not think to carry his pretensions to the strictness to which he could carry the same, but to rather moderate himself therein in order that Portugal should have a lesson in prudence and an irresistible stimulant to come to terms.

That this first cause being natural, I would not be surprised that the conversation begun should be longer than it would have been if the King, my master, had not condescended to an armistice without first establishing the principal points; and in this way many conferences would be held without concluding therein anything advantageous until the Catholic King should remonstrate with energy against the abuse of so much talk, leading to no practical result.

I did not understand what effect my sally had upon him, since he continued the interview, saying that the result of all this would be to take the Colony of Sacramento, as I did not well know the damage she caused to Spain, not only by reason of smuggling, but also because the English might go there as a Portuguese dominion, navigating by the La Plata river, under such a pretext.

I replied that it was true; that the Colony would be the apple of discord if we did not incorporate it, and at the same time he opened his portfolio, took a paper therefrom, and said to me, I wish Y. E. to see a memorial we have here of the grievances of Spain through the intrusions of the Portuguese, and the treaty of 1750, had it subsisted. I asked him if I could see it at my leisure, and he said to me that I could, and might even make a copy thereof, which I herewith transmit to Y. E.

I observed many twistings in Monsieur D'Vergennes in the endeavor to ask if our negotiation with Portugal would embrace many points, and I, desiring to be evasive and to harmonize with what I had already told him, spoke up expressing myself as regretting that the King of Portugal had died, and that Pombal had left his chair, because with them the King would have been firmer, his sword once drawn and his pride excited; that this thing of having women intervening easily arranged many things; and I went on dilating upon this text as though I was ignorant of the state of the negotiation.

I greatly fear that the having given me with so much frankness the said paper was to induce me to speak out thoughtlessly with respect to the foregoing ideas touched upon in different articles or speeches, for if Y. E. will observe the said



memorial he will find therein an infinity of points in which there are materials upon which to spread oneself. Upon all of them I have feigned ignorance upon this occasion, praising the paper to M. D'Vergennes, and saying to him that in it there could be well seen the interest that France took in the stability of Spain.

I have just had two printed copies of the small map of Belin, which I send to Y. E., with those drawn by hand, as at all times the engraved ones will be more trustworthy.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Paris, July 20, 1777. Most Excellent Sir, Y. E.'s humble servant,

COUNT DE ARANDA.

To the Count de Florida Blanca.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the foregoing copy.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the above date.

Caracas, March the 6th, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XVIII.**

Case 131.—Shelf 2.—Bundle 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS —(SEVILLE.)

---

**1788.**


---

**Complete Mixed-chorographic description of the Province of Guayana, wherein is given an account of the rivers affording its means of communication, of its population, arable lands, its dense forests, products, etc. ; and means conducive to its advancement are proposed. Written by Don Miguel Marmion.**

---

Containing an index of other documents accompanying this description.

General index, comprising the three divisions of the respective records and documents accompanying the Mixed chorographic description of the Province of Guayana ; the statement and plan of defence, and the report regarding the reconnoissance of forests which has just been concluded at the mouths and the channels of the Orinoco, and upon the establishment of lumber camps which, on the day of their date are, by the Government, transmitted to the Most Excellent Sir Knight Friar Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indias.

*Documents accompanying the Mixed chorographic description.*

A letter of transmittal.

Chart of the Orinoco river from its mouth to the capital city, Nueva Guayana.

No. 1. General statement of the population and number of souls, divided into classes and castes.

No. 2. Statement of the revenues from the Royal taxes, and the pensions which affect the Royal Treasury.

*Documents accompanying the statement and plan of defence.*

A letter of transmittal.

No. 3. Statement of the forces of the militia, white and mixed, of infantry and cavalry, and statement of the services of the white officers.

No. 4. Plans and profiles of the fortification of the Presidio of old Guayana.

No. 5. Plan of the principal part of the Island of Faxardo.

No. 6. Plan of the capital city of Guayana and its environs, stores of artillery, arms, ammunition, and other war supplies.

*Documents accompanying the report regarding the reconnaissance of forests and establishment of lumber camps.*

A letter of transmittal.

No. 7. General statement of the building lumber inspected and marked.

No. 8. Report of the Governor of Guayana, replies of the Intendent of Caracas, of the Governor of Trinidad, and of the Constructor appointed by the King, proving the good quality and abundance of timber, with his opinion regarding the shipyard on the Orinoco.

No. 9. Chart by an expert showing the course, the local disposition of the coast of the Orinoco, its Boca de Navios, and other matters appearing thereon.

No. 10. A notice of the Ytave resin and the Chiqui-Chiqui or Piasan, both productions of the upper Orinoco, the first of which serves for pitch, and with the second of which cables of tried quality are made.

Guayana, August 7, 1788.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[a flourish].

NOTE.—That the plans above mentioned go separately in a wooden case, marked: "To the Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indias."

Date, *ut supra*.

MARMIÓN—[a flourish.]

*Letter of Transmittal.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: From the annexed Mixed chorographic description of the Province of Guayana, which I address to Y. E., you will see the present deplorable state of the population, agriculture, and trade, and the reflections I set forth as to the means which seem to me most conducive to their investigation and greater encouragement. Should my thoughts be fortunate enough to merit in any degree the approval of Y. E., I pray you with the most profound veneration and respect to be pleased to lay them at the Royal feet of H. M.

Through the Chevalier Governor of the Province of Caracas I send Y. E. the duplicate of the said description, in order that his report may serve to throw light upon the subject of which it treats.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, August 6, 1788. Most Excellent Sir.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[a flourish.]

The Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Valdes.

*Mixed-chorographic description of the Province of Guayana, in which is given a relation of the rivers bathing it and affording its communications, of its population, its adaptable arable lands, its dense forests, products, and trade; and in which some means best adapted and conducive to their investigation and advancement are proposed.*

The whole of the Province of Guayana includes the possessions of the Portuguese, French, and Dutch. It has a thousand leagues, a little more or less, of circumference from the mouths of the Orinoco to San Carlos, where the Casiquiari empties into the Rio Negro, its waters following on down with those of the Amazon, which empties into the Atlantic Ocean, and, taking a turn to the west, following the coast up to the very mouths of the Orinoco, the last of which to the leeward flows into the Triste Gulf, facing Port of Spain, on the Island of Trinidad.

The part of this territory which Spain possesses on the east borders on the Dutch colonies of Esquivo, Demerari, Bervis, and Surinam, and on the French colony of Cayenne. On the south, on the Portuguese colonies of Amazonas and Rio Negro. On the west and north, on the upper and lower Orinoco, which separates it from the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and from the Provinces of Barinas, Caracas, and Cumana; a great part of this vast continent, particularly towards its center, being occupied by several nations of savage Indians, many of them not well known and difficult to subjugate, owing to the great distances separating the populated territories, and to their manner of living, always wandering or ambushed in the density of their forests and woods, and above all owing to their attachment to and great love for independence, which they prefer to all the greater comforts of civil and rational life.

This Province, owing to its situation the most advantageous, and first possession or seat of all the Continent of terra firma in America, and the one which through the great Orinoco river should be considered as the gateway to the interior of the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and which, serving as a protecting wall in case of invasion, must prevent the enemy gaining access to all of them, affords a short voyage to Spain, and the most advantageous commerce, whenever it shall be encouraged, owing to the facility of transporting by water the products of all those Provinces to the Capital, or maritime port thereof, by the navigable rivers which flow into the Orinoco. Lastly, it is a country whose importance and the certainty of whose possession justice demands on all occasions the most careful vigilance, because upon its retention depends in great part that of the said Provinces. To prove this, a description of the local features of the Orinoco and of the avenues it furnishes all the territories through the minor rivers tributary to it will suffice; but before entering upon this, and so as not to confuse the subject, it is advisable to convey an idea of the Esquivo, Masuruni, and Cuyuni rivers, because of their own importance and because of the relation they have to the principal subject.

### Esquivo River

Flows into the sea twenty-eight leagues to windward of the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco ; flows north and south eighteen leagues inland, at which distance the Masuruni and Cuyuni disembogue into it. From this point it inclines to the south-east and reaches the foot of Cerro Dorado and the shores of Lake Parime, where its source is situated, and on the east of these are the sources of the Berbis and Surinam rivers in the territory occupied by the fugitive negroes from the Dutch colonies, whose procreation and union with the savage Indians may one day give trouble to the inhabitants of these Provinces.

### The Masuruni

From its junction with the river Esquivo runs to the south, and at a distance of from ten to twelve leagues it forms the figure of a half star with three branches, which, running in different directions, have their sources between the Esquivo and the Caroni chico.

### The Cuyuni

Claims the greatest attention in this part of the Province, and, from where it empties into the Esquivo river, runs from east to west to near the Caroni river, where the Yuruari empties into it on the northeast, and the Supamo on the south, which latter river flows from its source in the hills bearing its name, near the fork formed by the Caroni and Paragua rivers. Bathing the missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, it flows and receives the waters of many minor rivers not shown on the map. It has several rapids or shoals which present some impediment to free navigation ; but the Dutch navigate it in canoes, launches, and feluccas, and by means of it they carry on their Indian slave trade and trade of another kind with the products of the country. The Government of Esquivo maintains a detachment at a fort called the Castillo viejo, situated at the mouth of this river and of the Masuruni, and a guard thrown out from twenty to twenty-five leagues in the interior of Cuyuni, between which point they have coffee,

sugar, and other plantations, as was seen about the year fifty-eight, and it is to be presumed that they have subsequently advanced and increased their possessions, according to the Indians who frequently travel through those localities. Which impels us to remark, in passing, that as they are also settled on the seacoast of our part of Moruea (Morocco) with a stronghold, detachments of troops, and a small armed war vessel, by little effort they may occupy the most important and fertile portion of the Province, where are situated the missions of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers, and have a very easy and short communication further inland, and, there being no obstacle to prevent their entrance and exit whenever they may wish to inspect our possessions, observe our movements, and acquire whatever notices they may please, and should they at any time declare themselves against us, or should those establishments fall into the hands of another more ambitious Power, we would find ourselves with the enemy already within our own house, so that it would not be so easy to dislodge him.

### **The Orinoco River.**

Its importance would justify entering into a very minute detail of a multitude of features, all of which claim attention—its direction, distances, mouths, courses, islets, the greater and smaller rivers flowing into it, etc.; but to avoid the confusion that might result from such a prolixity and minuteness of details, a general idea will here be given, touching broadly some of its principal features, and those of the Apure, Meta, and other rivers tributary to it.

As to the origin or source of the Orinoco there has been a variety of very diverse opinions, of too prolix a nature for discussion here. Father Caulin, in his modern work, relying on observations and more accurate reports, and comparing the notices he was able to secure from the natives themselves, and from others, locates it at one and a half degrees north latitude, and three hundred and seventeen, a little more or less, of longitude, in the neighborhood of a lake, not the Parime or Dorado, as had been thought, but another about sixty leagues west thereof.

From its headwaters it flows more than one hundred and thirty leagues east and west, with many turns and bends, inclining to the north up to the point of its union with the Guaviari and the Atavapo which join it, the latter from the south and the former from the west, having previously received the Casiquiari, or, better said, sending it away from itself as a branch with which it unites and communicates with the Rio Negro, and by means of this with the Amazon.

From the point of its union with the Guaviari and the Atavapo, it flows from south to north, with several bends, nearly a hundred leagues, up to in front of Cabruta, in the Province of Caracas, and of Cayeada therein, in which distance there enter it at either bank many smaller rivers, and some principal rivers, such as the Vichada, Meta, and the Apure, which, through several large branches, empties into it above Cabruta, whence it follows its course to the east, receiving ever new tributaries which join to it their mass of waters from the watersheds of the Provinces of Caracas, Cumana, and Guayana, whereby it goes on enlarging itself more and more until it empties into the northern sea, through a multitude of branches or arms, each one of which of itself is, or appears to be, a large river, having flowed in the last part over a distance of one hundred and thirty leagues, a little more or less.

With intelligent pilots this river affords good navigation up to Faxardo Island, and from there up to the Capital it has some bad reaches, particularly when low, of sand banks, hidden rocks, and shoals; and advancing towards Rio Negro several rapids are met, the principal being those of Carichena, Atures, and Maypures, of bad, and more or less dangerous passage, according to the season of the year, which renders it compulsory to tow vessels from the bank, in which manœuvre the Indians show their skill and practical knowledge, throwing themselves in their canoes and small boats and courting the violence of the current and the danger of the rocks, upon which it seems they are going to strike and be broken into a thousand pieces. It rises and falls once every year; the waters beginning in the month of March to rise slowly, and in the month of August, when they reach their greatest height, they



begin to recede with the same slowness until the month of February, when they reach their lowest stage, there being between this stage and that of the highest water, here in New Guayana, a difference of more than thirteen fathoms. When the river is at its highest its waters inundate a considerable extent of land on the plains of Caracas and Barinas, and they are navigated in launches, boats, and canoes over extensive fields of rice, from which vessels could be loaded with this grain, and the receding of the river leaves on its most spacious savannahs and banks (which in the months of February, March, and April are seen covered with) an immense multitude of turtles, which come out from burying their eggs in the sands, and offer to these residents and natives a most abundant harvest of oil of a fairly good taste and of great utility and little cost. To ascend the river the favorable winds are the east winds or breezes, which reign eight months of the year. From June, inclusive, up to the end of September, which is the time of the highest water, many calms and very rapid currents are experienced. In going up the river one navigates with a fair wind, while to go down one has to tack. When the river is falling the tides are noticeable, although but little at the capital. In Panapana the water rises one foot, in Faxardo two, and so on in proportion as it nears the sea. The tide flows in and out with the same rapidity of current, and when the tide is full it remains almost without movement; but at the instant that it begins to ebb the waters which had furnished the increase promptly leave.

Of the rivers which empty into the Orinoco, those which merit the most attention for the abundance of their waters, for the proportions they offer for a profitable, active, and extensive commerce with the Provinces they bathe, and for the communications which they afford to the farthest interior thereof, are the Meta and the Apure.

### **The Meta**

From its mouth up to the first settlements of the Kingdom of Santa Fe, in Macuco, near the plains of the Colony of Santiago de las Atalayas, is rather deserted, or at the most

inhabited by Guajivo Indians, a nomadic nation, incapable of subjugation, cowardly, and very treacherous. This river is navigable in lighters at all times, and although it has several shoals they are of little danger, as they are of a sandy character, offering little resistance or hardness. During the summer there are continual, very fresh breezes, and in the winter calms and much current; but on the eddies of the shores and the overflows of the savannahs one navigates with less impediment. The people of the Kingdom of Santa Fé are accustomed to sometimes come down the river with cargoes of flour, sugar, cotton cloths, tablecloths, hammocks, blankets, and other products of that country, which they sell in this Province and that of Caracas with considerable profit, and turn the proceeds thereof into cash.

### **The Apure**

Has its source in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, near the city of Nueva Pamplona, in the hills, from which it flows down, bathing the plains of Casanare, and becoming enlarged by the several rivers entering it, that of Santo Domingo, of the Province of Barinas, that of La Portuguesa, which crosses it and furnishes communication for the jurisdiction of Guanare, and others smaller, with which it discharges through various courses into the Orinoco at seven and a half degrees of latitude and eighty leagues, a little more or less, from Guayana. Navigation has for several years been carried on over this river as far as Nutrias, in Barinas, and on its banks the residents of Caracas had the principal herds of live stock of that Province. It produces excellent mules, which are continuously being sent to the other Provinces; it has an abundance of woods of superior quality for building and other purposes, from which the inhabitants take down to Guayana large rafts for boards and beams, and they come down on these, navigating with considerable comfort in their huts or cabins, which serve them as a living place and as a store-house for other products which they are accustomed to bring with them; and although they sell at reasonable prices, they make a fair profit, owing to the slight expense of transportation.

From Guayana to the mouth of the Apure there are many other rivers of less importance ; however, some of them abound in forests and arable lands, which are, on the side of Cumana and Caracas, those known as the Cari, Pao, Manapire, and Guarico, and on the side of Guayana, the Arny, Caura, Cuchivero, with many other smaller streams, on both banks, all of which furnish transportation for products with great ease for the inhabitants established on their banks. Among all of these, that of Caura merits preference, owing to its abundance of woods and its superior arable lands where the Indians cultivate products of prime necessity ; and some small plantations of cotton have been begun by the fugitive *Morenos* from Esquivo, of which the Government is sending several families under charge of the Sergeant commanding that escort ; where, applying themselves to the cultivation of this plant they may be of some service, while at the capital and its environs, their number already considerably increased, they will, on the contrary begin to be prejudicial and cause trouble.

### Population.

The present population of this Province resides in eleven settlements, short of Spaniards, divided into four cities and seven towns, both, with the exception of the capital, being such only in name, and seventy-two Indian missions taught by the Franciscan Fathers on the upper and lower Orinoco, from Rio Negro to New Guayana, and by the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers from here down, all making the sum of twenty-four thousand three hundred and ninety-five residents, comprising Spaniards, people of color, and natives of both sexes and of all ages, as is shown by the statement number one hereto annexed.

The missions conducted by the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, comprising thirteen thousand Indians of different nations, situated in the most important, best cared for, and most fertile part of this continent, notwithstanding their antiquity, are still to be classed among the newly subjugated, and with very remote chances of their reaching the state of civilization which is desired, however much the pious Fathers

may exert themselves in bringing to their knowledge (so important to them) a social and Christian life. For not having any individual landed property and contenting themselves with cultivation on a small scale of corn, *casabe*, and some roots for their necessary sustenance, they look upon everything else with repugnance, and as a subjugation from which they flee as well as they can to give themselves up to idleness and to licentiousness, with no little risk to the missionaries themselves who endeavor to restrain them. These missions managed under the economic system which has been followed up to the present, without its being, in all probability, the best adapted system, or one which should not be changed for the greater common benefit and advantage of the Province, are nevertheless the best provided for, and those which are the best conducted.

The Franciscan Fathers, as has just been stated, have under their charge the settlements which are established from the capital to San Carlos of the Rio Negro, they having lately had delivered over to them the settlements which were governed by the expatriated Jesuits, which up to the end of the year eighty-five were without an Apostolic Minister, as also those of the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, where the natives are more laborious, sow their own fields for their alimentation, take in crops of wild cacao, some resins, fruits, and aromatic spices, which they sell to the Spaniards, with some other lines which indicate their ambition for gain, and how they have advanced through trading and communicating with the troops. The lack of fresh meat in these localities is supplied by fishing and abundance of game to be found in the forests. These forests, according to reports, abound in exquisite woods of different qualities which are not to be found in the rest of the Province; but its transportation is rendered very difficult and expensive, owing to the many rapids and shoals, and the great distance to this capital.

The district of Guirior is daily falling into worse decay, and the number of Spaniards and natives inhabiting it is diminishing. The small detachment of troops guarding this locality experiences a great lack of food supplies, excepting the *casabe*

and bananas, and the latter are not at all abundant; they lack cattle, and to secure at any time salt beef they have to send to Barceloneta—so long and grievous a distance that it arrives, if not spoiled, in a very poor condition. The numerous heathens there are in those forests give at times evidences of desiring to return to their ancient arrogance, coming out every now and then to insult the settlers and Spaniards, with whom they have had, during the past year, eighty-five encounters in which they were repulsed, although with some deaths on both sides.

### Arable Lands and Products.

The southern bank of the Orinoco, from Point Barima, twenty leagues more or less up stream, is liable to overflow, up to near the Caruina channel, where the Ymataca ridge of hills takes a direction towards the sea, south-southeast, so that with the channel of the river it forms a spacious triangular peninsula where the Amacuro, Arature, and Aquire rivers flow, fertilizing it. The whole of it is composed of forests and woods of excellent qualities in the way of building lumber and for other uses to which it may be put. It has much arable land, principally on the slopes of the ridge where may be found, free from inundation and retired from the course of the Orinoco, abundant and beautiful valleys, which through several openings lead towards the interior of the country, and there are also to be found some stretches of good pasture for cattle. The rivers named and the branches they shoot out, crossing from one to the other, afford easy communication over the whole extent of this peninsula, and facilities for the transportation of products, whenever there shall be any, to the banks of the Orinoco at very little cost. The distance between these lands to the cattle ranches of the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers is less than has been supposed up to this time, since the expedition to investigate the building lumber having lacked provisions, the Commissioner thereof sent men by land from the Aquire river to the town of Cumana, who arrived in one day on foot and provided themselves with meat and *casabe*.

From Curueina the ridge of hills runs along the coast of

the Orinoco, leaving between the two a short extent of savannahs for pasturing cattle, and mountains which terminate at the Carony river, and the range follows on to the south, deflecting from here towards the west as far as the capital. It appears like another sphere; a great difference in the temperature, which is much warmer, is noticeable, as well as to the sight the bareness of the land, where over long distances there can only be seen some clumps of *morichales*, but good savannahs for cattle ranges.

Owing to the distance of the arable lands, and the expensive transportation of products, the residents of the capital have advanced little, their cultivation consisting chiefly of food products, which barely suffice for the domestic consumption. Of the productions exportable, there may be harvested annually some six hundred *cargas* of tobacco, and a larger supply of this article could be had if the residents were given more extent for planting. The half or more is gathered in the jurisdiction of the village of Upata, and the rest in the environs of this capital and the other towns of the Province. Eight thousand hides, more or less, are collected—the half of which from the neighboring Provinces. Cacao, the production not sufficient for the interior demand, it becomes necessary to bring it from Caracas and Barinas; but should plantations of this fruit be laid out, there undoubtedly would be produced a very good quality and great abundance, owing to the excellent quality of the lands; and the same may be said with regard to indigo, a few small plantings of which have been begun, which have produced good samples and give assurance of large crops, if there were planters with small holdings who should encourage this branch. Cotton, almost without any cultivation, grows in any place, of fine quality, and each tree produces almost as much again as the trees of the Windward Islands, at the same time the crops being less exposed, owing to the evenness of the seasons of the year; but as the local commerce has given but little thought up to the present to direct trade with Spain, with respect to this commodity, and export to other places has not been afforded it, the planters, who had been previously stimulated and encour-

aged in this important cultivation by the Government, have begun to be discouraged.

The supply of live-stock is estimated to be two hundred and twenty thousand head, more or less, one hundred and eighty thousand in the herds of the communities of the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers, and the remaining forty thousand held by the private residents. The broods of mules are small, as also those of horses; but the presence of pastures and the bands of mares which are brought from the neighboring Provinces can bring about within a few years the increase of each species.

Notwithstanding the number of head of cattle above expressed, it is often indispensable for the supply of this capital to resort to the plains of Caracas and Cumana, because to meet it from the herds of the Missions is expensive and difficult, and those owned by private breeders are limited to cows and yearlings, there being very few beef cattle among them.

### Commerce.

#### *Receipts in the Treasury and Pensions of the Provinces, etc.*

The direct trade between this Province and Spain has made little progress. In former times some vessels came from Cadiz, which returned with a fair profit, loaded with tobacco brought down from Barinas, the surplus of the number of *cargas* which that Province then gave to the Royal Guipuzcoana Company, with that which it secured in this Province with hides, and with some cacao from Caracas; but lately, there remaining to them no other line except that of hides, little abundant, not always profitable, and without any other recourse left them, this trade ceased, and since then only two vessels have arrived—about May, of the year '86, a schooner belonging to a resident, Don Joseph Luis Basanta, with from eighteen to twenty thousand *pesos* in spirits and goods, and in March of the year '89 a brigantine, belonging to Don Manuel Ferran, also a resident, with from ten to twelve thousand *pesos* in a cargo of wines and liquors, the country remaining in the same need as before of the necessities of the common supply, and the encouragement of its agriculture.

The meagerness of the interior trade of the Province is in-

ferred from what has just been said of its products; and that which the residents in their small vessels carry on with the foreign Provinces, by virtue of concessions from the Intendency of Caracas, is limited to the transportation of cargoes of a small number of hides and of cattle and mules, which they buy for the purpose in the neighboring Provinces. Moreover, owing to the mortality of animals and other great losses they suffer in transit, on reaching the said Colonies they find themselves forced, many or the majority of times, to sell at low prices, by reason of the competition from other places, particularly from New England, with the same articles and in a much better condition. If they return with negroes it is necessary to sell them on credit, as there is no purchaser for cash, losing in silver thirty-seven and a half per cent. And lately, when necessity has forced them to bring back a third or a fourth part of the proceeds of their cargo in goods, they have made little or nothing; so that, besides being a manifest deception, this class of trade which deceives people, who once engaged in it find themselves in the necessity of continuing in order to preserve their opinion, exposing themselves to ultimate ruin, which some have already experienced, there being very few who have increased their capital to the point of living unpledged and with moderate comfort and decency, whence spring the undue methods which some follow, and smuggling—petty smuggling, and of little moment, in proportion to their short funds, but ever prejudicial to the Royal interests and the national trade which watches therefor as it should, without overlooking all the ordinary and extraordinary means that reason and the local knowledge of the country may dictate.

The revenues from different contributions coming into the Treasury of Guayana is, one year with another, fourteen thousand *pesos*, and the pensions to which it is subject amount to fifty-six thousand six hundred and eighty-nine *pesos*, as is shown by the statement number 2, hereto annexed, a deficit resulting of forty-three thousand *pesos*, and a necessity of resorting to the Treasury of Caracas, which being taxed with its own obligations can not always render assistance and succor with the punctuality which pressing needs demand.



What has been said up to this point shows the helplessness, the wretchedness, and the backwardness of the Province of Guayana after so long a period of years since its conquest and occupation, and of so many riches, privileges, and franchises with which the Court, appreciating the importance of its preservation, has favored it and worked for its encouragement; wherefore, better results ought to be expected from the merciful Royal liberality, than so poor a return as is here noted. This backwardness is attributed in some way to the unrest and frequent hostilities, in times gone by, of such a multitude and diversity of nations of savage Indians which infested the country; but even more than to this, it seems that it should be attributed to having made, an error at the beginning in the selection of the lands for settlements, to which the perplexity of the uncultivated and impenetrable state of a new country contributed not a little, and also the obscurity and uncertainty incident to the circumstances of the first settlements, difficult to overcome, until time shall have gone on disclosing the obstacles which prevented its advancement.

### **Idea of the Settlement Proposed, and Some Means of Realizing the Same.**

In the Royal Instructions of the fifth of June of seventeen hundred and seventy-two it was provided that for the better custody of the Province of Guayana, the interior Provinces, and the Kingdom of Santa Fe, owing to the introductions which the well-known navigation of the Orinoco river affords, the old settlement of Guayana should be moved to Angostura on the same river, where it now is; that the live stock should be taken there and be pastured from there up, and that no new plantings of food products be permitted on the banks of the Orinoco from Angostura down, with the rest therein set forth. By the Royal Instruction of the seventeenth of May of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, upon representations from this Government, it was ordered to demolish the four towns of Opacoa, Tipurua, Piaeva, and Unata, which were situated below the forts; and the reasons which impelled this sovereign

resolution were that they were unprotected and far distant from the said forts, so that the large *Boca de Navios* being the point from where the enemy could direct any invasion it might attempt, it would, before engaging in any action, come upon the said town, which would afford them assistance, particularly in the way of provisions and guides, to get into the interior of the Province and promptly put them on the road to wherever they wished to go, while on the contrary they would secure these with much labor, delay, and risk, were the towns out of the way. Not disagreeing with the soundness of these reasons at the time that they were considered, and limiting the discussion to them, and to what it seems the different conditions of the present demand, I shall express what I deem to be more advisable for the better service of the King and the advancement of this country.

The northern coast of the Orinoco from the capital to Barrancas de Guaruapo, eight leagues below the castles of old Guayana, is settled with establishments of herds of live stock by the residents of the Province of Cumana, having near them the new subjugations of the Aragonese Capuchin Fathers who, on the same land, according to information, intend to make a settlement of natives. The coast of the south, following from Angostura, or Capital, down stream, is also occupied with cattle ranches and several farms and sown lands to the Caroni river, and from here to the fort are situated the Missions of Carony, San Felix, San Miguel, and Santa Anna de Puga, on fertile lands adapted to agriculture and abounding in building woods, and notwithstanding that pursuant to the Royal provision cited, the four towns of Piaeva, Opacoa, Tipurua, and Unata were demolished and removed, the enemy has not been thereby prevented from providing himself lower down than the castles with the provisions and other assistance he might need, but rather can he find them to-day with more ease on the savannahs covered with cattle of the town of Palmar, twenty-five leagues below old Guayana, near the Ymataca river, where the missionaries themselves in time of war made known their fears of being surprised, their exposed and unprotected position causing no little care to the Government.

They would find them going inland by the Aguire river, in the Missions of Cumana, Miamo, Tupuquen and others which lie more to the east, where, as has been already said, the expeditionary party reconnoitering the forests, which has just finished its work, provided itself with meat and *casabe*, and, finally, they would also find them on the coast of the north, jurisdiction of Cumana, eight leagues or more before reaching the forts, and with the comfort of being able to march on level ground wherever they might desire to carry their operations. It being deduced from the foregoing not only that the end of depriving the enemy of the aid of provisions, guides and other assistance has not been secured ; but rather, through the incidents set forth, it has been afforded the same with increase and in greater abundance, and therefore those causes or considerations which have prevented settlements from the Boca de Navios to the forts of old Guayana having vanished, the system in this part ought to be changed, accommodating itself to the different conditions of the day, and soliciting the remedy by directly contrary action, to proceed without loss of time to the occupation and settlement of those lands, that may be considered the most efficacious and only means for preventing the entrance, not only by way of the Orinoco river but by that of Cuyuni, where the Dutch already introduced, as has been stated in the article treating of this river, and alleging possession as they have by their Ambassador in his representation of the second of August of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, a copy of which was transmitted to this Government, it is to be feared, unless some obstacle is opposed, that, daily extending more their boundaries, they may take advantage of the first occasion or pretext to go on advancing their establishments and the ideas of their commerce and clandestine trade which are so prejudicial.

From the Orinoco to the Cuyuni, north to south, is thirty leagues, and from east to west, to the Missions of Guayana and the community herds of cattle, much less, so that between these, the low lands of the coast and the mountain lands form a narrow cañon easy to be filled with a proportionate number of profitable settlements, especially by the assistance of the

Reverend Capuchin Fathers, which it is believed, because of their religious zeal and love for the service of the King, they will gladly give, since thereby there will redound to them the advantage of securing the rear of their Missions, and of being able to more tranquilly exercise their Apostolic Ministry, free from the surprises to which they are now exposed; and since all the land lying beyond the Cuyuni up to the sources of the Parime and the Curarieara, now better explored, is found to be much less in extent than was imagined up to the present, it can be hoped on reasonable grounds that within a short number of years it will be advantageously occupied, introducing settlements and ranches—the breeders extending their establishments, the farmers and residents their plantations, and their subjugations the Reverend Missionary Fathers, who, becoming mutually firmer bound together, would carry on their establishments to the great savannahs and banks of the rivers that flow to the south towards the said sources. On the other hand the purpose would be greatly assisted and aided by the fact that the country is largely level and of a generous and healthy temperature, as is proven by the experience of the new subjugations of the Capuchin Fathers, advanced for a reasonable distance, the proximity of whose missions and community herds, affording the supply of bread and meat, would dispel the greatest obstacle to all new establishments.

It seems it would be advisable, for the reasons suggested, to begin the settlements on those lands nearest the boundaries of the foreign possessions, but the indispensable heavy expenses which would be necessary, the difficulty of carrying live-stock, provisions, and other necessities, for such a distance, and that of finding colonists who would wish to at once establish themselves on new lands, and the present lack of communication suggest that the first establishment be located on the banks of the Orinoco, either on the Carueina channel, or on that of Zacaupana, distant twenty leagues, more or less, from the mouths, high land, well ventilated, and most fertile, where at the present time there are congregated more than three thousand Guarauno Indians who would be very serviceable for the purpose, and where settlers would come with less reluctance, owing to the comfort of having provisions nearer,

prompt help in case of necessity, abundant lumber for the construction of their houses, their farms in sight, and easy transportation and an outlet for their products.

### **Port of Register.**

This first settlement in Carucina, or in Zacaupana, as it must be the supporting point for the others, and the place whence the necessary assistance is to go to them, merits the greatest attention, and that from the beginning all possible care should be taken in encouraging and advancing it. Its favorable situation on one of the principal branches of the Orinoco offers many advantages, and, for the greater benefit of commerce, a safe port of register, easy to defend, at a proportionate distance from the principal mouth, or entrance of the river, and without the inconvenience which is now felt of the vessels having to go up eighty or more leagues to this Capital, over many bad places, which make the navigation very difficult and load merchandise and goods with expenses, owing to the great delay, it having been the experience on some occasions to spend more time from the mouths here than from Spain to the mouths. Add to this, that at low water (at least four months in the year) loaded boats can not leave this port, owing to the little depth at the place called Mumo, which compels the cargo being taken on at Carony, where it is necessary to transport it beforehand, there resulting from this practice, aside from the injuries to legitimate trade, the facilities for the clandestine trade, the zeal and vigilance of the principal officials, however hard they strive, being insufficient to prevent it.

This first settlement, once founded for the purposes expressed, three, four, or more towns would be founded towards the interior of that Province, and ultimately a city of Spaniards on the banks of the Cuyuni, at or near the confluence of this river with the Lupano, which would be most beneficial at the said point to assist the subsequent progress of the settlements, to cover this avenue to the missionaries, and prevent the flight of the Indians, their communication with the Dutch of Esquivo, and the entry of the latter, or their traffic and injurious trade of Poytos.

### Colonists.

Practical experience in some new settlements in these countries has shown that the method of bringing families at every expense from Europe, or compulsorily from the neighboring Provinces, does not always produce the best results; but rather, on the contrary, such colonies have been seen to vanish in a very short time after their establishment and to have caused the Royal Treasury considerable fruitless expenses. Wherefore it would be desirable for the new settlers to come voluntarily, attracted by the conveniences of settlement more advantageous than the one they have left, and by the privileges and prerogatives which should be offered them. The greater part of those coming under such terms happen to be poor people, who have no capital whatever with which to cultivate fields to any extent, being limited solely to such as by their own work they can cultivate to eke out a scanty existence. To stimulate and attract these it would be advisable to furnish them at the expense of the Royal Treasury with enough to maintain themselves during the four or six months after their arrival, a time within which they may build their houses and plant their fields of *casabe*, corn, bananas, and other necessities. With this kind of settlers there can be no promise of rapid progress nor greater advantages at the beginning; but, placed and settled on lands the fertility of which will assure them a successful outcome and a more than fair reward for their labor, they will become addicted to work; they will mutually stimulate and assist each other, as among neighbors; they will arrange the methods for fishing, hunting, and other means for sustaining themselves without cost, in order to economize and save, and emulation and the ambition for gain will insensibly encourage them to (aside from the food products and those of prime necessity) promote little by little the cultivation of others of more value and as a multitude, although made up of small parts, forms a body, so many small quantities will increase the branches, particularly those of cotton and tobacco, if at the proper time it should be deemed advisable to increase the planting of the latter under the general rules

of administration, or any others that it may seem more advisable to prescribe, since this branch alone is capable of providing the means for undertaking other means of moment, with which to enliven in this Province an active direct commerce with Spain.

Men of means, as a rule, are the last to come to new settlements, as they fly from the disturbance which the change of domicile entails, and only through the enticement of special privileges which shall assure them certain greater advantages is it possible to lead them to such a resolve. If, through such privileges as the Royal mercy may be pleased to offer, a competent number of families of this class could be secured, the progress would be very rapid; since in proportion to the funds of each they would extend their possessions, they would make the lands valuable, and there would be an abundant supply of products which would invigorate the national commerce; the poor people would find warmth by contact with the more comfortably circumstanced, and occupations which would bring them money and advance their respective fields and industries, and the rich for their own interest would be moved to establish cattle ranches, and as for their regular increase it is necessary to have the extent of one, two, or more leagues, the lands would be divided among them in proportion, in which case the occupation of the lands up to the Cuyuni would be indubitable with a small number of regular breeders, and the extension thereof over the plains which lie further on towards the frontier.

Even more necessary than breeders or owners of large herds of cattle are the farmers having many slaves for agriculture, in which the true or principal advancement of a country consists, and with which it will be possible to place it in the state of opulence of which it is susceptible in the neighboring Provinces, and particularly in the Province of Caracas. In the proportion that it is easy to find moderately rich breeders would it be difficult to secure from the others who might wish to change to localities not well known, because besides possessing considerable haciendas and sufficient arable lands, they enjoy a trade which gives them a market for their crops, and

even though some should be so inclined they would be deterred by the thought of the difficulty of finding purchasers at fair prices for the possession they leave, or they would be restrained by the contingencies inseparable from a removal of that character, which, among people of some wealth and property, are considerable.

These objections might be overcome in the same manner as in the Island of Trinidad of the Windward, if perhaps greater objections should not result by allowing the entrance of families from the foreign colonies, upon which point, therefore, further explanations are withheld, leaving it to the superior wise judgment of him who can and should deliberate in a matter of such importance; and it is proposed for the present that in order to give a beginning to the occupation of the lands, some families of the Province itself be taken hold of to the extent that its small population may permit, and also of those that may desire voluntarily to go from the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, and Barinas (and some will not fail to present themselves), as in the localities they abandon their loss will not be much felt, and in the latter they may in time be of much benefit. If at the capital it should be left to the judgment of the residents, there is no doubt that many, or the greater part of the former emigrants, would gladly embrace the chance to go and establish themselves from the Presidio down, owing to the experience and knowledge they have of the fertility of those lands, of the abundance of fish, game, and other conveniences, of which they still retain a fresh and a very tender memory. But after admitting those it may be advisable to admit, the rest should be restrained, because at no time should the capital be allowed to retrograde, but, on the contrary, its greater advancement should be secured, since besides the value it to-day has, it is, owing to its situation and to the ease of its communication with the neighboring Provinces, an important post.

The Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers in the year seventy-seven, as the effect of their zeal and love for the service of the King, made an offer of twelve thousand head of cattle, which Y. M. was pleased to accept and to order to be distributed among the poor inhabitants to increase the breed,



which, through several casualties, did not give the results at the time, nor afterwards, and it is referred to on this occasion as a judgment favorable to the matter in hand, and which at no time could have had better application than now, for with this help and some fair encouragement some poor families would be stimulated to establish themselves in the new settlements, to whom so soon as they should have a house built, there would be distributed among them, *pro rata*, in proportion to their number, from twenty-five to thirty or more cows, with their corresponding bulls, to each family, upon the condition that they could not kill, sell, nor dispose of them until the expiration of at least three years, so that by this means, besides finding themselves afterwards with a fair profit, there would be obtained by the increase in a short number of years the extension of the possessions, and a larger occupation of the territory.

This secured in the manner proposed from Carucina inland, and the last Spanish town founded in the locality designated, there would result a barrier of no little safety against the hostile incursions and prejudicial trade of the Dutch ; the country would be rendered traversible by open roads for the mutual communication of the farmers with the breeders, and between the towns, and the explorations that it might be desired and convenient to make of the great savannahs to the south thereof would be rendered practicable, and in this same direction could be reached the localities of the establishment or independent Republic of the fugitive negroes from Esquivo and Surinam, and since the latter endeavor to maintain their liberty, it might be agreeable to them that we offer to preserve the same under certain conditions which might redound to the profit and greater increase of the population ; but with the precautions and distrust which it is ever incumbent to exercise with such castes and kinds of people. And finally there would be obtained the subjugation of so many nations of Indians inhabiting that extensive center, who, seeing themselves shut in on all sides, would be willing to treat, which can not possibly be secured in any other way in a long time and with very great expense.

The notices of the progress of the new settlements would

probably stimulate many families from the Districts of Caracas, Cumana, and Barinas to come and establish themselves on the lands from Presidio down, or on those of the Capital, where they will apply themselves to agriculture or the breeding of cattle, to which the greater part of these people generally take, who, in the same manner as the first settlers, will have distributed among them building lots and lands, by which means the Spanish residents would be increased, and by their touch and example the natives would become civilized, and the latter would be led to live in the towns of the former, and *vice versa*, without the missionaries being able to prevent the same, particularly in those to be founded anew ; as experience has shown, at least in these parts of America, that the Indians, while they are kept separate from the common and general contact, never entirely get away from the ideas of their ancient superstitions, but rather remain, with very little difference, as rude and little rational as when they emerged from their forests, although not without sagacity and considerable astuteness for evil.

### **Trade by the Meta and the Apure.**

The advantages offered to the Orinoco by the Meta and Apure rivers are seen with regret to be frustrated, owing to the failure of affording regular communication to their inhabitants with the capital of Guayana—a communication which, at other times, not very remote, while it was in existence, alone rendered unto the Royal Treasury more than at the present time is rendered by all the branches together, and it gave to the population a very considerable increase, as is evidenced by the village of Caycara, and other villages, which owe their fairly good increment to that short time of privilege, and brought to the capital many of its residents, who came down from Barinas and other points to establish themselves, and when this trade ceased their presence ended, and several even left, having lost hope of the advance they desired, and notwithstanding that by the Royal Rescript creating the district of Barinas, its commerce by Apure is expressly joined to that of this Province, up to the present, notwithstanding that some

time has passed, it has advanced little beyond the state in which it formerly was. This without doubt must be due to the want of funds from the Registers of Guayana, for the returns; for without these, the inhabitants of both Provinces can not secure advantages; for this reason those of the former Province find themselves in the painful case of losing some products that they might take advantage of with profit were the commerce between Spain and Guayana in operation.

The same or greater injuries are borne by the trade of the Meta river, owing to the distance that those inhabitants are from the Presidio of the Kingdom of Santa Fé and of its capital, since, owing to the expensive transportation by land, they do not endeavor to advance their agriculture all that they might when, without dispute, the wealth of that soil could produce large crops of wheat, indigo, cotton, wool, hides, cordovan, sugar, etc., with which to profitably enlarge this trade and the direct commerce with Spain by way of the Orinoco, who, owing to the want of this communication, are without any outlet other than that which they employ in their manufactures of cotton cloths, quilts, and other ordinary fabrics for domestic consumption, of which they bring down daily small quantities, and some flour and sugar, to this Province, taking back their proceeds in cash, as they are not permitted to convert it into anything else, to the serious prejudice of this country through the extraction of its small money supply, and of the people of the Kingdom who find it impossible to provide themselves with tools, and other implements necessary for agriculture, which are very scarce amongst them; and this retards the cultivation of their fields. And they will suffer these deficiencies until there shall be established a reciprocal trade between the Orinoco and the districts of Meta and Casanare, Macuco and Santiago de las Atalayas, and until those inhabitants are permitted to export their products and take back the proceeds thereof in the articles mentioned and in other lines fitted for the use and consumption of the country.

These districts once incorporated with the trade at Guayana, it would not be difficult, even in the present state, to dispatch to Spain two or three vessels a year with the cacao, hides, cot-

ton, and other products which might be collected in those lands, and in the lands of this Province. The communication of Santa Fé by Cartagena might suffer some diminution, by the dismemberment of some Districts which contribute to it with their industry; but conceding the importance of the Province of Guayana, through its situation, and other conditions which recommend it, and bearing in mind its present miserable condition and the necessity to encourage it, it seems that there is no consideration over which there should not preponderate that of placing it in a most respectable condition for defence, which can only be secured by increasing its population and agriculture, extending its trade, stimulating in its inhabitants application and industry, through the privileges that it may be desired to dispense to them, and conceding to the emigrants and new colonists, besides the gratuitous distribution of building lots and arable lands and cattle, exemption from import duties on slaves, tools, and agricultural implements, and those necessary for the use of laborers and *peons* for the term of ten years, and to this end the exportation to foreign colonies of mules, cattle, and the first fruits of their farms for a stated time, and under a moderate single tax which the Royal mercy may be pleased to impose thereon.

Guayana, July tenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[his sign manual].

---

There is annexed a statement of the receipts from various taxes, coming into this Royal Treasury in a year, and of the pensions it has to satisfy.

---

The foregoing are copies agreeing with the originals existing in these General Archives of the Indias. (Case 131. Shelf 2. Bundle 19.) Seville, February 20, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,

[SEAL.]

Chief Librarian.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, February 5, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

VOL. III, VEN.—4

[Translation.]

**No. XIX.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF SIMANCAS.

War Department.—XVIII Century.—Bundle 7,237.

---

**Letter from Don Luis Antonio Gil to the Most Excellent Count del Campo de Alange, dated in Guayana, October 16, 1790.**

---

*Endorsement.*—The Governor and General Commanding the Province of Guayana gives to Y. E. a brief sketch of the decadent state thereof and of the advances in its territory of the Dutch, French, and Portuguese; and of the fugitive negroes of Esquivo, Demerara, Berbis, Surinam, and Cayenne; and the free and independent Republic they have established.

---

**MOST EXCELLENT SIR:** On the 22d of September last I assumed the command in this Province, whose local conditions and circumstances make it one of those most meriting the attention and benign compassion of Y. M.; and that, pitying the miserable state to which it is reduced, your Royal clemency may be pleased to extend to it those favors which may suffice to cause it to flourish, so that the residents, emerging from their poverty, may render unto the Royal Exchequer the treasures which are being offered by the multitude of arable lands (almost deserted), building lumber, and other productions with which nature has enriched this vast continent, which, according to the most accurate maps, has as its boundaries the Orinoco on the north, the Amazon and Negro rivers on the south, the seacoast on the east, and the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fé on the west, with the misfortune that the number of inhabitants barely reaches 25,000 souls, and of these three-fourths are na-

tives still in the category of new subjects. Agriculture is very meagre, and many more of the products are exportable to Europe, and the direct commerce (for this reason) not obtaining any increase, as Y. E. will be well assured in time, upon more solid grounds than I have been able to obtain in the short time that I have been in this colony, whose considerations have claimed my first attention; and now, more than by these, my care has been enlisted on seeing that the Dutch, French, and Portuguese are endeavoring to occupy the greater part of this vast extent of our territory, and that from day to day they are advancing their possessions; the Dutch particularly by way of the Esquibo river, which offers them free passage, by the Cuyuni river, to the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and further into the interior of the Province, as there is no guard or any settlement of Spaniards to impede them; and the Portuguese by the Negro river, the Amazon, and the Parime; that species of free and independent Republic of fugitive negroes, which within a few years may become terrible, being situated at the meeting point of the boundary lines of these possessions and the sources of their respective rivers.

In the sea, Y. E. knows better than I, that at a short distance, and to the northeast of the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco, is situated the Island of Barbadoes, belonging to the English, and running to the northwest, a little more or less, the rest of the Antilles. The excellencies of this mighty river are known, and no one is to-day ignorant of the easy communication that its navigation offers to the Kingdom of Santa Fé and the other Provinces named above, circumstances which bring out the importance of this Province, and counsel the necessity of furnishing the means for its encouragement and defence, for it may be that they will be an incentive to the covetous rivalry of other Powers. Wherefore it has appeared to me to be my duty to present this short sketch for the time being, and to bring it to the notice of Y. E., assured of your love and zeal for the Royal Service, and that being so addicted to the advantages and progress of the State, you will contribute with your powerful influence to the end that this poor Province may ob-

tain the means for its invigoration by the increment of agriculture and trade, the only branches which will furnish its settlement and defence, which present circumstances so greatly demand. And it appearing to me well to bring it to the notice of the most excellent the Ministers of State, Grace and Justice, of War, and of the Treasury, I execute it also for them on this date.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, October 16, 1790.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL—[a flourish].

The Most Excellent Count del Campo de Alange.

---

This document agrees in all its parts with the original.

FRANCISCO DIAZ, Chief.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Chief of the Archives, Francisco Diaz.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FOURTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.



[Translation.]

**No. XX.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

Case 131.—Shelf 2.—Bundle 17.

---

1794.

---

**Letters from His Majesty's Minister in The Hague to Don Antonio Valdes and the Duke de la Alcudia, regarding the refunding to the Dutch Company of the sum of 957 florins and 14 sueldos, which they spent on the crew of the Spanish vessel "Nuestra Señora de la Concepcion" during its stay at Surinam, etc.**

---

Most Excellent Sir :

MY DEAR SIR : Day before yesterday I received a letter from Monsieur de Six, Secretary of the Dutch West Indies Company, in which he enclosed a minute of what happened with Captain José Sariol, his Mate, Manuel Col, and eight sailors of the crew of the Spanish merchant vessel "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," which having set sail from Carthagena on the twelfth of January, seventeen hundred and ninety-three, bound for the said Indias, had been seized on the twenty-third of March, one hundred miles east of Cape San Vicente, by the French corvette "La Blonde" and conducted on the thirteenth of April to Cayenne, which men, after three months of detention, succeeded in escaping in a canoe, in which they reached Surinam on the fourteenth of July. That the Governor General of that Colony, having treated them with the greatest humanity and generosity up to the twenty-fourth of the said month, caused them on this day to go on board the ship "Esnó la Gloria," Captain J. Schaepler, who, on his return from Demerara, on the twenty-third of August, brought the certificate of having carried and set on shore the said Captain, mate,

and sailors at port Moroco, west of the Esequibo river. With this minute he sends me two accounts: The first, of the expenses occasioned by the said Spaniards during their stay in Surinam, which amounts to three hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, and the second, for their transportation, which comes to six hundred florins, both of which amounts make up the sum of nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*; requesting me to lend my good offices to the end that the proprietor company of this Colony be refunded expenses occasioned by so just a cause. His letter is conceived in the most courteous terms, expressing the satisfaction the Company has felt that the Commandant of Surinam should have paid the due attention to the vassals of the King our Master, as the Governors of His Majesty have done on similar occasions with those of the Republic, and desiring that this union and good harmony among the respective Colonies shall be cultivated and increased daily more and more with reciprocal advantages. I have replied to him with the same attention, and offered to lay the whole matter before His Majesty, whom I did not doubt would express his satisfaction at this good feeling, and to report the results. I do not enclose to your Excellency the documents corroborating the said statement in due form, in order not to make the package bulky, and because I think that they should remain in these archives in the original, where your Excellency may have them whenever deemed convenient. I trust that your Excellency will be pleased to communicate to me the resolution of His Majesty on this point and issue the orders for the refunding of these expenses, should His Majesty judge it necessary.

In this connection I place myself at the disposal of your Excellency with the greatest earnestness, and I pray Our Father to preserve the life of your Excellency for many years.

The Haguc, June the tenth of seventeen hundred and ninety-four.—The Most Excellent, the Duke de la Alcudia.—July fourth.—Advise Navy Department, and reply expressing grateful acknowledgements.—Done as per minute on July ninth to Navy Department, and on the twenty-eight to the Treasury.

MADRID, *July ninth, Ninety-four.*

To Don Ygnacio de Corral, The Hague :

Four mails have arrived from England, and in them I have received several letters from your Honor, of the contents of which I have apprised the King.

In view of what your Honor says in one of them, dated the tenth of June, regarding the good offices which the crew of the Spanish merchant vessel owed to the Dutch Governor General during their stay in Surinam, His Majesty has resolved that notice of all this be given to the Ministry of the Navy, which I do on this date, in order that it may order the refunding to the Dutch Company of the nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, which it spent in the aid given to said crew, and that your Honor express to the said Company the satisfaction of His Majesty at so generous an action, and the desire he has to daily increase, by reciprocal advantages, the union and good harmony existing between the respective colonies. Which I make known to your Honor by Royal command, in reply to your said letter, and I pray God, etc.

---

MADRID, *July ninth, Ninety-four.*

To Señor Don Antonio Valdes :

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: The Minister Plenipotentiary of His Majesty at The Hague writes under date of June the tenth that M. de Six, Secretary of the Dutch West Indies Company, sent him an authentic statement in which is recorded the good reception that the captain, mate, and crew of the Spanish merchant vessel "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," bound from Carthagena and seized by the French, having escaped and reached Surinam, received from the Governor General of that Dutch Colony, who caused them to be placed on Spanish territory, and he sends at the same time the bills for this transportation and for the maintenance of the said crew in Surinam, which together amount to nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, the refunding of which the proprietor Company of the said Colony requests.

The King, apprised of all this, has been pleased to resolve that there be expressed to the Company, through his Minister Plenipotentiary, the satisfaction he has felt because of the good offices rendered in Surinam to the said crew, and that the Company be refunded the said amount, and by Royal command I inform Y. E. for your intelligence, and to the end that the said refunding be effected by your instructions.

God preserve your Excellency many years.

Palace, July ninth, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

Señor Don Antonio Valdez.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: I reply to what your Excellency says to me by Royal Command in the official communication of the ninth instant regarding the refunding to the Dutch West Indies Company of the nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, which sum represents the aid rendered by the Governor General of Surinam to the Captain, Mate, and crew of the Spanish merchant vessel named "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," and the transportation of the said individuals to our territory, by saying to your Excellency that the said reimbursement should be arranged by the Ministry of the Treasury, under which, and not under the Ministry of my charge, come merchant vessels.

God preserve your Excellency many years.

Palace, July eleventh, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

ANTONIO VALDEZ.

To the Duke de la Alcudia.

July twelfth.—Send to the Treasury.—Done as per the minute which served for the Ministry of the Navy on the twenty-eighth instant.

Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: Through the esteemed communication of your Excellency of the ninth of July last, I am apprised of the resolution of His Majesty, transmitted to the Department of the Navy under the same date, to the end that it order the refunding to the Dutch Company of the nine hundred and fifty-

seven florins and fourteen *sueldos* it spent in the aid given to the crew of the Spanish merchant vessel, "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," by the Governor General of Surinam during their stay in that city.

In compliance with the Royal command that your Excellency is pleased to communicate to me therein, I shall express to the said Company the satisfaction experienced by His Majesty for so generous an action, and the desires he has to daily increase, through reciprocal advantages, the union and good harmony existing between the respective Colonies.

I place myself at the disposal of your Excellency in whatever way you may be pleased to command me, and I pray our Father to preserve the life of your Excellency for many years.

The Hague, August fifth, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

Most Excellent Sir, I kiss the hand of your Excellency ; your most favored and humble servant.

DON YGNACIO MA. DE CORRAL Y AGUIRRE.

To the Most Excellent Duke de la Alcudia.

Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: Being informed by the bankers of the Court in Amsterdam, under date of the fifteenth instant, that they had received orders to deliver to me nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, to be turned over to the West Indies Company as a refund of an equal sum which the Governor General of the Colony of Surinam had expended for the Captain and crew of the Spanish merchant vessel, "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," who had taken refuge in that port, I have immediately delivered the sum in a letter of exchange to Mr. William Six, Secretary of the said Company, with a letter couched in the terms that His Majesty was pleased to command me. He has replied to me in like terms under date of the nineteenth of this month, adding that he had received the said sum, of which I apprise your Excellency in the discharge of this commission, with which it is brought to a close.

I repeat myself, as ever, at the disposal of your Excellency for whatever you may desire, and I pray our Father to preserve the life of your Excellency many years.

The Hague, September the twenty-third, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

Most Excellent Sir, Your most favored and humble servant kisses the hand of your Excellency.

DON YGNACIO MA. DE CORRAL Y AGUIRRE.

To the Most Excellent the Duke de la Alcudia.

---

The foregoing are copies agreeing with the original documents in these General Archives of the Indias, in Case 131, Shelf 2, Bundle 17. Seville, January 7th, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,

[SEAL.]

Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, January 2, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXI.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

State Papers.—Caracas.

---

**1790.**


---

**Copy of a letter from Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, Commander of the Escort of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guayana, to Don Miguel Marmion, reporting the result of the commission with which he entrusted him, being the reconnaissance of the Coyuni, and proposing the establishing of a Settlement at the mouth of the Curumo River.**

---

**PUERTO DE CURA, *May 28, 1790.***

---

*1790.—[Copy.]*

Having, by order of your Honor, assumed command of this Escort to the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, my residence being in the town nearest the Coyuni River, by Yuruari, in compliance with the orders of your Honor; having examined, with due attention, the localities nearest to the Coyuni and best adapted to restrain and repair the damages caused to these Missions by the intercourse of the Caribs, settled and unsettled, by the said Coyuni river which empties into the Esquibo, and with the Dutch on this river, I am constrained to make known to your Honor that in order to secure the rear and the boundary of these Missions with the Dutch, it would be very expedient to cut off the communication of the said Caribs, by placing a detachment at the mouth of the Curumo river, which is the last and largest emptying into

the Coyuni in these parts, and affording the least navigation ; by which means the said pass would be closed, and the Indians of these towns (besides those who desert), some with mischievous pretexts, others with the pretext of seeking relatives, be prevented from coming down laden with hammocks and other things by the said Coyuni to the Dutch of the Masurini and Esquivo. To do this it is necessary at first that from the town of Tumeremo, four short leagues distant from Curumo, Indians shall go with the necessary tools and fell some trees that form several bad passes on each side of the river, principally in summer, and where two or more canoes should be constructed for the transit to the said mouth of the Curumo, and whereby the several rapids of the Yuruari and Coyuni up to the Curumo, will be avoided, as is shown by the trip made to the mouth of the said Coyuni.

There can also be established at the said mouth of the Curumo a settlement of Guaica Indians, who live in the southern part of the Coyuni, whence they are now being taken out for Cura and Topuquen, not counting such as have left for other settlements, it being very pertinent in this regard that from the town of Cura there should go to the Curumo two or more families of Guaicas to make sure of those newly settled, laying out farms a year in advance to prevent the needs they would experience by having to transport the supplies from Tumeremo for the space of a year or more for the detachment and those who may settle at the said mouth ; and considering that there is no lack of an adequate site for the port for Tumeremo on the Curumo, it would be very advisable that the said port should be settled, since on both sides of the Curumo there are savannahs and arable lands sufficient for the establishment of a town, and since this part merits the greatest attention, provided the detachment is stationed at the mouth of the Curumo.

The stronghold or sentry-box should be established between the mouth of the Curumo and the Guotupique channel, the most available site as well to take the avenues of the two rivers Coyuni and Curumo, as to open up a road to Tumeremo, should it be advisable at any time.



I enclose for your Honor a statement of the implements necessary for the establishment of the said stronghold or sentry-box, besides what I have reported to your Honor, finding it more advisable to have it at Curumo than at any other point of this river mouth.

I should not omit (although not very reliable) the information I have received from those Indians who arrived from the town of Guacipati not many days since, who say that the Dutch, as a result of explorations made of the Cuyuni up to the first settlement of the mouth, have thrown out an advance guard at the place Onore-rama, five or six leagues up from the mouth of the Cuyuni, which I impart to your Honor for whatever purposes it may serve.

I also inform your Honor that during these days of my establishment in Puerto de Cura the Indian Cuayari went down to Esquibo under the pretext of some fugitive Indians from the town of Topuquen, who reached the port where I am now; but, having received advance notice, he landed, hiding the liquor and other things he carried, asserting and saying only on his arrival that he had not found the fugitives; wherefore I again say to your Honor that only from the mouth of the Curumo can these trips to Esquibo be prevented, for although they do not exactly send them to Esquibo, they tolerate them, and consent to their going and coming, since they are not ignorant of the heavy drinking (*bevezones*) of the Indians on reaching the said Esquibo.

God our Father preserve your Honor many years.

Port of Cura, May 28, 1790.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

Señor Don Miguel Marmión.

---

*Statement of what is most necessary for the establishment of a stronghold or sentry-box, twelve yards square, at the mouth of the Curumo, which empties into the Cuyuni :*

*Primarily.*—A corporal and eight men, under the orders and direction of the Commander of this Escort, for the purposes

that may be necessary in view of what may happen at the beginning of the said settlement with the Dutch or Indians in this neighborhood.

Four swivel-guns on their stocks, and ten powder cartridges, with ten sacks of balls for each gun. Twenty-five axes, twenty *machetes*, twelve *chicoras*, and twelve *caporanos* for timber cutting, and clearing, etc.

Two canoes of twelve *varas* or more for transporting supplies, or whatever may be needed during the said establishment.

Twenty Carib Indians of the town of Topuquen, Guasipati, and Carapo. Meat and *casabe*, which the town of Tumeremo should furnish.

Puerto de Cura, May 28, 1790.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

---

A copy from the original.

Guayana, June 4, 1790.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[there is a flourish].

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original document in the General Archives of the Indias, in the collection of State papers. *Audiencia* of Caracas. Seville, December 29, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,

Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, January 13, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXII.**

56—6—21—GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

1743.

---

**Copies of and extracts from several edicts taken from various records of the visit made to the Province of Guayana by its Governor, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, which were transmitted in several parts with a letter from the latter, dated September 30, 1743.**

(This bundle corresponds to document No. 1.)

---

*Copies and extracts from several edicts taken from various records of the visit made to the Province of Guayana by the Governor, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, which were transmitted in several parts in a letter from the latter, dated September 30, 1743.*

---

**Part 1.**

*Page 1.*—In 'the city of Cumana, on the fifteenth day of the month of January, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, the Brigadier of the Royal Armies, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Governor and Captain-General of these Provinces of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, Guayana, their coasts and Presidios on the mainland, for the King, our Master, said: That whereas he was about to leave on the visit to the Colony and attached Province of Guayana in the execution of his duty and the commands of H. M., and it

becoming necessary, owing to his absence, to issue the proper orders, so that there shall be no cessation of the political government, the military, the conduct of the Royal Treasury, and everything else incident to the Royal service, and that justice may follow its regular course for the benefit of parties, and the common advantage of these Provinces, he should order and he ordered that all the dependencies and causes, civil as as well as criminal, depending, &c. (Here follows the substitution of command during his absence, designating the persons to act in his stead.)

On page 4, reverse, it says: Edict relating to the visit to Guayana. "In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the 8th day of the month of February of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., Governor and Captain General of the Provinces of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, Guayana, their coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, said: That whereas, on this date his Hcnor has arrived at this city of Cumana to make the visit thereto, its Royal fortress, and new conversions of Indians, in compliance with his duty, and in execution of the Royal Decrees, one dated in Pardo on January ninth, of seventeen hundred and forty, and the other in Aranjuez, on June ninth, of the same year, of which, and the other provisions that may seem advisable for the attestation of the orders and records of this visit, a bundle and second document be made up, therefore he should command and commanded that a review be held of the infantry company [paid from the allowance] which garrisons the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, and the new conversions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers and Jesuits of the upper Orinoco. That the Captain commanding furnish a report as to the arms, military stores, munitions and articles existing in the arsenals for the reserve supply, and the sergeant of the artillery as to the cannons and swivel-guns with their carriages, mounted or unmounted, giving their caliber, and advices of the ready stores with which they are supplied, excluding the reserve supplies, which reports they shall frame with," &c.

(Here follow the review of the military, their supplies, the examination of officers, the armament of the Presidios of San Francisco de Asis of Guayana, and of the *Padrastro*, reconnaissance of the Limones channel, measurement of the artillery range, &c.)

---

On page 34, reverse, is found the visit to the settlements of the Suay Indians, which reads thus:

“In the settlement of La Purisima Concepción de Suay, on the seventeenth day of the month of February of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, said: That whereas in the prosecution of his visit he has arrived at this settlement, where he must investigate how the Indians are managed and governed, and whether they are aggrieved by some persons in power, military officers or ministers of justice, giving the Indians to understand the Royal recommendations to which they are entitled by the Royal laws, in order that justice may be administered to them; that they may be supported, defended, and receive satisfaction in cash indemnity for the grievances they may have suffered, and justice above all, without any delay, to which end this visit is made; and that his Honor is ready to hear and protect them, and the form and policy under which they are to live, and the advisability thereof for their preservation. Their application to the tilling of the fields, for the increase of provisions in their settlements, so advantageous to their progress, and manufactures, which are commonly of hammocks; and fishing, in which they may engage for their profit; the obligation they have to attend church and learn the Christian doctrine, and be present at the holy sacrifice of mass, and aid in the repair and building of the material church of the settlement, the mission house, and that which it is customary to construct in all Indian settlements under the name of Royal house, for the care of travellers; that each family shall live in a separate house; that they shall have a community farm of the most useful products for the common

needs, and that these products, owing to the little capacity of the Indians, be distributed and sold with intervention of the Missionary of the settlements for the benefit of the Indians, since there are no councilmen in these settlements, as they are new subjugations.

“By reason of all of which his Honor ordered and orders that the drum be beat, and that the Indians—men, women, and children—once met together in the plaza thereof, have this edict read and explained to them through interpreters, to which position he appoints Adjutant Pedro de Los and Juan Antonio Bonarde, who are present, as they are versed in the language of the Indians of this Province, who are to be notified for their acceptance and that they may take the oath, and be instructed to follow his Honor throughout this visit, for the same proceeding is to be had in the other Indian settlements thereof. And as the latter are under the charge of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Catalonia, appointed by H. M. for the conversion of the Indians of this Province, his Honor prays and charges the Very Reverend Father Prefect of the said sect to accompany him, and that he also be pleased to order the Teacher of this settlement, as well as of the others, to exhibit the rolls of the Indians of both sexes of these settlements, pursuant to which they will be reviewed at once, and that they be filed, and that he furnish a report of the number of houses composing it; whether its site and waters are healthy and its lands fertile; what products are cultivated there and the greatest yield that can be produced, and a list of the jewels and ornaments of the churches, for a better knowledge of everything,” &c.

(Here follow the returns and the presentation of the lists of enrolled Indians of the Mission of La Purísima Concepción de Nuestra Señora de Suay and of Santa María de los Angeles de Amacuro, Province of Guayana; the list and rolls of the Indians of the Mission San Antonio de Caroni; the visit to said settlement; the rolls of the Indians of Alta Gracia, of the Mission of the Capuchin Fathers of Orinoco, from the Province of Catalonia. Rolls of the Mission of Cupapuy. Same of the Mission of La Divina Pastora del Yacuri).

On page 67 is found the edict for the settling of the Panacayo Indians, granting them a site, appointing a Captain for them, and reading thus :

“ In the town of La Diviua Pastora de Yacuri, on the twenty-second day of the month of February, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., and Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, and those of Guayana, its coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, said : That whereas before His Honor had appeared Don Juan Guayurumay, chief of the Panacuyo nation, with two other chiefs of the same nation, showing a dollar piece (of those of eight *reales* silver), suspended on a cord, which the said Guayurumay carried as a medal, evincing consideration and esteem for the Royal arms of the King our Master stamped thereon, and expressing in his language (as interpreted by Joseph, the Indian Captain of the town of San Joseph de Cupapay), his wish to settle at the place Cunury, ten leagues, more or less, distant herefrom, subject to the teachings of the Capuchin Missionaries of the Province of Catalonia, who are evangelizing in this Province of Guayana, and as vassals of H. M.; and that for the purpose he has, as a beginning, thirty-three men of arms, married by contract, according to their custom, thirty-eight women, twenty-three boys, and sixteen girls, all friendly and obedient to him, requesting that he be received under the Royal protection and vassalage, and be granted the site of Cunury for settlement. And having conferred upon the subject with the Reverend Father Prefect of the said Capuchins, Friar Augustin de Olot, the latter informed His Honor that, notwithstanding that this nation was very warlike against other Indian nations, for some time past it has been in communication with the settlements and the Fathers of Missions of the center of this land, with whom it has maintained peaceful friendship, and shown loyalty to the Spaniards even when all others became restless and rose up against the pious Missionaries, endeavoring to expel them from this land as a result of the invasion of the English enemy in Guayana and Victoria, which it gained from the Spanish arms ;

and that it would be of great advantage to them in the other conversions of the Guayana Indians, for, should the settlement of the said Panaeuys be effected at the place they desire, to which end he would gladly co-operate with his community, it would serve as a protecting wall against the Carib Indians, who are the most rebellious nation, constantly waging war against the settlers, and which are beyond hope of conversion. In virtue of which his Honor has met and treated him amicably, presenting the said chief and his companions with some gifts expressive of his esteem in order to persuade them, and bring them to the flock of the Church. Wherefore, the more to enthruse them with the said settlement, he resolved and ordered that there issue the appointment of Founding Captain of the said settlement of Cunury to said Don Juan Guayurumay, and that it be delivered to him sealed, signed and countersigned in due form, making known to him the contents thereof and the authority conferred upon him over the other Indians of his nation, in order that he may bring them to Christian settlement and policy; and he hereby so ordered and signed, to which I hereby certify.

“DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

“Before me—

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“Royal and Public Notary.”

NOTE.—On the said day, month, and year there was issued and delivered the appointment of Founding Captain to the said Don Juan Guayurumay, and its contents were made known to him, as ordered, who received it with joyous features, expressing his esteem therefor, to which I certify.

ALCALA, *Notary.*

Here follows the roll of the Indians of this Mission of Santa Barbara de Guayarayma, Province of Guayana, and on page 73, reverse, is found the visit to the town of Payaraima, and on page 78 appears the edict for the recognition of the status of the new founding of the city of Guayana, which is as follows:

“In this said Presidio of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on



the said twenty-fifth day of the month of February, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General said: That whereas, owing to the fact of the English enemy having sacked and burned the former settlement of the city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, which was founded on the banks of the Usupamo river, which empties into the Orinoco, at a distance and place which from the Fort to this Province can not be seen or protected by its artillery, and considering how advisable it is for its protection that the said city shall be situated and settled in view of the Fort and protected by its artillery, under the fire of the guns thereof, ordered that the new settlement should be founded on the site called Baratillo, where it could enjoy the conditions mentioned, his Honor having learned that it had a continuous and wholesome water supply from a source called 'la Arena,' and the land being good, fanned by all the breezes, superior to the other stations in that part, cut off from the mountains, with a happy temperature, conveniences for the raising of cattle, for its inhabitants, and outlets to the fisheries of the Orinoco river.

"Wherefore his Honor ordered: That in order that in the records of this visit there should appear the condition of the said new settlement, the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers, together with the present Notary, shall go and investigate the number of houses that have been built, and make a minute thereof, giving the owners and materials, immediately following this edict, through which his Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

" ESPINOSA.

" Before me—

" DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
" Royal and Public Notary."

Here follows the investigation of the condition of this new town of Guayana, and on page 80, reverse, appears "a statement of the armed men needed by the settlements of Capuchin converts of this Province of Guayana, for their protection from the constant persecutions of the Carib Indians bent on their

destruction and on preventing conversions; which statement, pursuant to the resolution of the said Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, which was made known to me by his scrivener, I, Friar Augustin de Olot, Prefect of the said conversions and Mission, make and sign as follows:

“ Firstly, for the town of Nuestra Señora de la Concepcion de Suay, which is distant two and a half hours from this city, one armed man....	1
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the town and Mission of Santa Barbara de Payarama, one league distant from this city, one armed man.....	1
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the town and Mission of La Virgen de los Angeles de Amaruca, which is five leagues distant from this city, in a position made dangerous by the Caribs, and having a fort and four two-pound cannon, there armed men.....	3
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the town and Mission of San Antonio de Carony, which is eight leagues distant from this city, on the banks of the Carony river, in an advanced position, the frontier of the Caribs, two armed men and an artilleryman to manage the four guns of the fort the Mission has constructed for the defence of the said town.....	3
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the town of San Francisco de Alta-gracia, a day and a half by road from this city, two armed men .....	2
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the town and Mission of San Joseph de Capapuy, which is two days by road from this city, two armed men.....	2
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the town of La Divina Pastora de el Yucuari, two and a half days by road from this city, three armed men .....	3
“ <i>Item.</i> —For the settlement which it has been determined by your Honor, by agreement with me, to found on the banks of the Yuruari river, the Carib frontier, distant four days’ travel from this city, where a fort is to be constructed, with four swivel guns, six armed men..	6
“ Total.....	21

"All of which amount to twenty-one men, who should reside in the said towns with a sure salary to support and clothe them, for without this they can not remain, as the Mission has no funds from which to permanently feed and clothe them. And at times of offensive acts on the part of enemies and news of invasion more reinforcements will be necessary, as occasion may demand, which, at the proper time, will be requested of whoever may command this place and Presidio; and in order that the Governor and Captain General of this Province may determine what he considers best fitted to the service of God and of the King our Master, I place this in his hands.

"Done in the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana on the twenty-fifth day of the month of February of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

"FRIAR AUGUSTIN DE OLOT, Prefect."

Next follow the list and rolls of the residents and their families who are distributed within the limits of this city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana and the Mission towns of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers of this Province, which were made up by Captain Felisardo de Almasan, in obedience to the orders of the Governor and Captain General, and the edict for the organization of a militia company.

---

On page 90, reverse, appears a letter addressed to the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Montero, by the Fathers of the Mission of Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Pararuma, dated November 28, 1742, to discover how to aid the infantry escort which for two years (*sic*), which reads as follows:

"To the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros.

"MY DEAR SIR: These Missions being absolutely in need because the pay for the infantry, which for two years has been our escort, has not come, I am constrained to have the Father Procurator of these Missions, Roque Lubian, go to the said city, to confer with your Honor, firstly: That provision be made looking towards assisting the said infantry until the pay

shall arrive, which I have hopes has been, or will be, collected in Santa Fé; secondly, that, as an eye witness, he may personally state the grievous injuries done us by the Caribs, who endeavor by every means to destroy these Missions and take the lives of the missionaries and soldiers who cultivate them, as I have represented to Y. H. in another letter of the twenty-third of June of this year, to which I refer.

“Your Honor must be on this occasion (since I rely on your mercy) our protector and supporter for the glory of God and the welfare of souls. From Texas down I can look to no one save your Honor, who is the nearest resort to whom to appeal. The aforesaid Father is in possession of all the facts, and is well grounded in the system, and can, by word, better than I, in writing, lay before your Honor the reason for this trip; wherefore I do not dilate so as not to molest your Honor, whose life I desire heaven may prosper many years.

“Missions of Orinoco, in the settlement of Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Pararuma, November twenty-eighth, seventeen hundred and forty-two.

“To the Governor and Captain General. Your servant and Chaplain kisses your Honor’s hands.

“MANUEL ROMAN,

“Vice-Superior of the Missions of Orinoco

“of the Society of Jesus.”

“To that of your Honor, which I have just received, of April twenty-third, I reply that I am very far from endeavoring to have boats from these Missions go below the Fort of Guayana, of which Y. H. knows I would complain bitterly, and I would reprehend any one who should attempt to make such trips without the express permission of your Honor, and his approval. The said Father will orally state to your Honor what I feel on this point.”

---

Fray Salvador Romero, of the regular Order of St. Francis, Procurator-General, Apostolic Missionary, and Commissary of the Missions and Missionary Schools of the Immaculate Con-

ception of Piritu, with the Venerable Advisory Board of this holy Community, together met and assembled in the town of Jesus, María y Joseph de Caigua, on the fourteenth day of the month of January of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, by resolution of the letter of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, in order that between us we may confer as to the efficacious method of settling the Carib Indians on the other bank of the Orinoco river, and thus save the Reverend Jesuit Fathers from the most grievous injuries, dangers, and misfortunes they incessantly suffer through the invasions of the Caribs from the Purney and Caura Rivers, attempting to dislodge them and destroy the lands of the Missions, wherefore they ask that steps be taken to prevent such serious incidents.

All of this being expressed in the letter of your Honor, as well as that you were informed in writing by the Father Superior, and personally by the Father Solicitor, Roque Lubian, of those Missions, and that knowing from these elaims and pitiful representations of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers that the only adequate means of obviating their just fears, although imaginary injuries, is that we occupy Purney and Caura, where the Caribs most abound, first, to do a great good to the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, whom we always desire to serve with all our heart, and secondly, and principally, to widen and carry into effect the fervent desire which we always entertained, as is easy to prove, to remain in those parts, we entered quietly into investigating the method of maintaining ourselves on the Purney and Caura rivers for the subjugation of the Caribs. But as, at the instance of the Rev. Father Joseph Gumilla, ex-Superior of the Missions of the Rev. Jesuit Fathers, for the same purpose, with promises of favor, and together with the Governor, Don Carlos de Sucre, we went, carried away by the desire, without considering risks, to the city of Guayana, and thence to Purney and Caura where we were with the Caribs, and they refused to settle in towns, saying to us *what we have not decided to divulge until further urged*. From here, unutterably disconsolate, we went further up to the Uyape channel, and afterwards inland to

Tamanal and Taramuta, old seats of the Caribs, where, full of misery and plagues, we remained, with the humility befitting Apostolic workers, eight months, in order to see if by dint of suffering we could wean them from great error and the abhorrence they entertained because of the deceits and hostilities practiced against them, and which they do not conceal.

By reason of which, and for many other reasons which justify us—which it is necessary to make known to our King and Master (whom God preserve), as well as to the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, in order that each, in so far as possible and he is empowered, may afford the means for so holy an end—at the present time it is very difficult, or better said, impossible, for us to settle the Purney and Caura, notwithstanding the well-digested considerations advanced by the Governor, the first being certain mentioned dangers of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, who will be safer than we, since we would have to go and live in the very houses of the Caribs, and we lack the escort assigned to and accompanying the Jesuit Fathers, as well as the impossibility, owing to the long time necessary, of the Governor providing another like escort for our protection. And though the second consideration is the Agreement concluded in Guayana, in which were set forth limits and districts, which was approved by the King our Master (whom God preserve), we are not thereby, it appears, bound to impossibilities, and when they may not so seem, and that by Royal approval it is indispensable that we occupy all the localities by His Majesty to us granted, he must wish the same to apply to the other pious workers. Aside from the fact that from the lesser one should go *gradually* to the greater, and the only way being by first settling Purney and Caura, Yguana and Cabrutta (territory granted us by our King and Master), it seems that we should occupy it on the one hand, because of the obligation to occupy whatever is granted us, and on the other, because there is no other way of subjugating the Caribs with the means we at present have or the Governor can furnish us; which, if effected, will give enough work to the band of missionaries we now are, and to the aid that may be furnished by the fervent desires of the Governor and Cap-

tain General, which refers to the third and fourth considerations suggested by his Honor. And as this is all your Honor proposes to us, it is all we have until our King and Master shall provide other means, impossible to the Governor, we, desiring in the meanwhile (since the settling of Purney and Caura can not be effected) to aid in every way, have determined that our Reverend Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, as the oldest Father of this holy community, go to the city of Guayana to meet the Governor and Reverend Father Procurator of the Missions of the Jesuit Fathers, to make known this our opinion and his, requesting (in due form and with the proper formalities benefiting the religious state, as the only and best adapted method for the end we all desire), that our territory designated by our King and Master be vacated, to wit, Yguana and Cabruta, and any other locality belonging to us; obtaining from the Governor whatever instruments he may be empowered to give, and sufficient for us to regain and repossess that which by right belongs to us, and for all we bestow upon him all the authority residing within us, and which by law may be needed until finally effected. And in order that the accidents and chances that may occur shall not serve to frustrate so holy a work, we determine that the said Reverend Father be accompanied by the Rev. Father Friar Alonzo Rubio and the Rev. Father Cristobal Martinez, upon whom, successively, we confer the same authority and powers. And we charge each and all to observe good conduct and religious peace, and for greater certainty we impose upon them holy obedience. And in order that this our determination and will may have sufficient force and weight, and that it may be produced at any time when necessary and not be objected to, we sign it with our hands and name, and seal it with the great seal of our office, and countersign it by the Secretary of the Venerable Advisory Board, in said town, day, month, and year *ut supra*.

FRIAR SALVADOR ROMERO,  
Commissary of Piritu.  
FRIAR MATHIAS GARCIA,  
Adviser.

By order of the Very Reverend and Venerable Advisory Board of these Missions of Piritu.

FRIAR BERNARDINO CAMACHO Y BEDOYA,  
Secretary and Notary of the Advisory Board.

---

His Honor, the Governor and Captain General, having considered the foregoing letter of credence, said that for the necessary purposes in the premises it be attached to the credentials of the Rcv. Father Roque Lubian; and that as regards disputed matters of jurisdictional boundaries, let the said Rev. Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez be informed that His Majesty, having learned of the discord existing between the city of San Sebastian, of the Province of Venezuela, and that of Nueva Barcelona, was pleased to issue Royal Rescripts, pursuant to which the Government of Barcelona summoned the said cities; and, H. M. commanding that each of the interested parties exercise their rights where and how it might see fit, His Honor ordered that there be no violation thereof. And the Reverend community of Franciscan Missionaries of the Province of Nueva Barcelona, being informed of the same latest Royal Rescripts, must observe, obey and execute what is thus commanded by H. M.

His Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

The above edict was issued by Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, who signed it in this city of Guayana on the second day of the month of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
*Royal and Public Notary.*

Immediately thereafter I, the Notary, personally notified and made known the foregoing edict to Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, to which I certify.

ALCALA, *Notary.*



NOTE.—On the tenth day of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, I furnished an exemplified copy of the Letter and annexed edict preceding this Note to the Rev. Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, covering four leaves.

ALCALA, *Notary.*

---

In this Presidio of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the second day of the month of May, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Guayana, Nueva Andalucia, and their Royal lands, for the King our Master, said: That whereas, his Honor, being engaged in the visit to this Province and the Missions within its districts, at the same time seeing to the execution of Royal Rescripts of H. M., issued in Pardo on the ninth of February of seventeen hundred and forty, relating to the construction of the Fort which it has been decided to erect on the Orinoco river; and in Aranjuez on the ninth of June, seventeen hundred and forty, relating to the investigation of the existence of gold and silver, and report to H. M. as in said Royal Rescript determined, has received an extraordinary mail, sent from Cumana on the fourteenth of February last by the Commandant at Arms, the Officials of the Royal Treasury, and the Chief Alcalde, in whom, owing to the absence of his Honor, the superior jurisdiction is vested, giving him minute particulars of English war armaments, and of some that are gathering in their windward colonies, and of other corsairs that annoy the coasts from Cape Guadera to the mouths of the Orinoco; at the same time that along this river is spread the news that three or four English sloops had been at its mouths, of which, through pilots which his Honor sent on his arrival at this Presidio to reconnoitre up to the said mouths, information has been secured to the effect that some English vessels or corsairs had run up and down the coast; that one having been lost and wrecked, an Englishman, one of those saved from the said wrecked vessel, was taken prisoner and brought to this garrison, and, for want of an interpreter, it has not been possible to obtain more formal particulars than the

foregoing; and other information which the pilots furnish to the effect that the Guarauna Nation—Indians of the mouths of the river—have killed another Englishman and prevented the landing of some others; and that our pilots, being defeated by the Guaraunas in action, they were well received, as they were Spaniards, and they imparted the information herein given.

And as the hostilities growing out of the war in the Colony under him are notorious, and demand the greatest care and attention of his Honor, urging and impelling him for the present to carefully investigate the news contained in the said notices from Cumana, in order to come to the defence of the advance posts and Royal forts, and therefore, being unable now to continue the visit to this Province as far as the Missions of the Jesuit Fathers of the upper Orinoco, owing to the great distance and the long time necessary for the trip, visit, and return to the city of Cumana, seat of this Government; and not having any person in this Presidio to appoint for the purpose, with the necessary commission and authority; therefore he should suspend, and suspended, for the present the visit to the said up-river Missions, to continue the same personally whenever and in whatever manner it may be possible.

And in order to render a formal report to H. M. of what has thus far been done, he ordered that the Angostura (narrows) of the said Orinoco river be visited, which trip is supposed to require six or eight days, accompanied by the pilots and the Reverend Fathers who may wish to join his Honor, if they have not reconnoitered the same, or are best acquainted therewith, or its territory. To which end, this will be made known to them through a polite message, and his Honor designates the fourth instant to set sail.

And he orders that upon his return to this Presidio there shall be held a general meeting (without the participation of his Honor) of the Commandant of this Province; the Reverend Prefect of Capuchins, and the Assistant Father Friar Augustin de Olot, and Friar Benito de Moya; the Rev. Father Roque Lubian, Procurator-General of the Jesuit Missions, elected with letter of credence, which he presented to his Honor, to

represent his Superior and Reverend community in this visit, meetings, reports, and whatever else may be necessary ; Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, of the Franciscan order, Adviser, and the oldest priest in the Missions of Piritu, with like credentials, both of which shall be entered in these records ; the Captain of infantry of the Castle of this city, and the Lieutenant of Royal officers.

And as it is advisable that their reports and whatever else may occur to them at said meeting shall be framed after mature reflection, in order that they may be examined and studied exhaustively, and meet the requirements of honor and conscience, as each one finds them best adapted to the service of God and the King, the points to be treated and deliberated in order to arrive at the most advisable solution, and report to H. M. such as need his Royal decision, are now declared to be (and they will be informed thereof), as follows, to wit :

The first : Where do they judge it most convenient to erect the fort H. M. has decided to construct on the Orinoco river ? Whether on Fajardo Island, or at Angostura, or the Limones Channel ? What force do they consider necessary ; how many infantrymen ; and what reasons are advanced for considering the place named in the report of each as the best fitted for the fortification ?

The second is : The present condition of each community, and what settlements they consider should be carried forward or founded to secure passage to the New Kingdom of Granada, trade, and the cruelty of the Carib Indians, and to extend evangelical preaching, in the understanding that, in obedience to Royal Laws, and later Royal Decrees of H. M., there should not and can not be any attempts at conquests, which are rendered more impossible by the demands of the present war with the Anglican Nation ; nor incur extraordinary expenses of moment without previous Royal commands. But for the purpose of settling, attracting and converting, through preaching, all possible nations, and of advancing both Missions in order that their settlements and conversions may become united, His Honor will furnish the aid and escorts the

present state of war (which is to be taken into consideration) will permit, and will inform H. M. of what may be necessary for the other purposes which can not at the present time be effected, and which may be deemed advisable.

The third is: What progress is each of the Rev. communities making at present, and what do the Rev. Franciscan Fathers propose doing with the thirty-nine Evangelical workers who recently arrived to propagate our Holy Catholic Faith in their respective districts? They should all endeavor to work incessantly in every way, since they are managed and maintained at a heavy expenditure of the Royal Treasury and the Catholic zeal of the King our Master, without urging, in view of the grave demands of the war, these expeditions such as that which has just been effected in the sending of the thirty-nine Missionaries; no doubt being entertained of the abundant good results brought about by both, which his Honor clearly recognizes, and for which he extends his thanks.

And in order that they the more effectually prepare their reports with respect to the force to be provided, there are left in the possession of the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers the Royal Decree and the Instruction of H. M. and the instructive memorials of the Rev. Father Joseph Gumilla and the Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago, which will be read, examined and digested by those named for this meeting not for the purpose of refuting them, but only to convince themselves and make up their reports with a knowledge of the antecedents and of what has been decided up to date by H. M., since on his Honor's return to this Presidio he can only wait to hear the reports of the meeting, to determine what is expedient for the present, and to report to H. M.

His Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

ESPINOSA.

Before me—

ANTONIO DE ALCALA.

Royal and Public Notary.

---

Then follow the writs served on several parties, summoning them to a meeting in order that the Governor, Don Gregorio

Espinosa, might present his diary of his visit to Angostura on the Orinoco, which is as follows :

*Page 103, reverse.*—"Diary of the trip to Angostura being made by Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, up the Orinoco, accompanied by the Reverend Fathers Friar Benito de Moya, Assistant Judge of the Catalonian Capuchins, doing evangelical work in this Province of Guayana; Friar Alonso Rubio and Friar Cristobal Martinez, Apostolic missionaries of the conversion of Piritu, Franciscan clergymen; the Commandant of Guayana, Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva; the Adjutant, Alonso Brunal; and as guides, the Adjutant of Guayana, Pedro de Cos, Don Felix de Amazon, Lieutenant Juan Antonio Bonaldez, Joseph Hernandez, and four experienced soldiers from the castles of Cumana; ten *Pardos* (half-breeds) armed, residents of the Province, and the majority Orinoco pilots; two well-armed launches, commanded by Luis Anton and Gonzalo Estevez, and the Orinoco and coast of Paria pilots, Don Marcos and Don Carlos Marcano, with eighteen Guayquerice Indians, archers, and oarsmen, and three *curianas* (canoes) with Guayana, Saliba, and Guarauno Indians, there being eighteen Indians therein, and they serve as tenders; and two linguists, or interpreters.

"They set sail from Puerto Real del Castillo de San Francisco de Asis, of Guayana, on the fourth day of March of this year, and navigated the Orinoco up-stream with a fresh wind, as far as the mouth of the Carony river, where we arrived at five p. m., reconnoitering in this portion of Guayana only Fajardo Island, which is composed of two islands, as it is divided by a branch, and Joseph Hernandez, with all the pilots unanimously and of one accord, said that when the river is high, of the smaller island on the upper side there can only be seen the trees on the two small hills which compose it, and that the rest is inundated; that the larger island, on the lower side, is not all inundated, but the greater part is, and that from the shore-line thereof to the Carony river lies a distance equal to the range of a three-pounder, and from the

other side of the larger island, from the heights which are not inundated, to the river bank the distance is greater than that noted. And they all said that on the side of the bank which constitutes the mainland with Nueva Barcelona, when the river is rising and high, they have navigated and can navigate at a distance of two leagues and more from the Island of Fajardo over the savannah without being seen from the fort, should one be constructed on the said Island of Fajardo. At this point I ordered going into camp, which was done on the beach at the mouth of the Carony river, and the proper guards were stationed. All went well.

"On the fifth day the convoys set sail with a favoring breeze, and a light having been observed at Currucay cove forty armed men went ashore, and we found that behind the landing place a resident of Guayana, named Paules, was encamped with a dug-out and a canoe, engaged in turtle fishing—nothing having occurred on the Orinoco. This individual presented me a large jar of butter, lard and five turtles. The men embarked and we continued the trip until nightfall, when we went into camp beyond Currucay cove on this bank of Guayana, and passed the night without anything occurring.

"On the sixth day we continued on our way with a slack breeze, and from the place called Carapo the Carociés began to make signal fires on this Guayana side, and as we advanced in our sailing up-stream, so all day did the fires keep following us, and having discovered Caribs on the Island of Amapuru, which lies at the mouth of Angostura, the launch in which I, the said Governor, was, made for it, and thirty armed men were landed, who succeeded in seeing one Carib on land, and a large number already in the dug-outs, as they all abandoned the island and went to their own lands on the shore on this side. We found their huts and many eggs and turtles, and we awaited the other launch and canoes, which arrived a half hour later.

"I ordered camp to be made on this island, and with one launch the said Reverend Fathers and the Commandant, Don Francisco Montañez, four of the most skillful men, and two

more rowers, the trip was continued to Angostura, on the shore whereof we landed, and having seen and reconnoitered it, Joseph Hernandez said that all that could be seen of the rocky islet in the middle of the Orinoco and of the said Angostura during the rising and high water was a tree which stood at the top. That in this part of Guayana, at the place he showed us, when, by order of Señor Don Carlos Sucre, the engineer, Don Antonio Jordan, came to reconnoitre it with the intention of constructing there the fortification he might be able to with the encouragement zealously afforded him by Señor Sucre and Father Joseph Gumilla, the said engineer, with the laboring men, built a house after the fashion of the country, at the construction of which there were, of those present, Adjutant Pedro de Cos and Joseph Francisco de la Riva, with the intention of continuing pursuant to the orders they carried, and the hope of aid, and with the other necessary things which had been furnished them. But that their supplies having given out, and no assistance having arrived, they suffered hunger and need for thirty-one days, eating only fish which they caught in casting nets; and that the men not wishing to suffer more, said of one accord to said engineers, that if they did not come they would go in search of assistance, and would leave them alone, at which the said engineer ordered the said house to be set on fire, and they all withdrew to Guayana.

“And they likewise said that all this territory was subject to overflow, except a small hill, which is (and we reconnoitered it) further inland. In the upper part it is in front of the said rock, which lies in the middle of the river, so that although a fort should be built on the latter it can not prevent the passage of all boats, because they can freely navigate by the coast in front overflowed by the branch which divides the said rock, whose islet covers and guards any boat that may navigate its branch, which can not be seen, as this islet or large rock is opposite the said small hill, where a battery might be set up. And, although it be attempted on the said opposite coast, which forms the mainland with Nueva Barcelona, it would be useless, because the fort should be built on another

small hill, which is observable further inland, which, aside from not having sufficient range to cover Angostura, would not even prevent the passage of boats on this coast of Guayana up-stream, and it would be necessary to construct a fortification on the hills on both banks; to which may be added the fact, upon which all the guides universally agree, that there are no arable lands on either side, except beyond Angostura, at the places occupied by the Caribs of Curomotopo, Purvey, Caura, and Chachipo; for which reason it seems to them that if a fort were constructed at Angostura, and through any accident it should lack supplies, as a settlement, with farms in the neighborhood, could not be founded, the garrison would find itself compelled to abandon the fortification and seek the remedy, as did the said engineer Jordan and his men; and that, aside from the fact that the transportation of supplies to this place (and in time of high water it would take ten days of navigation from Guayana to Angostura) would be no less uncertain and difficult. In all of which the guides of the whole land were agreed and of one accord, as they had seen and reconnoitered it and navigated the river, some of them for a longer space than twenty years, during the time the Caribs have been at peace with the Capuchin Fathers and with the residents of Guayana.

“Whereupon the men embarked, and we returned in the direction of the said island and settlement, where the convoy remained; and we reached it about an hour after nightfall, where we found the three canoes loaded with eggs. And I there ordered the two launches to take out ballast and load with turtles for provision, which was done; and one hundred and thirty turtles were taken on board, and a large quantity of the eggs thereof. All the men ate on the island as much as they wished of one and the other, and there remained thereon more than one hundred turtles and a great quantity of eggs for lack of boats.

“We noticed that, notwithstanding it was night, by the light of the fires the sands as well as the rocks sparkled greatly, and as it appeared like mineral I ordered a piece of stone to be broken with an axe and to be placed on board, as was done.



And having passed the night in the settlement of the Caribs, with the proper guards and sentries, many fires of the Caribs were noticed on the coast, but nothing occurred.

"On the seventh day, an hour before daybreak, we put ourselves in navigation, shaping the course towards Guayana, and we used the oars, with a head wind, as far as Carapo, where we arrived. We went into camp, mounting the proper guards and sentries.

"On the said seventh day, an hour before nightfall, we broke camp, the men embarked, and we set sail with a head wind, which died out at midnight, and at daybreak we were within sight of the Island of Fajardo. We arrived at eight o'clock a. m., rowing incessantly all night, and we landed at the lower end of the said mouth and coast of Guayana.

"On the eighth day, at eight o'clock in the morning, where I ordered them into camp (*sic*) to mount guard and keep a proper watch, as the wind and the current were strongly against us.

"On the eighth day, already encamped, some dragon's-blood trees were examined, and a great number of others, which, upon having the bark removed and cut up, were as white as snow, and within five minutes' time, more or less, assumed a deep carmine color, and it appearing a dye-wood I gave it the name of 'Carmin,' in Spanish; and the guides and Indians stated that the said trees in the Guayano tongue are called *palo guatan*, and in the Carib tongue *arare*, and in the Cumanagota tongue *paraguaytay*. Whereupon I ordered a lot of about five *arrobas* (125 lbs.) to be cut, which was done, and it was placed in the launches for experimenting, because by simply rubbing cambric with the wood the former was dyed a carmine color, and although it was washed in lime juice and another piece separately in water, the color became deeper and remained more brilliant.

"At nightfall of this day camp was struck, and we started with the oars with a head-wind which kept increasing, and the current still more, so that between eight and nine o'clock at night we anchored in the middle of the river, and we remained there until 2 a. m., when the weather began to improve and we navigated with the oars as far as Guayana, where

we anchored to-day, the ninth of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, at Puerto Real, without any mishap or hitch during the whole trip.

“ DON GREGORIO DE ESPINOSA.

“ FRIAR BENITO DE MOYA.

“ FRIAR ALONSO RUBIO.

“ FRIAR CRISTOBAL MARTINEZ.

“ FRANCISCO MONTAÑEZ DE LA CUEVA.

“ FELIX DE ALMARAN.

“ JUAN ANTONIO BONALDES.

“ ALONSO BRUSUAL.

“ PEDRO DE COS.

“ JOSEPH HERNANDEZ.”

*Meeting; page 111.*—“ In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the tenth of March, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, there met in these houses wherein dwells his Honor Señor Don Gregorio de Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, to wit: His Honor the said Governor and Captain General; the Very Reverend Fathers Friar Agustin de Olot, Prefect, Friar Benito de Moya, Assistant Judge, Capuchin clergymen, Missionaries of the Orinoco; Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, Franciscan priest from Piritu; the Reverend Father Roque Lubian, of the Society of Jesus, also a Missionary of the Orinoco; Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva, Commandant of this Province; Don Vicente Frauco, Captain of Infantry of the castle of San Francisco de Asis; Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Lieutenant thereof and of the Royal Officers, who, being met and assembled to treat and confer as to what had best be done with respect to the points mentioned in the edict of the second instant, said:

“ That with knowledge, and fully apprised of the said points, each one by himself had considered what was most important and advisable for the service of both Majesties, in accordance with his duties, and that they have legally put their reports in writing, signed with their hands, as is their custom, and

they produced the same and placed them in the hands of his Honor, who, having considered them, ordered them to be filed, and this meeting adjourned, the minutes being signed by the said Governor and the others mentioned, to which I certify.

“ DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

“ FRANCISCO MONTAÑEZ DE LA CUEVA.

“ VICENTE FRANCO.

“ JUAN DE DIOS VALDEZ.

“ FRIAR AUGUSTIN DE OLOT, Prefect.

“ FRIAR BENITO DE MOYA.

“ FRIAR DIEGO FRANCISCO YBAÑEZ.

“ ROQUE LUBIAN, of the Society of Jesus.

“ Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.”

---

*Reports.*—On page 112 appear the reports of Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva (*sic*), Captain of Infantry, and of his Lieutenant, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, which are as follows:

“ In view of the points contained in the edict of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, dated the second instant, which have been made known to the Commandant of this Province, Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva; the Captain of Infantry, Don Vicente Franco; to his Lieutenant, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, who is also Lieutenant of Royal Officers, they being well apprised thereof, and considering what they have seen and experienced respecting the points submitted to them, answer:

“ That as regards the first—the fortification it has been determined to construct on the Orinoco—they hold it to be advisable (in order that the desired ends may be accomplished therewith and the expenses thereof be raised) to build it on the Limones Channel, either on the mainland, on the northern part thereof, or on the island which lies between the said Channel and the great Orinoco river, because experience teaches that with it the passage the Carib Indians and foreign nations have to go up and down in this locality with their illicit trade will be

closed, as is evidenced by the measurements of firing ranges which your Honor has made. And thus secure, with the castle of San Francisco de Asis (which is founded on the southern coast, in front of the said island and Limones Channel), not only the benefit of having the said Orinoco passage barred, but also the protection by said fortifications of the new subjugations of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers now founded and to be founded. And the discovered gold and silver mines that may in time be worked, should there be any one to bear the expense, and which are in the district of the said new subjugations and the founded settlement of Sante Thomé de la Guayana, should the new fortification be built on the Island of Faxardo, or at places in the vicinity of Angostura, would be unprotected and abandoned, aside from the fact that in these localities the custody and care of said fortification demands a larger body of infantry than that required for the increase in the fortifications of the said Limones Channel, because in the latter place, with an addition of sixty men to the one hundred making up the garrison of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, there will be sufficient troops for the guard which is to remain in the new settlement, or rather fortification that may be built on the said Limones Channel, and for the escort which the Reverend Capuchin Fathers may need to hold the towns they have founded with the converted Indians, and to be able to treat with others of the numerous heathens inhabiting the territory to be discovered in the jurisdiction assigned to the said Reverend Capuchin Fathers for evangelization, and also to furnish the necessary garrison, the battery which it is indispensable to build on the hill called the Padrastro, which commands the said Castle of San Francisco de Asis, and the escort furnished the Supercargo who goes every year to the city of Santa Fé to collect the tax. It is all one body of troops, and it will enjoy the conveniences of the already settled locality, together with those offered by the abundance of very fertile and fruitful lands for raising corn, yucca, rice, cacao, sugar cane, and other products and edible roots, which can be cultivated for the benefit of the inhabitants living in the said places on the Limones Channel, and the city of Santo Thomé

de la Guayana, founded within cannon range of the said Castle.

"And as regards the rest, they refer to the opinion and report of the Reverend Missionary Fathers summoned for the same meeting, with which we fully agree as being the most favorable vote—that which the said Reverend Fathers can give as experienced guides of the country, and skillful workers in conversions of many years' standing. We so set forth legally.

"In testimony whereof we give the present to serve as our vote and report in the meeting for which we are summoned.

"Signed in this city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the tenth day of the month of March, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three. \*

"FRANCISCO MONTAÑEZ DE LA CUEVA.

"VICENTE FRANCO.

"JUAN DE DIOS VALDES."

(Next follows the gift of cannons and warlike stores of the Commandant Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva for the progress in conversions that may be made by the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, numbering now thirty-nine subjects who have arrived intended for the said Mission, and in order that they may begin the subjugation of the Indians of this Orinoco river), (page 114, reverse) "let them found a town on the bank thereof, on the northern coast, and at the place called Pau, sixteen leagues distant from Angostura; on the upper part of the river, with the assistance which his Honor, the said Governor, may give for the purpose. Establishing on the bank of the said Orinoco river, at the place they may consider the best adapted, a stronghold, or fort, which I consider of great importance to restrain the audacity of the Carib Indian nation, which is opposed to all conversion of the other nations, and which may serve as a way-point to receive and store the supplies and assistance that may be intended for distribution among the settlements to be founded with the Indians that may be converted on the Purvey and Caura, and other places in their jurisdiction; and for the defense of this first settlement of Pau, I donate to His Majesty"—(here is expressed the number of cannons, muskets, &c).

*Page 114, reverse.*—Opinion of the Very Reverend Father Prefect, Friar Augustin de Olot, regarding the propositions of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, which is as follows:

“Firstly. That the fort on the Orinoco be constructed on the Limones Channel or on the island in said channel, and that the Padrastró of the Castle of San Francisco de Asís be fortified, with the force that your Honor may have considered and planned as necessary.

“*Item.*—That the troops for garrisoning the three forts be one hundred and sixty men, and that twenty-five thereof be detailed for the escort for these Missions and discoveries on land, with a veteran Captain, and that to the latter be paid a competent salary, and in default thereof, to some other of the remaining skilled guides which the Mission has at the disposal of the Reverend Father Prefect and the Governor; and that the said Captain should reside and be present in the Mission, and command the troops detailed in invasions and functions.

“*Item.*—The Limones channel and the Padrastró being once fortified the Orinoco is closed, all trade of Caribs and foreigners is prevented, and this land and the Missions rendered safe, which is the best, and as such has always been settled. And with this key the Missions of the Very Rev. Franciscan Fathers, and of the Most Rev. Jesuit Fathers, are made secure, which the Presidio and forts of Fajardo or Angostura can never do, owing to their uninhabitable state by reason of plagues, want of woods, and difficulties in the way of aid, and owing to the other reasons given by the V. R. F. Joseph Gumilla, of the Illustrious Society, and the Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago, as appears from their memorials presented to His Majesty.

“*Item.*—As regards the present condition of this Mission, your Honor has already paid his visit, and he is apprised of the want of means in which it finds itself, and how, for four years, the alms have not been collected in Caracas, nor are there any hopes of collecting them, according to the information I have just received from the holy missionary and Procurator, sent for the purpose, and of the backwardness we have

suffered through the invasion, burning, and sacking by the English enemy. And that to insure the passage to Santa Fé, prevent the trading, going up and coming down of Caribs and other nations, and to extend the preaching of the Holy Gospel without particular risk, H. M. (whom may God preserve), should order the forts built, as has been set forth. And that there should always be kept on hand two launches at the foot of said forts to intercept the boats which, under cover of night, shall succeed in evading the fires of the castle and batteries.

*Item.*—As regards the advances that this Community proposes, they are: To retain the seven Mission towns it now has, and to found another of the nation of Panacayo Indians, inland, on the frontier of the Caribs, and construct therein a stronghold in view of a probable defence, and to discover and penetrate into new lands and Nations, as your Honor is informed, of whom I have requested the necessary guard for such purpose. This is what I opine and should represent respecting the three points submitted, taught by the practice and experience of nineteen years which I have had as one of the first founders of these existing Missions.

“To which I certify in this (*sic*) of Guayana, the tenth day of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

“FRIAR AUGUSTIN DE OLOT,

“Prefect.”

(Here follows the vote and opinion of the Father Friar Benito de Moya, which wholly agrees with the foregoing.)

*Page 117.*—Report of Father Lecturer, Friar Diego de Ybañez, Apostolic Missionary of Guayana:

“Before answering the first point it is to be supposed the Orinoco river should be fortified and jointly settled by Spaniards, for the following reasons:

“1. That foreigners may not occupy their lands.

“2. That they may not infest the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Maracaibo, and Santa Fé.

" 3. To prevent their trading with the said Provinces.

" 4. To prevent the taking out of Indian slaves of various nations which are sold them by the Caribs,

" 5. That the Missions of the Jesuit, Capuchin and Franciscan Fathers may be safe from the said foreigners.

" 6. That the gold mines discovered and to be discovered may be safe from them.

" 7. That having a sufficient gathering of people on the Orinoco, the Dutch of Esequivo, Verbis and Surinama may be easily dispossessed of the lands they occupy and of the mines they are working.

" 8. That the Carib Indians from the mouths of the Orinoco may not go up the Orinoco to make captive the Indians they sell aliens.

" 9. To prevent the many deaths the Caribs bring about in order to capture the Indians they sell.

" 10. To prevent the loss of the souls the Caribs kill and take captive.

" 11. That the Missions of the Capuchin, Jesuit and Franciscan Fathers may be freed of Carib Indians.

" 12. That the selfsame Carib Indians and very many other Indian nations living in the neighborhood of the Orinoco may be civilized and put in settlements.

" 13. That these Indians once settled, it may become easy to proceed to the settling of the Indians on the Amazon river and in the interior of this great Southern America, for, without establishing this system of posts, no forward step can be taken.

" 14. Because all the Orinoco, once settled with Spaniards and Indians, great profit will accrue to the Spanish Crown.

" 15. And last (in execution, which ought to be first in intention), because the Orinoco once fortified and settled by Spaniards, there will be brought about the salvation of innumerable Indians who live in its neighborhood, and there will also be effected, in time, the salvation of all the Indians that inhabit this extensive America.

" It should also be noted that to secure the ends in view in the foregoing reasons, it is incumbent, necessary, and imperative not only that the fort. H. M. has decided on shall be



constructed, but that the Orinoco river should be settled by Spaniards (in the manner I shall state later) for the special reasons which here follow :

“ 1. That the fortification or fort of Guayana, and that which is to be constructed may be provided with soldiers ; for experience teaches that the soldiers after being two or three years in Guayana endeavor to get a substitute, or desert, because of the solitude of the land and lack of trade, in order to provide themselves with what is necessary.

“ 2. That the said forts, during invasions of the enemy, may be easily aided by the militia of the cities that may be founded.

“ 3. That the said forts may be easily provided with the necessary supplies, and with other things for the subsistence of the soldiers in said forts.

4. Because the two forts are insufficient to keep all the Indians who will be settled on the Orinoco in peace ; and experience has shown that the Indians only remain in settlements when there is a city of Spaniards near them, through fear of whom they do not take to the forests.

“ 5. Because the Indians living near the Spaniards, through communication with them, become domesticated with families, and become attached to and accustomed to live with them, and if by chance they run away from their settlement, they do not go to the forests, but go to live in the Spanish settlements.

“ 6. Because, by founding the sufficient number of cities, the strength and trade of the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Maracaibo and Santa Fé will be linked, whereby great profit will accrue to the Indians, the Spaniards, and the Royal Crown.

“ Because, by founding the proper number of Spanish cities, the Catholic Faith will be increased and exalted, and the salvation of all the Indians will be secured ; without which cities it is impossible to maintain the Holy Faith among the Indians owing to their slight capacity and great fickleness, for which purpose the two forts are not sufficient.

“ From all of said reasons it is made apparent that there are no other means that can be permanent to secure the ends aimed at, save the building of the fort, and the founding of the proper cities.

"This being considered, the answer to the first point submitted, is that the most convenient site for the erection of the fort, which H. M. orders to be constructed on the Orinoco, is in front of the fort of Guayana, below the mouth of the Limones channel, on the mainland and not on the island, for the reasons following :

"1. Because locating the fort on this site the principal purpose it is desired to achieve therewith is secured, *i. e.*, to prevent the passage of the Caribs and aliens; for, no matter which side he draws near, whoever passes will be seen by the fort he approaches, and if he passes in the middle of the river he will be seen by both forts and they will be able to prevent his passing, although at the time of high water it is not easy to pass in the middle of the river.

"2. Because the two forts, being united, each becomes stronger; for they can assist one another, which would not be the case were they distant from each other.

"3. Because located on this site with the city which will be added to it, it will serve as a protection to the Guarauno Indians which shall go on settling in its vicinity.

"4. Because on the said site they can easily provide themselves with supplies from the Guarauno Indians that may settle in the neighborhood, and also from the Mission towns of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers in the vicinity of Guayana.

"5. Because on said site of the Limones channel the fort can be constructed at less expense than on the Island of Faxardo, where it would be necessary to build three forts to be able to prevent the passage of the Caribs and foreigners; and also because on the Island of Faxardo it would be difficult to secure subsistence.

"6. Because, although at Angostura the river becomes narrower the difference between it and the narrows between Guayana and the Limones channel is slight, and it would also be necessary to construct two forts at the Angostura site in order to prevent the passage of the Caribs and aliens, and at the same time it would be necessary to maintain the castle of Guayana, which would redound to the detriment of the Royal Treasury.

"7. Because the Angostura site will present great difficulties in the way of securing subsistence, as it is very far from a settlement and there are no Indians in the neighborhood to settle.

"8. Because by being located on the Limones channel one fort can defend the other, since with only a small charge of powder a shot can reach from one side to the other.

"9. Because if the said fort be erected on the island in the Limones channel, on a dark night, owing to the shadow of the mainland, boats can pass, and the desired end will not be accomplished.

"10. Because the fort being located on the mainland could more easily be assisted by the people of the city and by those who may be in the said localities.

"The force considered necessary (in view of the present conditions and those which may in the future prevail should the gold mines be worked, together with the instructions which His Majesty commands be followed in the building of the fort), is a force to occupy one of the two plans which are drawn below, and either of the two can mount sixteen pieces of artillery and eight swivel guns, although with eight cannons and four swivel guns there will be sufficient force at present, because foreigners will not at this time go to any extraordinary cost to come and take possession of the poverty which now prevails in these localities.

"The infantry force considered necessary for the defence and guarding of this passage of the Orinoco and the Missions which are being founded is at least three hundred, or three hundred odd, men, for the reasons following :

"1. Because the fort of San Francisco de la Guayana needs one hundred men for its good defence.

"2. The fort on the Limones channel needs eighty men of the escort for its custody and defence.

"3. A small fort, which should be placed on the Padrastro of Guayana, should have at least twenty men. This small fort is very necessary, because from this Padrastro hill with muskets alone all the soldiers that might be in the Castle of San Francisco de la Guayana could be numbered among the

dead. And in times past the said Castle was taken by the French from the said Padraastro hill.

“4. Because the Reverend Capuchin Fathers at present need an escort of soldiers, from twenty-five to thirty strong.

“5. Because the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu need more than an escort of thirty men to again settle the site of Mamó, which is much invaded by Caribs. And its settlement is very necessary, because it is a place where every mail-carrier coming from Cumana to Guayana and going from Guayana to Cumana, and every one passing over this road makes a stop, there being no other place, owing to the water, in order that the animals may drink; and also because this place being once settled, the said parties and also the two forts would find therein supplies, especially fish, as they are very abundant in Lake Mamó; and also because the communication between Guayana and Cumana will be better united.

“6. Because thirty more escort soldiers are needed to begin a new city of Spaniards near the mouth of the Pao river and that of the Orinoco, which city is very necessary to subjugate and keep in peace the Carib Indian towns already founded in the Piritu Missions, and to go on settling other Caribs wherever it may be most advisable, and also to afford a passage to the lands where all the Caribs are.

“7. Because thirty or forty more escort soldiers are necessary to begin another city of Spaniards at the mouth of the Caura river where the whole force of the Carib Indians is, who sally forth to infest the whole Orinoco and to destroy the settlements of all the three Missions—the Franciscan, Capuchin, and Jesuits. It is to be noted here that the Franciscan and Capuchin Fathers need the three escorts referred to, and even many more, because they are the ones who advance against the whole strength of the Caribs; and H. M. granting the said escorts, with divine aid, they will settle all the Caribs in the same way they now have four settlements of Caribs founded.

“It is also noted that when the said escorts shall no longer be necessary in the said settlements, owing to the cities having been increased by a sufficient number of Spaniards, and the Mamó being safe from Caribs, these escorts will station themselves in settlements that may be most advanced toward the

inland barbarous Indians. And they will proceed to begin another city at the mouth of the Cuchivero river, thereby to enter upon the settlement of the Indians inhabiting its banks; and if the Franciscan Fathers had had these escorts the conversion would be much further advanced, and without them at the present time no step can be taken owing to the insolence of the Caribs, which should be settled first in order to proceed to the settlement of other nations. And it is also necessary to settle them to insure the settlement and trade of the Orinoco river. From all of which it clearly appears that three hundred, and even more, soldiers are necessary and imperative for the defence and security of the forts of Guayana and the Limones channel and of the Missions of the Capuchin and Franciscan Fathers, aside from the escorts the Jesuit Fathers need.

“Replying to the second point, it is stated that the present condition of the Community of the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu is: There are twenty-two settlements, of which fifteen are already Christianized, divided into six parishes, and seven are new mission towns. Of these seven towns, four are of Carib Indians, one of Cumanagoto Indians, and another of Palenque Indians, and the Cumanagotos and Palenques lived with the Caribs, and called themselves Caribs when they lived with them; and the other town is of Chaima Indians. Among these twenty-two towns are distributed the priests who have recently arrived from Spain and those of us who were already here. The recent comers have all experienced some illness owing to the change of temperature, and they have not all fully recovered. All of the recent comers are engaged in the study of the Indian language, and those who are already somewhat instructed therein are engaged in assisting the older ones in the education of the Indians and in the administering of the Sacraments.

“The towns considered as necessary to be founded to insure the passage to the New Kingdom of Granada, and to the spread and maintenance of the conversion of the Indians—Caribs as well as other nations—are the following:

“1. Immediately opposite the fort on the Limones channel a city of Spaniards is advisable, in order that, united with that

of Guayana, they may be stronger to bar the passage of the Orinoco river, the two forts watching the passage by water, and the two cities the land passage, which may be attempted by foreigners and the Caribs; and also that the two said cities of Guayana and the Limones channel may look to provisioning the two forts; and that the said new city may serve to maintain in peace and in the faith the settlements that may be founded with the Guarauna nation which inhabits the Cumana side.

"2. It is very necessary to found another Spanish city on the Carony river wherever the Reverend Capuchin Fathers may deem proper, in order to maintain in the conversion such towns as they may go on founding.

"3. It is imperative to found another city on the Pao river near the Orinoco, to maintain in peace and in the faith the towns of Carib Indians founded in the Missions of the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu, and to defend them from the Caribs of the forest, and to establish other settlements of Carib Indians from the Cumana side on the said Pao, and to afford a passage to settle those on the Guayana and Santa Fé side.

"4. Another Spanish city is absolutely necessary on the Caura river, where the greatest strength of the Caribs is, which shall serve to convert and afterwards preserve them in the faith, and to enter upon the conversion of other nations which in those parts the Caribs are settling; and which shall also serve to unite the trade of Sante Fé with Guayana.

"5. It is advisable to found another city on the Cumana side, opposite this bank, at the place that may be deemed the most advisable to facilitate the passage from one side to the other, so as to promptly furnish the assistance that may be needed by the foregoing city of Caura.

"6. Another city is needed on the Cuchivero river for the same purposes of the conversion of the Indians inhabiting it, and to insure the passage to Santa Fé.

"7. Another city is necessary on the Huarico river to connect the trade of Caracas with Guayana and Santa Fé.

"8. Other cities are needed on the upper Orinoco, which may be designated by the Reverend Jesuit Fathers.

“The method of populating these cities ought not to be at the expense of private individuals, as they are all ports, which are reserved for himself by H. M. If there are no means of populating them at the expense of the Royal Crown, it may be done in the following way, which, in my opinion, is the easiest and most efficacious: Firstly, His Majesty may (since the settling of the Orinoco river is so advisable for the Royal service, the salvation of souls, the honor of God, and the exaltation of His Holy Name), order and command that for the present the transportation of families to the Island of Havana and the Province of Caracas shall cease. And H. M. may justly command and order that all galleons sailing from islands for Cumana, Caracas, Maracaibo, and Santa Marta shall touch at Trinidad or at Cumana, and that each galleon shall bring the families corresponding to its tonnage, in the same manner as has been the practice in the galleons bound to Caracas and Havana, and that the families that they may bring shall be landed on the Island of Trinidad or at Cumana, whence they can be taken, at the expense of the Royal Treasury, to Guayana and the other cities that may be founded, as the greatest exigencies may require, some family or families always remaining on the Island of Trinidad in order that it may go on being settled by people and cacao plantations to the profit of the Spanish Nation and the increase of the Royal Treasury, to aid in the expense that must be incurred for the maintenance of the infantry on the Orinoco, to which end the revenues from the cities that may be founded will also subscribe; although it is always necessary, in order to gather the fruit of the vine to first spend some funds in planting it, and he who does not plant the vine can not gather the fruit thereof.

Secondly. H. M. may also order that the vessels of the Biscayan Company shall always bring some families from Biscay or Galicia, since two or three poor families they may take from each place in Biscay and in Galicia will not be missed in Spain, and much land can here be settled with their protection. Which families they may land either in Trinidad, in Cumana, or in Barcelona, wherever the vessels could arrive with the greatest convenience.

Thirdly. In order that the settling of these families on the Orinoco may be affected with the least possible expense to the Royal Treasury, and that the said families may not want work when they arrive, and that they may with the greatest ease lay out good farms or fields that may provide profits for them and the Royal Crown, it will be very advisable for H. M. to order that the officials of the Royal Treasury, in the name of the King, shall lend each of the families coming the sum of four or five hundred *pesos*, in such articles as they may need, and in one or more slaves—some of the families pledging themselves to the others to secure the Royal Treasury—which amount they may thereafter go on paying off in the products they may garner, and these products may afterwards serve to supply to the infantry, and to succor the families that may be coming subsequently in the same way. This method, I have heard it said, has been in vogue in some French colonies in America, whereby they have greatly increased in a very short time.

Fourthly. That in order that the families may be encouraged to come to the new cities H. M. order that each family coming to settle therein shall pay no Royal taxes for ten years, while they secure and make productive their farms.

Fifthly. That in order to increase husbandry, for the present no partition of lands be made in the said cities; but that each one sow the land he may find vacant, and by abandoning it for one full year, any one else may enter upon and cultivate it, as is done in the city of Barcelona.

“Sixthly. For the increase of cities and conversions it is very expedient that H. M. order that the Spaniards may take the Carib Indians that may not of their own will wish to become settled, and carry them to their houses and make use of them for the space of six years, under the condition that they teach them the Spanish language and the Christian doctrine, and that they shall in no way be held as slaves, and can not sell them, or give them to any person outside the same city, nor inside of it, unless such person be his son or companion who went with him to take them; and that when the six years have elapsed the Indian shall be free to live within the same city, or may go to one of the Mission towns.



“Seventhly. To give a start to the said cities on the said convenient sites, or on others that may be considered adaptable, each one of the respective missionaries may invite to his territory the families he can, wherever he may find them, and with them start the city, and subsequently take out from the Government the proper warrants for the distribution of the offices whenever there may be at least a dozen Spanish families congregated at the place that may seem adapted to its foundation; and afterwards, as time progresses, to go on soliciting families with which to increase it, in the same manner as is done with the settlements of Indians.

“Replying to the third point, it is stated: That the Franciscan Fathers intend this year to again settle the site of Mamó, having the escort of thirty men, and at the same time to start another town of Guaraunos one day’s journey distant from the site on the Limones Channel, and, if it be possible, another town near this; and they also intend to found a city of Spaniards on the Pao river, near the Orinoco, if they have another escort of thirty soldiers, and in its vicinity found one or more Indian settlements. And they also intend this year to found a settlement near Onare of some Indian families that are in several bands, and of others which are fugitives from the towns, some living in the forest and others in the Province of Caracas. And they also intend, should they have the escort of forty soldiers, to go over to found a city of Spaniards on the Caura river, and such Carib settlements as they may be able to in its neighborhood, without which escorts no start can be given to the settlements on the three sites mentioned—Mamó, Pao, and Caura.

“This opinion I express with an experience of thirty-one years spent in this America in the conversion of Piritu of the Franciscan Fathers; giving notice that in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-three, being Prelate of the said conversions, by order of the Governor, Don Juan de la Fornera Sota, I reconnoitered the site of Angostura, examining the adjacent lands on the western side and on the northwestern, whence passes the road from the conversions to the said site of Angostura; and although it appeared to me to be a very good site for building the fort with a Spanish city, having now seen the Li-

mones Channel, it has seemed to me the latter is much better, for the reasons I have set forth ; and, in order that for all time this may appear as my opinion and report, I sign it in this city of Guayana for the purpose of producing it in the meeting the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, intends to hold on the eighth day of the month of March, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

“FRIAR DIEGO FRANCISCO YBAÑEZ.”

(After the report appear the two plans following, with their notes—Pages 128 and 129) :

“*Report of Father Roque Lubian of the Society of Jesus—Page 130.*”

“Points which the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, submitted to the meeting in Guayana, in order that each one present thereat shall determine what he shall deem best.

“1. Your Honor asks where it is deemed most advisable to construct the fort on the Orinoco, whether on the Island of Faxardo, at Angostura, or on the Limones Channel? What force is considered to be necessary ; what infantry troops, and what reasons combine to make the selection of the fortification on the spot mentioned in the report of each best adapted for the purpose?

“2. State the present condition of each community and the settlement it is proposed to advance to insure the passage to the New Kingdom, and to obviate the cruelties of the Caribs, bearing in mind, in the report, the war in which we are engaged with the Anglican Nation.

“3. In what progress are each of the Reverend Communities now engaged?

And I, being among the parties to express their opinion, as Procurator of the Orinoco Missions of the Society of Jesus, sent by my Superior on certain matters connected therewith, reply to the first : That it being necessary that the Orinoco be fortified for the safety of these Provinces, and to bar the passage to the hostilities of the Caribs, and to prevent the communication of foreigners, this work admits of no delay, else we

shall experience new insolence from both, as the malice of the Caribs gives no truce, even though they be invited peacefully. Wherefore I say it is true that at Angostura the passage may be closed, as the river runs narrow between the heights of two hills; but it seems that although the site may be adapted to the erection of fortresses, it lacks other very necessary conditions—there are no forests near adapted to cultivation, from which those who are to guard them could get subsistence. And if we speak of the Island of Faxardo, there also could a fort be built which could also impede the passage, nearer to Guayana and the Missions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers than Angostura; but if the fort is to be built there with the redoubts belonging thereto for security, it is a long (although sure) work, and, under the circumstances of the present war, difficult to undertake. So that if we find a site that is not so removed from Guayana as Angostura—which is three days farther up—nor so difficult to fortify, under present circumstances, as is the Island of Faxardo, and which, on the other hand, shall block the passage against what is aimed at, it would undoubtedly be the best. And this can be done at the mouth of the Limones Channel, which is opposite the castle of Guayana on the mainland.

“The reasons which move me are, first, that the principal stronghold, which is the Presidio of Guayana, being already situated on the southern side, less expense will fall upon His Majesty, the passage will be closed, it can be built more quickly, which is what we purpose, and what is needed, securing the same end as at Angostura and at Faxardo Island, with advantages—for the fort being constructed on this site the Missions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers would be protected and defended, while at Angostura they would not be. On Faxardo Island they are partly, not wholly, protected, and for the common good and fundamental defence it is advisable to have it on the said channel on the mainland.

“The second reason is, that located on this site, the settlements founded in Guayana to provide the necessary supplies and other things needed are nearer. The objections that there may be to putting the fort on the said site might be that it is

overflowed in winter time—about one vara at the highest water—and if the experts find that this objection may be overcome, the report does not cease to urge its erection there. The other objection is that all the forest contiguous to the Limones Channel is inundated for nearly a league in a straight line to the north, where boats could pass hidden by the forest, when the river is risen, without their being noticed by the new fortification; but as the forest is impenetrable, owing to the intricate network of underbrush and thorns, it is very unlikely that the Caribs or others desiring to pass could stop to open a way without being seen or noticed.

“ Finally, let the river be closed, and let what has been aimed at for so many years be begun, and let it be wherever it may. As regards the force and infantry troops for guarding the fort with fifty more files for the present, it seems to me there will be sufficient.

“ To the second.—‘State the present condition of each Community, and the settlement it is proposed to advance,’ &c.—I answer, firstly, with the substance of a letter which (*sic*) the Very Reverend Father Manuel Roman, Superior of the Orinoco Missions of the Society of Jesus, of seventeen hundred and forty-two, and it is as follows:

“ ‘To the Governor and Captain General Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros.

“ ‘MY DEAR SIR: Impelled by the danger and risk in which these Missions find themselves through the assaults and destructions we experience at every step, without being able to fish or till the clearings without danger of being seized, killed, or made captive by Caribs who endeavor by water and land to completely devastate these Missions, as is evidenced by many fatal cases which I omit, so as not to molest Y. H. with prolix accounts—impelled, I say, by everything to seek the protection of Y. H., begging you to put an end to so many evils (before we mourn the final ruin) by making a settlement of mulattoes, negroes, or half-breeds in the lands of the Caribs of Purney and Caura; and if this can not be done, that an entrance be made, with the precautions which the high judg-

ment of Y. H. may suggest, to the end of restraining the fury and haughtiness of the Caribs, and that there be restored to these Missions the captives taken therefrom, Salibas as well as Maypures and Quirupas. If they are not bridled these Missions can not subsist. Even communication between one settlement and another is embarrassed. At the beginning of this month a boat was *en route* with seventeen souls, Maypures, and two soldiers from Cabruta, and they have not appeared, either dead or alive. All that has been seen are huts of the Caribs on the road, and I infer that they killed the soldiers and led the Indians off captive. Many almost similar cases to this have happened.

“ ‘There is not a year that many captives do not come down to their lands in this vicinity. Twenty canoes, I have been told, have come down in these two months of May and June, passing on dark nights by the small fort of San Javier without oars, so as not to be observed.

“ ‘At this rate they will soon leave us without breadstuffs, and we shall find ourselves compelled to return to the colleges if the mercy of Y. H. does not remedy it. There is no remedy from Texas down. Is it advisable, sir, for the service of both Majesties, the credit and honor of Y. H., not to remedy it? I speak plainly. Undeceive me, Y. H., that we may take steps that may be most expedient for us. I trust in God that Y. H. is to pacify this Orinoco, and that it is to be greatly to your honor and the good of souls. I see that Y. H. is compelled to guard the coasts infested by enemies, and that the men taken therefrom may be needed. To this I answer, that to gain an entrance to Caribs a multitude of men is not necessary, only a good resolution ; and by showing some consideration to those who enter, men will not be wanting in these environs of Barcelona who will make the entrance. Y. H., better than I, will evolve methods for the said entrance. It is my place to request and ask remedies, and your Honor’s to apply them.’

“Up to this point goes the Father Superior, and from the contents of his letter, which only slightly hints at the state of the persecutions we suffer from the Caribs, Y. H. may glean the danger our Missions are in, which Missions, besides being

the most persecuted, are the most removed from resort to Y. H. They are the most persecuted in the limits of the government of Y. H., for there may well be other Missions also for a time attacked, but in the end, through the warmth and protection of Y. H., the persecutions cease, although they may not end. When can it be shown that in the part of the vineyard allotted to us the plots of the enemies of Christianity have stopped or ceased? From the first foundation stone of our subjugations, which was placed upon the labors and vigils of the missionaries, who can say that there has been surcease or any night without vigils? This can only be explained by him who suffers it without the hope of resort to Y. H. As the distance is so great, to invoke the assistance which would succor us, that it is necessary to die for the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, or to conquer with the small escort we have, being accompanied by seven soldiers which the mercy of Y. H. has had stationed there since the beginning of your government, who greatly assist in our defence."

(Page 134).—"With these we maintain and encourage the new settlement of San Ygnacio de Cabruta, against which the persecutions, not only of the Caribs, but of other persons of distinction and quality have been such that were it not for the work of God it would have been ruined from its beginning, as is known to Y. H., under whose shadow and protection it keeps on growing, and it offers much for the defence of the Orinoco should it continue to grow. There are five other subjugations already founded above Cabruta, four or five days' journey, and in winter a longer time—the first, Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Pararuma, the small fort of San Francisco Javier de Marimaroto, with its town, Santa Theresa de Carichana, all three settlements of the Salibas Nation; San Francisco de Borja, of the Jaruros; San Joseph de Paruate, which is now being founded, and which is of the Mapoye Nation. In all the subjugations the office of prayer and the expounding of the doctrine is performed every day—in the morning in their language and in the afternoon in Spanish, the Missionary Father personally assisting and explaining. On Sundays the eternal truth is preached and the Christian doc-

trine is explained in their language; and on the other principal feasts of the year the Mystery of the day is preached to them.

"In each town there are boys' schools, where all learn to read, and some to write; they learn and are taught elementary singing, and the diversity of harmony, by which means playing on the harp, guitar, violin, and other instruments such as the trumpet and flute, gains much, according as the settlement is new or older. All this is addressed to the divine worship, teaching and police of the Indians, for which purpose there is also a teacher who instructs them in dancing to divert and humor the Indians, and for holidays. On some occasions they are accustomed to represent some scenes on the mysteries of the faith, now in Spanish, now in their own language, in order that all may understand. These children are so advanced that they know the Doctrine in Spanish, with a very clear pronunciation, and it can be seen that they grasp the meaning, because on being questioned they reply in their own language with effect.

"This consoles us greatly, seeing that even the older ones also are advanced in the faith, and that, being married by the Church, they all confess, and many receive the sacrament with devotion. We are afflicted on noting that, without our being able to remedy it, the Caribs endeavor to destroy what with so much labor has been accomplished. Because if the latter are at peace with our converts they solicit them to leave Christianity and flee with them to their lands, as they have already succeeded with many they have taken away. And there are among them apostates, who urge upon them the schism that what we preach to them is a lie. If they are at war they come with arms, and when they do not dare to publicly enter the settlements owing to the escort therein, they introduce themselves secretly into the sown land of the Christian Indians, where they play havoc and capture those they can, as experience has demonstrated on several fatal occasions; and when by this means they do not accomplish their depraved designs, they fire on those they find fishing in the river. Our care is increased by the knowledge that among the subjugated there

are some not so faithful, who in the darkness of night introduce some Caribs, their comrades, into the settlement, and it is the high providence of God that they have not burned us. We have tried all the peaceful means with them, and their peace is not peace, but war; because in any event their intentions are directed towards breaking up Christianity, and the settlements, and to making us return to our lands, as they alone are masters of the Orinoco and of the other nations. Foreign nations encourage their tyrannies by furnishing them arms and munitions in exchange for the captives they take. Finally, this is a point which demands a remedy, which can only be secured by founding in their very lands a strong Spanish settlement which shall frighten off the aliens residing therein for their illicit trade, and quiet the Caribs.

“And I pass on to the third point, which is: ‘In what progress is each of the Reverend Communities now engaged?’ I reply that at the present time we content ourselves with maintaining the six settlements above mentioned, which are managed by five Fathers and one brother coadjutor; and from time to time we make the possible inroads into the heathens, subjugating them to increase the settlements. And not having at this time any workers other than those already expressed, with the escort of twenty-three soldiers which the Catholic zeal of our King (whom God preserve) granted us and maintains, some attachés coming also to us, it is not possible to prudently move forward (although there are plenty of bread-stuffs well located), unless some further measures are taken to pacify the Caribs, who disturb and tyrannize everything; for which reason all the reports that may be requested must end with the Caribs, which are the touchstone.

“Your Honor will see by the letter herein inserted how impossible it is to advance the Missions under present conditions without exposing to ruin those already founded, since to make new subjugations a new escort is necessary for their security. This we have not, save the twenty-three men spoken of, and the Captain (the other twelve men making up the number of thirty-six, which H. M. grants us, are at the Missions of Casanave and Meta), adding the seven soldiers which Y. H. has



detached in the Orinoco Missions. These are all needed to maintain us in the present status; whereby it may be clearly seen that in order to advance it is necessary to add an escort, for under these circumstances it can not be taken from an established settlement, leaving it in danger, to place the force in another which is still in the future.

"This can be easily understood, and it only remains to bring to the notice of Y. H. that these soldiers escorting us (for three years in June of this year) have not received one *real* of the pay allotted them in the Santa Fé Crusade Treasury; and in this same Treasury are also designated the alms which His Majesty gives yearly to each Father, of which we have received nothing during the time mentioned. Wherefrom follows the loss of all the Missions, for the reasons given. Neither can we, the Fathers, subsist without those alms, as we are without funds or revenues. And although I have been informed that the Most Excellent the Viceroy had already commanded that assistance be given us, this will only be to pay part of what is due, and we will remain in the same need, ever in lively struggle, want of succor, and exposed to the loss of the Missions. I put all this before Y. H. that you may support us before the Viceroy, owing to the needs which confront us, although on the part of the Missionary Fathers we are ready and willing to sacrifice our life in the service of both Majesties, in the midst of such a persecution as is that of not giving the soldiers their pay and their leaving us alone in the midst of the enemy. I trust in God that the zeal of Y. H. will bear these Missions in mind to request aid of the Most Excellent the Viceroy, or wherever it may be most advisable.

"It is expedient also that Y. H. should know that even in the event of the Orinoco being closed and the Caribs being tamed, the increase of our escort is necessary for the security of the nations to be settled, until the Indians are well subdued; since advancing up the Orinoco the Caribs will cease to make war upon us, but it will be waged by another nation, very numerous, warlike, barbarous, eaters of human flesh, even more than the Caribs, which is the Guipunaru nation.

"Besides this, the Orinoco communicates with the Negro

river, and the latter with the Marañon, Portuguese lands, through a channel which, at a distance of fifteen days' journey from our Missions up-stream, separates from the Orinoco, as is testified to by two Portuguese who navigated that channel to this river and appeared in our Missions in the year forty. They came in search of people to take to the Marañon; they were lost in the maze of nations, and, luckily, succeeded in reaching our subjugations, in which one still lives and the other died. The consequences that may follow from this communication between the Orinoco and the Marañon may be inferred.

"Lastly, I add that in order to advance our Missions, the first post we must take might be a torrent called "los Aturis," two days' distant from the last upper Orinoco Mission. This is a site which by its nature totally impedes the passage to boats, if an ordinary defence is placed there, because at night it is impossible to pass by water either up or down without falling over a formidable precipice, owing to the madness of the currents rushing between rocks, and whirlpools which swallow up boats even in the daytime. There is only one route, and this presents the same dangers, so that it is necessary to have guides from the same locality to pilot and manage the boat to gain a passage; this is a turbulent channel which precipitates itself against great rocks. At this point there is an islet which provided with the defence of twelve or fourteen men would absolutely close the passage with a key that can not be counterfeited either by day or night. There are great conveniences in closing this strait, for in case the Orinoco here below be fortified, be it either at Angostura, Fajardo Island, or the Limones Channel (which seems the most advisable), the Caribs have left to them the visible roads by land, by means of which they can go up from Esquivo to beyond this torrent of which I speak, where, after having ruined through their cruelties the poor nations they dominate, they take from them their boats, or make them themselves; or on tree-bark, as is their custom, they come down loaded with captives through this same channel, which they must absolutely pass through by day without any choice of route being left them. So that by placing an

ordinary defence on the islet, where there is room for a small settlement, the Caribs are greatly impeded and they lose the hope of bringing down by that route so many captives. It is true that in such case they could return by the same road on land they followed going down ; but as the distance is so great, they arrive tired, and the captives they might bring would diminish and escape through the forests. The children become tired out or die on the road, which is very long, and their provisions give out ; besides, in such case, they could be pursued by land. This site once fortified would also serve as a defence against some invasion that might be attempted from up the Orinoco, or by other nations, or by some Portuguese.

“ All this report I place in the hands of Y. H. with religious sincerity, by which it may be seen that we need an increase of escort of from sixty to seventy men over and above those we have, and that proper pay be designated for the officers ; that the back pay of the present escort be liquidated, and such other measures be taken as the high judgment of Y. H. may dictate ; that the Missionary Fathers be aided with the usual alms which H. M. commands be given us each year. And having given in answer to the points submitted by Y. H. what I believe before God, what is above set forth is what I feel *salvo meliori*.

“ In Guayana, the sixth of March, seventeen hundred and forty-three.

“ ROQUE LUBIAN,

“ Missionary in the Missions of the Society of  
“ Jesus of Orinoco, and Procurator thereof.”

---

*Page 140.*—(Next follows an edict of the Governor, relating to the donation of arms by the Commandant Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva, for the spread and defence of the settlements that may be newly founded ; and to the delivery thereof to the military storekeeper of the city of Cumana).

---

On page 142 appears the edict following :

“ In the city of Cumana, on the sixth day of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, the Governor, Don

Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, said : That he has seen and examined the exemplified copy of the Royal Decree of Approval of H. M., dated in San Ildephonso, on the sixteenth of September, seventeen hundred and thirty-six, relating to the territories of the communities of Missionary Fathers of the Provinces of Cumana and Guayana. The Royal Decree, dated in San Ildephonso, on the fourteenth of October, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, relating to the suspension of inroads against the Carib Indians owing to the serious injuries and damages arising therefrom. Another, dated in Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, not prohibiting the inroads which the Missionaries should make for the conversion of the Indians through the gentle means of peace. Another exemplified copy of one dated in Aranjuez on the third of May, seventeen hundred and forty-one, relating to the dependencies which the order of the Society of Jesus of the new Kingdom of Granada has on the banks of the Orinoco river, at the instance of Father Diego Terreros, Procurator General of said Missions.

“An original letter, dated in Cartagena on the twenty-eighth of July of seventeen hundred and forty-two, of the Most Excellent Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava, Viceroy of Santa Fé, in which he states his inability to send an engineer, and whatever else appears therein. Another, dated in La Guayra on the fifth of October of seventeen hundred and forty-two, of the Most Excellent Señor Don Gabriel de Zuloaya, to the same effect : of sending an engineer to construct the fort which H. M. has determined on on the Orinoco river. And, lastly, the records relating to the desertion of the three missionaries of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers of Orinoco, together with all the rest therein recorded and appearing. And that as the said instruments tend to better inform his Honor of the results of this visit, he ordered that this Notary shall file them with the second part of the record made up of the visit to Guayana, in order to submit to H. M. all the points they include, and that the said filing once carried into effect, both records be produced in order to provide and determine what may be advisable in

the premises regarding the report of said visit ; which measure has been delayed owing to the serious illness with which His Honor returned from the Province of Guayana to this city, and to the demands and calls occasioned by the late news of the English war and arming. And therefore His Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

“ ESPINOSA.

“ Before me—

“ DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“ Royal and Public Notary.”

---

*Page 143.*—EDICT.—“ In the city of Cumana, on the thirteenth day of the month of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Royal Armies, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces for the King our Master, having seen these records relating to the visit he made to the Presidio and Province of Guayana, new subjugations of Indians settled therein by the Reverend Capuchin Fathers from the Principality of Catalonia, assigned to the conversion of Orinoco, and the reconnaissance of this river from its mouth to Angostura, which duty His Honor performed in obedience to general Royal commands, and especially to the Royal Decrees—one dated in Pardo on the ninth of February of seventeen hundred and forty, and the instruction therein ordered to be followed, dated in Madrid on the third of December of seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, relating to the construction of a fort which H. M. has determined shall be built at the most convenient point on the banks of the Orinoco river ; and another, dated in Aranjuez, on the ninth of June of the said year of seventeen hundred and forty, relating to the existence of mines discovered in Guayana, and the assay made by command of H. M. in Spain, his Honor said : That pursuant to all therein contained and to what he personally saw on said visit, he ought to order and did order that as a result thereof, for the increase and maintenance of the conversion, defence of the castle, its greatest security, and the good government of the Province and the Indians

therein subjugated, and who may hereafter be subjugated, the following Articles shall be observed and obeyed, respected and executed: "

(Page 145.)—"1. Firstly, the Commandant, and, under his authority, the Licutenant of Royal Officers, are charged to assume command, and observe and cause to be observed (in so far as to each attaches) everything provided in this edict relating to the results of the visit, seeing to its punctual execution and observance, in so far as they may of themselves do, and giving a legal account of whatever the provisions or authority of the Superior Government needs to do for the Government of the Province, its inhabitants and missionary towns.

"2. His Honor, the Governor, having recognized in the drill and measurements of firings which were made at the time of the visit, that the greater part of the artillerymen are not expert, as they should be, in the management of the cannon and it not being just that they should receive pay without perfecting themselves in their own drill, there shall be two days' drill each month with the artillery pieces, loading them with stone balls, of which there is an abundance for the purpose on the road of the Missions, locating buoys and targets on the coast opposite the castle, and six shots shall be fired at each drill from the cannon of smallest caliber, for which purpose there are appropriated for the present one hundred pounds of powder, at the expense of the artillerymen themselves, which they should pay for, and which should be deducted from them to the credit of the Royal Treasury from the overplus of the pay they receive as such artillerymen, excepting Carlos Vertelot Santhiago Dupe, Geronimo Chanidin, and Juan Peres de Liendo, who, being experts, ought not to pay for the powder that may be thus used; but all must take part in the said drill and work, respecting which the gunner is charged to make known to each of the artillerymen, one by one, the sighting of each shot, and, finally, he shall inspect it, and, should it be necessary, correct it, and he shall explain and instruct each one who shall be found to be at fault." (It continues on this subject, which is not copied, as it has no bearing on the matter in hand.)

(Page 146.)—"Article 3. Whenever the invasion of an armed enemy is threatened, the militia company should be incorporated with the Royal force (as is provided), excepting such militiamen as are serving as escort in the Mission towns, and, if through omission, any should have neither arms nor ammunition, they shall be immediately provided therewith from the spare stores of the Castle, by delivering to the militia captain the number of muskets and the ammunition that may be necessary, under the condition and obligation to collect them and return them to the arsenal so soon as the invasion shall have been terminated, or to pay the value of whatever may be missing, to which end a receipt will be taken of the delivery whenever made.

"Article 4. And, as in case of alarm, some of the Indians of those settled by the Reverend Missionary Fathers are prone to become stirred up or to rebel, should this occur, and the latter report the same, requesting some reinforcement of Spaniards, they shall be furnished all possible assistance and detachments made up of the infantry and militia, provided, however, that there shall not be absent from the Castle, to insure its defence, seventy expert men of arms, to wit, the fifty inside the fort and the twenty on the hill which serves the Padrastro Fort.

"Article 5. The Commandant-at-Arms will take care, so soon as he has notice of enemies, to place a guard of four men at Puerto Real, under the guns of the Castle, which, through the proper sentinel, shall give warning of any movement, and in the same way uniting the militia with the infantry, he shall station the proper guards in the neighboring ports and anchorages, in order to gain prompt notice of any landing. And he shall also order that all along up the river the same shall be done by the Mission towns, which, on such occasions, are to be divided into guards and ambuscades, the Indians always commanded and directed by Spanish corporals from the infantry or militia garrisoning the Missionary towns—that is to say, in the case of invasion and when the Commandant-at-Arms requests men from the towns, and that the proper guard be placed on the river and on the land. The officers of the Indian towns shall cause the drum to sound and call the town

together, divide the people into three parts—one to remain therein, another to be divided into guards and ambuscades in its own district, and the third part, with two officers of the Indians, should march to the Castle, if called upon, where the Commandant-at-Arms will give them the necessary post, as one having knowledge of the invasion, seeing to it that all the Indians capable of bearing arms shall each, at once, and without the slightest delay, have his quiver with twenty-five arrows, and that any lack there may be of this weapon shall be blamed and charged to the Caciques, Governors, Captains, Sergeants-Major, and other officers of the Indian towns whose Spanish corporals of the escorts (provided that the enemy should be moving in any port or anchorage, or should cross the river by the district of their respective town) shall immediately notify the Castellan of the Royal fort, and if they are unable to write they shall give the said notice to the Missionary Father, whom the Indians call the Captain-Father, whom his Honor exhorts and requires in the name of His Majesty, and begs and requests in his own, to immediately send the notice in writing to the Commandant-at-Arms, in order that he may be in possession of all the proper information for the security of the land and opposition to the enemy, and may meet force with force and prevent the misfortunes and disturbances experienced in the last invasion, and no less in all the preceding ones, in a land by nature defended by the requisite ports, anchorages, and paths or roads by which it is not possible for enemies to introduce themselves unless it be by taking advantage of carelessness and of confusion.”

(Article 6 provides that the arms and munitions shall be in charge of the Commander of the Presidio. The 7th and 8th relate to military drills and reconnaissances along the Limones Channel, the place where the fort is to be constructed, and the 9th, 10th, 11th, and 12th, are instructions regarding the troops, which articles are not pertinent. Article 13 relates to the manner of occupying the lodgings, and the other articles up the 29th, inclusive, are not copied, as they are not pertinent.)

*Page 164.*—“Article 30. As regards measures to aid the infantry serving as escort to the Missions which the Reverend



Fathers of the Society of Jesus have founded and converted on the Orinoco, his Honor has given to the Father Procurator, Roque Lubian, all the necessary assistance, and has offered to approve whatever he may secure in the Provinces of this Colony ; yet, as his purpose in this respect has been based upon the finding of a party with the necessary goods, and the said Father Procurator has not found one, nor is it possible, because the goods consumed in that region are not to be found in these parts, and because the continual trade of the Caribs and Dutch by the Orinoco provides everything clandestinely without it ever being possible to discover the introducers, for, although within a few of months of this time two confiscations were effected, [one of more than one hundred mules and horses, and the other of various goods and clothing, when, failing to apprehend any of the offenders, although the infantry killed one of them at the time of the seizure,] the only thing learned was the fact of the exportation and introduction, without finding the guilty ones.

“And as on several occasions the galleons (although not obliged to) have sent, at the instance of the Governors, and especially of His Honor, goods and merchandise which they have lost on almost entirely, except soups, it is impossible to find in this colony persons to supply so small a demand in so distant a region, for the voyage and the expense are greater than between here and Spain, in which understanding and in that that the pay of the said escorts is in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, the capital of which is forty days distant from the Casanave Missions, at the furthest, the said Missionary settlements of the escorts should provide themselves with the pay assigned them in that Treasury, and with the goods and clothing in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and they may also do it from what may be found in these Provinces each year when the supercargo is sent for the allowance, as was done during this year by the said Father Procurator Roque Lubian, who was furnished all possible aid by His Honor.

“Article 31. As regards the injuries and damages occasioned by the Caribs in the Missionary towns, together with the rest set forth by the said Father Superior in his letters of June

twenty-third (which has not been found in the Secretary's office of the Government, and whose contents are learned through the copy transmitted by the said Father Procurator, Roque Lubian, in his vote in the Guayana meeting on the sixth of March, of seventeen hundred and forty-three) and twenty-eighth of November, of seventeen hundred and forty-two, and the three Royal Decrees, issued in San Ildephonso on the fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, and in Buen Retiro on the twenty-first of July, of seventeen hundred and thirty-nine—providing that no inroads or war shall be made upon the Carib Indians, and that escorts shall be furnished the Fathers employed on the subjugations, observing the other provisions of the Royal Laws—and the third relating to the Agreement as to territories between the Communities of Reverend Franciscan Fathers of this Province and of the Society of Jesus and Capuchins of Orinoco and Guayana, and prohibiting each from going beyond their respective territories, in conformity with the said Agreement approved by H. M., being worthy of all attention, His Honor commands they be copied, and that letters rogatory be sent, embodying them, to the Reverend Father Superior, Manuel Roman, with the recommendation that he give notice thereof and a copy, if desired, to the Supercargo that may be designated for the Kingdom of Santa Fé, in order that he obey and cause them to be obeyed, carried out, and executed in every respect, complying with the Royal will of H. M., to whose supreme authority, or to the Viceroy, as next in rank and nearer, his Reverence should apply for the increase of the escort which he wishes, so that if agreeable to the Royal will, his Catholic graciousness may grant what he may deem conducive to the service of both Majesties.

“The Father Superior together with all the Reverend Community should bear in mind that in the present state of war there can not be detached from these Royal forts (to which their respective Castellans have sworn) any men from their small details, as the castles would be totally exposed, and any Governor or Captain General would be subject to punishment who should detach the men without special command of H. M. or

the Viceroy to so distant a region, when in the meantime some of those remaining forces might be attacked and destroyed, without being able to unite with themselves for their defence the detached infantry in each detail, wherefore His Honor directs and requires in the name of H. M. and prays in his own name, and requests the said Father Superior, Manuel Roman, to adhere to the Royal Laws and the Royal Decrees cited, whereby the serious injuries his Reverence anticipates will be avoided, compelling the fisherman and other Mission Indians to fish and sow in their own Districts without trespassing on those of the Caribs, who defend them as if they owned them.

“Neither the former, nor the Fathers engaged in conquests ought to be permitted, carried away by their warm Catholic zeal, to invade the settlements, fisheries, or shores of the Carib Nation, to be sacrificed, although they may keep themselves in readiness to do so should His Majesty resolve that the subjugation be made by the force of arms, when (without the difficulties that many have exaggerated) the Caribs can be dislodged from Purney and Caura, which, however, should not be attempted without previous special Royal orders to that effect, owing to the serious obstacles now presenting themselves. And let the said Royal orders serve to regulate the request His Reverence made in the letter of June twenty-third of seventeen hundred and forty-two inserted in that of the Father Procurator Roque Lubian.

“32. His Honor extends thanks to the Reverend Father Superior and all the Reverend Community for the Apostolic zeal they manifest for the advancement of the conversions, not doubting (since it is publicly notorious) the abundant proofs that up to the present have been secured and are being secured. And in order to encourage the settlement which it is advisable at this time, and which H. M. desires, on the banks of the Orinoco, his Honor has reinforced the Missionary Communities of the Reverend Franciscan and Capuchin Fathers, so that they give return, as they are doing, by endeavoring to advance some settlements that shall go on connecting communications in order to accomplish so advisable a

consummation as that of dislodging the said Caribs from Purney and Caura, occupying their land with the forces, and insure, through the settlements, free communication with the Kingdom of Santa Fé. And for the indispensable fortification which H. M. has resolved shall be constructed on the Orinoco, the proper steps having been taken by his Honor with the assistance of Father Roque Lubian and of the oldest Fathers of the said Missionary Communities, and the oldest and most expert guides of the Orinoco, and of the said lands held by the Caribs, all the locations of said Missions will be reported to H. M. that he may determine whatever may seem best to His Royal pleasure."

*Page 166, reverse.*—"33. His Honor, in the name of H. M. extends thanks to the Reverend Father Commissary and members of the Advisory Board for the opportune selection of Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, and the reports which his Apostolic experience and zeal rendered in the meeting held in Guayana on the eighth of March of this year, worthy of the greatest attention so as to arrive at a full understanding.

"34. And as regards the resettlement of the Mamo site, it can not be attempted; nor is it advisable at this time, since, by the Royal Decree approving the Agreement, dated in San Ildephonso, on the sixteenth of September of seventeen hundred and thirty-six, while the Reverend Community of Franciscan Fathers understand that said District belongs to them, the Reverend Community of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers of Orinoco and Caroni river object, and claim it belongs to them, and the Fathers of the Society of Jesus claim that the site of Cabruta is within their boundaries. So that if these disagreements continue they will be considered, and H. M. will determine whatever may best accord with his Royal pleasure and service.

"35. His Honor agrees that for the present the Community of Reverend Fathers of Piritu shall engage itself, and continue its Apostolic zeal, in bringing about and founding on the most adaptable site a Spanish city near the mouth of the Pao river, and in its neighborhood one or two more Indian settlements, which settlements will be progressively connected with the

older ones, advancing towards the settlement which it is now advisable to have on the banks of the great Orinoco river, the highway and free communication of the Kingdom of Santa Fé. Looking also (whenever H. M. may so determine) to the dislodging of the Caribs from Purbey and Caura, and to the settling of those lands, by which means the whole of the Orinoco (excepting its mouths, which the strength of the Caribs occupy) will be tranquilized. To which end the Community of Reverend Missionary Fathers of the Society of Jesus, although with fewer evangelical workers, are notoriously contributing through their incessant labors and the advancement of their subjugations. And no less, the constancy of the Reverend Community of the Capuchin Fathers, which is at present engaged on the new settlement of Panacayos, ten leagues beyond the town of Divina Pastora, where it has its cattle herd, and very near the lands of the Caribs, in the neighborhood of the highway which leads from the latter to the Dutch Colonies. So that if the permanence of this settlement is secured (as we trust from the Apostolic zeal with which the Reverend Communities of Jesuit and Franciscan Fathers will make return, each in its own district) it will be, without doubt, a protecting wall and intermediary point which will facilitate the entry and conquest of the aforesaid lands of the Caribs of Purvey and Caura whenever H. M. may so determine; this conquest not being expedient until after H. M., being informed of what is advisable, shall issue the Royal command best meeting his pleasure and service.

“36. And as regards the settlement the said Reverend Franciscan Fathers purpose founding near Unare, on the Palma site, a settlement of only a few Indian families in several small bands, and of others, fugitives from the settlements, now living in the forest, his Honor does not agree to it at present until he is better informed, because by erecting a settlement or church in that locality it is thought that the natives of Piritu and Clarines, San Pablo and San Lorenzo assisting therein, and who contribute to the Royal Crown, will no longer settle in their towns, nor recognize the obligations of vicinage and contribution therein; and that should the case arise of retaking

with their aid the runaway slaves of Socorio to settle them in the said Palma, the former will only settle with them, and will claim exemption from the payment of tribute as a newly subjugated settlement, which fact will work to the injury of the Royal Treasury, which his Honor prohibits and can not authorize. This is corroborated more by the infallible consequence that the said four settlements and others of the Piritu Missions, the natives of which must relish liberty and will flock to the proposed settlement of Palma, will go on decreasing, and the said settlements being the largest situated on the coast, and which defend the ports of the jurisdiction, ordinarily affording anchorage to piratical and trading vessels, they should not be permitted to go far from their vicinity; to which is added the common benefit afforded the Province of Barcelona by the preservation and increase of the said old settlements. It is not doubted that the Reverend Fathers and Community will bear in mind not to do anything that may destroy the vigilance and labors of the said Apostolic Missionaries, the incessant expense and labors with which the city of Barcelona and its inhabitants have given and are giving in return for the conquest thereof; and for their preservation and defence, the heavy expenses up to the present occasioned the Royal Treasury not being the least consideration—all circumstances which co-operate for the importance and preservation of the Missionary towns.

“37. And as regards the other settlements of Spanish cities and Indian towns set forth in his opinion by the Reverend Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez at the meeting held in Guayana on the eighth of March of seventeen hundred and forty-three, it appears worthy of the highest approval, to be followed as a plan and fixed idea, pursuant to which the conversions may be advanced progressively by founding some, in order that these may facilitate and encourage, according to the circumstances of the time, the founding of new ones, watching events, and advancing the settlements, that the strength, means, and number of Apostolic workers may permit. It is true that through the means proposed by his Reverence, the Reverend Communities of the Jesuit and Catalonian Capuchin

Fathers assisting within their own district (which ought not to be doubted), and the fort which H. M. has decided to build on the mainland, at the mouth of the Limones channel, being constructed (should H. M. so determine), the desired object of occupying the Purney and Caura lands will be achieved. These lands can now, or at any time, be cleared of Indians; but to retain them, both Missions should first make the subjugations of Indians and the necessary settlements, and subsequently secure the desired end of uniting these Provinces with the Kingdom of Santa Fé by free communication on the Orinoco, when its banks shall have been settled, and the other end of pacifying the diversity of docile Indians, which (excepting the Caribs) are considered easy to quiet and settle. Acting otherwise, any attempt to antagonize the said Caribs of Purvey and Caura by dislodging them and burning their towns and fields (no doubt existing as to the accomplishment thereof), as the troops undertaking the task should return to their Royal forts when the action is ended, the respective cities would be immediately exposed to become the sacrifice of the vengeance of the Caribs, and all the settlements of both Missions and the Reverend Communities of the Missionary Fathers to lose a part or all of what they have acquired.

“And in case the Reverend Advisory Board and Community of Franciscan Missionary Fathers have in view advancing some settlements at the present time, they will name priests or deputy priests who, appearing in this city with the necessary credentials, will confer with his Honor the Governor and agree upon whatever it may be determined to carry out, to which end his Honor will furnish all possible assistance.

“38. The Reverend Father Commissary will transmit at once to this Superior Government a succinct statement giving each priest, the place where each of the thirty-nine evangelical workers lately arrived from Spain is employed, specifying those serving in parishes, in schools, and those who are acting as coadjutors in each.

“And as his Honor has been informed extrajudicially that permission has been given to some of the lately-arrived Missionaries to absent themselves, or that their absence has been

quietly tolerated (to which no credit has been given as the Superior Government entrusted to his Honor lacks legal notice thereof), and as this would be an abuse meriting the greatest attention and remedy, his Honor hopes that the Reverend Father Commissary, at this time or heretofore acting, has not and will not hereafter grant any such permission without previous reports and consent of the Superior Government, as is provided in the Royal laws; for otherwise he will incur the Royal displeasure, and the Reverend Advisory Board can not fail to understand that if abuses are committed his Honor will be compelled to use the remedies the said Royal provisions may dictate.

“For, comparing the Royal provisions treating of such permits and the heavy cost and great zeal of the Royal Catholic piety with the waste of granting immediate leave to the said workers under a variety of pretexts, would be frustrate and render illusionary the end to which His Majesty has destined them, contravening the Royal laws and provisions and directly violating the will of the King.

“39. And in order that the said Royal provisions and ordinances, which include four Royal Decrees, shall be duly obeyed, his Honor orders that there be transmitted to the Reverend Father Commissary of the Piritu Missions exemplified copies thereof, to wit: The first, given in San Ildephonso on the fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight; the second, in Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, providing that no invasions or war be made on the Carib Indians. The third, issued in Aranjuez on the third of May, of seventeen hundred and forty-one, regarding the dependencies which the Reverend Fathers of the Society of Jesus of the New Kingdom of Granada have of the Missionary settlements on the banks of the Orinoco river, in order that, informed of these Royal resolutions, they may continue (as they are doing) to carry out the Royal Will of H. M. And the fourth, relating to the Agreement as to the territories of the Communities of Reverend Franciscan Fathers of this Province, and the Jesuits and Capuchins on the Orinoco in Guayana, so that none of them



shall go beyond or make any change in their respective territories, obeying the Agreement cited, approved by H. M., in which connection his Honor orders that (inserting everything provided for the Reverend Franciscan Missionary Fathers in this edict on the results of the visit, and the said four Royal Decrees), letters rogatory be sent to the Reverend Father Commissary demanding, on the part of H. M., and requesting and praying on his own, that he proceed to carry them out, and that the letters be delivered to the Father Procurator, Friar Alonzo Rubio, that he may place them in the hands of his Prelate.

“ 40. Thanks are extended in the name of H. M. to the Very Reverend Father Prefect, Friar Augustin de Olot, and the Assistant Judges of his seigniority for the skill with which he has proceeded with a Reverend Community, to the spread of the settlements of regenerate Indians, for the good education thereof, and for the fair condition in which his Honor has found the settlements, praying them to continue their ardent zeal as they have up to the present, notably the said Reverend Father Prefect, Father Friar Benito de Moya, and Friar Thomas de Santa Eugenia, founders of those Missions. In the same way his Honor in the name of H. M. requests and prays that they advance the new settlement of the Panacayo nation, and, as it is an outer defence for the Missions, and so far from the other settlements that it requires a two days' journey, it would be well for its Reverend Fathers to facilitate the founding of one or two more settlements in the distance between those already founded and the Panacayos, or induce the latter (as his Honor conferred and agreed with the Reverend Father Prefect), to move their settlement as near as possible to the older Missionary settlements, to the end and effect that they may be aided during invasions, and to secure, as is advisable, that outer protection ; and, settling further on, in time, the highway travelled by the Caribs of Purvey and Caura to reach the Dutch Colonies over said lands, can be cut off ; in view of the fact that closing the Orinoco with the fortifying of the Limones Channel it will be of the greatest importance to cut off the said land highway which, although long, they travel.

“ And then it may be expected that the Caribs of Purvey and Caura, being thus entirely prevented from communicating with those at the mouths of the Orinoco, the former will withdraw and abandon the lands, which may then be settled by the Reverend Franciscan Friars, to whom it seems they belong pursuant to the Agreement approved by H. M.; and in the meantime his Honor orders that there be sent to the said Reverend Father Prefect and Assistant Judges, exemplified copies of the four Royal Decrees, the first given in San Ildephonso, on the fourteenth of October, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight; the second in Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, providing that no invasions or war be made upon the Carib Indians. The third, issued in Aranjuez, on the third of May, seventeen hundred and forty-one, regarding the dependency which the Reverend Fathers of the Society of Jesus of the New Kingdom of Granada have on the banks of the Orinoco river, so that informed of these Royal resolutions they shall continue (as they are now doing) to carry out the Royal will of H. M.; and the fourth, relating to the Agreement as to territories between the Communities of Reverend Franciscan Fathers, Missionaries of this Province and the Jesuits and Capuchins on the Orinoco in Guayana, so that both shall not go beyond or make any change within their respective territories, carrying out the Agreement cited, approved by H. M.

“ 41. Letters rogatory shall also be sent, in the name of H. M. (requesting that he make them known and furnish a copy thereof, if required, to the Lieutenant of Royal Officers), to the Reverend Prefect, requesting and praying him for the necessary work on the castle and fortifications of Guayana, quarters for the garrison, and houses for the residents, to furnish the Indians from the Missionary towns to serve as the necessary laborers, to which end there have been added to the tariff rates the amounts which, for the present, it appears just should be paid for each day's work. And that at times of invasions, and other matters concerning the Royal service and the maintenance of these fortifications, the Reverend Fathers co-operate in order that all the Caciques, Governors, officers of

the Indian settlements and militiamen obey the orders of the the Captain and Castellan or Commander of Guayana, furnish at their call armed men, and also provide the food-supplies that may be requested in the necessary cases, which will be paid for with preferences from the allowances, provided the delivery of such supplies is evidenced by the receipt of the Lieutenant of Royal Officers and, in the absence thereof, of the party empowered to provide supplies.

“And that, likewise, the officers and soldiers going to the Mission towns by order of the Commandant, or on leave, be prohibited from trading with the Indians, to provide themselves with all the necessaries for their maintenance, without compelling them for the purpose to be locked up in the Curate’s or in the Government house on supposititious grounds, out of which have grown many complaints and inconveniences, especially since it is advisable that there should be communication between the Spaniards and the Indians, by which means that which is so desirable, and friendship between both, is facilitated. And in order to remove all apprehension on such occasions, the soldiers may be accompanied by an Indian officer, and whenever one of the latter may feel himself offended he shall resort to the Commandant at Arms, who shall apply speedy remedy and act with proper justification, failing to do which, and not reporting to his Honor, the latter will take the steps he may deem advisable; it being by no means regular, through surreptitious and artful apprehensions, to render impossible and prevent the maintenance of a garrison locked up in a castle, when the settlements the letter defends abound in all kind of edibles and the tariff and prices established, which are published, are so well considered that the major part thereof exceed the prices at which the Indians usually sell or barter; but it should not be permitted or tolerated in any way that, through locking up those who go to seek their necessaries, any raise or change in prices shall ensue, and, in consequence the impossibility of the said garrison providing itself. And it being the case that this does not occur in all the settlements, it should be remedied wherever the abuse is practiced, and the Commandant at Arms shall remedy any abuse,

in the understanding that if he fails so to do he will incur a serious charge.

“42. Experience having shown that some of the Fathers of Mission towns refuse to allow the Indians to furnish the indispensable guides from one settlement to another at times when the Commandant at Arms sends letters or orders relating to the Royal service, or the distribution or execution of those he receives from the Superior Government; by reason of which many, or the greater part, have not been properly executed as the carriers of the orders, being ignorant of the paths and roads, get astray and are lost, and consequently the purposes of any order or provision are frustrated, therefore his Honor orders: That the Cacique, Governor, Major, Captain, or officer of any of said Indian towns, who may be called upon by the officer or party travelling with orders from the Castellan or Commandant at Arms to furnish him with a guide at any hour of the day or night, shall furnish the same at once, not permitting that the orders shall be frustrated, detained, or suffer the slightest delay, under penalty of two years' imprisonment on short allowance and without pay in the castle of Guayana for every one acting in violation hereof. The furnishing of such guides in the necessary cases being at the expense of the towns themselves, without claiming any pay therefor, since the garrison which protects the Royal fort and all the land has only to do with the defence thereof, and this, or the Royal Treasury, ought not to be taxed with the unnecessary expense of such guides, especially when the Indians themselves do not object to serving; and owing to the necessity that orders shall be forwarded and executed, we pray and request each and all of the Mission Fathers to order, assist, and not prevent, the Indian officers from furnishing the said guides on the necessary occasions, thus aiding the Royal service.

“43. And considering that the Reverend Father Prefect has designated a Chaplain and his appointment has been made, his Honor trusts that hereafter there will be no lack of spiritual nourishment for the garrison and city of Guayana, to which end, his Honor having conferred with the Vicar Superintendent

of these dependencies, Don Phelipe Martinez, he has consented to give permission *ad interim* to the person appointed by this Government and designated by the Rev. Father Prefect, while administering the holy Sacraments to the garrison, to also serve as Rector for the vicinage, that there may be no lack of sacraments, sepulture, and suffrage for the dead."

Page 178.—" 44. (Commission for the allotment of lands and building lots.)

"And considering that by Royal law number one, Title 12, Book 4, of the new abridgment of these Indias, it is declared to be the Royal will that there may be and be allotted houses, building lots, and lands to such as may go to settle new lands in the towns and places which by the Government of the new settlement may be designated, and in obedience thereto, that founded at the Presidio of Guayana after the invasion being in fact a new settlement, because the one previously existing there was destroyed by fire during the invasion, it has been thought more advisable for its safety and durability to place it within cannon-shot of the castle where it now is, the necessary orders to that end were issued. And in Article 13 of this edict it is ordered that there be allotted to its inhabitants, lots for houses, and lands for their fields, leaving, as is the custom, the pastures and water rights in common, without prejudice to any other lots and lands which (pursuant to the Royal orders) may have been distributed. And in order that said allotment may be made his Honor entrusts it to the Lieutenant of Royal Officers of the said Presidio, whom he commissions and fully empowers thereunto; and he orders that in the exercise of this authority he shall append the allotments he may make at the end of the exemplified copy of this edict which it is ordered be transmitted and published in said Presidio so that the right of the settlers to said lots and lands allotted may always be of record, which settlers, provided they resort to this Tribunal of Government after the expiration of the four years demanded by law subsequent to the entering into possession of the new settlement, will be furnished the necessary deed in fee.

(Bottom)—" 45. And, lastly, his Honor orders that after the

transmitting of the letters rogatory to the Reverend Fathers Superior of the Communities of Missionaries of the Society of Jesus, Franciscans, and Catalonian Capuchins of the Orinoco, the proper dispatches be sent to the Governor of the castle and Province of Guayana, and the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, inserting this edict on the results of the visits, in order that, filing the same with the books and papers of the Royal Auditor's office they may serve them for the present as a guide for their information and obedience in so far as to each attaches, and that they return evidence of their receipt and of the publication of the rates of the tariff. And that, likewise, a full exemplified copy be made of this edict and be sent to the officials of the Royal Treasury in order that they may comply therewith in every respect and cause the same to be obeyed and executed until such a time as H. M., in view of the visit and the provisions of its results, shall determine whatever may best meet his Royal pleasure and service with respect to the former, and the building of the fort and other dependencies mentioned therein. Wherefore, his Honor, as the results of his visit, so provided, ordered, and signed; to which I certify.

“DON GREGORIO DE ESPINOSA.

“Before me—

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“Royal and Public Notary.”

---

*Page 179.*—“In the city of Cumana, on the twenty-fourth day of the month of May, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, before me, the scrivener in the Secretary's office of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, the Reverend Father Friar Alonso Rubio, of the order of St. Francis, Procurator General of the conversion of Indians and Mission schools of Piritu, received from my hands the letters rogatory which by the foregoing edict were ordered to issue for his Prelate, the Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu, which I delivered to the said Father Procurator, covering eighteen written leaves, who, in testimony of their actual

delivery and of his assuming charge of the said letters rogatory, signed this; to which I certify.

“FRIAR ALONZO RUBIO.

“Before me—

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“Royal and Public Notary.”

---

“On the fifteenth of June of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, I issued an exemplified copy of the preceding edict on the results of the visit to the Province of Guayana, to the officials of the Royal Treasury of this Province, covering forty written leaves, who received the same, and in testimony thereof they signed this; to which I certify.

“MARTINEZ.

“DE URBANEJA.

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“Royal and Public Notary.”

---

“In the city of Cumana, on the twenty-second day of the month of June of seventeen hundred and forty-three, his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General, said: That whereas he is sending an expedition to the Presidio of Guayana, which he is getting in readiness for the twenty-sixth instant, and as one Joseph de Pro González, a soldier from said Presidio, goes therewith, and he, this expedition going by land, having to pass by the new settlement of Aragua, whence there is trade and road to Cabruta, the settlement where the Reverend Father Bernardo Botella of the Society of Jesus is stationed, therefore his Honor orders that the letters rogatory, which in the edict on the results of the visit it was provided should be sent to the Reverend Father Superior of the Jesuit missionaries of Orinoco, through the Supercargo of the Presidio of Guayana, and considering that the said letters are already issued, and the delay in the leaving of the said Super-

cargo—which can not take effect until February of next year—be taken by the said Pro Gonzalez to the Lieutenant of the said settlement of Aragua, in order that the latter shall transmit it closed and sealed, by mail carrier, to the said settlement of Cabruta to be delivered to the said Father Botella, whose receipt he shall return, and by whom (Gonzalez) shall also be sent the despatches intended for the Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchins of Guayana, praying and requesting him to observe, in so far as attaches to his office, what is ordered in the said edict on the results of the visit, and for the Captain Castellan, and Lieutenant of Royal Officers of the said Presidio, inserting the said edict; and by this he so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

“ESPINOSA.

“Before me—

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“Scrivener of the Governor’s Office.”

“NOTE.—By Rufino Diaz, a soldier of the Presidio of Guayana, were transmitted the despatches ordered to be sent by the edict on the results of the visit to the Commandant and Lieutenant of Royal Officers of the Presidio of Guayana, and to the Reverend Father Superior of the Jesuits of Orinoco, being delivered to him in Cumana on the twenty-ninth of June of seventeen hundred and forty-three. And also the rogatory letters to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchins of Guayana. The said Rufino goes with Joseph de Pro Gonzalez.

“ALCALA, Notary.”

---

*Page 181—*(Reply of the Father Commissary of Piritu to the letters rogatory.)

“Friar Salvador Romero, of the regular order of Our Father St. Francis, Preacher General, Curate, Teacher of the town of La Purísima Concepción de Piritu and San Antonio de Clarines, and Commissary of these Missions and schools, says: That in view of the letters rogatory from the Governor and Captain General of this Province of Cumana, dated on the



twenty-fourth of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, of which we have been apprised, and which are of the tenor following :

“ ‘ I, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Nueva Audalucia, Nueva Barcelona, and Guayana, their coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, etc., make known to the Very Reverend Father Friar Salvador Romero, of the regular order of St. Francis, Curate by the Royal patronage of the pure and clean Concepción de Piritu and San Antonio de Clarines, and Minister Commissary of the Venerable Community of the other schools and conversions of the said order in this Province, that in view of the records made up of the visit to the Province of Guayana and the Orinoco River, and of what I personally saw, I have issued, as a result of said visit, an edict, whose heading, foot, and the articles therein referring to the Reverend Father Commissary, his community, conversion, and the Royal Decrees relating thereto, all chronologically set forth, are verbatim of the tenor following : ’ ” (Page 182.)

(The heading of the edict and Articles 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, and 45, or the foot of the edict, are not copied, so as to avoid repetitions.)

#### **Copies of the Royal Decrees cited in the Edict.**

##### *First Royal Decree—(Page 189.)*

“ The King. To the Governor and Captain General of the Province of Cumana :

“ In a letter of the twenty-ninth of July of the year seventeen hundred and thirty-seven Friar Miguel de Marchena, Procurator General of the Missions of the Province of Guayana, includes another from Friar Angel de Olot, in which they represent, among other things, the great affliction and pain the missionaries suffer through the serious injuries and damages they experience by reason of the continuous invasions of the Carib Indians, and much more because of the repeated invasions you have made with armed men against

the said Indians, neighbors of the Missionaries, with whom they have maintained peace, by treating them with affection. And the Missionaries, fearing that by such invasions the said Indians will fall upon the towns given up to the Mission and destroy them and take life (the said Friar Angel de Olot, adding that two priests of the same order, named Friar Joseph de Zeron and Friar Miguel de Mataro, having landed at the port of Cumana at the time when the epidemic of black vomit was raging, there being a great lack and need of Ministers to give spiritual and temporal aid to those suffering from the malady, felt themselves called upon, under such urgent circumstances, to nurse them for the period of four days, and they died of the same disease, amid general sorrow for such fervent men, who gave an example by their death to all the residents of that settlement), for which reason he asks that measures be taken.

“And having been considered in my Council of the Indias, together with the opinion of my Attorney General, it has been found that by law nine, title four, book three, of the Abridgment I am advised that war can not and must not be made on the Indians of any Province, so that they may not resist the holy Catholic faith, but give obedience; it being also provided by law ten of the same title and book that no Governor, Lieutenant, or ordinary Alcalde can send armed men against the Indians to subjugate them, or under any other pretext whatever, under pain of loss of office and a fine of two thousand *pesos* for my Royal Chamber, wherefore I have resolved to command you (as I do), that pursuant to the said Royal laws, you abstain from and do not execute any invasion against the said Carib Indians in the neighborhood of the said Mission, especially when they are not the cause of the deaths, robberies, hostilities, or any act which should precede war; in which latter case it is provided that war should be made upon them with notice to the said Council; and not having given it of the war you made on the said Indians, I warn you in order that, as I command, you abide in everything by the said laws, and that for no reason you violate them, this being advisable for the tranquility of the Indians subject to our

holy faith; and your full understanding hereof, for its observance, you will report to me at the first opportunity.

“Done at San Ildephonso on the fourteenth of October, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Miguel de Villanueva. And at the foot of the said Royal Decree there are three flourishes indicating signatures which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council of these Indias.”

*Second Royal Decree—(Page 191).*

“The King. My Governour and Captain General of the Province of Cumana.

“Friar Francisco del Castillo, of the order of St. Francis, Procurator General and Missionary of the new conversions of Piritu Indians, and other nations of that Province, has represented to me that at the instance of the Procurator General of the order of the Capuchins of the Missions of the Province of Guayana, I was pleased to command you by decree of October fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, to omit invasions of the forests against the Caribs, owing to the great inconveniences and ill consequences which would result to the said Missions under their charge; and that as the expression ‘make no invasions’ may work to the prejudice of the settlements under the care of the Capuchins, it may bring worse results to my Royal service and the missionaries of St. Francis, as they have there under their charge three new Mission towns of Carib Indians, which nation is so captious and audacious that with this pretext instead of increasing the number of souls in the said towns, they will diminish or be wholly lost, returning to their unbelief, he prays me to be pleased to declare that the expression ‘invasions’ be understood as meaning that the Governors can not make them to punish or make war on them, but that the evangelical missionaries may go in to subjugate and settle them in the customary manner, the said invasions being ordered by the Jesuit, Capuchin, and Franciscan missionaries; for they only address themselves to God’s and my service.

“ And this petition having been considered by my Council of the Indias, with the opinion of the Attorney General, and it being borne in mind that in the said Decree of the fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, I commanded you to abstain from and not execute any invasion whatever against the said Carib Indians, pursuant to the provisions of law nine, title four, book three, of the Abridgment, and law ten of the same title and book, which prohibited any war being waged against the Indians of any Province, so that they may thus receive the holy faith, save when they execute hostilities, when it is provided war shall be made upon them by giving notice to my Council, it has been considered well to now declare (as by these presents I do in order to remove any doubt that may arise in the premises), that what is provided in said laws only prohibits warlike invasions with armed men against the Indians, to subdue them ; but does not prohibit the invasions the missionaries should make in the customary manner for the subjugation and conversion of the heathens to the holy Catholic faith, attracting them thereto by the gentle means of peace, which I have wished to say to you in order that you may so understand in any cases that may arise.

“ Done at Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, of seventeen hundred and thirty-nine. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Francisco Campo de Yrbe. And at the bottom of this Royal Decree are three flourishes, indicating signatures which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council of these Indias.”

*Third Royal Decree.*

“ The King. Brigadier Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Governor and Captain General of the city of Cumana :

“ Diego Terreros, of the Society of Jesus, Procurator-General of the Province of the New Kingdom of Granada, has represented that by my Royal Decrees of the seventeenth of February, of the year sixteen hundred and eighty-three ; October first, of sixteen hundred and ninety-two ; February first, of ninety-three, and tenth of May, seventeen hundred and sixteen, are

declared my Royal will and most ardent desire for the spread of the Catholic faith on the banks of the Orinoco and its vicinity, through the provisions therein contained aiming at the advancement of the Missions that your said Province has under within it, situated in the neighborhood of the said river. That his sect can not efficaciously co-operate in the accomplishment of my pious desire because of the non-observance of the provisions of two of the said Decrees—of the tenth of May of the year seventeen hundred and sixteen, in which I commanded the furnishing of an escort of thirty-six soldiers for the safety of their missionaries, and, if necessary, the addition of more thereto, and that to each priest engaged in the said Missions there be paid, for his maintenance, two hundred *pesos* a year in the goods I designated, the case being that although in his said Province (outside the Orinoco) he has the districts of Casauabe and the Meta river, for which seventy soldiers are needed, there are not in the whole three districts thirty-six, wherefore it is impossible to advance the conquest, nor can the Jesuits live in said districts without being exposed to the evident risk of their lives and to the destruction of the Missions, as has happened on several occasions. And he adds that although his said Province has ten priests engaged in these Missions he has not succeeded in having the said stipend of two hundred *pesos* a year paid to more than eight of them.

“ For which reason, and because there is considerable delay in the payment of the stipend as well as of the salary of the soldiers, although their pay is placed in the alms in the Bull of the Holy Crusade of the districts of the city of Tunjar and Llanos, and it is ordered that in case this be insufficient to pay all, the same be paid from the demurrages and duties of the Mayor’s office of Llanos and Chita, and if these be insufficient it be done from my Royal *novenos* of Santa Fé, which has not been done, there springing from this non-observance of my Royal intention the said injury to the Missions, and the inability to secure the desired fruit from the conversion of that extensive heathenism—the said Procurator, Diego Terremos, prayed me to command a repetition of the said Decrees, relating to the pay of the soldiers that may be necessary, and

that, adding twelve to the thirty-three designated, they be paid by the said branches of my Royal Treasury, whereby they should be paid promptly, as also the two hundred *pesos* a year to each of the missionaries, without the reduction to eight made by the officials in Santa Fé, whenever it may appear by certificate of the Governor of the District and Superior of the Missions that they are laboring in the conversion of the heathens. And, also, that wealthy men of all the Provinces near the said river be urged to found colonies on the banks thereof, offering them the honors and premiums that may be deemed proper, owing to the great expediency of this measure for the easier and briefer subjugation of the Indians.

“And having been considered in my Council of the Indias, together with the opinion of my Attorney General, bearing in mind the Decrees cited, and that by another of the twenty-third of February of the year seventeen hundred and thirty, I commanded the then President of the *Audiencia* of Santa Fé, and the Royal Officials of that Treasury, that they see to it that with the intervention of the Commissary, Subdelegate of Crusade of that city, there be paid the salaries of the soldiers stationed at these Missions, as well as that which in the way of subsistence was designated to each of the missionaries from the alms of the Bull of the Districts nearest these Missions; and that by an exemplified copy which this party has presented the necessity appears of adding twelve soldiers for the security of the missionaries, as in fact, Don Rafael de Eslava, being President of the *Audiencia*, in the year seventeen hundred and thirty-three, ordered be done, I have commanded that the said Procurator Diego Terreros apply to my Viceroy of the said New Kingdom of Granada in order that as regards the payment of the salaries of the soldiers and missionaries, as well as the increase of the latter and the soldiers for the safety of said Mission, he obey and carry out what was commanded by my above-cited Royal Decrees.

“And I have likewise resolved to command my said Viceroy (after informing himself of all these facts) to report to me whatever occurs to him, not only with respect to the matter of the progress of these Missions and the increase of workers men-

tioned, but also with regard to the number of soldiers that for the better safety and defence of said Missions ought to be added; and that in case he deems it convenient to have colonies founded on the banks of the Orinoco, he give his attention and care to that end, informing persons assisting in its accomplishment that they will be granted all those honors and rewards customarily granted to settlers, mentioned in title six, book six, of the Abridgment, according to the merit of each.

“By reason of all of which I have resolved to advise you in order that, informing yourself of the condition of these Missions and their situation, you report to me (as I command you) whatever may occur to you in regard to the matter of their progress and the increase of workers and soldiers requested for their greater security; and that if you consider it advisable to found colonies on the banks of the said Orinoco river, you attentively and carefully see to it that persons of means undertake the task, informing them that they will be given the rewards granted to settlers, as provided by law, in proportion to the merits of each, and you will do so, reporting the results to me at the first opportunity.

Aranjuez, on the third of May of seventeen hundred and forty-one. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Miguel de Villanueva. And at the bottom of this Royal Decree appear three flourishes indicating signatures, which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council.”

#### *Fourth Royal Decree.*

“The King. Whereas Friar Francisco del Castillo, of the order of St. Francis, prior and Apostolic Missionary of the new conversions of Piritu, Palenque, Guarive, Cumanogoto, and Carib Indians, and other heathens of the Province of Cumana, has represented to me that there was concluded and executed in the city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on the twentieth of March of seventeen hundred and thirty-four, an agreement by the missionaries of the said order of St. Francis, the Jesuits and Capuchins residing in the Missions and conversions on the banks of the Orinoco river, with the intervention

of Don Carlos Sucre, my Governor of the said Province of Cumana, through which agreement, setting forth that the said holy men of the order of St. Francis had subjugated by the fervor and zeal of their preaching a great number of Indians, and formed with them twenty-two settlements, including the religious schools, on this bank of the Orinoco river, where they entered to exercise their Apostolic purpose pursuant to my Royal license, and there not remaining there any more Indians to convert, wishing to satisfy their indefatigable desire, the said missionaries stipulated and agreed with the Capuchins and Jesuits to allow them to preach and spread the Holy Gospel on the other side of the said river, designating among each other the locality where they were, without confusion, to practice their holy calling; and in order that what was agreed upon by and between the said three sects may be perpetually firm and binding, he requested me to be pleased to confirm in every respect the said agreement, the tenor of which is as follows: ”

*Agreement. (Page 198.)*

“ ‘In the city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on the twentieth day of the month of March of the year seventeen hundred and thirty-four, Colonel Don Carlos Sucre, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces and that of Dorado, and the others discovered and to be discovered on the Orinoco river, of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, their coasts and Presidios for the King our Master, summoned and brought together in this Government house, residence of his Honor, the Reverend Father Joseph Gumilla, of the Venerable Society of Jesus, Superior of the Jesuit Missions of this Orinoco; the Very Reverend Father Friar Agustin de Olot, Prefect of the Capuchin Mission, situate on the said Orinoco; the Reverend Father Friar Thomas de Santa Eugenia, Friar Antonio de Vargas, and Friar Benito de Moya, of the said holy order of Capuchin Apostolic missionaries; the Very Reverend Father Friar Francisco de las Llagas, of the regular order of our Father Saint Francis, and President of the Mission of the missionaries of Piritu, and the Rev. Fathers Friar Francisco



Rodriguez de Ledesma, Friar Mathias Garcia, Friar Lorenzo Algaba, and Friar Bernardo Camacho, of the regular order, and Apostolic missionaries of the conversions of Piritu.

“And their Reverencies being met and congregated together, his Honor proposed and said to them: That being about to cross over to this Province from that of Cumana, not only because of the news of the disturbance of the peace committed by the Carib Nation to the great spiritual ruin of the converted Indians and desecration of the temples, but in the execution of some Royal commands, and being informed of the large number of Indians there is to be converted on this Orinoco, of divers and different barbarous nations inhabiting its territories; in view of the Royal authority granted by His Majesty (God preserve him) to the Reverend Franciscan Fathers, missionaries of Piritu, for the conversion of the Caribs of this Orinoco, and there being a very great abundance of this territory, and much heathenism therein to be converted to the fold of the Church; being apprised of the lack of workers for the purpose on this said Orinoco, and recognizing also the great fervor in the propagation of our holy Catholic faith of the missionaries of Piritu, and that they had not on the other side of the Orinoco (there being no Indians there) a field to work, owing to the great spread of their conversions, and because all those living on the other side of the said Orinoco have been settled in twenty towns they have founded, with those already consecrated to the Catholic religion and living in the Evangelical law; in order that the Royal will may be carried out by the increase of the conversions, and that the said Reverend missionary Fathers of Piritu may have where to exercise their Apostolic zeal, he determined to bring with him the said Reverend Father Friar Francisco de las Llagas with his four companions, so that for the better service of both Majesties there be designated by the said Very Reverend Father Joseph Gummilla and the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, territories where they may on their part spread the preaching of the Holy Gospel and labor in the vineyard of the Lord according to their calling.

“Which being heard by the Reverend Jesuit and Capu-

chin Fathers, they counselled and conferred thereon for a long time, and having reflected on the case and what was the most advisable thing to do, they agreed and stated that for the best service of both Majesties it was necessary and very expedient to designate territories for them, to gain time in the conversion and saving of souls, and they said unanimously and of one accord that they designated, and at once did designate, for the said Reverend Franciscan Friars, present and future, that they may establish and found whatever settlements they could in this part of Guayana, from Angostura, on the Orinoco up as far as the banks on this lower side of the Cuchivero river, making a straight line from the banks of the said Orinoco to the Marañon, or Amazon; the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, to encourage their conversions, remaining with the territory and district lying between the said Angostura and the principal mouth of the said Orinoco, down stream, where the missionaries joining them will distribute themselves; and the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, from the banks of the upper part of the said Cuchivero river, all the rest of the Orinoco, going always up, and all limits or boundaries in a straight line from the Orinoco to the Marañon, or Amazon.

“Which, having been heard and understood by the said Reverend Franciscan Fathers, they unanimously and of one accord, said that once, twice, thrice, and as many times as may be necessary, for themselves and in the name of their Prelate, the Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu, Friar Francisco Rodriguez, and the other missionaries of the said conversion of Piritu, present and future, they accepted and they did accept the said territory so designated for them, and with demonstrations of humility and gratefulness they extended repeated thanks to the said Reverend Father Superior and Prefect and the other Capuchin Fathers, each regarding the other and promising themselves great increase of Christianity through the medium of so much union and fervor.

“After which they agreed, and said unanimously and of one accord, that in order to prevent difficulties in the future that might disturb the peace they desire to maintain, that they establish, and from the moment stipulate and agree, that

whereas there are several Indian Nations within the limits designated, they declare that as regards the conversion of said nations so situated within the limits, it is to be free for him who most labors in its advancement; so that, without excepting any nation, each Mission may, on its own part, convert and advance as many as it can of the nations within its limits; and the Indians once having been subjugated, they are to belong to the Mission of the sect subjugating them, without being allowed to pass to another; binding themselves reciprocally, should they do so, to always return them to their possession, which is established as a distinct article, to act contrarywise being prohibited now and forever—to which they agree.

“ ‘And his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General said that he approved, and did approve, this compromise, convention and agreement, and that he therein interposed and did interpose his authority and judicial decree that it may have force and effect now and at all times, and that in the name of the King our Master he extended thanks to the Reverend Fathers for the Apostolic zeal shown in the increase of the holy Catholic faith, and he ordered me, the scrivener, to furnish their Reverences with the exemplified copies they should request, and his Honor with those necessary to report to H. M.; and he signed it with the Fathers—to which I certify.

“ ‘DON CARLOS SUCRE.

“ ‘FRIAR FRANCISCO DE LAS LLAGAS,

“ ‘President of the Missions of the Orinoco.

“ ‘JOSEPH GUMILLA, *Societatis Jesus*.

“ ‘FRAY AGUSTIN DE OLOT, Prefect.

“ ‘FRIAR MATHIAS GARCIA.

“ ‘FRIAR FRANCISCO RODRIGUEZ DE LEDESMA.

“ ‘FRIAR LORENZO DE ALGAVA.

“ ‘FRIAR BERNARDINO CAMACHO BEDOYA.

“ ‘FRIAR BENITO DE MOYA.

“ ‘FRIAR ANTONIO BERGA.

“ ‘FRIAR THOMAS DE SANTA EUGENIA.

“ ‘Before me—

“ ‘DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,

“ ‘Royal Notary.’ ”

"And it having been considered in my Council of the Indias, with the opinion of my Attorney General, it has been resolved to grant this request, and to confirm and approve in every respect (as by these presents I do) the agreement aforesaid. Wherefore I command the Presidents and Associate Judges of the *Audiencias*, Governors, and Royal Officers of the jurisdictions to which the territories designated in the said agreement belong, and any other persons charged with the carrying out of the contents thereof, and I request and charge the Bishop or Bishops who may be respectively interested, and the Superiors of the three sects referred to, to observe, obey, and execute the same, and cause it to be obeyed and executed, without in any way contravening its contents, or part thereof, for such is my will.

"Done at San Ildephonso on the sixteenth of September of seventeen hundred and thirty-six. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Juan Bentura de Maturana. And at the bottom of the said Royal Decree appear three flourishes, indicating signatures, which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council of these Indias."

(*Bottom.*) " \* \* \* Pursuant to which, and in order that the Royal will expressed in the hereinbefore inserted Royal resolutions, as well as the others which his Honor took into consideration in preparing the provisions and orders resulting from the visit to the Presidio and Province of Guayana included in the edict aforesaid, may have effect, in the name of the King our Master I exhort and require, and on my part pray and request the Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu, that with respect to the duties of his office, he cause to issue and issue the proper instructions looking to its fulfilment, and do not consent to any act contrary in any degree to the tenor and form of the above inserted edict and Royal Mandates until H. M. (God preserve him), in view of the said edict, and of the rest of the said visit, which are to be transmitted to him, shall command whatever may best befit his Royal pleasure regarding the granting of such requests of the said Very Reverend Father Commissary.

“ Done in this city of Cumana on the twenty-fourth of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

“ GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

“ By order of the Governor and Captain General.

“ DIEGO ANTONIO ALCALA,

“ Scrivener of the Governor’s Office.”

(Page 204)—*Reply to the Contents of Article 34 of the Edict based on the Visit.*

“ To the First Article of the said letters rogatory, which is the thirty-fourth of the results of the visits to Guayana made by your Honor, I reply that by no means ought we to relinquish the sites of the Mamo and Cabruta which, as your Honor says in his letters rogatory, the Reverend Fathers of the Society of Jesus deny are ours, because both places were granted us, and we held possession thereof, and we only will desist from claiming them for settling when both Reverend Fathers make known to us a Royal resolution in their favor, contradicting our assertion, because if to prevent us settling them they rely on the Decree based on the Agreement made in Guayana, our right is very clearly set forth therein.”

*Reply to the 35th.*

“ To the Second Article of the said letters, the thirty-fifth of the Articles of said visit, I reply that, considering as a necessary and preliminary step the effort to secure the outer defence for the Indian settlements, which we earnestly desire to found on this as well as on the other side of the Orinoco with Carib Indians, and any other nation, we are earnestly taking the proper steps to accomplish our desires, so that some Spaniards may be settled wherever convenient for the said purposes and duty. We will, therefore, report to Y. H. when our purposes are more advanced.”

*Reply to Article 36.*

“ To the Third Article of the said letters and thirty-sixth of the Articles of said visit, I reply that we present in due form

VOL. III, VEN.—10

the Decrees in which our King and Master commands that in the locality of the plains there be founded some settlements of the fugitives from these Missions, which is what forces us to make the request while they live like abjurers of the Christian religion, which we regret inexpressibly, it not being our intention that these settlements shall be in disservice of the King our Master and the injury of his Royal Treasury ; but rather that, securing the spiritual welfare we earnestly desire, they may serve the King our Master paying tribute (should Y. H. so think just, which it is not our purpose to oppose) and guarding the coasts and other lands, and also serving as an outer defence, so that the loss of these settlements may not increase, which is the principal object, since the King our Master so determined."

*Reply to the 37th.*

"To the Fourth Article of said letters—the thirty-seventh of the Articles of the said visit—I reply that as up to the present, incurring the indispensable expense in the subjugation of the Indians and founding of settlements, we have spent what was necessary for human life which the King our Master gives us as alms, and other funds from benefactors, without doing any work or experiencing suffering, and have succeeded in preserving what has been done, as well as made progress in the conversions, so we will do in the future so long as there exists within us the desire for the greater increase of the Catholic fold."

*Reply to the 38th.*

"To the Fifth Article of said letters—the thirty-eighth of the Articles of said visit—I reply that whenever the priests may have to go out to perform the labors of the Apostolic task, it will be with the permission and consent of Y. H., and we shall appreciate greatly any suggestion or direction that in such case you may be pleased to give us through the experience or knowledge Y. H. may have of what is then to be undertaken."

*(Page 205.)—Reply to Art. 39.*

"To the Sixth Article of said letters—which is the thirty-ninth of the Articles of said visits—I reply that looking first

to the need of ministers which there was in some settlements ; second to the need that the greater number should be at places suitable for learning the languages of the Indians ; and third, and last, to the fact that the need is great, and that there should be a greater number of priests where they can best maintain themselves, they are stationed as follows :

“ First, in the Mission town and school of Piritu, the Very Reverend Father Preacher-General and Commissary of said Missions and schools, as Curate of said town, and its congregation by the Royal patronage.

“ In the town of San Antonio de Clarines, the Father-Preacher Friar Bartholome del Corral Zamora, as coadjutor of the said Very Reverend Father Commissary ; in the Missionary town and school of San Juan Evangelista del Tucyo, Father-Preacher Alonzo Hinestrosa, as Curate-Teacher of said town and its dependency, by the Royal patronage ; in the town of San Juan Capistrano del Purney, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Constuela, as coadjutor of said Father.

“ In the Missionary town and school of San Miguel de Araveniquar, the Reverend Father Preacher-General Friar Francisco Rodrigues Ledesma, as Curate-Teacher of said town, and its dependencies, by the Royal patronage.

“ In the town of San Francisco de Hueriguoquar, Father-Preacher Friar Martin Cuchillo, as coadjutor.

“ In the town of San Pablo de Materuco, Father-Preacher Friar Cristobal Martines, as coadjutor of said Reverend Father, and in company with the said coadjutor, Father-Preacher Friar Cristobal Lendines.

“ In the town of San Lorenzo de Guere, Father-Preacher Friar Antonio Borrego, as coadjutor, and in his company Father-Preacher Friar Antonio Caulin.

“ In the Missionary school and town of Nuestra Señora del Pilar de Guaimacuar and its dependency, Reverend Father Preacher-General Friar Francisco del Castillo, as Curate-Teacher, by the Royal patronage ; and in his company Fathers-Preachers Friar Francisco Serra, as coadjutor, and (for the said purposes) Friar Juan Ferreiro, Friar Lucas Magarinos, Friar Benito de Puentes, Friar Andres Galisteo, Friar Carlos

Tarina, and lay brothers Friar Alonso Calvo, and Friar Juan de la Asumpcion.

"In the town of Caigua, Father-Preacher Friar Antonio Carrillo, as coadjutor, and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Julian Garcia.

"In the Missionary town and school of San Bernardino de Huetequar, as Curate-Teacher, Father-Preacher Friar Bernardino Camacho, by the Royal patronage; in said town as coadjutor, Father-Preacher Friar Juan Velasques, and in company with these, Brother Marcos Francisco Esteves.

"In the town of San Joseph de Curataquiche and its dependencies, Father-Preacher Friar Thomas Velasques, as coadjutor; in the Missionary town and school of Nuestro Señor del Amparo de los Posuelos, as Curate-Teacher by the Royal patronage, the Rev. Father Preacher-General Friar Blas del Castillo.

"In the town of San Diego de Saviriquar, as coadjutor, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Moyano y Pinos.

"In the town of Nuestro Padre Santo Domingo de Aragua, as coadjutor, Very Reverend Father ex-Commissary Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez.

"In the Mission town of the Apostle San Matheo de Prepuntar, Father-Preacher Friar Pedro Gordero, and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Alonso Rubio.

"In the Mission town of Santa Rosa de Ocopi, Reverend Father Procurator-General Friar Joseph de Vega, as Missionary founder.

"In the Mission town of San Joaquin del Paril, as Missionary founder, Reverend Father Procurator-General Friar Fernando Ximenes.

"In the Mission town of San Buenaventura de la Margarita, as Missionary-Converter, Very Reverend Father ex-Commissary Friar Mathias Garcia.

"In the Mission town of Santa Ana de Anaco, as Missionary converter, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Nistal Yañez; and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Pedro Dias.

"In the Mission town of Santa Barbara de Curucay, Rev.



Father-Procurator-General Friar Fernando Matheos, as Missionary founder; and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Perez Carpallo.

"In the Missionary town of Nuestra Señora de la Candelaria de Chamanapa, Father-Preacher Friar Jeronimo Martin, as Missionary converter.

The answer to the seventh requisition, the fortieth article of the visit is, that in view, and with a formal knowledge of the temporal as well as the spiritual reasons advanced by some of the Reverend Fathers, we could not disregard them without dereliction of duty and neglect of the interest of the Royal Treasury in our charge. The reasons advanced by the Reverend Fathers were justified, and I can not disclose them, as it might involve a greater waste of funds; we became aware of their discomforts, and their entreaties in reference to what was considered detrimental to the King our Master, who continues reviving the allowances of alms granted for our support, and it seems that all those expenses, while unprofitable to the Royal Treasury, might disturb and weigh on our consciences, and that by granting the leaves requested the Royal Treasury was benefited, and the King our Master and your Honor duly served, as it is not to be expected that His Majesty should want to use any more funds than those absolutely necessary for the purpose of carrying on these Missions. The permissions granted to some Reverend Fathers to go to several Provinces of these Kingdoms, where the service of both Majesties might be promoted, without any further cost than what has been already incurred, were not in violation of the laws regulating the patents and orders of our most Reverend Fathers and General Commissaries of Indias, which are and must be approved by the Royal Council. And as I have adjusted my conduct to the laws of those patents and orders, when allowing the permissions already mentioned, there seems to be no fault to be found on either side. We are aware that a pass from your Honor is necessary for the Reverend Fathers when they intend going out of this Province; but the reasons, as I have already asserted, for granting the leaves were

satisfactory, and although I can not disclose them now to your Honor, I may do so verbally and extra-judicially if opportunity offers. I might have done so before, but I have not had a fitting occasion. However, in granting the leave for the reasons already mentioned, the Fathers were not precluded from taking, on their part, proper steps to secure the pass they ought to have obtained from your Honor.

“This being all Y. H. requests at this time, we comply with and obey gladly the orders set forth in the above inserted letters rogatory and Royal Decrees of H. M., compliance with which you demand (and which we ever wish to give), without any trespassing on our part or on that of the Reverend Jesuit or Capuchin Fathers of the other side of the Orinoco river, where, according to the said Royal Decrees, the said Reverend Fathers can say they have territory on which to found their Missions; because neither the Rev. Jesuit Fathers had any Royal authority to establish themselves in Cabruta nor have the Rev. Capuchin Fathers any way of preventing us from settling the Mamo; for we, having commenced and continued our missions since the year seventeen hundred and twenty-three (when Guayana was in every respect subject to the Government of the Island of Trinidad), and the said Reverend Capuchin Fathers having entered that country of the Mamo and the other lands on this side of the said river, it seems they can have no right by Royal authority of H. M. to said localities, and if either of said Reverend Fathers have such right, it appears they should have shown it, because if they rely on the said Decree based on the Agreement, the contrary is very clearly apparent therefrom.

“Wherefore, being, as we are, ready to execute the said Royal Decree and the others, as also, the express orders of Y. H. and as many as for the service of both Majesties you may be pleased to give us, you should be pleased to endeavor, in the manner that may seem most advisable to Y. H., to have the said Reverend Jesuit and Capuchin Fathers do likewise, without their invoking anything or interpreting the Royal provisions, in order to prevent (through a failure so to do, all of us acting against the Royal will of H. M.) our wasting time in quarrels,

which, aside from leaving a bad odor, must indubitably work a serious procrastination in the conversion of souls, to which we do not believe the great zeal and Christianity of Y. M. will give countenance, and we so hope.

"And this being done with the common consent of the Venerable Advisory Board of this Community, this paper is delivered the Commandant, Don Jeronimo Peres de Aguilera, Lieutenant and Chief Judge of the city of Nueva Barcelona, that he may transmit it to your Honor's hands, taking a receipt from the party to whom the said Don Jeronimo Peres de Aguilera may entrust it.

"Done in this Missionary town of San Bernardino de Gues-tequar, on the seventh of July, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

"FRIAR SALVADOR ROMERO,

"Commissary of Piritu.

"By command of the Very Reverend Father, Don Francisco Rodrigues Ledesma, Secretary.

"Cumaná, July twenty-second, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three."

---

*Decree.*

File this answer with the first part of the record of the visit to Guayana.

ESPINOSA.

---

To the Governor and Captain General. Friar Salvador Romero, of the regular Order of our Father St. Francis, Preacher-General, Curate-Teacher, and Apostolic Commissary of the Missions and schools of the Purisima Concepcion de Piritu.

Referring to the letters rogatory of Y. H., dated in Cumaná on the twenty-fourth of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, issued at the instance of this Holy Community to the effect that (pursuant to Royal provisions of the King our Master, which ought to be in the archives of Y. H.'s office, as they were laid before Y. H. in due form) there be founded

two or three settlements, in the portion of the plains, of the fugitive Indians from these Missions who are roving and almost apostate over said plains as well as over the valleys of the Province of Caracas; which Y. H. did not determine to do, desiring, as in said letters rogatory is stated, a clearer and further report, which I ought not to evade furnishing in order to secure the welfare of so many lost souls, and in compliance with the Royal will which is patent in the Royal decree, which I again insert herein, and which is of the tenor following:

“The King—(*Page 211*)—Reverend in Christ, Father Bishop of the Cathedral Church of San Juan de Puerto-Rico of my Council:

“Friar Francisco Rodriguez, of the order of St. Francis, Preacher and Apostolic Missionary of the new conversions of Piritu in the Province of Cumaná, has petitioned me, among other things which he has proposed for the better preservation and increase of the said Missions, relief and comfort of the sufferings of the missionaries and Indians thereof, to be pleased to command the retaking of all the Indians that have run away from the said Missions, and who may be found in the valleys or cattle ranches of the Government of Caracas, and that its Governor cause them to be restored at once to their proper domicil, where the greater part had left their women perishing, so that the Governor of Cumaná should found there-with two or three settlements in the best adapted locality of the plains, that they may serve as a restraint and obstacle to the flight of the Indians settled in the Missions, and as an aid to the priests in founding other settlements.

“And it having been considered in my Council of the Indias, together with what was written on the subject by Don Matheo del Maso, present Governor of the said Province of Cumaná, in a letter of the third of May of last year (seventeen hundred and thirteen), and the opinion of my Attorney General, it has been decided to command (as is done by dispatch of even date herewith) the said Governor of Caracas to issue the necessary orders to promptly restore to their proper domicil all Indians that may have fled from the said Missions of Piritu, who may

be found in the valleys or cattle ranches of that Government; and to command also the Governor of Cumana, that with the Indians so retaken there be founded two or three settlements in the most appropriate portion of the plains, that they may serve as a restraint and obstacle for the Indians settled in the Missions, and as an aid for the priests in founding new settlements, warning this latter Governor (as is done) to see to it carefully that the settlements established with the said class of Indians shall be carried on, and that the Indians be prohibited from running away, and in case they so do, to proceed to punish them as a warning to the others. Which I have wished to impart to you so that in view of the said provisions you may assist (as I pray and charge you) in the said purpose of making the settlements founded with the Indians permanent.

“Done in Madrid on the thirtieth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Señor Diego de Morales Velasco.”

In view of which, and of the rest I cite and is pertinent, Y. H. should be pleased to issue the necessary licenses so that said Royal commands may be complied with, and also to agree, in the manner your Honor may deem best, with the Governor of the said Province of Caracas, that he assist in so far as he is empowered in the accomplishment of said end which is so serviceable to both Majesties. Which I petition and request, so far as my duty allows, in the name of all this holy Community, assuring you that I am moved to make this petition by no one thing save the good of so many wandering souls and the great service it will do our King and Master, besides securing, through the settlements proposed (and which H. M. orders) a safe outer defence to prevent the continuance of the flight of these Indians, through which the Royal Treasury suffers no small loss. There is also secured for H. M. the service of the wanderers, giving return, as in other ways, by guarding the lands and coasts of this Province, in which we shall take special pleasure as true vassals, on which we pride ourselves, and the said Indians will secure the spiritual nourishment they lack, which pains us to the heart; which is what

impels us to molest Y. H. with this petition. And no less can the Indians of these settlements, who live in their cattle ranches (and it is irremediable, through the Royal laws granting you the right) easily secure the use of the sacraments, since the experience is that owing to the long distance to their settlements, and the obstacles interposed by the rains, they die each day without them. By reason of which, as such a Christian, I believe Y. H. will sympathize and will aid as far as possible in the consummation of what I wish, to which Y. H. will be pleased to give ear, protesting my obedience to the orders you may be pleased to give me.

Done in this Missionary town of San Bernardino de Guestequar, on the eighth day of July, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

FRIAR SALVADOR ROMERO,  
Commissary of Piritu.

By command of the Very Reverend Friar Prefect, Francisco Rodriguez Ledesma, Secretary of the Mission.

---

*Order.*

His Honor, the Governor and Captain General, having considered the foregoing petition, orders that it be attached to the first part of the records of the visit to Guayana, and that the Secretary of the Government search in the Archives and files of his office and the officials of the Royal Treasury in that of the Royal Auditor's office, and the Notaries of this city, each in the archives and files of his own office, for the Royal Decree inserted in the said petition, together with the presentation, orders, and action taken in pursuance thereof, and produce the same, in order that he may, pursuant thereto, render his decision in the premises.

His Honor, the Governor and Captain General, so ordered and signed in Cumaná on the twenty-second of July, of seventeen hundred and forty-three, on ordinary paper, the stamped paper having been exhausted ; to which I certify.

ESPINOSA.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.

Immediately thereafter I, the Scrivener, made known the foregoing order personally to the officials of the Royal Treasury; to which I certify.

ALCALA, Scrivener.

Immediately thereafter I, the Scrivener, made known the said order personally to my fellow-scriveners, Don Pedro de la Guerra y Vega and Don Antonio de Alcala; to which I certify.

ALCALA, Scrivener.

---

*Notification.*

And in compliance with the instructions in said order, I, the Scrivener, certify that I have searched in the archives and files entrusted to me for the Royal Decree inserted in the foregoing petition, and the orders issued pursuant thereto, and have found them not, nor do I recall that said Royal Decree was filed with me; and having looked for them in the books and papers of the Royal Auditor's office as Notary of the Royal Treasury, by order of the Royal officials, I found in the current book, opened on the fourteenth of May, seventeen hundred and six, for recording Royal Decrees, at page 322, reverse, the entry of a Royal Decree of the same tenor and date of that inserted in the said petition, addressed to the Governor and Captain General of the Province of Caracas, and on page 322 of the same book another like decree addressed to this Government, without discovering any orders pursuant thereto nor any including that inserted in the said petition, and having proceeded to request them of the Secretary of Government, in the archives of his office, I found them not, although all the orders and Royal Decrees were gone over, among which there was only found an original Royal Decree of the same tenor as that inserted in the said petition addressed to this Government.

And that it may so appear, I make a record thereof in this city of Cumaná on the seventeenth of August, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Public and Treasury Notary.

*Another.*

I, Don Pedro de la Guerra y Vega, Notary Public of the number, Government and Council of this city, certify : That I have inspected and searched the archives entrusted to me with the required care, all the papers and advertisements composing them, and have not found therein the Royal Decree mentioned in the preceding order issued by the Governor and Captain General, nor do I remember that it was filed with me; and complying with what was ordered by his Honor, I issue these presents in Cumaná, on the eighteenth of August, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

PEDRO DE LA GUERRA Y VEGA,  
Government and Public Notary.

---

*Another.*

I, the undersigned Notary, certify that there has not been presented or filed before me the Royal Decree requested by the Governor and Captain General, for among the papers composing the archives in my charge I have been unable to find it, although I searched carefully for it.

And in testimony of the truth, I issue these presents in Cumaná, on the twenty-first of August, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Government and Public Notary.

---

*Order.*

Having considered the reply of the Very Reverend Father Commissary of the conventions of Piritu, Friar Salvador Romero, of the Order of St. Francis, to the letters rogatory of his Honor, dated the twenty-fourth of May of this year, incorporating four Royal Decrees, and the petition of the said Rev. Father, which is attached to these records, dated the eighth of July of the same year, in which his Reverence includes a Royal Decree, issued in Madrid on the thirtieth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen, whereby, at the instance



of Friar Francisco Rodriguez, Apostolic missionary of the same conversion, H. M. commanded the ecclesiastic Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to take the steps to restore to their proper domicil all the Indians of said Missions of Piritu that may have fled and were to be found in the valleys and cattle ranches of the said Government; and, likewise, commanded this Government of Cumaná to found with the Indians so retaken two or three settlements in the most available portion of the plains, together with the rest in said Royal Decrees, letters rogatory and reply of the said Father Commissary contained, his Honor, the Governor and Captain General, said :

That he ought to order, and ordered that for the present, and until further resolution of H. M., the Prelate and Reverend Community of Piritu, present and future, carry out and execute the contents of Articles from 33 to 40 of the edict on the results of the visit, issued by his Honor in Cumaná, on the thirteenth of May of this year, for the reasons therein set forth, and principally observing the subsequent Royal Decrees which were included in the letters rogatory sent to the Reverend Father Commissary, without in anywise acting contrary to what is therein provided, or to what his Honor has ordered; and that a second letter rogatory be sent inserting this order of request and charge to the said Reverend Father Commissary, advising him to inform his Honor in writing and formally of the steps taken to carry out the said Royal Decree, dated in Madrid, on the thirteenth of December, of seventeen hundred and fourteen; what number of Indians were taken, and what settlements were founded in the space of more than twenty-nine years of time which have elapsed; and that, likewise, his Reverence and the Reverend Community continue to take the advisable measures with the Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to retake and restore to their proper domicil all fugitive Indians to be found in the said jurisdiction, to which end his Honor is ready to furnish, on his part, assistance, as he did on his entrance into this Government, at the instance of the Reverend Father Commissary Friar Mathias Garcia who presented the said Royal Decree which his Honor ordered to be noted in the Auditor's Office, and appointed on.

his part an official satisfactory to the said Rev. Father Friar Mathias Garcia, to assist him in the premises with all the necessary aid ; although up to the present no report has been made to this Government of any results of so important a measure, the purpose of which, referred to by the Reverend Father Friar Francisco Rodriguez in the name of the Reverend Community, should be continued and the Indians brought back to their proper domicil, without entering into our settlements in the execution of the provisions of the said letters rogatory until, in view of the other Royal Decrees and provisions of the visit to Guayana, H. M. shall resolve what is most expedient and harmonious to his Royal pleasure.

And as regards the thirty-ninth Article of the Edict on the results of the visit, since the reply of the Father Commissary does not specify the number of priests with statement of the employment of the thirty-nine lately arrived, so as to reach a full knowledge of those on leave, which appear to be eleven or twelve, his Reverence will be pleased to transmit a succinct statement, name by name, of those of the thirty-nine now present, including therein, specifically, the priests to whom leave was granted by his Reverence, abstaining, as is provided by the Royal laws, from granting any more such leaves without a previous report and approval of this Superior Government, and from interpreting, under weak pretexts, the Royal laws treating of the subject ; for, in case of a recurrence thereof, his Honor will find himself obliged to exercise the remedies provided for in such abuses, and any pretexts of the missionaries, which the Catholic piety of the King destines for these conversions at so great an expense, will not avail. His Reverence has not only offended by breaking the laws, but through the serious inconveniences resulting from the priests wandering over these dominions of the Indias away from their station and cloister ; and if by the cited precepts of their holy rule, as the Father Commissary states, they can not divulge the reasons which compelled them to grant such leaves by interpreting, no harm is done his opinion, because the three patents and orders of the Most Reverend Fathers Commissary of the conversions of Piritu are passed on by the Council, let him state,

directly and without interpretation, whether to grant the leaves to the priests he obtained special orders from the Very Reverend Father Commissary General, and even if he did receive them let him exhibit the same so as to give (*sic*). For although the Very Reverend Father Commissary General expressly orders the granting of leaves to one or more priests, it is understood to be subject to the Royal laws and provisions, and it must not be thought that the said Very Reverend Commissary General can evade or attempt to defy them. Wherefore his Honor infers that the reply of the Father Commissary on this subject is interpretation of the Royal laws and the orders of the Very Reverend Father Commissary General, which the Father Commissary of these conversions of Piritu must refrain from by understanding and giving punctual obedience to the letter of the Royal laws and the orders.

And by these presents his Honor the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces so ordered and signed, in this city of Cumaná, on the second of September of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, on ordinary paper, there being no stamped paper; to which I certify.

GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.

NOTE.—On the second of September of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three the letter rogatory mentioned in the preceding order was sent.

---

*Letter Rogatory to the Father Commissary of Piritu.*

Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Royal Armies, Governor and Captain General of Nueva Andalucía, Nueva Barcelona, Guayana, their coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, &c.

I make known to the Very Reverend Father Friar Salvador Romero, Commissary of the Reverend Community of Apostolic missionaries of Piritu, that in view of the answer which his

Reverence made to the letters rogatory of the twenty-fourth of May of this year, which I sent him, requesting observance and obedience, in so far as attaches to his office, of what was ordered in the edict on the results of the visit I made to the Presidio and Missions of Guayana, I have issued another order, which is of the tenor following :

*Order.*

“ Having considered the reply of the Very Reverend Father Commissary of the conventions of Piritu, Friar Salvador Romero, of the Order of St. Francis, to the letters rogatory of his Honor, dated the twenty-fourth day of May of this year, incorporating four Royal Decrees, and the petition of the said Rev. Father, which is attached to these records, dated the eighth of July of the same year, in which his Reverence includes a Royal Decree, issued in Madrid on the thirtieth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen, whereby at the instance of Friar Francisco Rodriguez, Apostolic missionary of the same conversion, H. M. commanded the ecclesiastic Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to take the steps to restore to their proper domicil all the Indians of said Missions of Piritu that may have fled and were to be found in the valleys and cattle ranches of the said Government; and, likewise, commanded this Government of Cumaná to found, with the Indians so retaken, two or three settlements in the most adaptable portion of the plains, together with the rest in said Royal Decrees, letters rogatory and reply of the said Father Commissary contained, his Honor, the Governor and Captain General, said :

“ That he ought to order, and orders, that for the present, and until further resolution of H. M., the Prelate and Reverend Community of Piritu, present and future, carry out and execute the contents of Articles from 33 to 40 of the edict on the results of the visit, issued by his Honor in Cumaná, on the thirteenth of May of this year, for the reasons therein set forth, and principally observing the subsequent Royal Decrees which were included in the letters rogatory sent to the Reverend Father Commissary, without in anywise acting contrary to what.

is therein provided, or to what his Honor has ordered ; and that a second letter rogatory be sent inserting this order of request and charge to the said Reverend Father Commissary, advising him to inform his Honor in writing and formally of the steps taken to carry out the said Royal Decree, dated in Madrid on the thirteenth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen ; what number of Indians were taken, and what settlements were founded in the space of more than twenty-nine years of time which have elapsed ; and that, likewise, His Reverence and the Reverend Community continue to take the advisable measures with the Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to retake and restore to their proper domicil all fugitive Indians to be found in the said jurisdiction, to which end his Honor is ready to furnish, on his part, assistance, as he did on his entrance into this Government at the instance of the Reverend Father Commissary Friar Mathias Garcia, who presented the said Royal Decree, which his Honor ordered to be noted in the Auditor's Office, and appointed on his part an official satisfactory to the said Rev. Father Friar Mathias Garcia, to assist him in the premises with all the necessary aid ; although up to the present no report has been made to this Government of any results of so important a measure, the purpose of which, referred to by the Reverend Father Friar Francisco Rodriguez in the name of the Reverend Community, should be continued and the Indians brought back to their proper domicil, without entering into our settlements, in the execution of the provisions of the said letters rogatory, until, in view of the other Royal Decrees and provisions of the visit to Guayana, H. M. shall resolve what is most expedient and harmonious to his Royal pleasure.

“ And as regards the thirty-ninth Article of the Edict on the results of the visit, since the reply of the Father Commissary does not specify the number of priests, with statement of the employment of the thirty-nine lately arrived, so as to reach a full knowledge of those on leave, which appear to be eleven or twelve, his Reverence will be pleased to transmit a succinct statement, name by name, of those of the thirty-nine now present, including therein, specifically, the priests to whom

leave was granted by his Reverence, abstaining, as is provided by the Royal laws, from granting any more such leaves without a previous report and approval of the Superior Government, and from interpreting, under weak pretexts, the Royal laws treating of the subject, for, in case of a recurrence thereof, his Honor will find himself obliged to exercise the remedies provided for in such abuses, and any pretexts of the missionaries which the Catholic piety of the King destines for these conversions at so great an expense, will not avail.

“His Reverence has not only offended by breaking the laws, but through the serious inconveniences resulting from the priests wandering over these dominions of the Indias away from their station and cloister; and if by the cited precepts of their holy rule, as the Father Commissary states, they can not divulge the reasons which compelled them to grant such leaves by interpreting, no harm is done his opinion, because the three patents and orders of the Most Reverend Fathers Commissary of the conversions of Piritu are passed on by the Council, let him state, directly and without any interpretation, whether to grant the leaves to the priests he obtained special orders from the Very Reverend Father Commissary-General, and even if he did receive them let him exhibit the same so as to give (*sic*).

“For although the Very Reverend Father Commissary-General expressly orders the granting of leave to one or more priests, it is understood to be subject to the Royal laws and provisions, and it must not be thought that the said Very Reverend Commissary-General can evade or attempt to defy them. Wherefore, his Honor infers that the reply of the Father Commissary on this subject is interpretation of the Royal laws and the orders of the Very Reverend Father Commissary-General, which the Father Commissary of these conversions of Piritu must refrain from by understanding and giving punctual obedience to the letter of the Royal laws and the orders.

“And by these presents, his Honor, the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, so ordered and signed, in this city of Cumaná, on the second of September of the year seven-

teen hundred and forty-three, on ordinary paper, there being no stamped paper; to which I certify.

GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.

Wherefore, in the name of the King our Master, I require and demand, and on my part request and urge, the said Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu to consider the enclosed order, and cause it to be obeyed and obey the same, with the assurance that I shall likewise carry out all its proper provisions in this Tribunal of Government. And in order that the Very Reverend Father may be apprised hereof, that the present letter rogatory be sent to the Ordinary Second Alcalde of the city of Nueva Barcelona, with the written necessary order to proceed to the settlement where the said Reverend Father lives, read and explain the same to him, and furnish him an exemplified copy, should he request it, and return the original with the endorsement thereon.

Done in the city of Cumaná, on the third of September, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

By command of the Governor and Captain General—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Government Scrivener.

In this town town of Piritu, on the thirteenth day of September, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, I, Don Agustin de Guevara, Captain and Magistrate, Ordinary Second Alcalde of the city of Nueva Barcelona, pursuant to the mission entrusted to me by the Governor and Captain General in the foregoing order, accompanied by two witnesses, proceeded to the Convent, situate in this town, where lives the Very Reverend Commissary Friar Salvador Romero, and I read to and notified him of the requisitorial order, as is provided by said Governor, and he, having heard the same, re-

quested that I furnish him an exemplified copy, which pursuant to said order is given.

In order that it may so appear, I certify and sign with the witnesses.

AGUSTIN DE GUEVARA.

JUAN AGUSTIN DE GUEVARA,

YGNACIO DE LA VEGA,

Witnesses.

On this day I gave an exemplified copy of the requisitorial letter to the Very Reverend Father Friar Salvador Romero, as commanded by his Honor.

GUEVARA.

---

This agrees with the first part of the original records of the visit to Guayana made by the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, which now remains in my possession to be filed with other records on the same subject in the Government archives, to which I refer.

And by order of the said Governor, I, Don Diego Antonio de Alcala, Royal Notary of the King our Master in his western Indias, Islands, and Main Land of the Oceanic Sea, Notary Public of the number of the Government, Council, Mines, and Tribunal of the Royal Treasury in the city of Cumaná, where I reside, issue this written copy, covering two hundred and twenty-seven leaves, including the two plats, corrected and signed with my customary flourish.

And in testimony thereof I sign and seal it in this city of Cumaná, on the twentieth of September, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three. *In testimonium veritatis.*

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,

Royal and Public Notary—

[there is a flourish and seal].

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original of its contents existing in these General Archives of the Indias, in Case 56, Shelf 6, Bundle 21. Seville, May 18, 1891.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,

Chief Librarian.



The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 1, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXIII.**

Case 131.—Shelf 7.—Bundle 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**Document No. 3.**

---

**1757.—Letter from Don Jose Yturriaga to the Most Excellent Senor Don Ricardo Wall, regarding news received relating to the construction by the Dutch of a new fort on the Maruca river, to windward and a short distance from the Boca de Navios of the Orinoco; and another letter from Don Juan Valdes to Don Jose Yturriaga on the same subject.**

---

Most Excellent Sir—

MY DEAR SIR: Having understood through the Capuchin Fathers of Guayana that the Dutch were constructing a new fort on the Maruca river, to windward and a short distance from the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco, and being certain that the Commandant of Guayana would not of his own motion take any measures to ascertain the fact, or the purpose, I requested him to send there, at my expense, a launch with pilots to go up the passage exploring the river, and inspect the condition of the building, its materials, dimensions, artillery, and garrison. And he replied, under date of December 2, what Y. E. will learn from the annexed copy.

What I understand from the report is that the purpose is to establish some sugar plantations, adding to the owners and slaves a number of Acoca Indians, who have their greatest confidence, to prevent the passing of deserters, soldiers, and Indian slaves, by that passage.

It may be that for this purpose, and to defend the planta-

tions against the uprising of slaves of both kinds, they may build a small fort, with two or three small cannons served by from four to six men.

In this connection I have to inform Y. E. that fourteen years ago I saw a Protection or Patent executed in Latin by the then Governor of Esquivo to a Carib Captain living within the Orinoco river.

Enquiring, in this connection, the grounds of the Governor of Esquivo for granting such Protection, I learned, and was afterwards assured, that the States-General in their Patents to the Governors of Esquivo add the title of Governors of Orinoco.

The fact is that these Governors call themselves Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco in the licenses they issue.

Tolerated now on the Maruca, they will next pass on to Barima, which empties into the same mouth, and later on they will come to the Aquire river, whose mouth is on the Orinoco itself, some leagues from the ocean. By this river the neighborhood of the Palmar Missions is reached, and by it they accomplish free communication with the other Missions in the interior of the country, as they have already done owing to the indifference of Father Friar Bruno, of Barcelona, who for this reason was removed therefrom by his Prefect, and reduced to serve as a companion in another Mission, and deprived of active or passive part in the meetings.

The request they make in writing of the Commandant of Guayana to allow their Aroacas, who come to fish turtle, to go further up, is not very much in keeping with their title of Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco, but still necessary to their advantage, and I am assured that the Commandant not only yields, but that his permits cover the different boats that go up for this purpose.

On such occasions Aroacas, Caribs, and Dutch come registered in order not to be molested. The latter are accustomed to land on the Caura river and other rivers to buy Indian slaves from the Caribs while the others fish for turtle. These fishermen also buy Indian slaves from our Caribs, and they all on the return take a large number of them.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Cabruta de Orinoco, December 15, 1757. Most Excellent Sir. Your humble servant kisses the hand of Y. E.

DON JOSEPH DE YTURRIAGA—[flourish].

Most Excellent Señor Don Ricardo Wal.

---

*Copy of letter.*

MY DEAR SIR: I inform Y. H. that I have performed the duty entrusted to me to reconnoitre the waters of the Moroca channel, and the fortification you were informed of, from which reconnaissance it results that the information is incorrect, for on the whole of that channel and the other channels communicating therewith there is no fortification to be found, and all there is is the news that the Dutch of the Esquivo Colony intend to move the guard which, under the name of post, they maintain on the Moroca channel, taking it down to the mouth thereof, emptying into the ocean, which will be about a distance of six leagues, for which purpose they have cut down trees and made many clearings for sowing that site, and built the houses necessary for the Aruaca Indians and the Dutch, which news I have been unable to verify with certainty, and I have only heard it said that the purpose is to prevent the negro slaves of the Company and residents of the said Colony from running away so easily to these Dominions, for the said guard being at the mouth of the Moroca, it can watch the boats that, without entering it, may pass by the coast to take the main mouth of this river.

The depth that the greater part of the above-mentioned river has is from two-and-a-half to three fathoms at its fullest, and entirely free from obstacles, as large feluccas and small schooners of ordinary draft navigate it with the assistance of the tides.

They are unable to say at said post whether the Frenchman Ygnacio passed by there or not, as he could have gone by the sea-coast without entering the said Moroca channel, as the sloops do, as do also the canoes of the fugitive negroes and

soldiers. All of which I bring to the notice of Y. H. for your better information, and in compliance with what was entrusted to me.

God our Father preserve Y. H. many years. Guayana, December 2, 1757. Your most obedient and grateful servant kisses the hand of Y. H.

DON JUAN VALDES.

Señor Don José de Yturriaga.

It is a verbatim copy of the original which is in my possession.

DON JOSEPH DE YTURRIAGA.

---

They are copies agreeing with their originals existing in these General Archives of the Indias.—Case 131—Shelf 7—Bundle 17. Seville, April 10, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, April 25, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXIV.**

Case 130.—Shelf 4.—Bundle 9.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**1762.**


---

**Letter from Don Jose Solano to the Knight Friar Don Julian de Arriaga, with an extract from four letters of Don Jose Yturriaga, and a report of the said Solano relating to matters regarding Guayana and the rights the Dutch claim in those Dominions.**

---

CADIZ, *March 23, 1762.*

---

1762.—Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: In the annexed representation I express to the King, through Y. E., my opinion and what occurs to me, being acquainted with the contents of the four letters of Rear-Admiral Don Joseph Yturriaga, dated in Cabrutta de Orinoco, on the twelfth and sixteenth days of June and fifteenth of December of fifty-seven, and the nineteenth of April of fifty-eight, which Y. E. was pleased to transmit to me by command of H. M. on the second of January of this year.

May Our Lord preserve you the many years the Monarchy wants and I need you. Cadiz, March 23, 1762. Most Excellent Sir. Your most obedient kisses Y. E.'s hand.

DON JOSEPH SOLANO—[a flourish].

Most Excellent Sir Knight Friar Don Julian de Arriaga.

(MARGINAL NOTE.—“Receipt, dated the 30th. I retain the report to examine it. H. E. returned it.”)

From the Secretary's private office Universal Department of State there have been transmitted to this Department of the Indias, with documents of September 9 and October 31, 1758, four letters which Don Joseph de Yturriaga, Rear-Admiral, wrote from the town of Cabruta, addressed to the Boundary Expedition on the Orinoco, their principal contents being as follows:

*First—of June 12, 1757.*

States that Don Vicente Doz and Don Nicolas Guerrero, having regained their health, he sent them to reconnoitre the Meta river up to the mouth of the Sarare, and to inform him also of the Barinas Missions under the charge of the Dominican Fathers of Santa Fe.

The letter accompanies an explanatory description of the investigations there made regarding the depth of the river and the condition of the Missions. Also a map of the trip over the river and the fathoms navigated, and Yturriaga adds that in order that the course of the river shall not be bare on its banks, there was added thereto, on the northern side, a work he did at another time, having now corrected it by these new investigations, as said maps showed.

That afterwards they desired to undertake some other work and Yturriaga would not consent, so that they might not lose their rather variable health by reason of the continuous rains there; and although all were without personal complaints, still very sensitive to any change of temperature. For which reason neither could any reconnaissance be made of other rivers of which Don Eugenio Albarado and Don Ygnacio Milhau had advised him, sending some pieces of bark called cinnamon, the fruit and leaves; and he awaited an opportune time to go and investigate those trees and treat their bark as he understood the Dutch treated that of the cinnamon trees; and finally, should the experiments not produce results, he would make others that might lead to success.

The said description gives minute statements of the depth and features of the Apure river, whose principal mouth is three leagues distant from Cabruta; that its lowest water was

found to be  $3\frac{1}{2}$  fathoms, and its width 80 *varas*, the same as the Guarico, and it adds the other rivers forming this, and the places in its neighborhood, towns, inhabitants, etc., expressing the Dominican Fathers and the curates assisting them, who founded those Missions forty-three years ago.

NOTE.—No antecedent is to be found in the secret archives of the Secretary's office to give rise to this report of Yturriaga, which must have been made pursuant to the instructions which he states were given him by Don Joseph Carvajal.

*Second Letter—of June 16, 1757.*

In this letter he answers one of the chapters of the confidential instruction given him by Don Joseph Carvajal, which treats principally of whether the Castle or Fort of Araya should remain or be demolished, which subject (which has been ventilated for a long time past, and on which there are several reports) is put in a separate extract following this, as it is necessary to look up the antecedents. The opinion of Yturriaga being in this report that it should be demolished, as it serves no useful purpose whatever in its present location.

*Third—of December 15, 1757.*

In this, his personal communication, he reports that having understood from the Capuchin Fathers of Guayana that the Dutch were constructing a new fort on the Maruca river, to windward and a short distance from the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco, and being persuaded that the Commandant of Guayana would not of his own motion take any measures to investigate the attempt, he ordered the sending of a launch to investigate the progress of the building, its dimensions, artillery, etc.

To this the Governor of Guayana, Don Juan Valdes, replied, in a letter dated the 2d of the said month, that there was no such fortification at the place mentioned, nor at any other place in the vicinity; and that the only news was that the Dutch from the Esquivo Colony intended to transfer the Guard, which under the name of Post, they maintain on the said Moroca Channel by removing it to the mouth where it empties into the ocean, about 6 leagues lower down, having cut down



trees and made many clearings for the purpose, and put up houses necessary for the Aruaca Indians and Dutch; which news he is not able to verify with certainty, and that he had only heard it said that the intent was to prevent the negro slaves of the Company, and the residents of the Colony from easily running away to those dominions.

Yturriaga understands from this report that what is intended is to establish some sugar plantations, adding to their owners and slaves a number of Aruaca Indians, who enjoy their greatest confidence, to prevent the passage thereby of deserters, soldiers and slaves, Indians and negroes, and that, perhaps to protect the plantations from an uprising of both kinds of slaves, they will build a small fort with two or three cannons to be served by four or six men.

In this connection he says, that about fourteen years ago, he saw a Protection or Patent executed in Latin by the Governor of Esquivo to a Carib Captain living within the Orinoco river line. That this caused him to inquire into the grounds upon which the Governor of Esquivo granted such Protection, and he learned that the States-General in their Patents to the Governors of Esquivo add to them the title of Governors of Orinoco; and that the truth is that these Governors call themselves in the licenses they issue Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco.

That if tolerated now in Muruca they will go next to Barima, and later on will come to the Aquire river, whose mouth is on the said Orinoco some leagues distant from the ocean. That by this river the neighborhood of the Palmar Missions is reached, and that by means of it they will gain communication with the other nations in the interior of the country, as they had already done, owing to the indifference of Father Friar Bruno, of Barcelona, although for this cause he was removed therefrom by his Prefect and reduced to serve as companion in another Mission, being deprived of active or passive part in the meetings.

He adds that the written request they make to allow their Aroacas, who come for the purpose of turtle fishing, to go further up does not harmonize very well with the title of

Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco, but still necessary to their advantage. The contents of the letter are principally confined to this.

*The Fourth, which is dated April 19, 1758.*

The subject of the foregoing letter is continued, and by reason of new questions put by Yturriaga to the Governor of Guayana, the latter says to him that the reported transfer of the Guard by the Dutch of the Esquivo Colony had not taken place, and that the only change was a house 15 *varas* in length which they built on the mouth emptying into the sea, and which they say is to serve for travellers who trade with the said colony in the intermissions of time caused by the low and high water on the river, the said Guard remaining, therefore, without increase of men or artillery ; and that the said Aroaca Indians located at this place for their trade are in three divisions of a settlement, each of from 10 to 12 small houses occupied by an Indian family, and distant a league or more one from the other, following the neighborhood of the banks of said Moruco River.

And Yturriaga only adds to this report that the Esquibo people published and maintain that the extent of the Dominion of the States-General reaches to the *Boca de Navios*, or main mouth of the Orinoco, and their fishermen even enter well inside the same to enjoy considerable profit, impelled by the total absence of meat in their land, and great scarcity of fish in their river.

---

These four letters having been transmitted for report to Naval Captain Don Joseph Solano, he agrees that the fortification of Araya is useless (which matter is settled), and that the notices regarding the condition of the Indian towns of Varinas furnished by the Naval Lieutenants Don Vicente Doz and Don Nicolas Guerrero are correct.

As regards the contents of the third and fourth letters of Yturriaga, relating to the pretensions of the Dutch of the Esquibo river to the Orinoco, he does not see upon what they can

be founded unless it be the peace in which the Commandants of Guayana have allowed them to fish in the *Boca de Navios* and the Barima and Aquire rivers, and to extend their navigation as far as Guayana. That thus they bring their jurisdiction near to the main mouth of the Orinoco, and introduce themselves into Barcelona, Caracas, and Varinas, and had not the escort and garrison of Guayana assisted the Reverend missionaries would not have been able to maintain themselves.

That the location of the Fort of San Francisco of Asis, and that of the small forts of San Diego and Limones, the only fortification of Guayana and Orinoco, is advantageous for the protection of that Province, its rear being defended by the desert, and as it is the key to that great river, and the defence of the rear of Cumaná, Caracas, and Varinas; but Solano thinks that the situation of these forts renders useless the greater part of their value in their own mutual defence, for the reasons he sets forth.

These reasons are limited to giving a description of the situation of the Province of Guayana, its rivers, latitude and longitude, and the garrisons of its castles and forts, and the ease with which it could be assaulted by a *coup de main*, and the Padrastro be lost, with which can not be defended either the Castle, the Limones fort, or the Province. The Orinoco would be opened, and the rear of Cumaná, Caracas, Varinas, and even Santa Fe, would be exposed without there remaining any forces there to arrest the advance of the enemy, nor would the forces that might come from neighbors have boats and supplies to cross over to the place. But that if the city were located 34 leagues above the castle, at Angostura, where the Orinoco narrows down to 800 *varas*, the troops would have another post where they could reorganize, they could arrest the advance of the enemy, and, larger forces gathered there, they could go down to dislodge him, preserve the settlement, increase and assist the troops of the forts, and the escort of the Missions, adding to the 100 men at Guayana those of the Jesuits of Orinoco and Dominicans of Varinas, and that the Commandant entrusted with the preservation of those dominions would have these additional troops to assist him, and could,

should it be necessary, mobilize his detachments, and increase his forces by those of the Indians which each could take from his respective department.

That with 73 men of the escort added to the 100 apportioned to Guayana and the 21 at the Limones port, he thinks no more troops are needed for the present to guard that port and protect the Missions; but he does think there should be an officer, honorable, zealous, and diligent, with some knowledge of fortifications, in order that without delay he may fortify the two plains lying before the east and west forts of the Padraastro fort with a strong stockade, and fascine and earth breastworks, and flank the castle from the western plain with four heavy guns, the northern front of the fort and the pass between the lagoons with light artillery. To defend the rise from the Baratillo to the fort, defending the western front with a second stockade. To raise the ramparts on their curtain and place thereon three 6-pounders, and in order that they may have sufficient play, to raze the tower in the middle of the fort, and on its parapet to erect four pillars four feet in height, and to place above them a tile roof to cover the Plaza de Armas, so that it may garrison the troops. Which said defences of the Padraastro are also defences of the castle and of the river pass, with the fire of the fort at Limones, and he finds that these are sufficient if the principal fort is constructed of durable material, leaving in the old castle some cannons as a leveling battery.

That this measure be strengthened by Y. M. erecting into a Government the Military District of Orinoco, because of its present importance; that the city be transferred to Angostura, and the Indian towns in the vicinity of the present site thereof to a more healthy place; that the latter and the residents of Guayana withdraw their cattle in order that the Dutch Colony of Esquivo may not have fresh meat nor mules for their sugar mills. That Guayana being located at Angostura the illicit trade would cease, owing to the obstacle of the guns of the castle and Limones fort, and its continuance would be rendered impossible if the garrison had two armed launches to relieve each other in patrolling and to aid each other; but

that to provide for patrolling where the city is now is useless, as it is not necessary to come within sight of the forts, and the smuggler can pass unseen if there be any one to help him on land. The allowance could thus be carried; the hides on the banks of the Orinoco could be collected, and also the tobacco and cacaos of Varinas, and not a little from Caracas; so many people would not perish by reason of the bad climate of Guayana, by transferring it to Angostura; the Governor can go there at all times to any part of his Province, that of Caracas and Cumaná; he can defend the city with six small cannons; the narrow passage will be closed, and the Dutch will be prevented from going up the Caura to buy slaves from the Caribs, to furnish them arms, and cultivate hatred for the Spanish, together with other advantages which would result from this measure, and which he sets forth in detail.

"This is settled in the measure determined on to move the town to Angostura, and the other orders issued to that end. In case any other measure should offer itself, let this record be preserved, together with that of the orders issued."

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in the General Archives of the Indias in Case 130, Shelf 4, Bundle 9. Seville, March 21, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, April 6, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXV.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.

Case 152.—Shelf 4.—Bundle 16.

---

**No. 1.**

---

**1676.—Report of the Council of War of the Indias regarding the Colony which the Dutch endeavored to establish between the Orinoco and the Amazon.**

---

Count de Medellin, Duke de San German, Marquis de Hontiveros, Don Balthazar Pantoja, Don Antonio de Castro, Don Joseph Ponce, Don Bernave Ochoa, Conde de Paredes.

SIR: Manuel de Belmonte, transmitted to me, Count de Medellin, with a letter dated the 17th of February last (which I received in the last mail from Flanders), the enclosed paper in which he announces that the States of the Provinces of Holland and Westfriesland determined to establish a Colony on the coast of the mainland at Cape Orange between Surinamte and the Amazon river, where they hold the greater part of the coast from Trinidad to this river, with settlements in Barbiche, Sequiebes, and Surinamtes; and that in order to cultivate this new Colony better than the previous ones, the matter will be assumed by the cities of Amsterdam, Leyden, Harlem, and Rotterdam furnishing one hundred colonists, each of whom bind themselves to take ten man-servants and two maid-servants, and in four years a like number, by which means they have 2,600 persons, without counting those procreated and coming from other places; and that to encourage them they grant them many privileges in the way of hereditary judicial offices, not having to pay duties in ten years, and other exemptions, and those from Holland bind

themselves to maintain and have a sufficient garrison in two forts they are to build at their expense; together with other proper conditions.

And he says that in order to give a start to this there were ready in the port of Amsterdam seven war frigates, three carrying 54 guns and the others from 36 to 40 guns; three tenders of 12 guns, and other vessels, which will set sail about the month of April of this year, carrying the colonists, their people, and 300 soldiers for the garrisons, and the rest necessary to establish themselves; and that they are going with the intention of endeavoring to take possession of the Island of Cayenne, which is near the coast of the mainland, and owned by the French, having been taken through conquest from the Dutch, which, it is believed, they will do with little resistance. He also says that Jacob Bimques goes as commander of the squadron, already in the understanding that on arriving off the coast of the mainland he is to remain with four frigates, and that Pedro Constaute is to sail with three and the tenders to attempt an engagement off the Windward Island, possessed by the French; and that in one of the tenders the Corsair Erasmus goes, known as the man who in a small frigate stole the Island of Granada, which belongs to the French; and that Pedro Constaute has great intelligence and knowledge of those localities, as he was Governor of the Island of Tabago, and was on the Tortuga Islands when the inhabitants mutinied against their Governor, Angeron. And Manuel Belmonte proposes that this is the best occasion to eject the buccaneers and French from the northern point of the Islands of Santo Domingo and Tortugas, and although these ask so large a sum to leave they can be brought to better terms, and no delays should intervene, for if peace continues that thorn will remain, which, together with that of Jamaica, will be the ruin of everything.

The said paper having been considered in the Council of War, it has been thought best to place it in the Royal hands of Y. M., stating that Don Manuel de Lira gave information of another proposition of the Dutch States, offering to go with naval forces to dislodge the French from the settlements they have on the windward coast, destroying the fortifications they

might have without the Dutch being able to settle in the same posts, nor reap any more profit than to take the negroes and other property and treasure the French may possess, of which I, Count de Medellin, gave information to Y. M. But (according to the contents of the paper of Manuel de Belmonte) what the Dutch now wish to attempt is more positive; since the purpose is to increase settlements in the Indias, carrying people and everything else necessary to accomplish it, and extend the same on the coasts of the mainland to gain a better hold on the commerce, to the serious damage and injury of the inhabitants of these ports, and the evident risk of losing the Indians by reason of the many settlements the nations of the north have made in those Provinces, without there being any other remedy thereto than the reorganization of the Windward Armada, that it may go where necessity may most demand. And therefore the Council finds itself called upon to lay it before Y. M. in order that you may be pleased to apply the necessary measures that may be at your disposal, with all due haste. And that the proper office write to or give the States-General to understand the feeling that would be aroused if they proceed to make new settlements in the Indias without giving notice to Y. M., when this is of such serious prejudice to the Royal Crown; for, although the Island of Curaçao is so small and barren, notorious inconveniences arise from its being held by the Dutch.

Your Majesty will determine what best accords with your service. Madrid, March 19, 1676. [There are five flourishes.]

On the reverse of this document is endorsed :

“The organization of the Windward Armada being of the great importance that the Council represents, and it is recognized, I charge it, in obedience to what I have determined, to give its greatest care to furthering the execution thereof and to accomplishing the necessary measures to this end; and in view of the season of the year it is not convenient at this time to make the proposed complaint to the States-General of the United Provinces.” [There is a flourish.]



The document copied is accompanied by the paper following :

“**MOST EXCELLENT SIR :** The States of the Province of Holland and Westfriesland determined to establish a colony on the coast of the mainland at Cape Orange, between Surinamte and the Amazon river, in order to hold the greater part of the coast from Trinidad to the Amazon river, for they already have the settlements in Barbiche, Sequiebes, and Surinamtes, and in order that this may be better cultivated and employed than the other three, which can scarcely sustain themselves, the cities of Amsterdam, Leyden, Harlem, and Rotterdam have taken the matter in charge and have made an agreement with 100 colonists who bind themselves to each take ten men-servants and two maid-servants, and in four years another like number, whereby they will have 2,600 persons without counting those they may procreate and additions from other parts. And to encourage them they grant them many privileges in the way of hereditary judicial offices, non-payment of duties for ten years, and other exemptions, and those from Holland bind themselves to maintain them and keep a sufficient garri-son in two forts they will build at their expense, together with other conditions in the premises.

“To begin this undertaking there are in the port of Amsterdam now ready 7 war-frigates, 3 of fifty-four guns, and the rest of from thirty-six to forty guns ; 3 tenders of twelve guns, and other vessels, which will set sail in April of this year 1676, carrying the colonists, their people, and 300 soldiers for the garrisons, and the other necessities to establish themselves. And they go with the intention of taking possession of the Island of Cayenne, near the coast of the mainland, possessed by the French and taken through conquest from the Dutch in years past, which, it is understood, they will accomplish with little resistance.

“Jacob Binques goes as commander of the squadron, and I have understood that on reaching the coast of the mainland he will remain with four frigates, and that Pedro Constante, with three and the tenders, will go to attempt an engagement near the Windward Islands, owned by the French in America. And on one of the tenders is the Corsair Erasmus, who is

known with a small frigate to have stolen the Island of Granada, which belongs to the French ; and Constante is one who best knows and is acquainted with those localities. He was formerly Governor of the Island of Tobago, and was on the Tortuga Islands when the inhabitants mutinied against their Governor, Angeron, as they did not wish to let him trade.

"I do not dwell upon this matter, as Señor Don Manuel de Lira must have done so by the last mail in the letter for H. M., and Y. E. may bear in mind that this is the best occasion to eject the buccaneers and French from the northern point of the Island of Santo Domingo and the Tortuga Islands, and although these ask so large a sum to leave, they may be brought to better terms, and this is no time to admit of delays ; for, if peace continues, we would remain with those thorns which, together with the Island of Jamaica, is the ruin of everything." (On the margin appears): "With letter of February 17, 1676."

---

It is a copy of the original document existing in the General Archives of the Indias, Case 152, Shelf 4, Bundle 16.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, April 6, 1891.

P. FOURTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

## No. XXVI.

GENERAL CENTRAL ARCHIVES

Ministry of State, Bundle 2499.

---

**Description of the Lands of Orinoco, Method of Preserving them, etc. (Correspondence of Yturriaga, 1747.)**


---

The city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, the only Spanish town on the Orinoco river, is composed of sixty negro, mulatto, and *zambo*\* residents, and a few whites. They and their women are all indolent, content with some poor huts for dwellings, with fishing, and with the rum they make from the sugar cane left over after satisfying their love of sweet things. It is situated on the southern bank of the lower river, within gun-shot of a small fort called San Francisco de Asis, erected on a rock bathed by the same river. For the pay of its garrison there is deposited in Santa Fe de Bogota the amount for one hundred files, at the rate of ten *escudos* per month, which aggregates fifteen thousand *pesos*. From the one hundred files, fourteen are deducted to contribute to the pay of the Castellan, lieutenant, cornet, and two sergeants of the company; twelve of which are detached on the Island of Trinidad, forming its garrison; five, eight, or twelve in the Missions of the same Province under the charge of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers; and ten for the escort of the Supercargo, who goes every year to Santa Fe in search of the allowance. Deducting further some files absent, some ill, and others on leave, that garrison should be considered as having only fifty files.

The small number of soldiers and residents, and the character thereof—who, withdrawing to the Missions of the interior, leave nothing in their huts and camps to lose—gave cause for

---

\* The offspring of a mulatto and negro.—*Translator*.

the audacity of an Irishman, who, at the beginning of the last war, proceeded with sixty sailors in a brigantine to the conquest of Guayana, and, in fact, accomplished it. He took possession of the fort, carried off some guns, spiked and threw others into the river, burned the city and two missionary settlements, nettled because he found nothing to sack.

Three leagues below the city that great river divides itself into three large branches. Two of these, which bend to the north and northeast, separate into so many channels that they empty into the sea through more than forty mouths. The third, which bends to the east, flows almost whole for fifty leagues until it empties into the sea under the name of ship channel (*boca grande de Navios*), because it is only through this that small vessels of six guns can go up.

Following the large branch in its course to the sea, some rivers are encountered which empty on the right hand, like that named the Aquire, and a branch of the Barema river, which separates into many other branches, the great windward point forming a labyrinth of islands and channels. Through these channels, without going out to sea, one can go in canoes up to the stronghold called the Post, which the Dutch of Esquibo maintain with three men and two small cannons, sixteen leagues from the Colony towards the ship channel, and this is the way taken by the Dutch when they return from the Orinoco in small vessels, in order not to expose themselves to the strong currents and winds which retard and render dangerous the navigation outside.

From the Missions of Guayana, under charge of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, there has undoubtedly been opened a road to or communication with Esquibo, because the Governor of Cumaná, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, received a letter from the Governor of Esquibo by hand of the Prefect of those Missions, and this Prelate was not reluctant to assume charge of the reply. The Caribs, which live within the Orinoco line, occupy about seventy leagues of the southern bank from the mouth of the Caroni, distant six leagues to the west of Guayana, up to the mouth of the Caura river. Their audacity and superiority over other nations keeps them in co

stant action against the latter, however distant they be, to the end of making them slaves and selling them to the residents of the Dutch Colonies of Esquibo, Berbice, Corentin and Surinam. For this trip they have, besides the navigation of the Orinoco and the channels of the Barima, a road on land which, crossing the Caroni above the Guajana Missions, reaches the Aquire river, and they go down by this river to near its mouth, when they act in concert with some vessel, which waits on this river, and when not, they enter the Yuruari and follow it down to the Esquibo.

From the mouth of the Caura from twenty to twenty-five leagues have to be navigated, with no settled places on either bank, to reach the first Mission of the Jesuit Fathers, called San Ygnacio de Cabruta, and as the Caribs hold sway over the ninety and more leagues reckoned from the mouth of the Caroni, the navigation is very dangerous to such as are not their friends, or do not carry sufficient force to guard against an attack. The many attacks on the Missions, their desolation and destruction are proofs of the hatred with which they look upon them; and with this knowledge the Fathers find themselves obliged to keep a continual watch with the aid of an escort and a few small cannon and muskets. But it is seen from experience that these means are insufficient for the peace necessary to their increase. The threats of the Caribs, which some Indians fear; their persuasions, which move others; and the licentious life of the forest, which appeals to all the recently settled, are also causes of the sudden desertions which have been suffered. And with all this, such is the constant application of the Fathers, that after the third time they entered the Orinoco country they have been enabled to found and maintain five settlements from San Ygnacio de Cabruta to the Atures rapids, a distance of eight days of navigation.

After the giant and high-spirited Guipanovis destroyed, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven, the new Mission on the said rapids, the Fathers rebuilt it, albeit at the expense of great fatigues, congregating some Maipure and Pareca Indians; and they maintain the post with as much care as Cabruta, as the two are the most exposed — Cabruta to the

attacks of the Caribs, and the Atures rapids to those that flee from the Guipánovis, which inhabit the Atabapu Channel, distant seven days' navigation from the rapids. The Guipánovis are customarily accompanied by their friends, the Civitenes, from the upper part of the Negro river, where there is land communication of a half days' journey from Atabapu. These two nations manage fire-arms with great skill, so much so that Captain Macapu alone, with eighty of his fusileers, destroyed the Mission of the rapids, and having been pursued on this occasion by the escort with other Spaniards and more than three hundred Indians, they did not venture to attack him in his settlement, knowing that he has it well fortified. The original plan which is annexed, drawn on the spot by Brother Vera of those Missions, shows the fortification.

In order that the evils set forth may not go on increasing, it is expedient to apply the remedy at once. And if one could be found that will not only put an end to their advance, but bring about some benefits, so much the better. Settlement is presumed to be such a remedy.

Thereby Guayana will be freed from new assaults of corsairs, it can change its residents to improve their character, its fort will not need such a large garrison, nor will the latter have to look to Santa Fe for its pay, for the settlements will furnish this expense, saving the fifteen thousand *pesos* it now costs the King; aliens and Caribs will be prevented from entering and leaving the river, and from mutually trading; the Missions of the Orinoco will be protected from the Caribs and the Guipánovis; the trade in different commodities which do not now leave those localities will be encouraged and increased; the navigation of the Orinoco River, and of other rivers emptying into it, will be made free, which can increase considerably the trade of the Vice-Royalty of Santa Fe. The large number which, spread out over the land, live hidden from the Ministers of the King and the Church, will be brought to civil and Christian life, and the Indians of the forest, who, lacking the teachings of the Gospel, and filled with thousands of exasperating feelings against the Spaniards, resist their companionship, will be subjugated; the Royal Treasury will be added to,

and there will be retained in the hands of Spaniards a great part of the money taken from the Kingdom by aliens, by the sale of many products of Spanish-America, and of others, which could be done in a very short time.

A copy :

RAMÓN SANTA MARÍA,  
Secretary.

Correct :

[SEAL.]

M. VELASCO Y SANTOS, Chief.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela, in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signatures of Señores M. Velasco y Santos and Ramón Santa María, Chief and Secretary, respectively, of the General Central Archives of Alcala de Henares.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Foutoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXVII.****Report on the boundaries of Cumana and Guayana and the right claimed by the Dutch to the fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco.**


---

The Governor of Cumaná, Don Joseph Ramirez de Arellana, having reported in a letter of the 27th of March of seventeen hundred and five that the French of Martinique have introduced themselves to trade on the Guarapichi river, not only in woods, hammocks, birds, and other commodities, but even in Indian slaves of the said river and the coast of the mainland, considering them better than the negroes for work, endeavoring to gild these insults with the pretext that because those shores were not populated by Spaniards their inhabitants should be considered as savages of an unconquered land, open to the trade of the French, the Council advised His Majesty, on the sixth of October of the same year, of the injuries that might grow out of consenting to these acts contrary to the law of Nations and to the bonds and amity of both Crowns. For even though the banks of the Guarapichi were not populated by Spaniards, as they are very near the Island of Trinidad and the Province of Cumaná, the dominion and possession of those territories so legitimately acquired by His Majesty continued firm, and the Indians inhabiting the same should enjoy the benefit of his Royal protection. The Pontifical Bulls, which granted His Majesty dominion over America, conditioned upon his propagating the faith and maintaining the Evangelical workers, moreover prohibited all manner of persons, States, dignities, either Royal or Imperial, under pain of absolute excommunication, from going to the Indias upon any pretext without the express Royal consent of His Majesty, which prohibition was included in the law itself; for the principal object being to wean the Indians from the errors of heathenism, no advance could be made in this undertaking, by allowing trade with aliens, as was evidenced by the



experience with the natives of Orinoco and the mainland, when, despite the efforts of the missionaries and the large sums spent in their subjugation from the year fifteen hundred and twenty-nine, nothing had been accomplished, as the cunning and ferocious Indians had given themselves over to treating with foreigners; under which supposition, and that the interests of both Crowns were as single and reciprocal as the trade of the French of Martinique was reprehensible—especially in the slavery of the Indians—it became advisable for His Majesty to be pleased to command that the proper communications, couched in the most efficacious terms, with the Most Christian King, be sent to the end that he cause the trade to be prohibited under the strictest penalties by issuing the proper orders to the Governor of Martinique and the other officials of the settlements occupied by the French. Pursuant to this advice His Majesty was pleased to determine the following: “The Ambassador of the King, my Grandfather, has been entrusted with apprising him of these matters and with sending to me the orders that may have been issued in France in the premises.”

2. The repeated abuses committed by the Carib Indians established on the many islands formed by the Orinoco at its mouth, who, aided by the Dutch, would go to the upper part of the narrows (Angostura) to make prisoners of the Aruro Indians, at times to eat them, and at others to sell them as slaves to the French, English and Dutch, gave rise to the proposition (in the year sixteen hundred and ninety-four, when the Governor of Trinidad, Don Francisco de Meneses, and the Prefect and Procurator of those Capuchin Missions made known the discovery of the headwaters of the Orinoco), to construct a fort on its banks to restrain the audacity of the Caribs, as well as to prevent the entrance of foreign nations. And in fact an order was issued on the twenty-fourth of August, sixteen hundred and ninety-seven, to the President of Santa Fe, to have it built on the site and in the manner that might be deemed most convenient. But this measure was not carried out at the time, owing to negligence at Santa Fe; nor was it done for many years, notwithstanding the

many plans and propositions of different subjects who offered to carry it into execution, and concerning which the Council held repeated consultations, because of the difficulties presented by the selection of the site, up to the year seventeen hundred and fifty-two, when, pursuant to the advice of April tenth, His Majesty gave notice that he had issued commands to construct the said fort, and to ship artillery.

3. Besides the foregoing, and to prove the dominion of His Majesty over the lands of Orinoco, it must be remembered that in a letter transmitted to the Council by the Governor of Cumaná, Don Gregorio Espinosa, under date of February first, seventeen hundred and forty-two, accompanied by the two edicts relating to the demarcation and delineation of jurisdiction of the Government (Cumaná) with that of Venezuela, there were designated as the uttermost lines thereof: On the seacoast, Cape Quadera, and thence, running east, crossing the Santa Lucia mountains, to the headwaters of the Orinoco river, and following this waterway to the plains to where it enters the Guarico river; thence down to where it joins the Orinoco, following the latter to the sea.

4. In the geographical description, and the notes added for an easier understanding of the general map of the said Government of Cumaná, transmitted by its Governor, Don Joseph Diguja, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, it is also recorded that the boundaries of that Province on the east are the mouths of the Orinoco, the Guarapichi river, and Point Paria; on the north the same point, Cape Tres Puntas, following the coast of Araya and Gulf of Cariaco, till it strikes the town of Pozuelos, which is now of the Province of Barcelona; on the west, from said town to the Guanipa tableland, whence it again runs to the east until it strikes the Orinoco opposite Guayana.

5. That this Province of Guayana has as boundaries: On the east, all the coast on which are situated the Dutch colonies of Esquivo, Bervis, Demerari, Corentin, and Surinama; and further to windward, Cayenne, belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which, separating the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Barimas, Santa Fe

and Popayan, forms a half circle, running back east to seek its headwaters in Parima Lake; on the south, the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the confines of the latter, and the said Province of Guayana being unknown, as also what the latter contains in the centre. And speaking of the Orinoco, Caroni, Arui, and Caura rivers, it is also stated that forty leagues from Arui the one called Caura empties, which is the largest, flowing between great rocks which impede the navigation of all vessels save canoes or small launches. That the source of the latter is found sixty leagues above its mouth, taking its first waters on a high range of hills inhabited by many Indians, harassed by the Caribs who pursue them to capture and sell them to the Dutch. That on the east and coast of Guayana are situated the Dutch Colonies of Esquibo, Demerari, Bervis, Corentin, and Surinam, according to the information secured by Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Commandant of Guayana. That the Colony of Esquibo consisted of sugar plantations, which for the distance of thirty leagues the Dutch had established on the banks of the Esquibo river. And, finally, that the Dutch establishments were most prejudicial to Guayana, especially that of Esquibo, because through the nearness of the Orinoco, they went to the interior by this river, the Mazaroni and Cuyuni, protected by the Caribs, to pillage and capture the Indians of the former Province, frequently disturbing by their forays the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins, whose cowardly and pusillanimous Indians took to the forest on the slightest news of Caribs.

6. Notwithstanding these constant acts, in the year seventeen hundred and nine the Ambassador of Holland appeared, complaining of the proceedings of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco, against the Dutch colony of Esquibo; presenting, in support of his complaint, a memorial referring to several letters of Lorenzo Horn, and S. Gravesand, Director-General of the said colony, in which, supposing that from time immemorial the Republic of Holland was in possession not only of the Esquibo river, and of many other rivers and streams emptying into the sea along this portion of the coast, but also of all the branches and rivulets emptying into the

former, particularly the northern one called Cayoeni, or Cuyuni, on whose bank, considered as dominion of the State, they have maintained a wooden cabin, guarded by a small vessel manned by some slaves and Indians, he set forth that a Spanish detachment, coming from the Orinoco, had attacked that post and taken many Indians, threatening to return at the first ebb and visit another branch of the same river, called the Maseroni, which lies between it and the Cuyuni, and composed part of the territory of the Republic. That although Gravesand had taken all this as simple threats which would not be executed, he learned afterwards that the Spaniards had constructed two cabins, guarded by many troops, and one of them very near to the cabin on the Cuyuni river, and had begun to take the Indians on the Maroca, taking possession of the rivulet a half day's journey from the Weyne, between it and the Pomaron, where the Company had had from time immemorial a trading place belonging, beyond contradiction, to the territory of the Republic. That, moreover, they had committed other assaults, among them that of having caused to be killed the guard of the Arinda cabin, belonging to its Company, situated near the source of the Esquibo, as well as all the Caribs in the neighborhood; and although the Company had taken steps to oppose such undertakings, it thought it ought not to fail to notify the Republic, and engage its attention, to the end that it might remonstrate against such manifest wrongs of the State; adding that the Spaniards had commenced some time back to dispute their right to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, and in the stretch of territory between the Marewigni river and the further side of the Wayne, belonging to the State, as could be seen by the geographic charts, especially that of Señor Auville, one of the most esteemed, owing to its accuracy; and that they had been disturbed in their fishing by force, notwithstanding the long time they had enjoyed it quietly and peacefully, and that it was of great profit to them by reason of the abundance of fish to be found there; and, finally, he stated that, in the face of all treaties, and even against the Law of Nations, the Spaniards, to the great prejudice of the planters, and even of the whole:

colony, retained the slaves fleeing from the Dutch establishments, the most forcible arguments and commissions looking towards their return to their owners not sufficing.

7. By Royal command of the tenth of September of the said year of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, Sir Knight Friar Don Julian de Arriaga transmitted this memorial to the Council, to the end that with all possible haste it should advise what it might deem proper with regard to the extent of those boundaries and the right the Republic of Holland claimed to the fisheries at the entrance of the Orinoco.

8. This question having been referred to the Attorney General with the antecedents he missed some documents referring to the case, and, among others, four letters of Rear-Admiral Don Joseph de Yturriaga, detailed on the Orinoco boundary expedition, which it was said were received in the years seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and fifty-eight, and the report thereon made by Naval Captain Don Joseph Solano, as also the reply of the Most Christian King, or the measures that Court may have taken as a result of the official communications sent in the year seventeen hundred and fifty by reason of the transgressions committed by the French of Martinique on the Guarapiche river. All of which documents and others which might throw light on the matter were requested of the office of the Secret Archives through the advice given His Majesty by the Council on the twenty-second of October of the same year; and, in consequence, with an official communication of the twenty-second of September of seventeen hundred and seventy, Sir Knight Arriaga transmitted the said letters and report, with two other statements in which the Governors of Guayana and Cumaná, complying with what was ordered them in the Royal command of the twenty-seventh of September of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, reported (justifying the same) upon the acts of which the Minister of Holland complained, and a letter from the Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchin Missions regarding what happened by reason of the ransom of three Indian women who, with their children, had been enslaved by the Dutch; the Sir Knight stating in his said official communication that the other papers wanting had been

requested of the office of the Secretary of State ; but, not having been found therein, he advised His Majesty thereof in another communication dated the sixth of October following, so that in this intelligence the Council might proceed to the consideration of the record.

9. Yturriaga's letters were written in Cabruta de Orinoco on the twelfth and sixteenth of June, and the fifteenth of September of seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and the nineteenth of April of fifty-eight, and in the first thereof the said Commissioner gave a description of the Apure river, setting forth the condition of its missions, its settlements, inhabitants, etc.

10. The second relates to the tearing down of the Castle of Araya, stating that as it had been constructed to prevent the Dutch from taking advantage of a salt mine contiguous thereto, the latter having been lost and the Dutch having discovered others, it was no longer useful, and a great tax on the Crown.

11. The third stated that having understood that the Dutch were constructing a fort on the Maruea river, a short distance from the ship channel of the Orinoco, he had ordered that a launch be sent there to investigate the condition of the building, its size and artillery ; and that, through a letter written him by Don Juan Valdes (a copy of which he enclosed), he had learned that the information was correct, and that there was no news save that the Dutch wished to move the Guard, which, under the name of Post, they maintained on the Maruea Channel, taking it down to the mouth entering into the sea at a distance of six leagues ; and that to this end they had made many clearings for sowing, and built houses ; and that, as was reported, the purpose was to prevent the desertion of their slaves to our dominions. Yturriaga added that from this report he inferred that they wished to establish some sugar plantations and add to their owners and slaves some Aroa Indians, in whom they most confided, so as to prevent the passing of the deserters ; and it might be that to this end, and to forestall any uprising among the slaves, they might wish to build a small fort with two or three light cannons, and with from four to six men. That the Dutch being allowed in Maruea, later perhaps they would pass over to the Barina,

which empties into the same mouth, and in time they would extend over to the Aquiri, whose mouth was in the Orinoco itself. That the Governor of Esquibo called himself, in his dispatches and passports, Governor of the Orinoco—a title hardly agreeable—but that it was profitable to them to have their Aroacas allowed to engage in the fishing of turtle, in which, as he had understood, there was much toleration on the part of the Commandant of Guayana, and even deference in granting licenses to many vessels which came up for the purpose of carrying Caribs and unknown Dutchmen who landed on the Caura river to buy Indian slaves.

12. Yturriaga's fourth letter was accompanied by a copy of the reply sent him by the Commandant of Guayana to nine questions propounded to him, and it appears therefrom that the transfer of the guard of which mention has been made was not carried into effect, but that a hut fifteen *varas* in length had been built at the mouth of the river emptying into the sea, as a shelter for parties going to their Colony between the rise and fall of the river; that the old Guard or Post was maintained at the same site without increase of troops or more artillery than three three-pound guns unmounted, and that the Aroaca Indians located at that place for the purpose of its trade composed a settlement of three divisions, each of ten or twelve small houses, distant from each other about one league, following the neighborhood of the Moruca seven leagues distant from the sea. And Yturriaga ended his letter stating that the Dutch of Esquibo published and maintained that the extent of the dominion of the States-General reached the ship channel or main mouth of the Orinoco, into which river their fishermen entered very far to enjoy its fisheries to an extent proportionate to the total lack of meat in their land and the great scarcity of fish in their river.

13. Naval Captain Don Joseph Solano, in his report on these letters, favored the demolition of the Castle of Araya, since, having no other purpose than the defence of the salt mine, and the English having been authorized by Article three of the Treaty of Munster to get salt on Tortuga Island, its continuance was no longer useful, especially as it did not protect any

essential part or impede foreign vessels from going to Cumaná and its coast, which place could not aid it in case of an invasion.

14. That the description of the Apure river agreed fully with the information he had, and that moreover he had found that the inhabitants of Barine, having experienced a decrease in the value of their tobacco in the Provinces of Caracas and Maracaibo owing to the increase in the crops of the latter, and that the price of theirs in the seaports barely met the expense of their grievous and protracted transit, opened to aliens the navigation of the Apure river, which empties into the Orinoco, so as to divide the difference therewith, and their introduction into the Province ruined the plantations and their owners, and depopulation would have followed had not the place the natives left been occupied by the surplus of the New Kingdom of Granada.

15. That notwithstanding the claims to Orinoco boasted by word of mouth by the Governors of Esquivo, based on the plea that the evidences of title given them by the Republic granted them this jurisdiction, he had not learned that they had made any demands growing out of the seizures from them by Trinities and Guayanese on the course of this river; nor had they dislodged them from the out-posts they had planted on the Cuyuni river to protect the parties that went into the interior of Guayana to buy Indian slaves, and much less could he understand upon what they could base them; for although by the fifth Article of the Treaty of Munster they were granted dominion over the countries, places, trading-posts and others they owned at that time in America, on the Orinoco, neither they nor any others save the Spanish had ever had up to the time or subsequently any place, fort, stronghold, encampment, hunting grounds, fisheries, or the enjoyment of its lands.

16. That they could not found such pretensions upon the tacit or express permission that the Commandants of Guayana and Orinoco may have at times given them to fish at the *Boca de Navios* and the Barima and Aquire rivers; on the huts they may have built to salt and dry their catch, nor on the navigation which may have been furtively allowed them as far as



Guayana or farther up; nor much less could they justify the Post or Guard they maintained at Moruca, since in the Treaty they are prohibited from erecting any new fortification under any pretext, and that the only thing they could allege was the silence or indifference with which the Commandants of Guayana had looked upon this usurpation, taking advantage thereof to extend their dominion to the main mouth of the Orinoco, and with easy navigation entering thereby, and by the Apure, Meta, and other rivers to the Provinces of Barcelona, Caracas, and Barinas, to the great prejudice of the Royal Treasury, the advancement of the Spanish population and the propagation of the gospel; for with the outer defence of that great river, and the aid which the Dutch interest furnished the Caribs, the latter turned a deaf ear to peace, disputed its navigation by the Spaniards, and its passage to the missionaries, basely advancing to the extent of taking the life of the holy fathers and of a great number of godless Indians; and they would have caused their total extermination had not the glorious predecessors of His Majesty succored them with escort troops, and the mediocre protection of the garrison and fort of Guayana. And Solano, coming down to the matter of proposing the forts that were needed to be established for the defence of the Orinoco and neighboring Provinces, their sites, and the troops that should garrison them, concluded his report by advancing the opinion that the military district of Guayana should be erected into a Government; that the city should be transferred to Angostura, and the neighboring settlements to a better climate, and that the residents of Guayana should withdraw their herds in order that the hunger of the enemy might aid our forces, and the securing of fresh meat and mules for their sugar mills be rendered difficult to the inhabitants of Esquibo; for in this way, concentrating the troops that were in Orinoco, Apure and Meta, the injurious invasion of the foreigners would be prevented, and the pious purposes of His Majesty would be accomplished.

17. The Commandant of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, in obedience to the said Royal command, sent, together with a letter dated April ninth of seventeen hundred and seventy-

eight, exemplified copies of the inquiries had regarding the acts complained of by the Director of Esquibo, stating, with reference to the results thereof, that they were all false charges through which Gravesand had endeavored to arouse the States-General against the proceedings of the Spaniards, erroneously supposing that the Dutch had ever been in possession of the rivers or rivulets that empty into the sea from the Esquibo to the Orinoco, because they had there no establishment other than a straw-thatched hut on the eastern bank of the Moruca, or Maroco, which had been tolerated for forty years back, intended to prevent the desertion of their slaves; which toleration degenerated soon into the iniquitous trade of buying from the cruel Caribs the Indians they enslaved, surprising the other nations subject to Spanish rule.

18. That neither were they in possession of the Maseroni and other rivers that emptied into the Esquibo on its southwestern bank, and it was expedient to disabuse them of this error upon which they founded their complaints; because the Esquibo flowing, approximately, parallel with the sea-coast from the vicinity of the Corentin until it emptied into the sea forty-five leagues east of the mouth of the Orinoco, all the rivers having their sources in the furthest interior of the Province of Guayana and flowing towards the coast lying between the mouths of the Corentin and Esquibo came in contact with the latter which crosses and assimilates them; so that if, as the Dutch supposed, the territory embraced by the rivers feeding the Esquibo (and they are the Cuyuni, Maseroni, Mao, Apanoni, Putara, and other minor ones, with their branches) belonged to the dominion of the Republic, they would have in the Province of Guayana more than the Spaniards; the case being, as appeared from the map he annexed, that the Dutch could only claim possession of the *Surinam*, *Cupernam*, *Corentin*, *Bervis*, *Demerara*, *Esquibo*, and *Powaron* rivers.

19. That the detachment which Gravesand supposed to have attacked their establishments in the year sixty-nine, was undoubtedly a tale invented by the *Poytos*,\* agents which they have in those parts, offended because some savage Indians,

---

\* Indian Slaves were called *Poytos*.

Caribs as well as Guaycas, of those living in those regions, came to settle in our Missions; the fact being that no detachment had left Guayana for those rivers, and that during late years some Indians came from the forests lying between the Cuyuni and Maseroni, at the request of the Caribs, which for more than twenty years were established in our Missions to the number of five thousand, without it being known up to that date that this numerous nation was a dependency of the Dutch, or those forests, which had been the nursery of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guayana, were territory of the Republic.

20. That the two garrisoned cabins which Gravesand alleged were in the vicinity of his hut on the Cuyuni river, were two Indian settlements founded by the Capuchins on the bank of the Yuruari, and with no garrison other than one soldier in each as escort of the missionary; that the supposed proximity thereof to his hut was equally false, since they were more than seventy leagues of bad road removed therefrom.

21. That the taking of Indians from Moruca by the Spaniards consisted in that the Catalonian Capuchins having entered escorted, as was customary, by a launch from Orinoco to the Barima river in search of Indian deserters from their Missions, which were dispersed between the Guayne and Moruca (a territory contiguous to the Orinoco and never occupied by the Dutch) they reached the Moruca hut, the guard of which held in slavery three Indian women and their children, kidnapped from the mouth of the Orinoco, as they stated to the missionaries; and they brought these Indians to the Missions without doing any harm whatever to the Dutch; but rather, thinking to favor them, they had given them a certificate of the affair to satisfy the Director of Esquibo.

22. That the killing of the guard of the Arinda hut and the Caribs of the vicinity was a groundless charge, for that post was situated beyond our reach, and no news was even had of it.

23. That on the Cuyuni river, called by the Dutch, Cayoeni, the latter had no possession other than a plantation where it empties into the Esquibo; for, although in the year seventeen

hundred and fifty-seven they attempted to establish themselves fifteen or twenty leagues higher up, for the purpose of enslaving Indians through the Caribs, the Commandant of Guayana, being informed thereof, sent a detachment which dislodged them, burning the trading post, and bringing prisoners the Dutch, one negro, and some Caribs, with the instructions and original statements, which fully proved the infamous trade, which, by order of the Director of Esquibo, and to his vile interest, the Guard of the trading post carried on.

24. That the post which Gravesand stated the Spanish took possession of *near a rivulet south of the Guayne river*, where he supposed the company had from time immemorial a trading place depending beyond contradiction upon the Republic, must be, without doubt, the one which the intruding Dutchmen on the Guarima river abandoned in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-eight, so soon as they learned that our cruising launches were patrolling that river, one of the largest emptying into the Orinoco, notwithstanding that Gravesand made it out a *rivulet*, without venturing to name it, so as not to declare himself a usurper. It is equally strange that he should call this an *immemorial* establishment, when it had existed barely for two years.

25. That they had never up to that time disputed the right of the Dutch to the fisheries at the mouths of the Orinoco because they did not fish there, as is proved by the fact that, having armed during the last three years some cruising launches for this river, they had seized thirty-three foreign vessels, but none of them engaged in fishing, nor was there even any information that the Dutch were in possession of such fishing grounds; and he had only been able to find one instance of having come across and seized, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, one small fishing schooner and two launches belonging to that nation, at the mouth of the Orinoco and the Barima river. But, nevertheless, it was thought that this pretended right, which would easily degenerate into a disgraceful illicit trade, difficult to stop and most injurious to our Provinces, should be denied.

26. And as regards the statement that the Spaniards retained the negro deserters from Esquibo, he stated that this had only been done with respect to those who were Indians or the negroes that came soliciting the benefits of the Catholic religion, since the others that had taken refuge to escape the vexations of ill treatment, or for other reasons, had been returned to their owners, or their value in silver had been given them, they being satisfied with the sale; although since Gravesand had appropriated two negroes who had escaped from Guayana, and sold them for his own benefit, he appeared to have contented himself with this reprisal, for since then he had not demanded those that had left his Colony.

27. And, finally, in satisfaction of the rest demanded of him through the said Royal command, to the effect that he state whatever he might see fit in the premises, he stated that as in every country the most necessary things are the sea coasts, and those of the vast Province of Guayana being occupied by the Dutch, without Spain being left anything but a point at the mouth of the Orinoco, to gain an outlet to the sea, we ought to direct our policy to the destruction of the Dutch colonies, beginning with that of Esquibo and following up with Demerari, Bervice, Corentin, up to Surinam, for which purpose he proposed two methods, to wit: That protection and liberty be given all the fugitive slaves from the said colonies, as was done in Caracas with those from Curazao; and that the said Province be garrisoned with a battalion of infantry to build on the frontiers and rivers that empty into the Esquibo the forts which even before being projected would frighten the Dutch, in order to embarrass thereby the usurpation of more territory than that which they now occupy, and the considerable extraction of Indians whereby, leaving our lands deserted, they greatly people and cultivate their own; for in this way facilitating the running away of the Indians and negroes they were enslaving, and rendering difficult their purchase of others by reason of the imminent risk of losing them, it was probable that they would soon decamp from our vicinity, seeing us formidable to take other measures.

28. The Governor of Cumaná, Don Pedro Joseph de Urrutia,

in his report of May tenth, of seventeen hundred and seventy, and two exemplified copies he sent therewith, adds no particulars to the statements of the Commandant of Guayana, save a letter that Gravesand wrote him on the thirtieth of September, of fifty eight, demanding the two Dutchemen, one negro slave and a *Grifa* who, with her children, was seized by the detachment which went over to the dislodgment on the Cuyuni river, which is mentioned under number twenty-three, and the reply he sent him denying his request; and also that the same Gravesand transmitted him in March of the same year a letter, and a box within which was a map, which he returned to him unopened with a letter in which he stated to him the general prohibition against the entrance of foreign vessels into those territories, and carrying on correspondence with its colonies; and that having understood that his object was to insist upon the demarcation of the lines within which the colony of Esquibo lay, he could not and ought not to receive the said letter and box, and was without authority to act in the matter.

29. The Prefect of the Missions, in the representation which under date of July sixth, of seventeen hundred and sixty, he addressed to the secret office, related the events of the entry made by the missionaries of the Barima river to ransom the fugitive Indians from their Missions, which is set forth under number twenty-one, going on to consider the injuries done to religion and the State by the Carib Indians aided by the Dutch, the overweening desire of the latter to acquire new localities in order to in time allege possession and raise much clamor that their boundaries be set.

All these documents, with many others annexed as antecedents, were sent to the then Attorney General, accompanied also by another record which had already been considered by His Majesty, ever since the ninth of May of seventeen hundred and sixty-eight, relating to an official communication from the Ambassador of England, referring to the return of the negroes passing from her islands to ours of America; and the former official having made known that the investigation and examination of such a mass of papers was a very long task, on which he must of necessity consume a great part of the time needed

to perform the other and important business of his office, the Council ordered by its resolution of the first of October of seventeen hundred and seventy-four, that it should all be referred to the Relator, Counsellor Canet, in order that he make a brief of all the matters in the record and its antecedents, which done, he should return it to the Attorney General for his opinion.

The matter remained in this condition up to the year seventeen hundred and eighty-five, when, the brief having been made by the Relator and the record returned to the Attorney General, Don Antonio Porlier, he stated in his reply of May twenty-seventh of the same year that at that time there was no action required, since, more than fifteen years having passed without any pressure being brought by the Minister of Holland in the premises, it was natural to believe that the Republic, better apprised of the want of just reasons for the demand it had made, had desisted therefrom. That moreover, the papers annexed to his memorial, principally the representation of the Commandant of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, made evident the want of reason with which the Dutch complained, and the necessity for taking on our part the precautions he suggested in those regions as very important for the State; but that as in the course of so many years the circumstances of the Province may also have changed, the examination thereof could not be entered upon without new and recent reports of its present condition. By reason of all of which he felt that at this time nothing should be done save to await until future developments should demonstrate what had best be done; with which opinion the Council agreed by resolution of June fourth of the said year of seventeen hundred and eighty-five.

#### *Island of Tortuga.*

On the second of August, sixteen hundred and thirty-five, the dislodging of the enemy from this island was reported, and His Majesty ordered that they work day and night in the Curazao matter.

On the twenty-second of August, of the following year, sixteen hundred and thirty-six, His Majesty made several gifts

of salary and privileges in Santo Domingo to those who distinguished themselves in the engagement which dislodged the enemy from the Island of Tortuga ; the Corporal of these was Rui Fernandez de Fuenmayor.

In the year sixteen hundred and fifty-four, several consultations were held reporting the dislodging of the French from this very island. [There is a flourish.]

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in these Archives, in the Bundle endorsed: " State Papers. *Audiencia* of Caracas. Royal Orders, letters of town corporations, Royal officers, private persons, reports, 1750 to 1829."

Seville, June 3, 1890.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 18, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.



[Translation.]

**No. XXVIII.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

Case 131.—Shelf 2.—Bundle 17.

---

**No. 3.**

---

**1769.—Certificate of Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Accountant of Guayana, of the confiscations and seizures made in that Province. Among others, it refers to the seizure made “from the aliens established on the Barima Channel, jurisdiction of this said Province.”**

---

GUAYANA, *January 28.*

---

Don Andres de Oleaga, Official Royal Accountant of this city of Guayana and its Province for His Majesty (whom God preserve), etc.

I certify in the best manner I can, for whatever purpose, and before the Señores that may see it, how, after the arrival of Señor Don Manuel Centurion, Captain of the Royal Corps of Artillery, and Commandant General of this said Province, pursuant to his great energy and zeal in the Royal service, the following confiscations and seizures were made: On the twenty-seventh of January of the past year of seventeen hundred and sixty-seven, in a closed port of the Presidio of old Guayana, a launch coming from Esquivo, Dutch Colony, with two slaves, and cargo of *Taphia* rum and merchandise, from Don Vicente Franco. On the sixth of March of said year, at the same Presidio, various goods from Bernardo Montes, who was coming from the same Colony in a felucca. On the

eleventh of April of the said year, on the land within the said Presidio, four mules loaded with different kinds of foreign clothing, without permit or license. On the twenty-second of said month and year, above the port of this city, different articles, without permit or license, from Lorenzo Yeguas. On June sixteenth of the said year, at the Presidio aforesaid of old Guayana, sixteen kegs of brandy, from Master Gazpar Vidal, who was introducing them clandestinely and left them buried on an islet in the Orinoco. On September twenty-eighth of the same year, at the port of Piacoa, below the aforesaid Presidio, a canoe laden with Dutch goods from Esquibo, from Pedro Sanchez.

And by the Sergeant of the Company of Pioneers, Ciprian Maiorga, with the pirogue he commanded, one of the Orinoco canoes from the aliens engaged in the clandestine extraction of mules, horses, neat cattle, and other products, through the Guarapiche and Theresen rivers, which empty in the interior of the Golpho Triste de la Paria. An English sloop named the *Sevillana*; a Spanish schooner, the *Esperanza*; two launches, also Spanish; an English boat with four lately-imported negroes, some animals, and different foreign articles, besides (in the same campaign and before returning to this city) a French schooner named *Maria Louisa*, with two newly-imported negroes; two barrels, one of claret and the other of *Taphia* rum, and ten *arrobas* (250 lbs.) of *chinchorro* thread; and, also, on the same occasion, in company with the cruiser armed at the Island of Trinidad, a French sloop and schooner with various goods and newly-imported negroes, of which, after deducting all expenses and the sixth part, which the officials retained, they delivered to him the half, which amounts to seventeen hundred and ninety-two *pesos*, twenty-four *maravedis*, which brought in this place two-thousand and eighty-five *pesos*, three *reals*, one and two-fourths *maravedis*. Which seizures were declared to be legal and belonging to His Majesty on March twenty-sixth, April thirtieth, and July twenty-ninth of last year—seventeen hundred and sixty-eight.

And besides the confiscations and seizures mentioned, I also declare that the Captain of the Company of Orinoco Pioneers,

Don Francisco Cierto, with the two cruising launches of this river, sent by the said Señor Don Manuel Centurion, arrested the foreigners that were established on the Barima Channel, jurisdiction of the same Province, two boats and several tools and agricultural implements, which, in an edict issued on the nineteenth of April of the said last year, sixty-eight, were also declared confiscated, and all are recorded in this Royal Accountant's office in ten edicts, and therein the total value of seven thousand *pesos*, one *real*, five and two-fourths *maravedis*, of which, in the way of Royal duties, His Majesty received two thousand seven hundred and ninety-five *pesos*, seven *reals*, thirty-three *maravedis*. And, lastly, the said Captain, from the thirteenth day of October of last year to date, with the said cruising launches under his command, and sent by the aforesaid Commandant General of Orinoco, has seized on the said Guarapiche and Theresen rivers a Spanish launch with twelve heifers, an English sloop with eighty mules, six horses, and five negroes, two *columpos*, or large sloops, one English and the other French, three English schooners, one small Bermuda sloop, of the same nation, one Spanish launch, with seven horses, some goods and implements, against which proceedings are now pending.

And in order that it may go on record, at the verbal request of the said Commandant General, Don Manuel Centurion, I issue this for all the legal and necessary effects.

Done in this Royal Accountant's office of Guayana, on the twenty-eighth day of January, of the year seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.

ANDRES DE OLCAGA—[a flourish].

---

We, Don Joseph Boxi, Captain of Infantry, and Don Vicente Diez de la Fuente, Sub-Lieutenant and Adjutant of these troops of Orinoco, say that the signature with which the foregoing certificate is authenticated is the same used in his office by the official Royal Accountant of this city and Province, Don Andres de Oleaga, and its fac-similes are given full faith and credit everywhere.

And that it may so appear to whoever may see it, we so certify, owing to the absence of a Scrivener and Notary ; and we sign in this city of Guayana, on the twenty-eighth of January, of seventecn hundred and sixty-nine.

JOSÉ BOXI—[a flourish].

VICENTE DIEZ DE LA FUENTE—[a flourish].

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in these Archives, in the bundle marked " 131-2-17."

Seville, May 19, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 4, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXIX.**

Case 133—Shelf 4—Bundle 29.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**No. 6.**

---

**1784—Letter No. 74 from the Intendent of Caracas relating to the encouragement and settlement of Guayana.**

---

Number 74.—Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: The Province of Guayana is the most important of all those included in the vast region called the Mainland, both because of its situation to windward of all the Spanish possessions on this continent, and the extent, variety, and fertility of its lands. Notwithstanding the many advantages nature has granted this Province it daily falls into greater decadence. Far from being a source of profit for the King, it taxes this treasury to the extent of forty thousand *pesos* annually, and its trade renders so small a profit to the Mother-country that a single vessel, only fairly laden, would supply her for many years.

Upon this subject, at various times, have detailed reports been sent to H. M., which have resulted in different measures which, either because they were not carried out with due prudence, or because not of themselves adapted to the magnitude of the subject, have never brought about the happy results their promoters intended.

The two cardinal points to be considered for the up-building of Guayana are: First, the settlement of her extensive and fertile lands; second, the freedom of a reciprocally advantageous

VOL. III, VEN.—14

trade with the districts of Barinas, Nutrias, Kingdom of Santa Fe and the southern part of this Province, permitting and even encouraging the navigation of the Meta, Casanare, Apure, Guarico, and Santo Domingo rivers, and other navigable streams emptying into the Orinoco, through which last river a vast trade can be carried on, giving an outlet thereby to the products of the midland Provinces, which, owing to an absence of trade, rest in a sorrowful decadence.

The settlement, in the opinion of all intelligent parties, should begin in lower Guayana, which is the most level, fruitful, and adapted for the new settlements to begin to flourish at once. From that locality it will be easy to extend them to the frontiers of Esquibo and Demerari, to restrain the usurpations of the Dutch up to the neighborhood of the Negro river; to check those of the Portuguese, and occupy the principal channels of the Orinoco so as to end the secret importations thereby made. Otherwise none of these objects can be realized, and if the settlement and projected fort are founded and built in the neighborhood of Esquibo, lower Guayana being left deserted, aside from the great cost to the Royal Treasury to maintain an establishment so many leagues removed from an inhabited place, it will be a sink of abuses, a station for smugglers, a precarious possession in time of war, and a weak barrier against bordering nations.

To enter into the details of this subject would entail making a too prolix representation, in which the lack of knowledge of the locality would always leave its readers in much darkness. Until this matter is decided or taken up fundamentally, the presence in these countries of Lieutenant Don Josef Phelipe de Yuciarte is not necessary. Therefore I decided to send him home to confer verbally with Y. E. upon these matters. He has knowledge of the localities, carries maps and detailed notes, and, if Y. E., owing to pressing engagements, can not give this subject all the attention it demands, you might order a council, presided over by the Most Excellent Señor Don Bernardo de Galvez, to consider fundamentally a matter which, in my opinion, is one of the most difficult and important that can arise in the New World.

God preserve the life of Y. E. many years. Caracas, February 1, 1784. Most Excellent Sir, your humble servant kisses Y. E.'s hand.

FRANCISCO DE SAAVEDRA—[a flourish].  
The Most Excellent Señor Don Josef de Galvez.

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original document existing in the General Archives of the Indias in Case 133—Shelf 4—Bundle 129.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, June 4, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXX.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.

---

**Letter No. 65, from the Intendent of Caracas, Don Juan Guillelmi, to the Most Excellent Senor Don Pedro de Lerena, transmitting exemplified copies and other documents relative to the construction of the stronghold or sentry box and the establishment of a village of Spaniards at the fork or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni Rivers of the Province of Guayana.**

---

CARACAS, *October 25, 1790.*

---

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: In my very confidential representation of the twenty-ninth of September last, number one, advising my determination to order constructed a stronghold or sentry box, and establish a Spanish village at the fork or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, in the Province of Guayana, which empty into the Esquibo in the Dutch Colonies, I informed Y. E. that I would transmit to you the exemplified copy of a certain record which had been made up for another purpose, and which concurred in the matter of such establishment and that of the town or Mission of Tumeremo.

In effect I send Y. E., under number one, an exemplified copy of said record I promised, and also, under numbers two and three, copies of my official communication and order to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchin Missions and the principal officials of the Royal Treasury, in order that Y. E., being apprised of everything done, may be pleased to approve my determination in the understanding that as regards the military phase of this new fortification and the separating from his corps for such commission of the Adjutant



Major of the Veteran Companies of Guayana, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, I report to the Most Excellent Count del Campo de Alange, as I believe is my duty.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Caracas, the twenty-fifth of October of seventeen hundred and ninety. Most Excellent Sir.

JUAN GUILLELMI—[there is a flourish].

The Most Excellent Señor Don Pedro de Lerena.

*Exemplified copy of the record made up at the instance of the Reverend Father Prefect of Catalonian Capuchins of the Missions of Guayana, relating to the founding and approval of the new town of Tumeremo.*

To the Governor and Captain General :

Friar Buena Bentura de San Celonio, of the Capuchin Order, Preacher, Apostolic missionary and Prefect of the Missions of Catalonian Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Guayana, with due respect to Y. H., represents: That whereas there has been founded a town of Guayana Indians, under the name of Maria Santisima de Velen de Turmeremo, in this year of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight, conformably with the laws of His Catholic Majesty (whom God preserve), therefore I humbly and strongly beseech Y. H. to be pleased to furnish the ornaments, books, sacred goblets, bell, and other jewels necessary to divine worship and the administering of the Holy Sacraments, which are needed for the church of said town; and in order that its establishment and actual existence may appear, I sign it with my own hand, sealed with the great seal of our office, and countersigned by the undersigned Secretary, in this Mission of the Purisima Concepcion de Caroni, on August twelfth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,

Prefect.

By command of our Very Reverend Father Prefect, Friar Serafin de Arens, Secretary of the Mission.

[Copy.]

Whereas the Prefect and Assistant Judges of these holy Missions of Guayana have found it necessary to seek out a fit and suitable site for the founding of a new town, for the care of a new cattle ranch, and not having found any more conducive to the greater increase and maintenance of the Missions than that of Tumeremo, we have resolved to found it on said site, distant four leagues from Angel Custodio, five from Tupuquen and six from Cura, to the north thereof; and considering that the founding of the said town must result in the best service of both Majesties, we trust in the distinguished course of Y. H. to agree to the same.

God our Master, preserve the important life of Y. H. many years to the benefit of this Province, as in this Mission of Carony we pray on the eighth of February of eighty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,  
Prefect.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SEVADEL,  
Assistant Judge.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SANTA COLOMA,  
Assistant Judge.

The approval of the town and cattle ranch which your Reverence informs me in the official communication of the eighth instant you have determined to found on the site or locality you call Tumeremo, I am not authorized to give until I shall inform myself and report to the Intendent General of Caracas, who, in his communications regarding the results of the last two towns, has advised me of the measures that should intervene. Consequently, when I am certain I shall inform him, and shall apprise your Reverence of the result, whose life I pray God may spare many years.

Guayana, February twelfth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Very Reverend Father Prefect and Assistant Judges.

*Another.*

In order to comply with the orders I have received and not to retard the steps leading to the establishment of a herd of cattle which your Reverence and his assistants submit to me in your communication of the eighth instant, I have determined to detail the Adjutant-Major of these troops, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, who will call upon Y. R. and show the instructions he bears; and it would be advisable for Y. R. to designate a skilled brother who, in company with this officer, shall go and see and reconnoitre the Tumeremo site and an advantageous and suitable place on the Cuyuni river to found a town or stronghold to defend the rear of the Missions and aid the new subjugations which the venerable community under Y. R. is continuing. In this connection I recall having conversed with your predecessor and other missionaries, who suggested to me that the place where the Yuruario and Cuyuni meet would be well adapted; nevertheless, I have advised the officer not to fail to investigate the neighborhood to see if there is another more advantageous spot affording more room. This matter being so interesting to the Royal service and useful to the preservation and increase of those Missions, I trust that Y. R. will extend to the said Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente whatever assistance he may require to carry out the mission with which he is charged, and that you will issue your orders by circular that they may be obeyed by the missionaries as well as by their subjects in the town he is to pass, in the understanding that whatever expense he may incur, by securing his receipt, will be immediately paid; and in this confidence, and satisfied of the love and zeal for the Royal service which animates Y. R., I pray our Lord to spare your life many years.

Guayana, February sixteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMION.

V. R. F. Prefect, Friar Buenaventura de San Celonio.

*Another.*

In reply to the communication Y. H. sent me on the twentieth of the current May, I must state the following: That

pursuant to an ordinance approved by the King our Master, (whom God preserve) we are commanded, among other things, that the Prefect and Assistant Judges shall meet to designate sites for the new settlements. This has always been done whenever it has been wished to found an Indian town, and in the same way those localities have been sought which have best tended to the welfare of the Indians and to the advantage of our Sovereign, and this appears to us to accord well with the laws relating to the founding of Indian towns; wherefore it can be clearly seen, when we once observe how the above-expressed is done, that we adequately comply with the obligation of founders of Indian towns, which we enjoy through the King our Master. Nor does it follow from this that it is unnecessary to ask the approval of Y. H. of some town that is being founded: First, because in case that we should not succeed, through inadvertence, in selecting a site, Y. H. still has the liberty of showing the inadvisability of settling on such site. Second, because to secure the allowance which the mercy of our Catholic Monarch has assigned for such town it is always necessary that the approval of the Chief of the Province should have preceded; otherwise we can not see how it would be possible for the Royal treasury at Caracas to pay the allowance, without first showing the approval of Y. H. Third, it appears not to be unnecessary because by requesting the approval Y. H. is advised, when it becomes necessary to ask the Court for missionaries, of the increase in towns, and in proportion to the increase more or less missionaries are called for. Fourth, it is not unnecessary to ask the approval of the new settlement for the durability thereof as much on the part of the founder as on that of the approver, because once approved no authority or liberty is left any one to destroy or transfer it; and if, through less serious causes, any discretion remains to destroy it when not approved, when it is, more serious causes are required. Lastly, if it be true that we may err in the selection of a site the same may happen to others, as experience has shown, and this may be due to the fact that under present circumstances the said site may appear to be well adapted, although afterwards, other conditions having arisen, it may be

found to be not so adapted as it had first appeared. The truth is that we endeavor as far as possible to keep within the tenor of the laws and decrees His Majesty (whom God preserve) has issued to us, and no one in the world can rightfully say the contrary. We are not unaware of the remarks that some one or more have made; but, in truth, we also know that they emanate from a purely venomous inclination; they are not founded on any true grounds; but on false grounds, destitute of every justifiable reason, as, whenever it may be advisable and necessary, we shall prove, not only to Y. H., but also to any other person in the world.

By the foregoing we think we have, for the present, manifested to Y. H. whatever is proper to the end that Y. H. may, without scruple, and whenever necessary, be assured of our upright conduct in the matter of founding settlements, and that we therein act in conformity with the laws, in order to give the necessary approval whenever advisable. It makes no difference that we have the practice of stationing priests (if any there be), for whenever we are satisfied that the site is adaptable, convenient, and possessing all the other necessary conditions as well for the Indians as for the King our Master, and Y. H. being at liberty to make known the uselessness, if it be the fact, of the site for the Indians, or the inconvenience thereof for the King our Master, it appears to us that we act very properly, for Y. H. must presume that we are not so inconsiderate as to wish to do things without thought and prudence, nor are we so rash that we do things of such consequence with audacity and despotically.

The fact is that no one better than ourselves should look to, and in fact we do look to, and even secure, the comfort and convenience of the Indians as well as of the King our Master in the matter of the settling and subjugating of Indians, owing to the great solicitude with which our pious and Catholic Monarch has entrusted them to us. In truth, I confess to Y. H. that I have been unable to understand why you place those difficulties in our way, while none of Y. H.'s predecessors had ever placed difficulties in this regard, the fact being that they did not ignore the sound method and practices which the Reverend

Catalonian Capuchin missionaries had from the beginning used in the matter of the settlement of Indian towns. That if Y. H. has seen fit to object now to having established the cattle ranch on the savannahs of Tumeremo because the savannahs of the old cattle ranch are almost entirely the same, it appears to us that the reason is very poor that Y. H. gives for the objection, for as the latter site being so distant from the Cuyuni river, as it is notorious to all, the reason for the objection vanishes immediately. The fact is that Y. H.'s predecessor had no objection to allowing the settlement of the site of Cura, as it is much nearer to the Cuyuni river than that of Tumeremo, and the Curumo site was also nearer, nevertheless one of Y. H.'s predecessors had no objection to allowing it to be settled, although, because the Caribs living in that neighborhood had taken up arms, it has not again been settled. Finally, let not Y. H. hesitate to place before us all the observations that may have been made by the Adjutant Major, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, as we are ready to give reasons for everything, and have nothing to hide in our method of working, but, as is publicly known, we have nothing to fear, as our conscience does not accuse us in any way.

I say nothing further at present on this matter, in order not to molest Y. H. And since Y. H. requests a detailed statement of all the settlements, setting forth the year of the founding of each of them, I send it to Y. H., annexed to this, for whatever purposes Y. H. may deem proper.

God our Lord preserve you many years, as I desire.

Carony, May thirty-first of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,

Prefect.

To the Governor and Commandant-General, Don Miguel Marmion.

---

It is a copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, September third, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

*Certificate.*

The undersigned certify in the best form of law that on the twenty-fifth day of the month of April, of this year, we celebrated our triennial meeting at the Mission of San Joseph de Cupapuy, at which the Reverend Father Friar Buenaventura de San Celonio was elected Prefect of our Missions, and the Reverend Fathers Friar Buenaventura de Saavadel and Friar Buenaventura de Santa Coloma were elected Assistant Judges, and pursuant to our institutes the said Reverend Fathers elected the following Missionary Fathers to the offices and Presidencies below named :

*Carony.*—The Very Reverend Father Prefect, and as President Father Friar Serafin de Arens, Procurator and Secretary, and Brother Hilarion de Tarragona, lay nurse.

*Monte Calvario.*—President, Father Friar Pasqual de Barcelona.

*San Miguel.*—President, Reverend Father Friar Hermenegildo de Vichex, Prefect Chronicler and Treasurer.

*Santa Ana.*—President, Reverend Father Friar Buenaventura de Santa Coloma, Assistant Judge.

*Altigracia.*—President, Father Friar Thomas de Olod, and Father Friar Justo de Barcelona.

*Cupapuy.*—President, Reverend Father Friar Felis de Saraga, ex-Assistant Judge, and Reverend Father Friar Thomas de Mataro, ex-Assistant Judge.

*Santa Maria.*—Father Friar Agustin de Barcelona, President.

*Palmar.*—President, Father Friar Antonio Martorel.

*Cumamu.*—President, Presbyter Friar Raimundo de Olod.

*Miamo.*—President, Father Friar Josef Maria Mataro.

*Carapo.*—President, Father Friar Manuel Preyxama.

*Tupuquen.*—President, Father Friar Leopoldo de Barcelona.

*Cattle Ranch of Tumeremo.*—President, Father Friar Mariano de Perafita.

*Cura.*—President, Father Friar Manuel de Catell.

*Gucuipati.*—President, Father Friar Pedro Martin de Rivas.

*Divina Pastora.*—President, Father Friar Juan de Livia.

*Ayma*.—President, Father Friar Joaquin de Barcelona.

*Avechica*.—President, Father Friar Domingo de San Ipolito, Nurse.

*Santa Clara*.—President, Father Friar Hermenegildo de Premia.

*San Serafin*.—Father Friar Juan Bautista de Olod.

*San Pedro de las Bocas*.—Father Friar Felix Vich.

*Santa Madalena de Curucay*.—President, Father Friar Bernardino de San Felis.

*Puedpa*.—Father Friar Mariano de Ververa.

*Guxi*.—President, Father Friar Francisco Barnius.

*San Antonio*.—President, Father Friar Bernardino de Verdu.

*Morucuru y Caruache*.—Reverend Father Friar Buenaventura de Sevadell, Assistant Judge.

*Villa de San Antonio de Upata*.—Curate *ad interim*, Father Friar Henrique de Puig.

*Villa de San Isidoro de Barceloneta*.—Curate *ad interim*, Father Friar Luis de Castell Tersol.

In testimony whereof we issue these presents, signed by our hands and sealed with the seal of the Mission, countersigned by the Secretary of the Mission, at the Mission of La Purisima Concepcion de Caroni, the thirtieth of April, of the year seventeen hundred and eighty-seven.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIA,  
Prefect.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SEVADEL,  
Assistant Judge.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SANTA COLOMA,  
Assistant Judge.

FRIAR SERAFIN DE ARENS,  
Secretary of the Mission.

To the Governor and Commandant General, Don Miguel Marmion.

---

It is a verbatim copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, June thirtieth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.



[*Copy.*]

Detailed statement of all the settlements existing which the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Missionary Fathers have founded in this Province of Guayana, pursuant to the authority thereunto granted them by the King our Master (whom God preserve) in several Royal decrees issued for that purpose under whose executive Government they are by virtue of the authority they have from His Majesty ; setting forth the year of the founding of each settlement, which statement I, the Prefect of Guayana, send to the Governor of the said Province he having so requested me, in a letter dated May twentieth, of the year seventeen hundred and eighty-eight, as follows :  
When founded—

- 1724. Mission of the Purísima Concepcion de Caroni.
- 1730. Mission of Santa Maria de los Angeles de Iacuaru.
- 1733. Mission of San Joseph de Cupapui.
- 1734. Mission of Nuestro Serafico Padre San Francisco de Altagracia.
- 1734. Mission of San Miguel del Palmar.
- 1737. Mission of the Divina Pastora de Tarivarío.
- 1748. Mission of Nuestra Señora de Monserrate del Miamo.
- 1752. Mission of San Miguel de Carapo.
- 1754. Mission of Santa Eulalia de Murucury.
- 1755. Mission of San Joseph de Lionicia de Ayma.
- 1757. Mission of Nuestra Señora del Rosario de Gucuitat.
- 1760. Mission of Nuestra Señora Santa Ana de Paracacuru.
- 1761. Mission of Santa Cruz de Monte Calvario.
- 1763. Mission of San Raymundo de Caravache.
- 1765. Mission of San Antonio de Huiesatono.
- 1767. Mission of the conversion of San Pablo del Cumamoc.
- 1769. Mission of Nuestra Señora de los Dolores de Piedra.
- 1770. Mission of San Felis de Topuquen.
- 1770. Mission of San Pedro de las Bocas.
- 1771. Mission of San Buenaventura de Guri.
- 1779. Mission of San Miguel de Hunata.
- 1779. Mission of Santa Clara de Tavarapana.

- 1779. Mission of San Serafin Arahuaatima.
- 1782. Mission of Santa Rosa de Vitermo de Cura.
- 1783. Mission of Santa Magdalena de Currucay.
- 1783. Mission of San Juan Bautista del Abechica.
- 1785. Mission of Santo Angel Custodio.
- 1788. Mission of Nuestra Señora de Velen.
- 1762. Village of San Antonio de Upata.
- 1770. Village of San Isidro de la Barceloneta.

This is, sir, the true statement which Y. H. requested of all the existing settlements. And should any detail be missing, I refer to the Registers or Polls which I sent Y. H. at the beginning of this year of eighty-eight, and of which I have had no notice as to whether they were received or not.

To all of which I certify, in this Mission of Caroni, on this thirty-first day of May, of the year seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,  
Prefect.

---

It is a copy from the original.

Guayana, June thirtieth of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

---

*Diary of the Governor of Guayana.*

On the twenty-sixth day of February of this present year, at ten o'clock at night, the Adjutant Major Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente left this capital of Guayana with a passport and instructions from the Governor of this Province, Don Miguel Marmion, to exhaustively explore the Cuyuni river and its neighborhood. And having embarked on the launch in the charge of Miguel Castellanos, accompanied by Corporal Antonio Mora, we arrived at the port of San Joaquin on the twenty-eighth instant, at three o'clock in the afternoon, and at the same hour I wrote to the Reverend Father Prefect, who was in the town of Caroni, to send me animals for my transportation, enclosing the official letter which I brought for the said

Father from the Governor, and seeing that it was getting dark and nothing had arrived, I took from a muletteer at the time in the port the necessary animals for my transportation and set out on the twenty-ninth day, arriving at the town of Caroni after a journey of two leagues, and at seven o'clock in the morning I went to see the Prefect, whom I requested, after he was apprised of the commission entrusted to me through the official letter and the instructions I showed him, to furnish me horses so as to proceed on the same day to the village of Upata, to which he replied that everything would be got in readiness for me, as he was much pleased that some notice was being taken of the localities of Cuyuni since for sometimes previous they had represented the great danger the Missions hereabouts were in because of the Dutch ; but that I could not start yet, as it was necessary to consult with the Assistant Judges to select a priest to accompany me ; and awaiting this determination, I was detained until the second.

On the second day of March I left Caroni at four o'clock in the afternoon, the Father Prefect having informed me that the Father selected to accompany me was Father Mariano de Perafitia ; that he had written to Father Manuel de Presiana to accompany me, as soon as I reached the town of Carapo, to that of Tupuquen, and from Tupuquen as far as Angel Custodio ; and he also handed me a circular letter to the end that the Fathers on my travels should furnish me all the assistance I might require, with which I took my leave, and after having traveled five leagues we arrived at the watch-house and ranch of Guacayma at about seven in the evening.

On the third, at six in the morning, I again took up the road, and having traveled seven leagues we reached the town of Altagracia at four o'clock in the afternoon. Having arranged with the Father of this town that when I should advise him from the village of Upata he would send me the animals and other necessary things I might request, we remained until the following day.

On the fourth, at seven o'clock in the morning, I started for the village of Upata, arriving there at ten o'clock a. m., after a two leagues' ride. On this same day I delivered the order

of the Governor to the Lieutenant, Don Diego Morales, who, as the residents of the village were in the fields, found it necessary to send for them; and of the three who were to accompany me, Patricio Rivas was absent, who did not put in an appearance for five days, wherefore I was constrained to remain until the ninth, on which day the animals I had already requested of the Father of the Pueblo of Altagracia arrived.

On the tenth I continued my way towards the town of Santa Maria with three residents of the town of Upata and a militiaman of the escort of three, which, by order of the Governor communicated to the Sergeant commanding the said escort, the latter was required to furnish me, who being in the towns of Angel Custodio and Aguachica, were sent orders to join me; and having reached the said town of Santa Maria, which is four leagues distant from the village, I requested animals from the Father of this town, which were made ready for me on the following day.

On the seventh I continued my trip at three o'clock p. m., and after having gone five leagues we arrived at the Cumbe river at seven o'clock at night. On the twelfth I started at ten o'clock a. m., as two horses had disappeared, and as best we could we got along as far as the savannah of Carapo, where it became necessary to camp after midday, as we had traveled with a great lack of water only four leagues, stopping in a mulberry copse until the following day.

On the thirteenth, at seven in the morning, we started, and having traveled four leagues we reached the town of Carapo and animals were got ready to proceed on the next day.

On the fourteenth I went on in company with Father Manuel de Preciana, who had received orders from the Prefect to accompany me as far as Topuquen, and having traveled five leagues we reached the said town after twelve o'clock in the day, when the said Father returned to his town, leaving the same order of the Father Prefect to Father Leopoldo of this town; and on this same day I sent for the militiaman Miguel Suniga, interpreter of the Carib tongue, and one of the three detailed to accompany me, to advise me as to the Indians that were to be taken, and from what settlement; and on this same day Father Leopoldo sent for Father Mariano, selected to go

with me, and who was at the Port of Angel Custodio; and he having arrived, jointly with the said Suniga, at 7 o'clock p. m. of this day, I being informed by the said Suniga of what was best adapted for the success of the mission.

On the fifteenth the two Fathers, Leopoldo and Mariano, with the assistance of Suniga, conferred with me as to the provisions to be made with respect to Indian pilots and rowers, boats and supplies. And on this same day a request was sent to Father Pedro of Guacipata for ten Caribs, as these were the best pilots, since of those of this town of Tupuquen the best were on the Coyuni, by permission of Father Leopoldo, and only four were found that could be disposed of, and they were designated. On this same day the Father of Cura was advised, in order that he might prepare jerked beef and secure the *casabe*, he could get ready, which advice was sent by Father Mariano, and we remained until the following day awaiting the Indians and the answer from Cura.

On the sixteenth day the said Father Mariano returned to his town of Angel Custodio to arrange for his trip and await our arrival, in the understanding that the rowers that might be needed could be made up from among those in Angel Custodio with two militiamen of the said fourteen Caribs, and those already with me, for, although orders were sent for one who was in Aguachica to accompany me, the Missionary Father of the said town objected, and notwithstanding that Father Leopoldo remonstrated, saying that the said militiaman was necessary to the said expedition, the Father had his way, not allowing him to come, and although it was necessary to take some military action I left on this day. After traveling more than two leagues we reached the town of Angel Custodio, where I found a message from the Father of Cura, saying that the meat I might need was ready, and that as regards the *casabe* he only had five *cargas*, in which understanding six additional *cargas* were requested of Father Leopoldo, which we took to Cura, having dispatched on this day a canoe with six Indians to said Cura, owing to the lack of boats in these parts. And having made the necessary horses ready, we remained until the following day.

On the eighteenth we started for the town of Cura, and

having traveled five leagues we arrived at said town, where resides Father Friar Manuel de Castell, and conferring with the said Father and Father Mariano (who now accompanied me, being detailed for the said trip) regarding boats, he offered those he had, which he went to inspect, and, in fact, we found in a bend two large and suitable canoes, which, with the one brought from Angel Custodio, would furnish sufficient transportation to carry out the trip. Notwithstanding this action, and the rest he had ready in the way of provisions, the said Father offered us anything else we might require for the service of the King; but he asking how we expected to continue our trip, I replied, that by water, to which he replied that he had offered everything, so as not to appear as objecting, but that it was impossible to carry out the trip, as the river was absolutely dry; that at no time had he ever seen it as it then was; to which I added that nevertheless we would find the best way of continuing; and pursuant to this information of the Father I determined to convince myself through the expert Carib Indians from Guacipata and Tupuquen. Although they gave me the same answer, I asked if we could not proceed, even with great labor, dragging the canoes. They said we could; but before two days we would no longer have any boats, and by the six or eight days necessary to reach the Supamo river, where we could find navigation, it would be necessary to construct new canoes, because the Yuruari, whereby we would have to go, was one long rock in summer, and that this, as well as the Supamo, was impassable at this season. Despite these reasons I summoned them, so as to make an inspection on the next day, and also invited the two Fathers aforesaid, who at once offered to join me, as was done on the day following.

On the nineteenth day, at eight a. m., we, the said Fathers, Friar Mariano and Father Manuel, and I, accompanied by Corporal Antonio Mora, five Spaniards, and the Caribs of Tupuquen and Guasipati, went to the port of Cura, on the Yuaricari river, and at a distance of a quarter of a league I was convinced it was impossible to navigate it, for at several points we crossed it dry-shod, wherefore I determined to return to the town until the following day.

On the twentieth day I sent Corporal Antonio Mora, in company with the two militiamen, three townsmen, and the Carib Indians, to inspect the body of the river all that day to see if lower down water could be found. He returned with his companions, stating that by reason of its being more rocky there was less water; and having submitted to the Carib Indians and asked Zuniga, the interpreter, and one of the militiamen accompanying me, if by going to the Supamo river by land, and there making bark canoes, we could proceed, they replied that it was very difficult, since owing to the Indians having used this river as a means of communication, no bark was to be found, nor trees from which to take it. And in view of these reasons, and that I, wishing, in the same way, to open a road up to the mouth of the Yuruari and make bark canoes, and confronted by the difficulty mentioned, that in all this forest very little bark is to be found, and since even if the said road were opened—which would necessitate at least forty days—I would find no savannahs in the whole distance up to the entrance of the Yuruari into the Supamo river; for all these reasons I determined to suspend all action until the river should take its water, as the winter is drawing near.

And making this suggestion in harmony with the Father of this town of Cura, a new difficulty presented itself; for it is said that when the Yuruari river rises the descent thereof is good; but that the ascent would take place about the time of the highest water, and as the greater part of the country is inundated we would die of hunger, and that experience showed that the season when the Indians navigated it was from August to February—when the Indians made their trips to Esquivo—and that those going from February on found it necessary to remain until the beginning of winter, as is the case with those from Tupuquen who had not yet returned. Aside from these reasons, my own experience and practice convinced me, and it appearing idle to remain, and in order to avoid the greater expense that might be occasioned I decided to return and report to the Governor all that has taken place, and also the opportune time.

On the twenty-first I communicated to Father Mariano, my

associate, the determination I had reached to return to the Capital to report events; and regarding the provisions ready for the trip (Father Mariano and the Father of Cura added), the *casave* would be sent to the new cattle ranch of Tumeremo, and the beef would remain in Cura for the ordinary consumption of the town. This new cattle ranch of Tumeremo is established, as they say, about six or seven leagues from Cura, eastwardly, and from said ranch to the east there is a river called the Curumo, which flows south (like the Yuruari) seeking its junction with the Cuyuni, and although not so large as the Yuruari it is navigable during the same season and is nearer the mouth of the Masurini, where are situated the first habitations of the Dutch, and, according to the most trustworthy accounts of the Carib Indians, from the mouth of the Corumo down there are no rapids, nor any obstacle whatever interfering with the passage of any vessel at all times, and no difficulties (rapids) which they say there are on the Yuruari and Coyuni down to the mouth of the Curumo, whereby I thought of returning to come out at Tumeremo.

On the twenty-second I sent the Caribs and rowers to their respective towns, and the Father and I remained with the Spaniards, who returned the next day to Angel Custodio, leaving the canoe brought down therefrom, as it could not be taken along. On the twenty-third day Father Mariano and I and the other Spaniards left Cura for Angel Custodio, warning beforehand the Father of Cura that until the said trip to Coyuni should be made it would be very advisable not to give the Indians permission to go to the Dutch, because of the ill consequences that might ensue should it be divulged among the Dutch that the said exploration of the Coyuni and its neighborhood was intended; recalling to the said Father the incidents of the Parime expedition, and adding that a like warning would be given Father Leopoldo at Tupuquen and Father Pedro at Guacipati. On the twenty-fourth I left Angel Custodio for Topuquen, and having given the said warning and monition to Father Leopoldo, with the horses which were got ready on this day, I remained until the next day.

On the twenty-fifth I left Tupuquen for Guacipati and ad-



monished Father Pedro Martin in the same manner as the Father of Cura and Tupuquen, as I knew that so soon as the river began to fill the Indians of this town went down to Esquivo, for which trip I noticed they had many hammocks made, and asking what they were for, they replied, "to take to Esquivo to the Dutch ;" that for each hammock they gave them a bolt of lining cambric and six flasks of rum or a liquor case. On the twenty-sixth I left Guacipati for Carapo, and in order to change horses I stayed in the said Carapo all the rest of the day. On the twenty-seventh I left Carapo, and on the twenty-eighth arrived at the town of Santa Maria.

On the twenty-ninth I left Santa Maria, and having this day reached the village of Upata, I remained until Monday, the seventh day of April, owing to illness. Leaving in charge of the sergeant commanding the escort the two militiamen who had accompanied me, and also having delivered to the Lieutenant of said village the three residents with the horses furnished me from Altagracia, I went on towards Caroni. On the eighth I reached Caroni, where, by order of the Father Prefect, I was furnished a pirogue and six Indian rowers from the town of Puga, and I left for this Capital on the tenth, leaving with the Father Prefect a statement of the horses and peons that had been furnished me at each town going and coming for my transportation.

On the twelfth I reached this Capital with the Corporal of Infantry, Antonio Mora, there remaining still in my possession the two hundred cartouches and five pounds of powder delivered to me; and of the four *arrobas* (100 lbs.) of tobacco which I took at the village of Upata for the Indians, only two pounds having been consumed, there remains in my possession the rest until further order of the Governor.

Guayana, April thirteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

---

It is a verbatim copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, August fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

[Copy.]

To the Governor and Commandant General, Don Miguel Mar-  
mion :

VERY VENERATED SIR: In view of what Y. H. was pleased to transmit to me on the thirteenth of June, of this current year, in San Rafael, I have to say: That I have seen everything stated to Y. H. by the Reverend Father Friar Justo de Barcelona, in a letter of the twenty-third of May last, as I have also seen and read everything set forth by the said Reverend Father to Y. H. in the instrument of the tenth of June last, authenticated by the Reverend Fathers signing the same, and find that all statements of what has occurred, and is occurring in this Reverend Community, is absolutely true, which I testify to and confirm in the best manner I can and the law requires, and therefore I deem it excusable to molest Y. H. with a rehearsal of the points set forth and expressed by the said Father Friar Justo. As regards the particular points which Y. H. specifies, I state: That the site or place where they are going to locate the cattle ranch or town is called Tumeremo and Cantuario. These savannahs border on others called Suxsua and are separated only by some fringes of open woods affording easy passage to the cattle. From the said site of Tumeremo to the said savannahs there is a distance of six leagues, and the said savannahs run as far as the Cuyuni, which can be reached in one full day; and from Tumeremo to the great forest, where there was a road to Esquivó, in six hours. From the site where the new Tumeremo cattle ranch is to be located to the town of Cura is seven leagues, and from this port, which is on the Yeruari river, to the Cuyuni, can be made in one full day when the river is high, navigating the Yeruari river down stream, and no ranges of hills are found greater than those in front of the town of Cura. On either bank of the Yeruari there are mineral mountains. This river enters the Yeruari at the very mouth of the Cuyuni. Where the Cuyuni and Yeruari join there is a site adapted to the building of a stronghold or guardhouse to prevent the Indians from going down to Esquivó, and to

restrain the entrance of the Dutch to these Missions and savannahs.

From the Cuyuni river to Lake Parime the Indians say they take twenty days, and I have also in mind that an Indian from Guacipati said to the Reverend Father Benito de Garriga (may he rest in peace), that in twenty days one could go by land from Guacipati to the savannahs of Parima ; that there are eight days of mountain climbing, and some large hills and plains to cross to go to the port or fortress of the Portuguese in Curaricara. To go to the Parime river one can not go by land, but only by water, taking boat on the Mayari or on the Hariapura river, which are in the Parima savannahs, and that the trip is longer and more difficult. As regards the allowances of beef to the residents of the village of Upata, they are not treated as they might be because the adequate measures to this end have not been taken, as the said residents must pay for it and have the trouble of going to look for it on the savannahs ; and they can not go where they wish, owing to the opposition they find in some Reverend Missionaries, going so far, as has at times happened, to let loose the cattle they had collected ; and for three years back beef is very expensive, as the cattle have not been adapted to killing. The residents have demanded that the cattle be placed in the corral, and that they will pay whatever is just, according to the value, and not, as is now the practice, paying the same for big and little ; and I know that half the time they lack beef, which is the case at the time I am writing, when it may be that not a single piece can be found in the village. What I can say in this respect is what I have heard all intelligent parties assert, that in the interest of the very cattle ranch it would be better that the cattle be placed in the corral at Upata, for if the residents themselves must go after them, in rounding up some yearling steers, they necessarily disturb a great part of other cattle, and if a person be designated to drive the cattle to the corral at Upata, he would know where to take them from without any subsequent detriment to the other beeves, as was the opinion of Don Luis Sanchez, ex-Mayordomo, who had to resign, because he saw that some of

the Reverend Fathers thought they were more intelligent in this matter. I say : *Peritus in sua arte in incredendu.*

Lastly, regarding what you ask touching the means I consider as the most advisable, prudent and decorous to heal differences which have arisen among the priests composing this Venerable Community, I know of none save that the Very Reverend Father Commissary General act pursuant to what has been represented to him by some of the members of this Reverend Community, and I find it very advisable for Father Justo to go before the Very Reverend Father Commissary General to prove everything, because, as the Very Reverend Father is so far away it is not easy to apply the remedy with the required promptness, and thus no information will be given the public. Finally, what I deem most advisable for the civilization of the Indians and communication, so that they may emerge from their chimeras, and what tends also to the greatest advancement of the settlements, is the Spaniard, for by treating with the Spaniards they go to work, being by natural inclination given over to idleness; the subjugated can be managed better, and can be utilized to subjugate those of the forest. And to this end ten or twelve Spanish families could be placed in each settlement, and in this way there is no doubt that the most effective service could be rendered both Majesties.

My dear sir, I make the foregoing statement (confidentially as your Honor suggests to me) with the frankness characterizing me, without being carried away by any passion, and Y. H. may make the use he chooses of it for the benefit of the Missions and Province.

God preserve Y. H. many years. Cupapui, July sixth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-seven. I kiss the hand of Y. H.

FRIAR TOMÁS DE MATARÓ.

---

It is a copy of the original.

Guayana, August twenty-seven, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

*Official letter.*

MY DEAR SIR: In consequence of a certain letter of the Prefect of the Missions of Catalonian Capuchin Fathers in your Province, sent at the instance of the Sindic thereof, requesting that they be provided with ornaments and other necessities for Divine worship and administering of the Sacraments in the new church consecrated to the Holy Guardian Angel of the same Mission, who is the titular saint of the settlement they have founded, and the existence of which is certified to Y. H. at the bottom of the said letter, I must advise Y. H. that it would be very advisable for future reports of this nature to come confidentially, setting forth the date of the founding, the number of the members composing it, the hopes entertained as to its permanence, the behavior and demeanor of the missionaries, and everything else you may deem tending to inform the Royal mind of our Sovereign and to the best accomplishment of his Royal pious intentions. Trusting that Y. H. will apprise me of the receipt hereof, and that you understand it so as to duly comply therewith, may God preserve Y. H. many years. Caracas, April eleventh, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight. Francisco de Saavedra. To the Subdelegate of the Royal Treasury of Guayana. It is a copy of the original, bearing a sign manual.

---

*Official letter.*

To the Superintendent General:

I address Y. H. the accompanying memorial presented to me by the Very Rev. Father Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers of the Missions of Guayana, in which he requests to be furnished with ornaments, books, sacred goblets, bell, and other jewels necessary for Divine worship in the church of the settlement newly founded under the name or title of Nuestro Señora de Belen de Tumeremo; and since the predecessor of Y. H. advised me in an official communication of April, of seventeen hundred and eighty-six, that in similar cases I should send my report confidentially, setting forth the

date of the founding, the number of members composing it, the hopes entertained as to its permanency, etc., I comply therewith as follows: By the copy of letter number one Y. H. will see that the Rev. Father Prefect and Assistant Judges resorted to this Government on the eighth of February last, reporting that they had determined upon planting this new establishment; by that numbered two is seen what I replied, and by number three the measures I took to carry out this obligation; and lately they wrote me, on the thirty-first of May last (copy number four) in a style which was very objectionable to me, questioning authority and interposing objections which the wise judgment of Y. H. will fittingly value. In the report which they presented to me on the thirtieth of April of last year (eighty-seven), of the meeting they held to elect the Prefect and Assistant Judges, which I annex under number five, Tumeremo appears under the designation of cattle ranch, and its President as Father Friar Mariano de Perafita.

In the statement I requested, and which the Prefect sent me on the thirty-first of May of this year, of the number of Missions and the founding of each, Tumeremo appears under the title of Nuestro Señora de Velen, as Y. H. will find in copy number six. Neither at its commencement nor now have I been furnished the number of souls it has, nor much less does such a settlement appear in the rolls that have been delivered to me up to date; but I am informed that for this settlement Indians were taken from other towns, as was done in the case of that of Angel Custodio, and that on my last visit to the village of Upata several fugitive families had come to the Missions of Cupapuy and Altagracia, whence they had taken them. In the said report, number five, the town of Angel Custodio was suppressed, and in the statement number six it is revived, and according to the rolls the President is Father Friar Mariano de Perafita, the same person given as President of Tumeremo, without my being able to understand in what these equivocations consist. All I am aware of is that they were the origin of the disagreements among these priests of which Y. H. is informed, as well as that they were reported to the King. I can not know the hopes that may be entertained as to the

permanency of this settlement, for the information I have of that land and of its local features will be shown to Y. H. by the copy of the confidential letter number seven, and the other documents accompanying it, when the report was made to the King, since I addressed them through Y. H. and the Intendent, your predecessor, and subsequently. And although for this purpose, and other matters of the greatest concern to the service of the King, I sent Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, Adjutant Major of the troops of this detail, with a mission, this officer could not carry it out in accordance with the instructions I gave him, for the reasons he alleges in his diary, a copy of which I send herewith under number eight.

By virtue of all the foregoing, Y. H. will resolve whatever you may deem expedient, issuing your orders, that I may promptly obey them.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, August fourth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, October third, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

Refer, with its antecedents, to the Counsellor General.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Opinion.*

Y. H. may refer this record for report to the General Ministers, or wherever it may be best.

Caracas, October fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

ALCALDE.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

Do as the Counsellor General states.

GUILLELMI.

*Report.*

To the Superintendent General :

The General Ministers, in view of this official communication, numbered twenty-three, of the Governor of Guayana, referring to the founding of the new Mission town of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers called Tumeremo, say : That to inform Y. H. respecting this record with the proper knowledge it is necessary that Y. H. order to be annexed thereto the letter of the Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchin Missions of Guayana, referred to in the copy of the order of April eleventh last, sent by Señor Don Francisco de Saavedra to the said Governor and Subdelegate of that Province, which, bearing the sign-manual of Y. H., indicates the beginning and basis of the matter, and they think that Y. H. should afterwards submit it to the Attorney General of His Majesty for an opinion, expressing what is expedient touching the serious points embraced by this representation and the annexed copies, relating as well to the Political Government as to the Royal Treasury and the good of the State.

Caracas, October eighteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

JOSEF DE VIDAONDA.

ANTONIO MALLO.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, February seventeenth of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

The letter of the Prefect of the Missions of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers of Guayana not being in the office of the Secretary of the Superintendency, inform the General Ministers. Refer this record to the Attorney General of His Majesty for opinion, as requested by said Ministers.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Opinion.*

To the President and Superintendent General :

The Attorney General of His Majesty has examined the official communication of the Governor of Guayana relative to



the representation of the devout Father Prefect and the Catalonian Capuchin missionaries of the said Province, asking that they be granted sacred goblets, ornaments, and a bell for the church of the new cattle ranch of Tumeremo, which they call the town of Nuestra Señora de Belen, together with the documents annexed, and says: That it not appearing that the necessary permit for the founding of this settlement has been granted as yet, nor the selection of the site thereof approved—notwithstanding that the Community and Assistant Judges have agreed upon it—he can not at this time agree that they be given what is necessary for the church until all the necessary instructions being given and the personal inspection performed, it be investigated whether or not its establishment is advisable—which the Attorney General esteems as one of the most delicate points in the premises, and which he needs to consult with His Majesty, especially when reflecting on the particulars set forth in the diary of the officer, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, and in the report of the old Missionary Friar, Thomás de Mataró, absent at this time in the Kingdom of Spain. The Attorney General bears in mind that because of the exposed position of the territories lying between the mouths of the Orinoco and the sources of old Guayana, through the contiguity of the Dutch Colonies, their settlement has been prohibited; and therefore the greater part of the Missions established are situated on the lands of the Caroni river, above the said forts and further towards the interior of the Province. And he is informed that as the headwaters of the Cuyuni river (which empties into the Esquivo) reached the interior towns of the same Missions, the Royal Commissioner, Don Joseph de Yturriaga, planned that a fort be built at the junction of the Curiamo river and the said Cuyuni, to prevent the said foreign colonists from going inland and communicating thereby with those parts. He also recognizes through the said diaries and the report of Father Mataró the contiguity of the savannahs of Tumeremo to the said Cuyuni river and the mouth of the Curiamo at a distance of six hours' travel by road, from which the navigation to the Dutch plantations is easy and very short; which makes it all the more dangerous, because of the attempts that are being made to

work the silver mines discovered in the village of Upata, a very few leagues distant from the said Cuyuni, Curiamo, and Yracuy rivers and the town of Cura, San Antonio, and other towns. And the evidences of the communication and trade the Indians thereof maintain with the said Colonies, of which the said officer, Lopes de la Puente, informed himself, being very noticeable it is important to guard against it with the greatest care.

Wherefore—notwithstanding what the said missionaries solicit with so much earnestness—the Attorney General is of the opinion that it is necessary to issue the proper orders to the said Government, to the end that, utilizing the services of the most expert and experienced officers of the said Province, he cause to be separately reconnoitered all the territories of the said site and savannahs of Tumeremo, their communication with the Cuyuni and Curiamo rivers, the mouth of the latter and its facilities for navigation up to the mouth of the Masurumy, where are located the first Dutch plantations on the Apongara and Cosacuro rivers, giving a statement of their distances from the said Colonies as well as from the village of Upata, warning him of the importance of this matter, and to report everything to this Superintendency, with all the information acquirable. And to report whether it be expedient to found at the said Tumeremo site and the confluence of the Curiamo a considerable Spanish town with judicial officers and zealous Agents of the Royal Treasury who can prevent the secret trade thereabouts and restrain the entrance of foreigners, so that everything may be laid before His Majesty with the necessary light, and his Sovereign will may be founded upon the fullest knowledge. Y. H., in view of the record, will be pleased to resolve whatever may seem best.

Caracas, April two, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

SARAVIA.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, April fourth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.  
Refer to the Counsellor General.

GUILLELMI.

*Opinion.*

The Counsellor General has re-examined this record, and having reflected on the opinion of the Attorney General with respect to the showing of the diary of Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, and the reply of Friar Thomás de Mataró to the Governor of Guayana, finds, that the report suggested in the second part of the said opinion of the Attorney General is very necessary to a decision of the first point, by withholding any action thereon until Y. H. is in possession of the knowledge and information, in this regard as on the other particulars, which Y. H. usually seeks before determining.

Caracas, April twenty-two, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

ALCALDE.

*Decree.*

Caracas, April thirtieth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

Follow the opinion of the Counsellor General, and communicate by copy, together with the preceding opinion, to the Subdelegate of the Royal Treasury of Guayana.

GUILLELMI.

*[Copy.]*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: The proximity of the Dutch possessions of Esquivo to the eastern part of this Province, which possessions border on the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, has entailed on me, since my assumption of this office, the most careful vigilance, knowing the importance of the subject, as I stated in my Mixed-Chorographic documents and the other documents accompanying my official letter of the tenth of June of last year (eighty-eight), with which I sent them to Y. E. Subsequently, to perform the duty to which I considered myself bound, I sent the Adjutant-Major of the troops of this detail, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, on an exploration of the said frontiers, who fulfilled and discharged the mission in the terms set forth in the annexed diary, which,

in the shape of a copy, I transmit to Y. E., with the maps which, with this and the previous information I possessed, I have again drawn to show, in the best possible manner, the local features of the land which surrounds the seacoast and the Esquivo, Cuyuni, Coroni, and Orinoco rivers, within which are situated the said Missions and their numerous herd of livestock, the tobacco plantations of the village of Upata, the jurisdiction of all the Province where the tax alone permits the cultivation of this product; the building lumber examined in the year eighty-seven, and the silver mines lately discovered, and expert miners sent by the Captain General and Intendent of Caracas, are now engaged on the assays, which will demonstrate their actual existence or non-existence.

This portion of the territory—the most valuable, richest, and settled of the Province—being exposed and undefended, (the Cuyuni river offering the Dutch free and uninterrupted access to our possessions for their wicked trade in Indians whom they enslave; for the importing of articles of merchandise and exporting of the products of the said Missions without our being able to prevent the same, as that river is deserted up to this point; or prevent the communication of the natives, as there is no Spanish guard or settlement to restrain them, of which there were many examples up to the last war, not counting the two recent examples to which the commissioned officer refers in his diary; it serving also as an asylum to the evil-doers who by their abuses and license in flight often go over to the said Colony or its frontiers, dragging whole settlements with them, as practical experience has proven; and, what is more remarkable in the premises, that the known advantages of this territory, as compared with the rest of the Province, more strongly incite the covetousness of an active enemy into whose hands Esquivo may again fall, as happened in the last war, especially when the latter knows the ease with which, in its present state, he could take it without costly expeditions, as there are no forces with which to oppose him;) the small escort of twenty-five or thirty men which by Royal command is distributed in those Missions is insufficient, or almost useless.

The Indians—people without cultivation or subordination,

lovers of independence and of liberty, which the enemy would undoubtedly offer them to attract them to his side—it is to be feared would gladly accept any change to escape the subjection in which they are held by the priests for their instruction.

In the event of a surprise it is very doubtful that assistance from the Capital would arrive in time to hold the post, owing to the great distance separating them; and much less—in case of an invasion of the Province, because having to attend to the fortifications of old Guayana, the principal and only defence of the entrance to the Orinoco—without a great loss to or abandonment of the same, that assistance could not be rendered with more troops than three companies of infantry and one company of artillery, and these always distributed in the remote detachments of the Upper Orinoco and Negro river, of the Parim of Barceloneta, of the Caura river, of the forts of old Guayana and of the said escort of the Catalanian Capuchin Father, which renders their concentration in either of the cases mentioned unfeasible. The fact being, for the reasons given and because of the scarcity of troops, that the details assigned to the plan of Brigadier Don Agustin Crame, are incomplete, and are unrelieved for two or three years; and when they can be relieved it will be at a great expense to the Royal Treasury by transportation, whence arises in greater part the absenteeism and lack of military discipline among the soldiers. In view of these reasons, and the others which the wise judgment of Y. E. will deduce from those which in the papers of July tenth of eighty-eight, I had the honor to present and address you, I make bold to propose to Y. E. the urgent necessity of adding for the moment and without prejudice to what may seem more advisable in the future, two companies of infantry to this detail, and to increase the artillery company to a footing of one hundred men. That with special recommendation and as possible haste there be founded a town at the forks or confluence of the Curumo and Cuyuni rivers, by providing that be given a start with the escort of thirty men designated by His Majesty in the said Royal command of the twenty-second of December, of seventeen hundred and sixty-three; it being advisable that these men shall be married militiamen. Th

at the same time that they guard the Missions and carry out the objects suggested, under command of a commissioned officer, they shall also serve as settlers with the assistance which for this important purpose the Venerable Community of the said Catalonian Capuchin Fathers may afford with a part of the ten or twelve thousand head of neat cattle they offered his Majesty, who accepted them with the pious purpose of having them apportioned among the poor residents of this Province, which Royal graciousness could never be better or more opportunely enjoyed than at this time.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Guayana, September twenty-second, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine. Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Baldes.

It is a verbatim copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, October seventh, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MARMION.

---

*Another.*

For the reasons which Your Reverence is apprised of, the Adjutant Major of this detail, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, could not carry out the first reconnaissance of the Cuyuni river; but of the second, which he has just made, he has brought me information which confirms what I was previously in possession of regarding the situation and local features of those lands which I have always regarded with the greatest attention, both through the personal investigation I made as well as through the data furnished by the documents relating to several events which have occurred at different times. It is known that the Carib chief, whom chance brought into the hands of the said officer, who conducted him to this Capital, has never wished to subject himself to civilization, wandering about making incursions into the interior of this Province, engaged in seducing the settled natives to return to their old savage life, and in the wicked trade in *Poytos*, which he took and sold to the Dutch of Esquivo whom he served as a spy,

reporting to them all he observed on our frontiers, of which we have recent examples during the late war in the movements noticed among the natives of the Missions, which movements the Prelate thereof notified the Government caused him no little care, and the latter was obliged to send, as prompt assistance, the party of men which went under command of Don Manuel Astor, Captain of Infantry.

Although we have succeeded in apprehending this very prejudicial Indian, it is to be feared that his people and allies may wish to have revenge, which experience demonstrates is their custom in like cases; and they usually execute it when their adversaries are unprepared. It is therefore necessary, in order to frustrate their evil designs on the new subjugations, that they find us prepared, and, should the case arise, ready to repel them, and, perhaps, pursue them, should circumstances require it. In this connection I am of the opinion that for the present and until further provisions, it would be well to concentrate the escort at one of the Missions nearest the Cuyuni, whenever your Reverence considers there is more risk of surprise, and the best conditions prevail to prevent and repel any assault they may attempt, and to defend and assist the other settlements, since seeing us on the *qui vive* perhaps they will not attempt any act and will withdraw, as has happened on other occasions. I trust that you will send me all information your Reverence can secure from the Indians which the said officer took with the Chief (which Indians it would be advisable to keep in sight and in a town from which they will not escape) together with your reflections respecting what you consider most advisable for the concentrating and stationing of the escort.

We have now reached the point when we should think of the method of protecting the new settlements which the Venerable Community, under the charge of your Reverence, is advancing towards the frontiers of the foreign establishments; for the further they advance, the more exposed will they be to their plots and to the uprisings of the natives of the forest, and by not guarding against them in time very injurious consequences may result. To this end it is requisite to found a

mixed settlement, giving a start thereto with some families of the more civilized Indians and the Spaniards which are to serve as escort to the Missions, selecting married men adapted to the purpose, which it will not be difficult to find, provided that the said Venerable Community (as I am persuaded it is) wishes to contribute with its part to this important and necessary establishment, and I have so represented to His Majesty. It is advisable before everything to select the locality or territory best adapted to this settlement, and that your Reverence communicate to me your opinion, so that we may harmoniously get to work without loss of time. Since I am possessed of competent authority in the premises, I await, at the earliest moment, the reply of your Reverence upon the points I have indicated.

God preserve Y. R. many years.

Guayana, February twenty-fifth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION,

To the V. R. F. P. Friar Buenaventura de San Celonio.

---

*Reply.*

Referring to what Y. H. writes me in your official letter of February twenty-fifth last, I have to state that after maturely reflecting on the subjects, it has appeared to me advisable to say to Y. H. that the founding of an out-and-out town or village would never be a permanent thing, there being no place to take the products, while the foreign colony of Esquivo remains, since the expense of taking them to the capital or the Orinoco would be greater than what the residents of the said new settlements could get for said products. But I do think that it is at least very advisable and necessary to construct a fort or castle to prevent the invasions of the Dutch and the uprisings of the Indians, and this at the place which the officer, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, may have recognized as the best adapted to restrain them.

The truth is (as I have been informed) that if the fort or castle is or is not built at the same place, where the said Don



Antonio Lopez thinks the Indians still will not be safe, because further this way they have a means of retreat by way of two or three rivers, whereby they can escape whenever temptations presses them. As regards the whole escort coming to one place, I find and recognize many objections thereto, and to avoid them it is necessary that there remain in each town at least one soldier, and for the prompt action to which Y. H. refers, I think it will suffice to station two or three soldiers in each of the three Missions of Avechica and Cura, as they are the most advanced towards the frontier, where an invasion may be feared, until the said fort or castle is built.

This is, sir, what it has occurred to me to state to Y. H. at this time. As regards the rest, I remain ever subject to your command and righteous orders in every way you may be pleased to employ me for the profit and service of the King our Master and of these holy Missions.

God our Lord keep and preserve the important life and health of Y. H. for many long years.

Santa María, March tenth, of the year, eighty-nine.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,

Prefect.

Señor Don Miguel Marmion,

Governor and Commandant General.

It is a copy of the original.

Guayana, July eighteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MARMION.

---

*Official Letter.*

To the Superintendent General :

At the time I was about to transmit to His Majesty the report of the reconnaissance of the frontiers of the colony of Esquivo, I received the dispatch of Y. H. of the thirtieth of April last, and therefore, I withheld the sending of the papers up to this time, which I do by transmitting the copy of the report numbered one, hereto annexed, to Y. H., to which I

refer as regards the urgent necessity that exists for founding a Spanish settlement at the forks or confluence of the Curumo and Cuyuni rivers for the defence of the Missions, and for the other purposes apparent in said possessions. So soon as the Adjutant Major, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, returned from his mission, I sent my official letters to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, showing him the urgent need for founding the said village, and requesting of him the assistance of the Venerable Community under his charge for so important an end, to which he replied in the terms Y. H. will recognize by the copy number two, which I annex. And referring as regards to all the rest, to the reflections incorporated in the Mixed-Chorographic document, and the other papers I have sent Y. H., I think they will suffice for your sound judgment to form a true idea of the importance of the subject.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, October eighth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, November twelfth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

Attach to the records of the matter.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Report.*

Caracas, November twenty-third, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

Refer this record for opinion to the Attorney General.

GUILLELMI.

Alcalde.

---

*Diary Kept by Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente.*

On the seventh day of November, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight, I left this capital with Corporal Antonio Mora,

and reached the village of Upata, whence I started for the town of Tupuquen on the fifteenth with four militiamen, and the meat, *casave*, rowers, and canoes which could be secured in Cura and Tupuquen having been made ready, I started for Cura with seven militiamen, which we reached on the twenty-eighth, and, as the canoes were insufficient, I sent two militiamen to the village, and continued the trip on the following day. On the twenty-ninth I left the port of Cura with four canoes and five militiamen, having at Tupuquen begun the drawing of the plat, whereon it will be noted that each day's journey down stream is designated by two lines from one part to the other of the river; the journeys up stream, by four lines; rapids, by "R;" channels, by "C;" islands, by "I," and roads, by leaders, thus . . . . .

On the thirtieth we came out of the Aguaraya rapids and camped at the Curigua Rapids. On the thirty-first we left Carigua, and at eight o'clock a. m. reached the Yuruari river, and at eleven o'clock we came out at the Coyuni, the trip from Tupuquen to the Coyuni occupying three days. The Yuruario is very rocky, and therefore of bad navigation unless the river is half full. On this day five hours were traveled on the Cuyuni, and three on the Yuruari and Yuruario, and all of this travel is good, the river being about two hundred *varas* wide, and deep enough for any launch. We camped at four o'clock p. m. on the Chimiri Island.

On the first of December we left the Island of Chimiri, and we navigated well up to the Matapi rapids. We camped at the mouth of Perdido channel, having traveled this day eight hours.

On the second we left the Perdido channel, a short distance from which are the Mura rapids, which are about two leagues long, and it is all poor navigation until the Aguarari rapids are passed, then the river is good up to the mouth of the Curumo, where we camped this day, having traveled ten hours.

On the third day we started from the mouth of the Curumo at eight o'clock a. m. having left at this stopping place six *arrobas* (150 lbs.) of *casave* and four *arrobas* (100 lbs.) of meat

for our return. Opposite this mouth all around the cove lies high, hilly land on the banks of the Cuyuni, and at the lower end of the mouth there is a good site for a settlement and farming, it being flat but high land. The navigation was good during all this day as far as Mauparipati islands, where we camped, having been eight hours on the way.

On the fourth we left Mauparipati and traveled eight hours during the day, the river being good, and camped at the Acayo Islands.

On the fifth we left Acayo, a short distance from which are the Canayma rapids, where the Cuyuni divides itself into two branches as far as the island of Iraripira, where we remained this day, having navigated only four hours, as we had encountered Indians from the settlement of Tupuquen, who were complaining against the Indian Manuyari who had captured them and carried them to the Dutch where they were held two months working, after which they were sent back to their town, the said Manuyari warning them to say to the Father of their town (*sic*) to kill him and burn the town, for which purpose he would ask aid from the Dutch. Wherefore, in view of the complaint made of this Indian, and at the same time knowing that he had previously killed the daughter of the Indian Cuayari, of the same town of Tupuquen, I determined (since he was, as they told me, on the said Cuyuni as a spy for the Dutch) to have two Indian guides from among those I found to apprehend this Indian because of his unbearable audacity.

And besides what I have related, these Indians also informed me that three years before, he had also taken an Indian woman named Josefa from the Panapana Indians and he now had her with him; and that this said Manuyari was the one who was always inciting the Dutch to come and burn and destroy the settlements of the Capuchins; and considering that if I did not apprehend him and I was discovered, he would apprise the Dutch and I could not finish my mission, or might be surprised. For all these reasons, I deemed it advisable to take him, and in this understanding I sent the said Indians to their town of Tupuquen, being fully informed of everything that

could assist me in my trip. And as in the port of Cura there had remained forty Carib Indians from the town of Guasipati and Cumamo, who were coming down with cargoes of hammocks and deer skins to sell to the Dutch, without investigating those that might come from Morocuri, Caraguachi, Miamo, Carapo, and all the others that come down annually by way of the Yuruari and Curumo, bringing hammocks (since the planting of tobacco was stopped, they do not bring it), I advised these Indians to say to those who were coming down what had happened to them so as to induce them to go back to their towns, since it was imperative to seize this Indian, and that for this reason they should excuse themselves from going to the Dutch for fear of what might happen to them. We passed the remainder of the day here, and on the following day the Tupuquen Indians started up and we down stream.

On the sixth we left the said Island of Araripira and navigated all this day on a bad river, mostly filled with rapids and falls, and having traveled nine hours we reached the Guornuispo rapids, which for a short distance are very shallow, and we remained until the following day.

On the seventh we left Guornuispo, and during the day navigated eight hours on a bad river up to the Pass de las mulas called Notupicay, and from there on navigation is good, without rapids, up to Tapujumo, where we camped.

On the eighth we left Tapujumo, and only passed one rapid the rest of the river being navigable, and owing to the excess of rain we only traveled seven hours, and camped on the Island of Acayushiri.

On the ninth we left Acayushiri and traveled during the day nine hours on a good river, and only passed one rapid, camping at point Capachi.

On the tenth we left Capachi, and after passing five rapids (not of the largest) we camped at the mouth of the Tupuro channel, having traveled ten hours, at the head of the Camaria rapids, which are two leagues long, and which end at the mouth of the Cuyuni, a short distance—about a quarter of a league—before the Cuyuni disembogues into the Masurini, at which fork a Dutchman named Daniel lives with four com-

panions, many negroes and *Poytos* belonging to him. From the mouth of this Tupuro channel there is a road to the foot of the rapids, where the Carib Manuyari has his house; he being the one who watches this road. In front of Daniel's place the mark up-river begins. From these rapids to the fort of Esquivo there are only two marks. From the southern part of the Cayuni river there is a road coming out at the Masurini, where are some Dutchmen with a Carib settlement. Day broke upon us at the mouth of the said Tupuro.

On the eleventh I sent the corporal, three militiamen, and fifteen Caribs to arrest the Indian Manuyari, and the rest of us remained to guard the boats, and at twelve o'clock at night they returned with the said Manuyari, who was found in his fields, about three leagues distant from the port, having also taken the Panapana Indian woman named Josefa, and ten more souls.

On the twelfth we left the said Tupuro channel on our return, as we could not delay longer at this point, for, by reason of the capture of this Indian and the frequent fishing of the Dutch, Auracas, and Caribs on the Cuyuni river, our presence might be discovered. We camped at the Tosqueñe rapids.

On the thirteenth we left Tosqueñe, and in twelve days, which, with the day at Tupuro, make thirteen, we arrived at the mouth of the Curumo on the twenty-fourth of December, where we remained two days, strolling, hunting, and resting.

On the twenty-seventh I started up the Curumo with the Spaniards accompanying me, and nine Caribs, leaving the rest at the mouth of the Curumo to await the canoes, as the guides said that we could only go two days in them. We traveled only seven hours to-day.

On the twenty-eighth we kept on, with good navigation, the river being deep enough for any pirogue, but not for launches. To-day we traveled eight hours.

On the twenty-ninth we took up our route and traveled only four hours, as hunger would not permit greater haste, and having passed the Guaramo channel, in a half league we reached the port, where the Indians say it is customary to leave the canoes, and presuming that the river would be bad, or that

there was an old, open road, I fell into the error which I afterwards discovered.

On the thirtieth I sent the canoes to Cura, and continued the trip on land with six Caribs and the Spaniards, and to-day we traveled six hours, it being necessary to get something to eat.

On the thirty-first we started, and having traveled to-day eight hours we camped, as on the other days, on the banks of the Curumo, which, wherever we came to it, could be seen to be navigable and without rapids, wherefore I repented having sent off the canoes.

On the first of January we pressed forward, and to-day traveled nine hours with considerable labor, since it did not cease to rain, either by day or night; but hunger compelled us, and we passed the day with nothing but *puruas*.

On the second we continued our journey for nine hours, it raining nearly all day.

On the third we went on for six hours, because, beside raining, it was necessary to seek food.

On the fourth we pressed on, and after two hours' travel we discovered a small plain lying this side of the Butanambo channel, which we crossed, and after one league of mountain we came out upon the savannahs of the Curumo, and we went on over several savannahs and clumps of woods up to the very bank of the Curumo, when we camped, having traveled during the day ten hours. Over these savannahs runs a road to Tumeremo, but we knew not whether it was near or far, and as it was necessary to seek food we remained the next day fishing, and I sent a letter to Tumeremo by two Indians to send us provisions.

On the sixth we left the Curumo, and two hours later we found provisions sent us by Father Mariano, and after eating to our hearts' content we went on and reached Tumeremo, having traveled to-day four hours over good savannahs before and beyond the Curumo, which is navigable; being without rapids, unless a hard summer should dry it up, as they say; but this is for a short time only. It is a river abounding in game and fish, with fertile mountains on both sides. A river

which has been much inhabited by Caribs, for at several places lemon trees can still be found. It flows from north to south.

On the eighth we started for Tupuquen, after resting one day, and we arrived after traveling six leagues. Here we remained waiting for the canoes, which I sent from the mouth of the Curumo, until the eleventh, when, seeing they were delayed, I wrote to the Governor reporting my arrival and the cause of my detention.

On the twenty-second I arrived at the village of Upata ill with fever, having left Corporal Mora at Tupuquen until the arrival of the canoes.

On the twenty-seventh the corporal reached the village with the militiamen, having left by my order the captured Indian men and women at the towns of Tupuquen and Carapo, excepting the Indian Manuyari and the woman Josefa from Panapana, to take the latter to the capital, at the disposal of the Governor, having investigated that Josefa's brother, who is in the town of Panapana, had left her with the said Manuyari as his wife on the condition and agreement that he would sow fields for him, so that when he should run away from the town of Panapana he would go and live with the said Manuyari.

On the twenty-ninth I left the said village with three militiamen and the corporal, and having reached San Miguel on the thirtieth, I proceeded to the Presidio of Guayana to seek a boat, leaving Corporal Mora, the militiamen and the prisoners at the said San Miguel.

On the second of February I left the Presidio in a pirogue with five rowers I secured in the town of Puga and reached San Miguel, where I took on the parties I had left there, and proceeded until the fifth instant, when I reached this capital, and having discovered to-day a canoe from Panapana in the port of this town I sent off the Indian Josefa, as she was very ill.

Guayana, February fifth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

ANTONIO LOPES DE LA PUENTE.



NOTE.—The Curumo river is navigable the greater part of the year in pirogues and canoes, and during high water even in larger vessels. To go to Esquivo by this river much navigation of rapids, which the Yuruari and Cuyuni have up to the mouth of the Curumo, is saved.

NOTE.—The Cuyuni river, despite the bad reaches it has, may be navigated in launches and pirogues, and during the season when it is high, even in light sailing vessels, saving the rapids.

Date, *ut supra*.

ANTONIO LOPES.

It is a verbatim copy of the original.

Guayana, May sixth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

---

*Official Letter.*

Through the annexed copy of a diary Y. H. will learn the manner in which the Adjutant Major, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, has discharged the mission with which I entrusted him for the exploration of the Cuyuni river and the frontiers of the possessions which the Dutch of the Colony of Esquivo have invaded. From the map I have made and sent Y. H. in a separate case you will learn (pursuant to information up to the present acquired) the local features of these lands, and the easy communication for the foreigners, whereby at all times settlements, even unto the most interior portions of the Province, are exposed.

In this connection I report to His Majesty, reiterating and emphasizing anew my idea of protecting those avenues. But as my reflections will never have the necessary weight without the powerful support of Y. H., I trust that, in case you esteem them advantageous to the service of the King, you will contribute on your part to the accomplishment thereof.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, May sixth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

[Copy.]

With that of Y. H. of May sixth last, number thirty-six, I have received the copy of the diary kept by the Adjutant-Major of the Veteran Companies, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, whom you commissioned for the exploration of the Cuyuni river and the frontiers which the Dutch of the Colony of Esquivo have invaded. The map relating to that territory I return, as it comes without the necessary description or explanation, so that Y. H. shall order the person who drew it to extend it, as, although it could be changed here from the diary, it would be difficult and embarrassing.

As I am ignorant of what Y. H. has reported to the King touching the fortification of the point or site you consider most advantageous to protect more possessions and prevent smuggling with those of the Dutch, I need to have it before me, and, therefore, Y. H. will send me a copy thereof, so as to, on my own part, reinforce your ideas, which will be, undoubtedly, most correct, owing to your local knowledge of the country and the other measures you must have taken with your accustomed sound judgment.

I do not think it amiss to advise Y. H. to bear in mind the question raised by the Reverend Father Prefect and Assistant Judges of the Missions of Catalonians relating to the founding of the town and cattle ranch of Tumeremo, and the opinion of the Attorney General, in the record now before the court of the Intendency, to see if the location the said party suggested is adapted for placing the fort at the junction of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, and founding a town there.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Caracas, July fifth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

JUAN GUILLELMI.

To the Governor of Guayana.

It is a copy of the original—[a flourish].

---

*Official Letter.*

I transmit to Y. H. the map you returned to me with the description added, the absence of which was not noticed until

after the mail left. It came and goes somewhat badly treated by the rubbing on the road. And as I have no other clean map made, and not having any paper at present, I send the same one in the same case, separately.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, October eighth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, May nineteenth, seventeen hundred and ninety.

Attach to its antecedents and add to the record made up by the Intendency in the premises, for the purposes that may be proper.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Opinion.*

The Attorney General has again examined this record, together with the official communications of the Governor of Guayana, of the eighth of October of last year, and the sixth of May of this year, and the diary of the Adjutant-Major Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, which has been referred to him without the map of the territory and rivers which the said officer reconnoitered in the discharge of his mission, and says:

That as said diary and official letters may be deemed as an answer to the report he requested, on the thirtieth of April of last year, the necessity is apparent for the establishing of a town of Spaniards and other castes on the site of the fork or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, as the Attorney General foresaw in his opinion of the second of April of last year, and, as it appears, was represented to his Majesty at the same time by the Governor of Guayana, according to his official letter of the twenty-second of September of last year, in which supposition, and considering that in the letter which the said

Governor addressed the Prefect of the Missions, he states that he is possessed of proper authority for the founding, and that the provisions Y. H. may have made for the same end do not appear, or whether reconnaissance has been ordered of the site where the Spanish town or fort should be constructed, nor the distance between it and the savannahs of Tumeremo, where the Capuchin Fathers propose to remove part of their herd and found a church (said distance being rather considerable, as may be inferred from the diary of officer Puente, owing to the days he took in his return from the mouth of the Curamo to the said savannahs), he thinks that conformably to what may have been determined with respect to the new founding of the town or fort, the Governor of Guayana may be charged that if he recognizes that the new establishment of the herd that the Fathers propose can be useful for the subsistence of the new settlers or Presidio, he may permit the new Mission of Nuestra Señora de Velen of Tumeremo, and provide that the Royal Treasury of the said Province furnish the missionaries the ornaments, sacred vases, and bell for the service of the church. But in case of the non-founding of the fort or Spanish town to protect those frontiers and restrain the robberies of the Dutch and wild Indians, and watch the smuggling, the establishment of said Mission and the granting of said church ornaments should be denied, that they may not be exposed to these dangers.

Y. H. will be pleased to take the steps he may deem most proper in the premises.

Caracas, October seventh, of ninety.

SARAVIA.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, October fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and ninety.

Pursuant to the opinion of the Attorney General, transmit a copy of the foregoing opinion to the Governor, Subdelegate of the Royal Treasury of Guayana, to the principal officials thereof, and to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions of

e Catalonian Capuchins. And as by virtue of orders from the office of the Captain General and Intendent the necessary instructions have issued for the founding of the Spanish town, construction of the stronghold or sentry box at the forks or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, and the establishment of Missions or a town of Tumeremo Indians, upon which matters this record has been made up, let no further steps be taken in the premises, furnishing an exemplified copy for the information of His Majesty.

GUILLELMI.

---

This agrees with the original record herein, which exists in the office of the Superintendent General, to which I refer.

And for the purpose set forth in the above-cited decree, I used this written copy to be made, covering fifty-four leaves, which I seal and sign in Caracas, on the twenty-fifth of October, the year seventeen hundred and ninety. *In testimonium veritatis.*

JOSÉ ANTONIO ACOSTA,

Deputy Scrivener of the Royal Treasury—[a flourish].

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in these archives, in the bundle endorsed: "State Papers. *Audiencia* Caracas. Correspondence of Governors and Captains General. 1790—1796." Seville, July 12, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, June 27, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

VOL. III, VEN.—17

[Translation.]

**No. XXXI.**State Papers—*Audiencia* of Caracas—1790–1796.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.

---

**1790.—Four Documents.**

---

- 1. The Governor of Guayana addresses to Senor Porlier a sketch of the condition of the Province, and of the advances of the Dutch of Esquivo, Demarari, &c.**
  - 2. The same, on the reconnaissance of the Cuyuni, establishing of a stronghold and village, &c.**
  - 3 and 4. To the Ministers of the Royal Treasury and Prefect of the Missions, that they may assist in this plan.**
- 

*Document 1.—1790.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: On the 22d of September last I assumed command in this Province, whose local conditions and circumstances make it one of those most meriting the attention and benign compassion of Y. M.; and that, pitying the miserable state to which it is reduced, your Royal clemency may be pleased to extend to it those favors which may suffice to cause it to flourish, so that the residents, emerging from their poverty, may render unto the Royal Exchequer the treasures which are being offered by the multitude of arable lands (almost deserted), building lumber, and other productions with which nature has enriched this vast continent, which, according to the most accurate maps, has as its boundaries the Orinoco on the north, the Amazon and Negro rivers on the south, the seacoast on the east, and the Provinces of Cumará, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fe on the west, with the misfortune that the number of inhabitants barely reaches

5,000 souls, and of these three-fourths are natives still in the category of new subjects. Agriculture is very meagre, and many more of the products are exportable to Europe, and the direct commerce (for this reason) not obtaining any increase, Y. E. will be well assured in time, upon more solid grounds than I have been able to obtain in the short time that I have been in this colony, whose considerations have claimed my first attention; and now, more than by these, my care has been enlisted on seeing that the Dutch, French, and Portuguese are endeavoring to occupy the greater part of this vast extent of territory, and that from day to day they are advancing their possessions; the Dutch particularly by way of the Essequibo river, which offers them free passage, by the Cuyuni river, to the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and farther into the interior of the Province, as there is no guard or any settlement of Spaniards to impede them; and the Portuguese by the Negro river, the Amazon, and the Parime; that species of free and independent Republic of fugitive negroes, which within a few years may become terrible, being situated at the meeting point of the boundary lines of these possessions and the sources of their respective rivers.

In the sea, Y. E. knows better than I, that at a short distance, and to the northeast of the *Boca de Navois* of the Orinoco, is situated the Island of Barbadoes, belonging to the English, and running to the northwest a little more or less the rest of the Antilles. The excellencies of this mighty river are known, and no one is to-day ignorant of the easy communication that its navigation offers to the kingdom of Santa Fe, and the other Provinces named above, circumstances which bring out the importance of this Province, and counsel the necessity of furnishing the means for its encouragement and defence, for it may be that they will be an incentive to the covetous rivalry of other Powers. Wherefore it has appeared to me to be my duty to present this short sketch for the time being, and to bring it to the notice of Y. E., assured of your love and zeal for the Royal service, and that being so addicted to the advantages and progress of the State, you will contribute with your powerful influence to the end that this poor

Province may obtain the means for its invigoration by the increment of agriculture and of trade, the only branches which will furnish its settlement and defence, which present circumstances so greatly demand. And it appearing to me well to bring it to the notice of the Most Excellent the Ministers of State, Grace and Justice, of War, and of the Treasury, I execute it also for them on this date.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, October sixteenth, seventeen hundred and ninety.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

The Most Excellent Señor Don Antonio Polier.

*Document 2.—1790.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: Considering the urgent necessity of guarding in the best possible way, for the present, the avenue of the Cuyuni river, whereby the Dutch from Esquivo are accustomed to advance inland, I deemed it advisable to designate the Adjutant Major of this detail, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, as an expert party in those localities, entrusting him with this object and the command of the escort of the Missions of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers. And at the same time I charged him to re-examine a site which should be the most advantageous on the said Cuyuni river at the fork or confluence it forms with the Curumo, to establish a fixed detachment or outpost.

He performed this duty in the terms Y. E. will see by the copy which I send herewith, of which I have also made a report to the Captain General of Caracas, stating that I consider very necessary the sentry-box or stronghold that the military Commissioner proposes, in order that, in view of the antecedents, and until H. M. shall otherwise determine, you may examine and decide whether carrying this work into execution, the cost of which will amount, more or less, to five hundred *pesos*, is expedient for the best service of the King.

By reason of several Indians of those Missions having gone to Esquivo to sell and barter hammocks and other things and



having brought back all or a part of the proceeds thereof in rum, they had a bacchanalian feast, the result of which was a riot, and the accidental killing (or it is not known how) with lance thrusts of one of the Indians by the priest of the town of Guasipati, as the deed appears proven by the judicial inquiry set on foot; of which event, and of the objection of the Reverend Father Prefect to proceeding with the case in the regular way, I have given account to the Royal and Supreme Council of the Indias, and to Y. E. now, it appearing to me advisable to place it before your superior notice that you may be all the more assured of the necessity for guarding the avenue of the Cuyuni and preventing thereby the injurious continuance of the passage of natives and Dutchmen by that river, as I have represented in several papers, of which I judge Y. E. is apprised.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, June 4, 1790. Most Excellent Sir.

MIGUEL MARMION.

To the Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Valdes.

*Document 3.—1790.*

It befitting the best service of the King to protect the territory and Missions of that Province which borders on the Dutch Colony of Esquibo, I have resolved to have constructed a stronghold or sentry-box at a point which may seem most proper and adapted, which is to be selected by the Adjutant-Major Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, the cost of which will amount to five hundred *pesos*, which amount, as well as the other materials and military stores the Governor of that Province may need, will be transmitted, Y. H. paying the cost per account of the Royal Treasury.

At present there ought to be at the orders of the Adjutant-Major Puente, eight militiamen to serve as escort and first settlers of the Spanish village to be founded there, and there shall be sent, successively, up to the number of thirty militiamen, who are to be at the same time settlers, as is provided by

Royal Command of December twenty-second of seventeen hundred and sixty-three; the pay of which men Y. H. will provide without the slightest embarrassment, as I am authorized by the King to act in the matter as may seem best to me for his Royal service.

God preserve Your Honor many years. Caracas, August twenty-ninth, seventeen ninety. To the Principal Ministers of the Royal Treasury of Guayana. It is a copy of its original. Guillelmi—[a flourish].

*Document 4.—1790.*

REVEREND FATHER: In order to protect the Missions under the charge of your Reverence and your Reverend Community, I have ordered the building of a stronghold to defend them. Under the protection thereof it is advisable and necessary to establish a settlement of Indians of the Guayca nation, and afterwards a village of Spaniards, which is provided for by Royal command of the twenty-second of December, seventeen sixty-three, the execution of which I have entrusted to the Adjutant-Major of the Veteran companies of that Province, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente.

I trust your Reverence will agree with this officer as to the founding of the settlement and village, after notice and approval of the Governor of the Province, as is proper, and that you will furnish all the necessary assistance from the cattle ranch and settlement of Tumeremo, which is to have its port on the Cuyumo river; and since that Reverend Community offered H. M. ten or twelve thousand head of neat cattle, which were accepted by Royal commands of the twentieth of October, of seventeen seventy-eight, and fourteenth of March, seventeen eighty, the time arrives when it can be carried into effect, and I trust that the said Reverend Community will gladly order the furnishing of the number which, on account of the offer, the Governor of that Province may request for the purpose of distributing them among the settlers of the village to be founded, and for any other purpose that may be advisable, as this will redound to the benefit and advancement of the Missions themselves.

God preserve your Reverence many years. Caracas, August twenty-ninth, seventeen ninety. To the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions of Catalonian Capuchins. It is a copy of the original. Guillelmi—[a flourish].

---

They are copies agreeing with the originals existing in these General Archives of the Indias. "State Papers.—*Audiencia* of Caracas.—1790–1796."

Seville, May 29, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 13, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.



















